



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

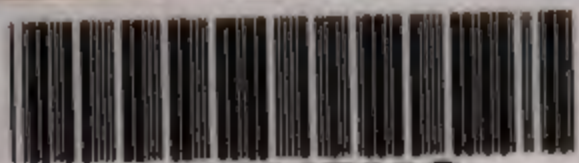
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

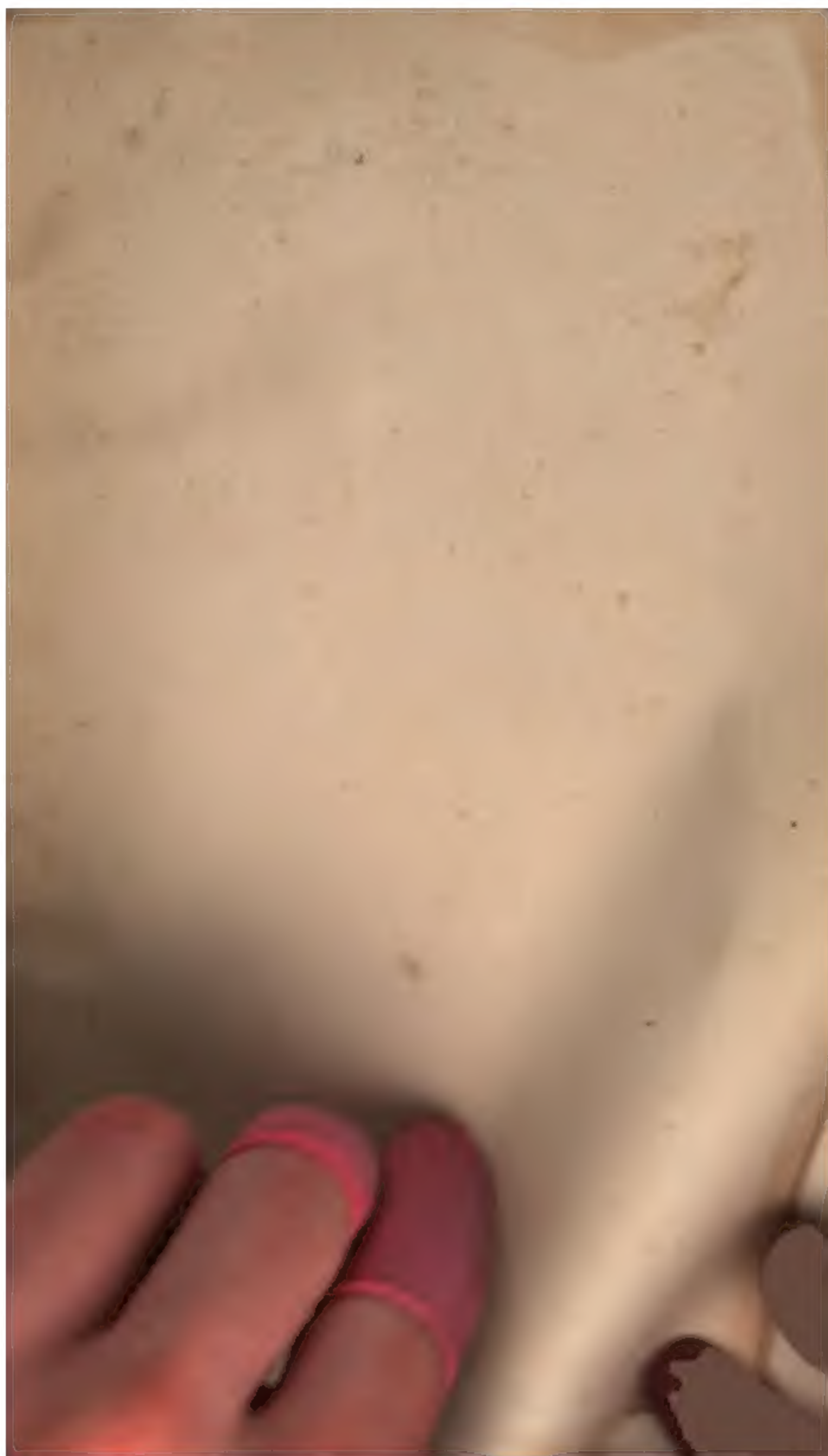




6000327600

42.

1107.





0000327000

42.

1107.



LONDON:
Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES and Sons,
Stamford Street.

TO THE
REV. EDWARD RICE, D.D.,
HEAD MASTER OF CHRIST'S HOSPITAL,
&c. &c. &c.,
IN GRATEFUL ACKNOWLEDGMENT
OF
MANY AND ESSENTIAL SERVICES,
AND AS A
TESTIMONY OF RESPECT FOR HIS HIGH ATTAINMENTS
AND BENEVOLENCE OF HEART,
THIS WORK IS DEDICATED
BY THE AUTHOR.

April, 1841.

P R E F A C E.

THERE can be no doubt that the genuine sense of the writers of the New Testament, as of any other ancient writer whomsoever, is more readily ascertained by due attention to the principles of grammatical construction; and many of those dangerous errors, upon which different Christian sects have built the peculiarities of their respective creeds, find an easy refutation in the same quarter. The want of some standard book of reference in this important branch of sacred philology is therefore a constant source of perplexity, not only to the editor of the Greek Testament, who is not apt to regard the endless discussion of minute points of grammar as a legitimate portion of his labours, but to the university professor, the college tutor, and the masters of public schools; and, in this country at least, no such work has hitherto appeared, to which the student can be satisfactorily directed. As far as classical Greek is concerned, almost all that can be wished or expected has been performed in the laborious works of BUTTMANN and MATTHIÆ; one of which, in the excellent translation of *Boileau*, (re-edited from the learned professor's last corrections by *Dr. Supf*,) or the other in that of *Blomfield*, is in the hands of every scholar. It formed no part of their object, however, to illustrate the Greek language, except in its state of purity and vigour; and their citations are taken exclusively from those writers who preceded the times of Alexander the Great. *Matthiæ* had once indeed entertained the design of making his Grammar complete, by the collation of an unbroken series of examples from writers of every age, the earliest to the latest, of Grecian literature; but the idea seems to have been abandoned: and the *Complete Greek Grammar* of *Buttmann*, of which his death in 1830 unhappily interrupted the progress

would not, even had it been brought to a conclusion, have superseded the necessity of a Grammar exclusively devoted to the peculiar dialect of the writers of the New Testament.

It is but very recently, and only in Germany, that the grammar of the New Testament has been separately and systematically investigated on correct philosophical principles, and with reference to the true constitution of the language. The first humble effort in this department of philological inquiry was that of *Solomon Glass*, whose *PHILOLOGIA SACRA*, published in 1643, contained two chapters on *Grammatica Sacra*, which are included in the first book of the new arrangement by *Dathe*. His remarks are confined to *Hebraisms* only. In 1650, *Gaspar Wyss* published his *DIALECTOLOGIA SACRA; in quâ quicquid per universum Novi Fœderis contextum, in Apostolica et voce et phrasi, a communi Græcorum linguâ, eoque Grammaticâ analogiâ discrepat, methodo congruâ disponitur, accurate definitur, et omnium sacri contextus exemplorum inductione illustratur*. As a collection of examples, this work is very valuable. The peculiarities of the New Testament diction are arranged under seven heads, as belonging respectively to the *Attic, Ionic, Doric, Æolic, Boeotic, Poetic*, and *Hebraistic* dialects; and, though betraying no very extensive acquaintance with Greek, the several sections exhibit ample proofs that the language of the Apostles and Evangelists contains something from all the ancient dialects, mixed up with much that was extraneous and new. A more accurate idea of what was required in a Grammar of the New Testament seems to have been possessed by *George Pasor*, the author of a small Lexicon which has passed through several editions, who left behind him, at his death, a Grammar of considerable merit, which was edited by his son, *Matthias Pasor*, with additions and emendations of his own. The title is, *G. Pasoris Grammatica Græca Sacra Novi Testamenti, in tres libros distributa a filio M. Pasor. Theol. Prof. 1655*. This work, which is now very scarce, contains much that belongs to Greek grammar in general; but the syntax is copious and accurate, and there is an appendix, relating to the dialects of

the New Testament, which is particularly valuable. From this period, until *Ph. H. Haab* published his Hebrew-Greek Grammar (*Hebraisch-Griechische Grammatik für das N. T.*) in 1815, no work expressly devoted to this subject appeared; and the arbitrary manner in which this author has referred the common properties of all cultivated languages to a Hebrew origin renders the utility of his work extremely questionable.

In the mean time, however, the attention devoted by philologists to the structure of the Greek language had greatly increased the stock of grammatical knowledge; and the labours of *Fischer*, *Hermann*, *Matthæ*, *Buttmann*, *Lobeck*, and *Elmsley*, had entirely exploded the system of the older grammarians. Under these circumstances, Dr. *George Benedict Winer*, Professor of Theology at the University of Erlangen, in Bavaria, published, in 1822, his *Grammatik des neutestamentlichen Sprachidioms, als sichere Grundlage der neutestamentlichen Exegese bearbeitet*; and the work has been greatly augmented, and altogether remodelled, in subsequent editions.¹ Availing himself of the researches which have been so successfully instituted, more especially by *Sturz*, *Planck*, *Tittmann*, and *Lobeck*, into the character and composition of the New Testament diction, he has distinguished what is *really* Hebraism from that which belongs equally to the Greek or to all languages indifferently; and has shown that, although many of the forms and constructions may find a parallel in the most approved specimens of Attic elegance, still the true basis of the language, employed by the sacred writers, is the popular dialect of conquered Greece. A New Testament Greek Grammar, written in Latin, was published in 1829 by *J. C. G. Alt*; but it contains little, if any thing, which is not to be found in *Winer*, whose extensive, and, for the most part, very accurate researches will form the necessary groundwork of all future inquiries into this highly important branch of biblical interpretation.

The different ingredients, which enter into the composition

¹ The references in this work are to the fourth edition, published at Leipzig in 1836.

of the New Testament diction, indicate three methods of arrangement in the treatment of its grammar. Either the Greek basis and Hebraistic peculiarities may be separately considered;—or those instances in which it so frequently agrees with the purest Attic models, and those which belong to the later speech, whether written or spoken, may be investigated apart; the Hebraisms being also thrown together by themselves;—or the language may be regarded as a perfect whole, and examined on the general principles of philosophical grammar. The inconveniences attending the two first of these methods will be apparent from the most cursory perusal of those treatises, in which either the same or different authors have elucidated the Greek idiom of the sacred penmen, and the Hebraisms with which it abounds, under distinct heads. Not to speak of the contradictions, real or apparent, which continually recur, there are so many forms of inflexion, which belong equally to two or more of the dialects of ancient Greece, as well as to the later speech, and so many syntactical expressions which may be referred either to a Greek or Hebrew origin, that innumerable repetitions are unavoidable, and ambiguities continually arise. Hence the latter method is not only infinitely preferable in itself, but is open to the adoption of some approved work, in which the grammatical rules of classical Greek have been established and illustrated, as the foundation upon which it may rest.

Such is the plan pursued in the present volume, which has been constructed with immediate reference to the *Larger or Intermediate Grammar* of BUTTMANN; a work which is digested on the strictest principles of philosophical accuracy, and presents the utmost perspicuity of connected arrangement. By following the order of that work, *section for section*, with the exception of such as have no bearing upon the subject, the student is enabled to perceive at once in what points the several forms of inflexion and construction accord with, or vary from, those of the best writers. In the former case, the examples from the New Testament are to be compared with those which Buttmann has adduced, to which in some few instances

one or two others are added ; and, in the latter, the New Testament forms either stand alone, or are illustrated by corresponding examples from the later Greek, the LXX version of the Old Testament, Josephus, or the Christian Fathers. *Hebraisms*, whether perfect or imperfect, are referred in either case to those passages in the Hebrew Scriptures in which the original expressions occur ; and, when it is doubtful to which language the idiom belongs, parallel constructions are given from both. It is obvious to remark, however, that, when the same mode of speaking is common both to the Greek and Hebrew, the sacred writers, from their national propensities, would be more likely to have derived it from the latter.

With respect to the nature and use of the *præpositive article*, the theory of the late lamented BISHOP MIDDLETON has been adopted, in the firm and settled conviction of its truth. It was not proposed by its highly-gifted framer without that severe and impartial scrutiny, for which his deep critical acumen and thoughtful turn of mind rendered him so peculiarly qualified ; and though it has been frequently disputed, and a few impracticable examples have been brought against some of its canons, no definite objections have been urged against it as a whole, nor are the violations of its rules either so numerous or important as to invalidate, in the slightest degree, the soundness of the hypothesis. That it accounts for the insertion or omission of the article upon the same unvarying principle is at least a strong presumption in its favour ; and a mere comparison of the sound reasoning by which the doctrine is supported, with the careless and unphilosophical manner in which this part of the subject is treated even by *Winer*, will show that it is not a few detached exceptions which will be able, without a full discussion, to set it aside. *Bishop Middleton's* work is cited as one of *Winer's* authorities ; and it is therefore curious, and even painful, to wade through his confused mass of examples, which, without even an allusion to *Mr. Sharpe's Canon*, tend to its complete vindication. He seems to have thought that the use of the article depends, in some manner, upon the sameness or difference of the *number*

or *gender* of the nouns; and the exceptions will be found to be almost as numerous as the proofs, independently of much carelessness and inaccuracy in the classification. Many of them even violate his own rules; whereas it will be found, on the other hand, that a large proportion of those citations, which militate against the Bishop's theory, are derived from the poets.

It was only after mature deliberation that the Grammar of *Buttmann* was selected as the basis of the work, which indeed was originally designed as a supplement to that of *Matthiæ*; but the consideration that the former is now more generally adopted in our schools and universities, that it is less voluminous and expensive, and that a new and improved edition of it, in which the syntax is discussed and illustrated on a less meagre and contracted scale than formerly, was on the eve of publication, determined the question. At the same time a table of reference to the corresponding sections of *Matthiæ* has been given, for the use of those students who give that work the preference.

The present work was in a state of considerable forwardness, when a *New Testament Greek Grammar*, by *Professor Stuart*, of *Andover*, in the United States, was reprinted in this country; and, had it appeared to pre-occupy the same ground, the undertaking would necessarily have been abandoned. To detract from the merits of a fellow-labourer in the same field would be little in accordance with the views of the author, even if such an expedient were necessary to justify the publication of his own book. Suffice it to observe, that the two volumes are designed for very different classes of students; and that a Grammar, intended as a supplement to those of *Buttmann* and *Matthiæ*, is required to be more copious in its illustrations, and more critical in its details, than one in which the New Testament peculiarities are only a somewhat more prominent feature than usual, and which is adapted solely or principally to the use of schools.

W. T.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

- § 1. Of the Language of Palestine in the time of Christ.
- § 2. Of the *Common* or *Hellenic* Dialect of the later Greek writers.
- § 3. Interchange of Letters.
- § 4. Moveable Final Letters.
- § 5. *Hiatus* ; *Contraction* ; *Crasis* ; *Apostrophus*.

Of the Noun.

- § 6. First Declension.
- § 7. Second Declension.
- § 8. Third Declension.
- § 9. Anomalous Declension ; *Metaplasmus*, &c.
- § 10. Declension of Hebrew-Greek Proper Names.
- § 11. Defectives and Indeclinables.
- § 12. Adjectives.
- § 13. Degrees of Comparison.
- § 14. Numerals.
- § 15. Pronouns.

Of the Verb.

- § 16. Augment and Reduplication.
- § 17. Formation of the Tenses.
- § 18. Verbal Adjectives.
- § 19. Unusual Forms employed in the New Testament.

Irregular Conjugation.

- § 20. Verbs in *μι*.
- § 21. "Ἰν*μι*, Εἰ*μί*.
- § 22. Anomaly of Signification ; *Causatives* and *Immediatives*.

§ 23. List of Irregular Verbs.

§ 24. Termination of Words.

Syntax.

§ 25. Government of the Noun.

§ 26. Apposition.

§ 27—35. Article and Pronouns.

§ 36. Neuter of the Adjective.

§ 37. Subject and Predicate.

§ 38, 39. Vocative and Oblique Cases ; § 40. Accusative ; § 41—44. Genitive ; § 45—47. Dative.

§ 48. Passive Voice.

§ 49. Middle Voice.

§ 50. Tenses.

§ 51—56. Moods ; Particles *ἀν*, *ἐι*, *ἐάν*, and others.

§ 57, 58. Infinitive ; Attraction.

§ 59. Construction with the Relative, and its Attraction.

§ 60. Construction with the Participle ; § 61. *Casus Absoluti*.

§ 62. Particles.

§ 63—65. Prepositions.

§ 66, 67. Negative and other Particles.

§ 68. Peculiar Phrases.

§ 69. Particular Constructions : I. *Attraction* ; II. *Anacoluthon* ; III. *Ellipsis* ; IV. *Pleonasm* ; V. *Asyndeta* ; VI. *Hendiadys*.

§ 70. Rhetorical Figures : I. *Metonymy* ; II. *Hyperbole* ; III. *Synecdoche* ; IV. *Antanacclasis* ; V. *Paranomasia*.

§ 71. Metrical Lines.

INDEX.

English and Latin.

Greek.

Texts of Scripture.

TABLE of the Sections in MATTHIÆ's Greek Grammar, which correspond with those of the present work.

MATTHIÆ.	SUPPLEMENT.	MATTHIÆ.	SUPPLEMENT.
Introduction . . .	2	Sect. 222—255 . .	23
Sect. 42	5, 1	264	27, 1
43 et sqq.	4, and 5, 4	265, 266	35
48—52	5, 2	267	27, 2
53, 54	5, 3	268	27, 3, 4
68, <i>Obs.</i> 2, 9	6, <i>Obs.</i> 1, 2	268, <i>Obs.</i> 1 . . .	29
69, <i>Obs.</i> 1	5, 2	268, <i>Obs.</i> 2 . . .	30, 1
69, <i>Obs.</i> 3	7	269—271	28, 4
70, <i>Obs.</i> 2	7, <i>Obs.</i> 2	272, 273	30, <i>Obs.</i> 11
73, 2	8, <i>Obs.</i> 1	274	30, 2
78, <i>Obs.</i> 7	5, 2	275	30, 3
81	8, <i>Obs.</i> 2	276	30, <i>Obs.</i> 9
83, <i>Obs.</i> 6	8, <i>Obs.</i> 3	277	32
83 b, and 84 . . .	8, <i>Obs.</i> 5	280	30, 4
85	9, 1	282	30, <i>Obs.</i> 11
90	9, <i>Obs.</i> 1	283	46, 1
91, 1	10, <i>Obs.</i> 1	286 et sqq. . . .	33
92, 3	9, 2	292	33, <i>Obs.</i> 4
95, 96	9, 3, and <i>Obs.</i> 3	293	11, 1
113, <i>Obs.</i> 1	8, 4	293	37, 4
116—118	12	295	37, 7
119 b, <i>Obs.</i> 3 . . .	8, <i>Obs.</i> 2	296	58, 6
130	13, <i>Obs.</i> 1	298, 1	37, 10
133	13, <i>Obs.</i> 2	300	37, 1
136	13, <i>Obs.</i> 3	302	37, 3
138	14	304	37, 2
148	15, 2	306	37, 8
162, <i>Obs.</i> 3	16, <i>Obs.</i> 2	307	68
165, <i>Obs.</i> 2	16, <i>Obs.</i> 3	311	61, <i>Obs.</i> 1
165, <i>Obs.</i> 3	16, <i>Obs.</i> 1	312	38
167, 6	16, <i>Obs.</i> 4	315, 316	41, <i>Obs.</i> 9
168, <i>Obs.</i> 1	16, <i>Obs.</i> 6	318 et sqq. . . .	41, 3
168, <i>Obs.</i> 2	16, <i>Obs.</i> 7	325	41, 4
169, <i>Obs.</i>	16, <i>Obs.</i> 4	326, 3, <i>Obs.</i> . . .	41, <i>Obs.</i> 8
170	16, <i>Obs.</i> 8	327	41, 5
177 b.	17, <i>Obs.</i> 3	328, 329	44, <i>Obs.</i> 12
181, 2	17, 1	330	44, <i>Obs.</i> 11
184, <i>Obs.</i>	22, <i>Obs.</i> 9	331	44, 4
185	17, <i>Obs.</i> 4	334, 335	44, 1
193, <i>Obs.</i> 7	17, 2	342	44, <i>Obs.</i> 1
198, <i>Obs.</i> 1	19, <i>Obs.</i> 3	344, 345	42, 1
198, <i>Obs.</i> 5	19, <i>Obs.</i> 1	347	42, 3, 1
198, <i>Obs.</i> 6	19, <i>Obs.</i> 2	348	42, 3, 2
198, 3	20, <i>Obs.</i> 7	349	42, 3, 6
200, 2	19, <i>Obs.</i> 8	350	42, 3, 3
200, 4, <i>Obs.</i> . . .	19, <i>Obs.</i> 7	351	42, 2, 1
201, 5	19, <i>Obs.</i> 6	352	42, 2, 2
203, <i>Obs.</i> 1	19, <i>Obs.</i> 4, 5	353 et sqq. . . .	41, 2
208, 5	20, <i>Obs.</i> 5	356	42, 3, 4
208, 6	20, <i>Obs.</i> 4	363	44, 3
210, <i>Obs.</i> 1	20, <i>Obs.</i> 2	367	44, 2
210, <i>Obs.</i> 2	20, <i>Obs.</i> 1	373 et sqq. . . .	41, 6
210, <i>Obs.</i> 5	20, <i>Obs.</i> 6	377	44, 5
210, 6, <i>Obs.</i> 1 . .	20, <i>Obs.</i> 3	378, 379	42, <i>Obs.</i> 10
211, II.	21, I.	380	44, 6
216	21, II.	382	45, 3
220	18	384	45, 4

MATTHIÆ.	SUPPLEMENT.
Sect. 385, 386 . . .	46, 4
387	45, 7
388	45, <i>Obs.</i> 13
391, 392	45, 5
393	45, 2
394	46, 5
395	48, 2
396 et sqq.	47
401	45, 8
402	45, <i>Obs.</i> 16
403, 404	46, 3
405	46, 2
406	47, <i>Obs.</i> 15
408	40, 4
409	40, <i>Obs.</i> 8
411	40, 1
412, 413	40, 2
414	40, 3
415 et sqq.	40, 5
420	40, 6
421	40, <i>Obs.</i> 15
424	48, 3
425	40, 7
427, <i>Obs.</i> 3	69, II. 2
429, 430	25, 7
430	41, <i>Obs.</i> 16
431, 432	25, <i>Obs.</i> 13
434	26
435	25, 1, 2
437, 438	25, 3
439, 440	37, 5
441	25, 4
442, 443	25, 5
443	36
453	25, <i>Obs.</i> 10
455	68
457	43, 2
458	43, 3
459 }	43, <i>Obs.</i> 4
463 }	13, <i>Obs.</i> 4
464	41, <i>Obs.</i> 2
465, 1	43, <i>Obs.</i> 7
466	37, 6
467 et sqq.	34, 4
470, 471	44, 2, <i>Obs.</i> 5
472	15, 2
473	34, 2
474	34, 1
475 c.	59, 1
	59, 2
	59, 4

MATTHIÆ.	SUPPLEMENT.
Sect. 478	69, II. 2, <i>Obs.</i> 1
487	15, 4
488	34, 3
489	15, 3
490	34, 2, <i>Obs.</i> 13
491, 492	48, 1
493	49
495	22, <i>Obs.</i> 6
496	22, 4
497	22, 1—3
498	50, 1—3
499 et sqq.	50, 4, 5
502	50, <i>Obs.</i> 6
504 et sqq.	50, <i>Obs.</i> 4
507 et sqq.	50, <i>Obs.</i> 5
511	51
513 et sqq.	52
516, 517	53, 1, 2
518 et sqq.	53, 3—5
521	56
522	55, 1, 2
523 et sqq.	55, 3
527, 528	54
531	59, <i>Obs.</i> 9
532	57, 1
533	57, <i>Obs.</i> 1
534	57, 2
536, 537	58, 1, 2
540 et sqq.	58, 3—5
545	57, 4
546	57, 3
548, 549	58, <i>Obs.</i> 6
550 et sqq.	60, 4
556 et sqq.	60, 5
559	60, <i>Obs.</i> 16
560 et sqq.	61
568	60, <i>Obs.</i> 5
570	60, <i>Obs.</i> 19
572 et sqq.	63, 2
577	63, 3
578, 579	63, 4
580 et sqq.	64
583 et sqq.	65
594 et sqq.	65, <i>Obs.</i> 5, &c.
597 et sqq.	62
608	66
609 et sqq.	67
630	69, I. and V.
631, 632	69, II.
634	69, III. 2
635	69, III. 1
636	69, IV.

A

G R E E K G R A M M A R

TO THE

NEW TESTAMENT.

§ 1.—*Introductory Notice of the Language of Palestine in the time of Jesus Christ.*

1. THERE are two circumstances, which tend materially to affect the peculiar character of a language—conquest and commerce. While the Jews maintained their independence, and had but little intercourse with surrounding nations, the Hebrew, gradually developing itself towards that degree of perfection in which we meet with it in the Scriptures of the Old Testament, yet still the same original language which was spoken by the patriarchs and the native tribes of Canaan, continued to be the national speech of the inhabitants of Palestine. The schools of the prophets, established by Samuel, contributed greatly, no doubt, to its richness and purity; and it was between the judicature of the last judge of Israel and the Babylonian captivity that the principal portion of the sacred writings of the Jews was composed. From their intimate connexion with the Chaldæans, however, during a period of seventy years, it would almost necessarily happen that the *Aramæan* dialect of the country, which differed very little from their own, except in its pronunciation, should at first be intermingled with, and at length entirely supersede, the native Hebrew of the captive people. So completely, indeed, did the one give place to the other, that, on the return from captivity, the *Syro-Chaldaic*, or *Babylonian-Aramaic*, became the national language of the

Jews. Hebrew still, indeed, existed as the language of literature, though fragments of Aramaic are introduced into the books of Daniel and Ezra; but Chaldee Targums, or paraphrases, were universally employed in the synagogues for the benefit of the unlearned, to whom the original scriptures had become utterly unintelligible.¹

2. The extreme aversion of the Jews from anything foreign would have presented an insuperable obstacle to any revolution in their language, which extended beyond a simple change of dialect. Both the Hebrew and the Aramaic were branches of the same parent stem: the grammar of both, as of the other Shemitic tongues, was essentially the same; and the name of the former, which in the time of Christ had become totally extinct even as the language of literature, was universally applied to the latter. This practice is followed in the New Testament and Josephus, in the Rabbinical writings, and many of the early Fathers.² It was this strong nationality that, after the victories of Alexander, and during their subjection to their Græco-Egyptian and Syro-Macedonian rulers, resisted the introduction of the Greek language, which prevailed at the courts of those princes, and had been very generally adopted in their conquered dominions. It seems, indeed, that Greek was held in peculiar abhorrence; probably because it had been sometimes employed in the service of treachery.³ Such being the case when Pompey laid siege to Jerusalem, a curse was denounced against every one who should teach Greek to his children; and during the war with Titus the Jewish youth were expressly forbidden to learn that language.⁴ Independently of these considerations, however, the more distinguished families among the Jews had too much national pride to seek the acquisition of a foreign tongue;⁵ and the doctors and scribes considered the knowledge of Greek to be entirely

¹ Rab. Azarias in *Mora Ebrajîm*, c. 9. *Servatus est mos interpretandi legem vulgo lingua Aramæa toto tempore templi secundi, nunquamque ista lingua semper videri usque ad captivitatem Hierosolymitanam.*

² See John v. 2, xix. 13. Acts xxvi. 14. Joseph. Ant. i. 3. 3, ii. 1. 1, iii. 10. 6. Eriphian. t. ii. pp. 117, 188. Jerom. Comm. ad Matt. xii. 13. Compare also Lightfoot's *Hor. Hebr. in John v. 2.*

³ Pfannkuche's *Essay on the Language of Palestine in the Apostolic Age*, iii. 1.

⁴ *Bava Kama*, fol. 82, b. *Sota* *ba'schna*, c. ix. 14.

⁵ Joseph. Ant. xx. 10. 2. Παρ' ἡμῶν γὰρ οὐκ ἐκείνους ἀποδέχονται τοὺς πολλὰν ἰδῶν διαλέκτων ἰκμαδόντας, διὰ τὸ καιρὸν εἶναι νομίζουσιν τὸ ἱπποκρίναι ταῦτα οὐκ ἰλευθέρων μόνον τοῖς τυχεῶσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν οἰκτιρῶν τοῖς θιλοῦσιν· μένους δὲ σέβειαν μαρτυροῦσι τοῖς τὰ νόμιμα σεβῶς ἱπποκρίνοιν, καὶ τῇ τῶν ἰδῶν γραμμῶν δυνάμει ἰσχυροῦσαι δουλοῦσιν.

superfluous to the interpretation of the Scriptures.¹ Even the Jewish princes, whose residence at the court of Rome rendered them perfectly familiar with the language and literature of Greece, always spoke to their own countrymen in the vernacular Aramaic.²

3. With the exception, therefore, of certain words and expressions, chiefly of Greek and Latin origin, which constant intercourse with foreigners had engrafted upon it, the language of Palestine in the time of Christ and his apostles was identical with the Aramaean or Syro-Chaldaean of the age of Daniel and Ezra. From the oriental colouring of his discourses, as well as from the fact that they were more usually addressed to the humbler classes, it is certain that our Lord generally employed the vernacular Aramaic; and St. Paul relates that, on the occasion of his conversion, Jesus spoke to him Ἑβραϊδὶ διαλέκτῳ (Acts xxvi. 14). The Gospels also have preserved the very words which he uttered in performing two of his miracles; and a variety of other words and expressions are scattered throughout the New Testament, which are Aramaic terms, either genuine or exotic, written in Greek characters.

Obs. 1. The Aramaic dialect was not spoken in all parts of the country with equal correctness. In Judæa, and particularly at Jerusalem, which was the great resort of persons of distinction and liberal education, it was necessarily distinguished by its purity of diction and grammatical accuracy. The provincial dialects exhibited a more rude pronunciation, and sundry idiomatic expressions, which were studiously avoided by the polished classes of society. That of Galilee more especially, appears from Matt. xxvi. 73, to have been exceedingly harsh and inharmonious, so that a Galilean was easily recognised by his pronunciation; and the same character is attributed to it in the Talmud.³

Obs. 2. It may be proper to collect the principal Aramaic expressions occurring in the New Testament, and in some cases to place in juxtaposition the corresponding Aramaic form:—Matt. iii. 7, Φαρισαῖες, v. 22, ῥακα and γίννα; vi. 24, μαμμωνᾶ, Aram. מַמְמוֹנָא; x. 3, Βαρθολομαῖος; xii. 24, Βελζιβούλ, Aram. בְּעֵל זְבוּל; xvi. 17, Βαρ' Ιωνᾶ; xxiii. 7, ῥαββί, Aram. רַבִּי; xxvi. 2, πάσχα, Aram. פֶּסַח; xxvii. 16, Ιαραββᾶς; 33, γολγοθα; 46, Ἡλὶ, Ἡλὶ, λαμὰ σαβαχθανὶ (in Mark xv. 34, Ἐλωὶ is another form, אֱלֹהֵי, instead of אֱלִי); Mark iii. 17, Ἰωαννῆς, Aram. יְהוֹנָן; v. 13, λεγιών, Aram. לְגִיִּן (Lat. *Legio*); v. 41, ταλιθὰ κοῦμι; vi. 27, σπικουλατῶρ,

¹ Menach. fol. 90, b. *Age igitur, reputa lectum, quænam sit illa hora, quæ nec ad diem, nec ad noctem pertineat, quam si inveneris, licebit tibi sapientiæ Græcæ operam natære.* There is a reference to the precept in Josh. i. 8.

² Joseph. Ant. xviii. 7. 10.

³ Talm. Babyl. Erul bim, fol. 53. *Homines Judææ, qui polita utuntur lingua:—homines Galilææ, qui impolita.* See also Lightfoot's *Hor. Heb. in Act. Apost.* ii. 7. Schoettgen. H. H. in Matt. xxvi. 73. Pfeiffer *de dial. Galilææ*, Excurs. x., and Buxtorf's *Lex. Ch.* in v. לָלֵךְ.

Aram. ספקולטור (Lat. *Speculator* or *Spiculator*); vii. 11, κοσβᾶν; 34, ἰφθαθά; x. 46, Βαρτίμαιος; 51, ῥαββονί; xiv. 36, Ἀββᾶ, Aram. אַבְבָּא; Luke i. 15, σίκερα, Aram. שִׁכְרָא; xix. 20, σουδάριον, Aram. סוּדָר (Lat. *Sudarium*); John i. 43, Κηφᾶς; iv. 25, Μισσίας; v. 2, Βηθισδα; xix. 13, γαββαθά; Acts i. 19, Ἀκελδαμα; 24, Βαρσαβᾶς; iv. 36, Βαρνάβας; ix. 36, Ταβιθά; xiii. 6, Βαριησοῦς; xvi. 12, κολωνία, Aram. קִלְנִיָּא (Lat. *colonia*); 1 Cor. xvi. 22, μαραναθά. 2 John 12, χάρις, Aram. קְרִיטִים (Lat. *charta*).¹ To these may probably be added the word κοσμικὸν (Heb. ix. 1), which is probably the rabbinical noun קוֹמִיקוֹן, signifying *furniture*;² and in Matt. v. 22, the term μωρὶ is far more likely to be the Aramaic מוֹרֵה, *an apostate*, than the Greek word denoting *a fool*. In Josephus also there are a great variety of words which are Græcised from the Aramaic language of his age.³

§ 2.—*Of the Common or Hellenic Dialect, and the Greek Idiom of the New Testament.* (BUTTM. GR. GR. § 1. Text 9. Obs. 8, 9, 10.)

1. Although the Babylonian-Aramaic still maintained its ground as the language of Palestine in the commencement of the Christian era, and notwithstanding the contempt and aversion with which they affected to regard the language and literature of foreign nations, the Jews had become very extensively, if not universally, acquainted with Greek. In Alexandria, Seleucia, Antioch, and those other populous cities which sprung up after the victories of Alexander, and the consequent establishment of the Seleucidæ, the same privileges were allowed to the Jews as to the other inhabitants, and vast numbers of them were accordingly induced to remove thither.⁴ As Greek was now the current language, not only of literature, but of commerce, and even of social intercourse, in all the countries west of the Euphrates,⁵ not only would the Jewish residents in these cities almost necessarily adopt it as their own, but without a knowledge of it even the Hebrews of Palestine would find it impossible to have any extensive communication. A knowledge of Greek had become, indeed, not merely an accomplishment confined to persons of education, but a necessary acquisition, which people of all ranks made in their childhood.

¹ Pfannkuche's Essay, § xi. 1. Pfeiffer de locis Ebraicis et exoticis N. T.

² Middleton on the Gr. Art. *ad loc.*

³ Joseph. Ant. i. 3. 3; ii. 1. 1; iii. 7. 2; 10. 6; iv. 4. 4; xiv. 2. 1. B. J. V. 2. 1; 11. 5.

⁴ Joseph. Ant. xii. 3. 1.

⁵ Marsh's Michaelis, vol. ii. p. 39.

Obs. 1. It is generally supposed that the HELLLENISTS, mentioned in Acts vi. 1, were Greek Jews, who were utterly unacquainted with the Aramaic language of Judæa, and read the LXX version of the Scriptures in their peculiar synagogues. Although it may not be necessary to suppose that Jews born in foreign countries had entirely discarded their native language, it is certain that the Greek had so far superseded every other tongue as the medium of universal intercourse, as to have rendered a faithful version of their Scriptures highly essential. Thus also Josephus, who had written a history of the Jewish war in the language of his country, undertook a Greek version of the work with the assistance of some Greeks whom he knew in Rome, in order that foreigners, and, among them, *the Jews who dwell beyond the Euphrates*, might know what had happened.¹

2. The Greek, however, which had now become the common language, as it were, of the whole world, was perfectly distinct from each and every of those four great national dialects, which characterised the literature of the Grecian states during the æra of their independence. After the Macedonian conquest the *Attic* was indeed universally regarded as the only dialect adapted, from its inherent grace and elegance of diction, to the purposes of literary composition; but it was not to be expected that all writers would possess the same ability, or exert the same diligence, in forming their style after the most approved models. Thus, while some, as Lucian, Ælian, and Arrian, have written with the strictest attention to the purest examples of Attic diction, the far greater number have exhibited the utmost carelessness in this respect, introducing the idiomatic peculiarities of the other dialects, together with many words and significations which are not to be found in the ancient language. To this later speech, varying in its degree of approximation to Attic purity in the different writers who employed it, grammarians have given the name of *Common* or *Hellenic* (ἡ κοινὴ διάλεκτος, Ἑλληνικὴ); and it has been copiously illustrated by the Atticists, scholiasts, and lexicographers, who have set the pure Attic forms in opposition with those which were used by later writers.

3. Besides the change thus effected in the language of literature, the reduction of Greece under the dominion of a single conqueror produced a far greater revolution in the speech in general use among the people. Wherever the power of the Macedonians reached, their language was speedily introduced; but in Attica it would naturally be more strongly impregnated with Atticisms, in the Peloponnesus the Dorian peculiarities would prevail, and in the colonies, composed of settlers not

¹ Joseph. B. J. Proœm. § 1, et c. Apion, i. 9.

only from all the provinces of Greece, but from other conquered countries, something would be contributed from all the dialects, confused and mixed up with a variety of forms and idioms derived from foreign sources.

Obs. 2. Such forms as ἡβουλήθην, ἡμιλλαι, βούλιν, from the Attic; ἀφίωνται, from the Doric; the Æolic optative in -ια, and the Ionic aorist ἴπα, are found in the New Testament; to which may be added the imperf. 3 pl. in -σαν, the perf. 3 pl. in -αν, and a variety of other forms and inflexions which occur only in the later writers. See §§ 16. 17. 19.

4. The Jews of Palestine, who learned the Greek language from their countrymen settled in these colonies, and especially at Alexandria in Egypt, combined with it much that was characteristic of their own vernacular tongue. Their's was in fact a dialect founded upon the later Greek speech, as it was spoken after the times of Alexander the Great, but intermixed with numerous forms and expressions of a purely Oriental complexion, and wholly unintelligible to a native Greek. It was this *spoken* language, and not the style of *writing* employed by the learned, in which the books of the New Testament was composed, and of which the Alexandrian version of the Old Testament, the Apocryphal books of the Old and New Testaments, and the writings of the Apostolical Fathers, are the only other existing specimens.

Obs. 3. Such expressions, for instance, as ἀφίναι ὀφειλήματα, πρόσωπον λαμβάνειν, and others, would convey either an inaccurate idea, or no idea at all, to a native Greek. These, however, are lexicographical peculiarities.

Obs. 4. The sources from which a knowledge of the true character of *Sacred Hellenism*, or the Greek diction of the New Testament, may be accurately derived, are extremely limited; but, as much belonged to it in common with the later Greek of the κοινὴ διάλεκτος, the writings of those authors who wrote after the age of Alexander, and particularly Plutarch, Polybius, Diodorus Siculus, Artemidorus, Appian, Herodian, and the Byzantine historians, may be consulted with great advantage for the purpose of illustration. The nature and properties of the κοινὴ διάλεκτος have been diligently investigated and explained by Saumaise, Kirchmaier, Engberg, Benzel, and Sturz;¹ and its origin traced to the confusion of all the dialects of Greece after the conquest of Alexander, by the accurate and learned Planck.² Much also, which bears upon the subject, will be found in Lobeck's work on Phrynichus the grammarian.³

¹ Salmasii *Commentarius de lingua Hellenistica*, Lugd. Bat. 1643; G. G. Kirchmaieri *Dissertatio de dialecto Græcorum communi*, Viteb. 1709; And. Engbergii *Dissertatio de dialecto Hellenistica*, Hafn. 1714; H. Benzeli *Dissertatio de lingua Hellenistica*, Goth. 1734; F. G. Sturzii *de dialecto Macedonica et Alexandrina Liber*, Lips. 1809. This last is a work of great learning and extensive research.

² H. Planckii *de vera natura atque indole orationis Græcæ Nov. Test. Commentarius*, Gott. 1810. It has been several times reprinted.

³ *Phrynici Eclogæ nominum et verborum Atticorum. Cum notis Nunnesii, Hoerschelii, Scaligeri, et de Pauw, edidit et explicuit C. A. Lobeck*, Lips. 1820.

5. With respect to the character by which the Greek of the New Testament is distinguished, a great deal has been written to very little purpose. In the dissertation prefixed to his edition of the Greek Testament, published in 1576, H. STEPHENS denounced those critics, *qui in his scriptis inculta omnia et horrida esse putant*; and, though he admits the presence of Hebraisms to a certain extent, maintains the purity of diction, and even the Attic elegance, of the sacred style. Early in the seventeenth century a controversy arose, in which the saving qualification of Stephens, confined as it is within the narrowest limits, became the ground of contention. It was boldly asserted on the one hand, that the language of the Apostles was excellent Greek, altogether unadulterated by any foreign admixture; and as hardily affirmed on the other, that it was wholly and intrinsically Hebraistic.

Obs. 5. The contest was begun by *Sebastian Pfochen*¹ in 1629. He maintained the absolute purity of the New Testament Greek, and was followed on the same side by *J. Junge, Jac. Grosse, Erasmus Schmid, Sigismond Georgi, J. C. Schwarz, E. Palaiet, and others*. Their opponents were *D. Wulfer, J. Musæus, Thomas Gataker, John Vorstius, S. Werenfels, and John Leusden*. Passing over in silence whatever forms or expressions baffled all attempts to bring them within the scope of classical illustration, those who advocated the former position contented themselves with adducing such passages from the profane writers, and especially the poets, as exhibited any resemblance, however remote, to the Hebrew idiom; whilst the Hebraists went no further than simply to point out those usages, which either have no parallel whatsoever, or only a very imperfect counterpart, in Greek composition. Thus the whole controversy was for a long time exclusively directed to the Hebraistic complexion of the New Testament language; and even when a new turn was given to the contest by a class of writers, who adopted a middle course and admitted the Oriental character of the sacred diction, its true nature and origin were still entirely overlooked. These middle men, among whom were *J. H. Boecler, T. Gataker, Horace Vitranga, J. Olearius, J. Leusden, Solanus, J. H. Michaelis, and A. Blackwall*, did not indeed deny the Hebraisms of the New Testament, but affirmed that their presence was in nowise incompatible with the requisites of a pure and elegant Greek style; in which respect they maintained that the sacred penmen were not a whit inferior to the most approved authors of Attic Greece.² A somewhat similar opinion was also advanced by *D. Heinsius*, without reference to this particular controversy, in which, if the combatants did little to decide the matter in debate, they were by no means sparing of mutual abuse and scurrillity.

¹ In his *Diatribæ de Linguae Græcæ puritate*. Amst. 1629.

² The most important works connected with this controversy are the *Vindiciæ N. T. ab Hebraïsmis*, and the *Hierocriticus Sacer* of Georgi; Palaiet's *Observationes Phil. Crit. in N. Testamentum*; Th. Gataker's *De Novi Testamenti Stylo Dissertatio*; Vorstius, Leusden, and Olearius, *de Hebraïsmis*; and Blackwall's *Sacred Classics defended and illustrated*. See also Ernesti's *Institutes*, chap. 3, and Campbell's *Preliminary Dissertations* to his *Translation of the Gospels*. Most of the older writers on either side were collected by J. Rhenferd in his *Dissertationum Philol. Theol. de stylo N. T. Syntagma* (Leov. 1702), to which a Supplement was published by Van den Honert at Amsterdam in 1703.

Independently of such terms as *Simplicists*, *Purists*, *Hebraists*, *Mixturists*, Βιβλιομάστιγες, and *Hellenisticismifuges*,¹ by which the several parties designated each other, there were not wanting satires and lampoons to complete the apparatus of literary invective.²

6. Although the speculations of these controversialists fell infinitely wide of the truth, their researches in the cause of sacred philology have not been without their use. It is now very generally acknowledged that the basis of the New Testament language is the popular Greek speech which prevailed after the Macedonian conquest, combined with such Hebrew idioms and forms of construction, as the character and position of the sacred writers would naturally lead them to employ.³

Obs. 6. Had the Apostles and Evangelists written with the elegance of learned Athenians, the inconsistency of their style with the circumstances, in which they are known to have stood, would have detracted materially from the evidence in favour of the authenticity of their writings. There is no reason indeed to believe that either St. Luke or St. Paul were illiterate persons; nor was there anything in the humble condition of the other Apostles to prevent them from writing a language, which they had been in the habit of speaking from infancy, with grammatical accuracy; but, with relation to religious matters more especially, it would frequently be impossible to express themselves in genuine Greek. Consequently they were led either to coin new words, or employ those already at hand in new significations;⁴ and their Hebrew feelings and Hebrew education gave an Oriental turn to many of their sentiments. The Hebraisms of the New Testament are therefore for the most part of a *lexicographical* or *rhetorical* character; and it is exceedingly seldom that the *grammatical* construction departs from the later Greek usage. Abundant materials for illustration will therefore be found, on the one hand, in those writers who took the *Hebraizing* side of the question; and on the other, in those who maintained the Attic purity, whether absolute or modified, of the sacred penmen; since a great proportion of the examples adduced by them are derived from authors who wrote in the *common dialect*. The observations of *Elsner*, *Alberti*, *Kypke*, *Raphel*, and *Krebs*,⁵ are also readily available to the same purpose.

¹ See Georg. Hierocrit. *Sacer*, *passim*, and E. Schmidii *Not. ad N. T.*, pp. 1390, 1418.

² See a pamphlet entitled *Genius Seculi* (Altenb. 1760), pp. 125, *sqq.*; and another entitled *Somnium in quo præter cetera Genius Seculi cum moribus Eruditorum vapulat*, p. 97, *sqq.* (Altenb. 1761.)

³ Planck *de vera Orat. N. T.* § 1. Winer's *Sprachidioms*, Sect. 1 & 2.

⁴ To this class belong the technical significations affixed to such words as πίστις, ἔργα, δικαιῶσθαι, ἑλεῖν, κλητοί, πλητοί, ἄγιοι, &c.

⁵ J. Elsneri *Observationes Sacrae*, Traj. ad Rhen. 1720; J. Alberti *Observationes Philologicae in Sacros N. T. libros*, Lugd. Bat. 1725; G. Raphelii *Annotationes in S. S. ex Xenophonte, Polybio, Arriano, et Herodoto*, Lugd. Bat. 1747; Krebsii *Observationes e Josepho*; Kypkii *Observationes*, &c.

FIRST PART.

GRAMMATICAL FORMS.

WRITING AND PRONUNCIATION.

§ 3.—*Interchange of Letters.* (BUTTM. § 15 & seqq.)

A considerable difference seems to have prevailed in the manner of writing and pronouncing words according to the respective dialects of ancient Greece, of which vestiges are to be found in the books of the New Testament. In addition to the variations thence derived, and other more recent innovations introduced into the later speech, an orthography has been attributed to the Alexandrians entirely distinct and peculiar to themselves. According to this method of writing, adopted in certain manuscripts, it should seem that they interchanged certain letters with each other, as *αι* and *ε*, *ε* and *η*, *ι* and *ει*, *γ* and *κ*; that they omitted some which were necessary, and others which were superfluous; and neglected the various rules of euphony practised by the other Greeks.

Obs. 1. In illustration of these peculiarities examples have been adduced in such forms as *βασιλίαν, νύκταν, φθάνειν*, for *βασιλία, νύκτα, φθάνειν*; *γενήματα, δυσειβής*, for *γεννήματα, δυσσιβής*; *ἀναλημφθίς, ἀπεικτάγκασι, ἐγχώριον*, for *ἀναληφθίς, ἀπεικτάκασι, ἐγχώριον*; &c. &c. It is obvious to remark, however, that these forms are only found in a few Egyptian manuscripts,¹ which cannot be proved to have been written earlier than the sixth century; and, since almost all manuscripts follow the orthography of the country in which they were written, this particular mode of writing was undoubtedly introduced by their transcribers.²

Obs. 2. As instances of the various dialects, which occur in the New Testament, none can be safely adduced, of which the genuineness is not established by the concurring testimony of the best copies. Among these will be found numerous Atticisms; such as *ἀιστὸς* (Matt. xxiv. 28), for which the rest of the Greeks used *αἰστὸς*; *φιάλη* and *ῥαλος* (Rev. v. 8; xxi. 18), for which the Ionians and Dorians used *φίσλη* and *ῥίλος*.³ There is the Doric *κλίβανος* for *κρίβανος* (Matt. vi. 30);

¹ Principally the Codd. Alexandr. and Turicensis. Also Cod. Vatic.; Cod. Ephrem. Rescript.; Cod. Bezae, &c. See Hug's Introd. N. T.

² Sturzius de dialect. Alex. p. 116; Planck de orat. Gr. N. T. p. 25.

³ Thom. M. p. 862, and Hemsterhuis ad l. Mæris, pp. 18, 389; Etym. M. p. 51 49; Eustath. ad Il. A. p. 21. f.

καμύειν for καταμύειν (Matt. xiii. 15; Acts xxviii. 27); πανδοχεῖον for πανδοκίον (Luke x. 34); πιάζειν for πείζειν (John vii. 30).¹ Ionisms are less frequent; but St. Paul writes ἐπιφάειν for ἐπιφάειν (Eph. v. 14); βάθμος for βάσμος (1 Tim. iii. 13). See also Acts xxi. 35.²

Obs 3. Of the later orthography traces are readily discernible, though many changes have been made by the copyists and grammarians. In Matt. xxiii. 37, Luke xiii. 34, νοσσιὸν and νοσσιὰ still remain; and the best manuscripts have νοσσοῦς in Luke ii 24, where νιοσσοῦς, the Attic form, has been substituted.³ Many manuscripts, in uncial characters, read δίδραγμα for δίδραγμα, in Matt. xvii. 24, and a yet more remarkable instance is found in 1 Cor. xiii. 2, where very ancient manuscripts, and some of the Fathers, read οὐθὲν εἰμι, instead of the common reading οὐδέν.⁴

§ 4.—*Moveable final Letters.* (BUTTM. § 26.)

1. The Ν ἐφελκυστικὸν is not always thrown off in the manuscripts of the New Testament before words beginning with a consonant. Thus also ἔνεκεν is used before a consonant in Matt. v. 10, xix. 5, 2 Cor. iii. 10, and so in the LXX continually. See Gen. xviii. 28, Isa. v. 23, lix. 20, Jer. xxvi. 3.

Obs 1. Corrections have nevertheless been very generally made in the printed text. For example, Cod. Diez. gives ἤκουσιν φωνήν, in Acts ix. 4; and ἀπήγαγεν κελύσας, in Acts xxiv. 7.

2. There is also a considerable want of uniformity in the insertion of the final *ς* at the end of the adverbs οὕτω, μέχρι, and ἄχρι, before words beginning with a vowel; and the *ν* is continually rejected from adverbs ending in *θεν*.⁵

Obs 2. In Matt. xxiv. 38, Luke i. 20, ἄχρι ἧς still holds its place in the text; but elsewhere the manuscripts have ἄχρισ, even before a consonant, though the editions in general omit the final *ς*. See Luke xxi. 24, Acts xiii. 6, Rom. v. 13, viii. 22, Gal. iv. 2. In Acts xxvii. 33 a few manuscripts have ἄχρισ οὐ, without the particle *δι*.

§ 5.—*Hiatus—Contraction—Crisis—Apostrophus.* (BUTTM. § 28—30.)

1. The Greeks in general, and the Attic writers more especially, carefully avoided the harshness of sound produced by the concurrence of two vowels, whether in the middle of a word, or at the end of one word followed by another beginning with a vowel; and the *hiatus* was remedied by *Contraction*, by *Crisis*, and by the *Apostrophus* or *Elision*.

¹ Phrynich. pp. 76, 134; Thom. M. pp. 554. 676; Athen. iii. p. 110, C; Gregor. de dial. p. 165; Etym. M. p. 671, 30.

² Phrynich. p. 142; Thom. M. p. 46.

³ Sturz. de dial. Alex. p. 185; Fischeri Prolusiones de vitiis N. T. p. 676.

⁴ Phrynich. p. 76, Οὐθὲν δὲ τοῦ θ' εἰ καὶ Χρύσιππος καὶ οἱ ἄμφ' αὐτὸν οὕτω λέγουσι, σὺ δὲ ἀποστρίπτου λέγεις· οἱ γὰρ ἀρχαῖοι διὰ τοῦ θ' λέγουσιν οὐδεῖς. See Planck *ubi supra*.

⁵ See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 41; Lobeck ad Phryn. pp. 14. 284.

2. The *contractions* which are usual in other writers prevail in the New Testament. There are a few deviations in the plural of certain nouns ; but the usage is not constant. Thus we have ὅσ τεα, ὀστέων, for ὀσ τᾶ, ὀσ τῶν, in Matt. xxiii. 27, Luke xxiv. 39, Eph. v. 30, Heb. xi. 22 ; ὀρέων, for ὀρεῶν, in Rev. vi. 15. So also χειλέων, in Heb. xiii. 15 ; but χείλη, in Rom. iii. 13.

Obs. 1. The uncontracted forms, however, are not uncommon even in Attic writers. See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 69, *Obs. 1*, § 78, *Obs. 7*, and add Eur. Hec. 1071, Plat. Phæd. p. 728, Aristot. Probl. 26, 25. Examples also occur of the forms δῖι, δῖιται, ἔχιν, ἔπλιν, &c. ; but they are by no means either uniform or predominant. Thus in Luke viii. 38, ἰδίετο for ἰδιῦτο ; John ii. 15, Acts ii. 33, Tit. iii. 6, ἐξίχι for ἐξίχι. So Gen. xi. 9, LXX, συνίχι. On the other hand, Matt. ix. 17, Mark ii. 22, ἐκχῦται ; John iii. 8, πνῖ ; Acts xviii. 18, ἐξίπλι ; xxi. 20, ἐξίχιτο ; xxiii. 11, διῖ ; xxvii. 2, πλῖν.

3. In the New Testament *Crases* are of less constant usage than in Attic Greek, and are confined to those which are effected with καὶ, or the neuter article. Matt. v. 23, Mark i. 35, Acts xiv. 7, καὶ κεῖ ; Matt. x. 32, 33, καὶ γὰρ ; xv. 18, xx. 4, καὶ κεῖνος ; xxi. 21, καὶ ν ; (Mark x. 12, καὶ ἐάν ;) Luke i. 3, καὶ μοί ; (Gal. ii. 8, καὶ ἐμοί ;) John vii. 28, καὶ μέ ; Matt. xxvii. 57, τοῦ νομα ; Gal. ii. 7, τοῦ ἀντιον.¹

4. The same prepositions, particles, and other words ordinarily suffer elision in the New Testament as in the Attic writers ; but the neglect of the Apostrophus, as exhibited in manuscripts and editions, is very frequent, and altogether arbitrary. Among a multiplicity of instances, we find in Matt. ii. 1, ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν ; vii. 9, ὑπὸ ἐξουσίαν ; xxi. 22, πάντα ὅσα ἂν ; Mark ii. 17, ἀλλ' οἱ κακῶς, ἀλλὰ ἁμαρτωλοὺς ; vii. 5, 6, ἔπειτα ἐπειρωτῶσιν, ἀλλὰ ἀνίπτοις, ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς ; xi. 33, οὐδὲ ἐγώ. See also Luke xix. 42, John i. 3, vi. 29, xi. 53, Acts xx. 25, 1 Cor. x. 29, xv. 11, Col. iv. 17. Again, the Alexandrian manuscript has ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέων in Luke iii. 2 ; μετὰ αἰσχύνης, Luke xiv. 9 ; and two Vienna manuscripts have ἀλλὰ ἀληθείας, Acts xxv. 25.

Obs. 2. A remarkable instance of this uncertainty occurs in 2 Cor. vii. 11, where the printed editions have ἀλλὰ ἀπολογίαν, ἀλλὰ ἀγανάκτησιν, but ἀλλ' ἐκδίκησιν. Doubts seem to have existed respecting the word χρηστὰ, in 1 Cor. xv. 33 ; but as it occurs in a regular Iambic *senarius* cited from Menander, the true reading must be χρέσθ'. The LXX, Josephus, and the early Fathers, present the same irregularities. Thus, Gen. xvii. 22, ἀπὸ Ἀβραάμ ; xviii. 15, ἀλλὰ ἐγὼ γέλασας ; Joseph. Ant. iv. 6. 2, ἀπὸ Εὐφράτου ; Iren. Hær. iii. 3, ὑπὸ ἀποστόλων. In the manuscripts of the New Testament the particles ἄρα, ἴτα, ἴτι, ἴνα, never suffer elision.

¹ Leusden de Dialect. N, T. c. l. p. 14.

Obs. 3. From the very general neglect of the *Apostrophus* in Ionic writers, examples of similar usage in the New Testament have been called *Ionisms*.¹

DECLENSION.

§ 6.—*First Declension.* (BUTTM. § 34.)

The terminations and genders of this declension are the same in the New Testament as in Attic Greek.

Obs. 1. There is a solitary deviation from the Attic rule, which forms the genitive of nouns ending in *a* pure, or *ρα*, in *ας*, in the case of the substantive *σπιῖρα*, of which the genitive *σπίρης* is found in Acts x. 1, xxi. 31, xxvii. 1.

Obs. 2. Proper names of this declension, ending in *ας*, make the genitive, with very few exceptions, in *α*, instead of *ου*: Luke iii. 27, 'Ιωαννᾶ; 30, 'Ιουδα; 31, Μελιᾶ; 35, Σάλα; xiii. 29, Rev. xxi. 13, Βορρᾶ; Luke xvi. 9, Μαμμωνᾶ; John viii. 13, Καϊάφα; xix. 25, Κλωπᾶ; xxi. 15, Matt. xii. 39. 41, 'Ιωνᾶ Acts xi. 30, xv. 12, Col. iv. 10, Βαρνάβα; Acts xix. 14, Σκιυᾶ; 1 Cor. i. 12, Κηφᾶ; i. 16, xvi. 15, Στεφανᾶ; 2 Cor. xi. 32, 'Αρίτα; Col. i. 7, 'Επαφρᾶ; 2 Thess. ii. 9, Rev. iii. 9, Σατανᾶ. The regular form occurs in Matt. i. 6, Οὐρίου; Luke iii. 3, Ζαχαρίου; Luke iv. 17, Acts xxviii. 28, 'Ησαῖου; Luke iv. 25, 'Ηλίου; John i. 45, 'Ανδρίου. In the Fathers, and later writers generally, the termination *α* is continually recognised. Thus Origen c. Cels. i. p. 7, Πυθαγόρα; Phot. Bibl. n. 254, Νίεβα.²

Obs. 3. Many proper names in *-ας* seem to be popular abbreviations; as Σίλας (Acts xv. 32), for Σιλουανός (1 Thess. i. 1). In like manner 'Ανας (Luke iii. 3) is perhaps the same as 'Ανανίας (Acts xxiii. 2); Λουκᾶς and Δημᾶς (Col. iv. 14) the same as Λούκιος (Acts xiii. 1, Rom. xvi. 21) and Δήμαρχος or Δημήτριος.³

Obs. 4. Names of dignities, compounded of the verb ἄρχειν, are formed in the earlier writers after the second declension; but in the New Testament they principally belong to the first. Thus Matt. xiv. 1, Luke iii. 19, ix. 7, τετραρρχης; Acts vii. 8, 9, τοὺς πατριάρχας; x. 1. 22, ἑκατοντάρχης; xxiv. 23, xxvii. 2. 31, ἑκατοντάρχη;⁴ xxviii. 16, στρατοπιδάρχη; 2 Cor. xi. 32, ἐθνάρχης. There is, however, no uniformity of declension, for ἑκατόνταρχος repeatedly occurs, as in Matt. viii. 5. 8, Luke vii. 6, Acts xxviii. 16, and elsewhere; and χιλίαρχος is declined solely after the second declension. Neither is the usage of the Attic writers altogether constant; but, as a rule, they adopted the termination in *ος*, and later authors that in *ης*. Hence Gen. xli. 34, Dan. ii. 3, τοπάρχης; 2 Macc. xii. 2, Κυπριάρχης; xiv. 12, ἐλσιφαντάρχης; Joseph. Ant. i. 13. 4, γινάρχης; xix. 5. 1, ἀλαβάρχης; Euseb. V. Const. iv. 63, ταξιάρχης. This was also the form which the Latins followed. Cic. Epist. Att. ii. 17, *Abelarches*; Auctor Hist. Bell. Alex. c. 67, *Tetrarches*; Spartian. v. Hadrian. c. 13, *Toparcha*; Tertull. de Anim. c. vii. 55, *Patriarcha*; Cod. Theodos. xv. 9. 2, *Asiarcha*. Of course the genitive case, whether singular or plural, is doubtful; as 'Ασιδρχων, Acts xix. 31.⁵

¹ Georgii Hierocrit. i. 3. 9; Wyssii Dialect. Sacr. p. 17.

² See Alt. Gram. N. T. § 6.

³ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 433; Winer's Sprachidioms, § 2, 23. Another form of abbreviation is Σώπατος, for Σωσίπατρος. Compare Acts xx. 4; Rom. xvi. 21.

⁴ Parkhurst gives ἑκατοντάρχης, κιος, according to the third declension. See Lex. in v. This must have been an oversight.

⁵ Alt. Gr. Gr. § 5; Poppo ad Xen. Cyr. ii. 1. 22.

Obs. 5. With respect to *declension* in general (Buttm. § 33.), and *conjugation* also, it may be observed that the *Dual* number, which is very rarely used by the later Greek writers, is never employed in the New Testament. Hence the plural is used in the strict sense of the dual in Rev. xii. 14, *καιρὸν καὶ καιροὺς καὶ ἡμισυ καιροῦ*, *three times and a half*.

§ 7.—*Second Declension.* (BUTTM. § 35—37.)

In the flexion of nouns the remains of the ancient dialects, which occur in the New Testament, are exclusively Attic; in accordance with which the nominative *θεὸς* is always used, with a single exception, for the vocative. This exception is Matt. xxvii. 46, where the vocative *θεὲ* is employed in rendering the words from Ps. xxii. 1, which were uttered by Christ upon the cross. In the parallel place, Mark xv. 34, the nominative is used. There is also an example of the vocative *θεὲ* in Judg. xxi. 3, LXX.

Obs. 1. Of contracted nouns of this declension, both the uncontracted and contracted forms occur indiscriminately. See § 5. 2.

Obs. 2. Proper names of the Attic second declension ending in *ως*, as *Ἀπολλῶς* (Acts xviii. 24) commonly omit the final *ν* in the accusative. See Acts xix. 1, 1 Cor. iv. 6. Some manuscripts also have *Κῶ*, for *Κῶν*, in Acts xxi. 1.

§ 8.—*Third Declension.* (BUTTM. 38. et seqq.)

With respect to the gender and inflection of nouns of this declension, the ordinary grammatical rules are applicable throughout to the usage of the New Testament. The following observations may, however, be subjoined:—

Obs. 1. Some manuscripts and editions have the Attic accusative *κλειῶν* from *κλειῷς*, in Rev. iii. 7, xx. 1; but *κλειῶδα* is perhaps the correct reading, as in Luke xi. 52. The plural *κλειῷς*, for *κλειῶδας*, occurs in Matt. xvi. 19, Rev. i. 18. In like manner we find *ἱεῖς* in 2 Cor. xii. 20, Gal. v. 20, Tit. iii. 9; but *ἱεῖδες*, uncontracted, in 1 Cor. i. 11.¹ (Buttm. § 44, 2, and *Obs. 1.*)

Obs. 2. In the contracted declension, nouns ending in *υς* and *υ* did not contract the genitive, either in the singular or the plural, except in the later writers; and thus *ἡμῖσους* occurs in Mark vi. 23; *πηχῶν* in John xxi. 8, Rev. xxi. 17. So also the neuter plural *ἡμίση*, in Luke xix. 8, of which the Attic form, whether adjective or substantive, is *ἡμίσια* without contraction.² (Buttm. § 51. *Obs. 5.*)

Obs. 3. According to the old grammarians, the accusative plural of nouns in *-ιὺς* was not contracted by the Attics from *-ίας* into *-ιῶς*. This assertion is made with too great confidence; and it is impossible to refer such contractions exclusively to the later writers. As examples, we have *γονεῖς*, Matt. x. 21, Luke ii. 27; *γραμματεῖς*, Matt. xxiii. 34.³ (Buttm. § 52. *Obs. 1.*)

¹ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 460; Passov. Lex. in v. *κλείς*; Alt. Gr. Gr. § 8, 5.

² Phrynich. (ed. Lobeck, p. 452,) *ἀμαρτανούσιν οἱ τὰ ἡμίση λίγοντες, καὶ οὐ τὰ ἡμίσια*. See also Lobeck ad p. 78; Fischer, Prolus. p. 666.

³ Fischer, Prolus. p. 663.

Obs. 4. Nouns ending in -ης, with a vowel before it, usually contract the termination -ία of the accusative into ᾶ; but the form ἰγυῖν, which is found constantly in Plato, occurs in John v. 11, 15, Tit. ii. 8.¹ (Buttm. § 53, 1.)

Obs. 5. Of neuters in -ας, the Attic contraction of the dative occurs in γήρα, from γήρας, in Luke i. 36. Griesbach, indeed, upon the authority of certain manuscripts, has admitted the Ionic form γήρει into the text, but without due consideration. In the plural, κίρας and τίρας are universally uncontracted in the New Testament, contrary to the Attic usage.² See Acts ii. 43, v. 12; Rom. xv. 19; Rev. v. 6, ix. 13, xiii. 11, xvii. 12. The contracted accusative κεία, from κείας, is found in Rom. xiv. 21, 1 Cor. viii. 13. (Buttm. § 54.)

§ 9.—*Anomalous Declension.* (BUTTM. § 56.)

1. There are many nouns which have more than one form of inflection, or are declined in a different way from that which the nominative indicates. Of these the New Testament is not without its examples: as, for instance, the accusative ναῦν, from the Attic nominative ναῦς, in Acts xxvii. 41,³ and some others.

Obs. 1. Perhaps the substantive ναῦς, as inflected by the writers of the New Testament, can scarcely be classed with nouns *abundantia casibus*, as it invariably follows the form of the third declension. Thus the genitive ναός occurs in Rom. xii. 2, 1 Cor. xiv. 19, Eph. iv. 17, 23, Col. ii. 18, and the dative ναὶ in Rom. vii. 25, 1 Cor. i. 10, xiv. 15. The same may be said of πλοῦς, of which the genitive πλοῦς is found in Acts xxvii. 9. Examples of this mode of inflection, which is peculiar to the later writers, may be seen continually in Simplicius, Philo, and the ecclesiastical Fathers.⁴

2. By *metaplasmus*, the dative plural of σάββατον is always σάββασι, after the form of the third declension. See Matt. xii. 1, 10, 11, 12, Mark i. 21, Luke iv. 31. So also in Joseph. B. J. i. 7. 3, Ant. xiii. 8. 4, and elsewhere.

Obs. 2. The proper form σαββάταις is found in Numb. xxvii. 10; 2 Chron. ii. 4, LXX; Joseph. Ant. xi. 8. 6. In other writers, πρόβασι is frequently used for προβάταις; but although the noun occurs repeatedly in the New Testament, it is never employed in the dative plural.

3. Of *neuters plural* in -α, from *masc.* in -ος, St. Luke uses τὰ δεσμὰ in Acts xvi. 26, xx. 23, xxii. 30, xxiii. 29, and elsewhere. St. Paul has the Ionic δεσμοὶ in Phil. i. 13.⁵ The plural τὰ σῆτα occurs in Acts vii. 12.

Obs. 3. Not only in the form and inflection, but in the *genders* of nouns, there were frequent varieties in the ancient dialects; and peculiarities of this kind are observable in the New Testament, in accordance with the usage of the later writers. They made βῆτος, a bush or bramble, masculine; but in the New Testament it is

¹ Heindorf ad Plat. Charmid. p. 64.

² Morris, pp. 306, 369, Thom. M. p. 540.

³ Planck, de Orat. Gr. N. T. ii. 3.

⁴ Fischer ad Weller, ii. p. 181; Herodian, Herm. p. 33.

⁵ Schleusner and Bretschneider in v.

always found in the feminine, and so also in the writers of the later epoch. See Mark xii. 26; Luke vi. 44, xx. 37; Acts vii. 35; Theophr. H. Plant. iii. 18; Dioscorid. iv. 37.¹ There is little doubt that in Luke xv. 14 the true reading is *λίμης* *ισχυρῆς*, and in Acts xi. 28, *λίμην μεγάλην*, according to the best manuscripts, although *ισχυρῆς* and *μέγαν* are still retained in the printed text. If the masculine adjectives be genuine, it is impossible to account for the introduction of the feminine into so many copies; whereas *ἡ λίμης*, which is Doric, seems to have been adopted into the later tongue.² Generally, *σκότος* occurs in the neuter (Matt. iv. 16, vi. 23, viii. 12; but in Heb. xii. 18 it is masculine. Both forms were also in use among the Attics. There is also a feminine noun *σκοτία* (Matt. x. 27; John vi. 17, xx. 1) which is peculiar to the Doric dialect.³ In Attic, *ἄλος* is feminine; in Rev. xxi. 18 it is masculine. The word *ληνὴς* is feminine in Rev. xix. 15, and masc. in Gen. xxx. 37, 42, LXX. Hence some would account for the remarkable reading in Rev. xiv. 19, *τὴν ληνὴν τὸν μέγαν*, for which *τὴν μεγάλην* now stands.⁴ Besides these variations of gender, which accord with one or other of the ancient dialects, it is remarkable that the noun *ἔλαιος*, which is masculine in all the Greek writers, is neuter in the New Testament and in the LXX. See Luke i. 50, 78, Rom. ix. 23, 1 Pet. i. 3, and compare Gen. xix. 9, Numb. xi. 15, LXX. So also in the writings of the Fathers.⁵

§ 10.—Declension of Hebrew-Greek Proper Names.

1. To the head of *Anomalous Declension* may be referred a large proportion of the proper names which occur in the New Testament. Many of them, indeed, though derived from the Hebrew, are declined in Greek after the first declension, except that they make the genitive in *α*, instead of *ου*, as before mentioned in § 6. But others have a more simple form of inflection, changing the final *ς* of the nominative into *ν* in the accusative, and rejecting it altogether in the other cases, which are all alike. (Buttm. § 56. 1. *Obs.* 1.) To this class belong,

1. Nom. Ἰησοῦς (Matt. i. 16)
Gen. Dat. Voc. Ἰησοῦ (Matt. i. 1, xxvi. 17; Mark i. 24,
Acc. Ἰησοῦν (Matt. xxvi. 4, Acts xx. 21).⁶
2. Nom. Λευὶς or Λευὶ (Luke v. 29; Heb. vii. 9)
Gen. Λευὶ (Luke iii. 24, Heb. vii. 5)
Dat. Λευὶ
Acc. Λευὶν (Mark ii. 14).⁷

¹ Schol. ad Theocr. Idyl. i. 132; Planck, de Orat. N. T. ii. 4.

² Valcknaer's Specim. Annot. Crit. in N. T. p. 383; Fischer, Prolus. p. 672, Planck, *ubi supra*.

³ Passov. Lex. in v. *σκότος*; Sturz. de Dial. Mac. et Alex. p. 151; Fischer, Prolus. p. 673. In a very few manuscripts, *πλεῖστος* is neuter in Eph. ii. 7, iii. 8, 16; Phil. iv. 19; Col. ii. 2.

⁴ See Lobbeck ad Phryn. p. 188.

⁵ Planck, *ubi supra*.

⁶ The Egyptian name *Θαμῶς*, which occurs in Plat. Plat. l. p. 274, is declined in the same manner. See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 70. *Obs.* 8.

⁷ Nom. Λευὶ, dat. Λευὶ, in Joseph. Ant. i. 19, 7, ii. 7, 4.

3. Nom. Ἰωσῆς (Matt. xiii. 55)
 Gen. Ἰωσῆ (Matt. xxvii. 56)
 Dat. Ἰωσῆ
 Acc. Ἰωσῆν.

Obs. 1. There is an exception to the rule in the name *Μανασσῆς*, gen. *Μανασσῆ* (Rev. vii. 6), which makes *Μανασσῆ* also in the accusative (Matt. i. 10). The name of the Hebrew lawgiver, *Μωσῆς*, or *Μωϋσῆς*, has an heteroclite inflection somewhat similar to the Greek name *Σωκράτης*. Some grammarians have imagined an obsolete form *Μωσιϋς*, from which the cases are formed in the same manner as *ὕϊας*, *ὕϊα*, from the old nominative *ὕϊύς*.¹ Not only is this form altogether unknown, but the genitive *Μωσίως* is expressly referred to the nominative *Μωσῆς* in John vii. 22. Josephus, however, and the LXX adhere to the above mode of declension, except that the gen. *Μωσίως* is sometimes used by the former. In the New Testament it is thus declined:—

Nom. <i>Μωσῆς</i> ,	or	<i>Μωϋσῆς</i> (Luke ix. 30; Acts vi. 15, vii. 37)
Gen. <i>Μωσίως</i>		<i>Μωϋσίως</i> (Mark xii. 26; Acts xv. 1. 5)
Dat. <i>Μωσιῖ</i> and <i>Μωσῆ</i>		<i>Μωϋσιῖ</i> (Luke ix. 33; Matt. xvii. 4; 2 Tim. iii. 8)
Acc. <i>Μωσία</i> and <i>Μωσῆν</i>		<i>Μωϋσῆν</i> (Luke xvi. 29; Acts vi. 11, vii. 35).

2. Female names assume the form of feminine nouns of the first declension.

Obs. 2. There are a few exceptions, as *Δόρυς* (Acts ix. 36), *Λωίς* (2 Tim. i. 5); and some are undeclined, as *Ἰεζαβήλ*, in Rev. ii. 20. In the instance of *Μαρία*, -ας, an indeclinable form, *Μαριάμ*, also occurs frequently, as in Matt. i. 20, Rom. xvi. 6, and elsewhere.

3. A few Hebrew-Greek names are declined after the third declension. Thus *Σολομών* (Matt. i. 7), gen. *Σολομῶντος* (John x. 23, Acts iii. 11), acc. *Σολομῶντα* (Matt. i. 6). The manuscripts vary between *Σολομῶντος* and *-ῶνος*, but either form is in accordance with ordinary Greek usages.² In Matt. xi. 24, Luke iv. 26, *Σιδῶν*, *-ῶνος*, is an example of the latter form.

Obs. 3. A great proportion of Hebrew proper names, which might readily be declined in the same manner, are undeclined in the New Testament: for instance, *Ἰεριχὼ*, gen. and acc. (Matt. xx. 29, Luke xx. 30); *Ἀαζών*, gen. (Luke i. 5, Heb. vii. 11); *Μανουήλ* and *Ἀσῆς*, gen. (Luke ii. 36); *Ναθαναήλ*, acc. (John i. 46); *Ἰωήλ*, gen. (Acts ii. 16); *Ἐμμέρς*, gen. (Acts vii. 16); *Ἰσραήλ*, gen. (Rom. ix. 6, 22); *Βάαλ*, dat. (Rom. xi. 4); *Σιών*, gen. and dat. (Rom. xi. 26, ix. 33). Many other instances will be found in the genealogies in Matt. i. 1, sqq., Luke iii. 23, sqq.

Obs. 4. It is worthy of remark that many Hebrew names which are undeclined in the New Testament, are declined by the LXX and the later Greek writers. Thus, in the dative, *τῷ Μελχίᾳ*, *τῷ Ἀβίαῳ*, 1 Chron. xxiv. 9, 10. From *Ἰεριχὼ* the gen. and acc. *Ἰεριχοῦντος*, -τα, occur in Strabo and Fabricius;³ and Josephus declines *Ἰσραῆλ*, -ου, after the second declension. Epiphanius (Hær. ii. p. 19) declines the appellative *τὰ πάσχα* as a neuter plural; whereas in the New Testament it is always

¹ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 68; Matt. Gr. Gr. § 91. 1.

² Thus we have *Ξινοφῶν*, *-ῶντος*, and *Ποσειδῶν*, *-ῶνος*.

³ This noun was also inflected after the second declension; for we meet with the gen. *Ἰεριχοῦ* in 3 Esdr. v. 44, and dat. *Ἰεριχῶ* in Procop. *de Ædificiis*.

an indeclinable noun in the singular: as in Luke ii. 41, τοῦ πάσχα. It may be doubtful whether σίκερα, in Luke i. 15, is declinable or otherwise. The LXX treat it as undeclinable in Numb. vi. 3, ἀπὸ οἴνου καὶ σίκερα. On the other hand, the genitive σίκερος is found in Euseb. Præp. Ev. vi. 10.¹ For Σινᾶ, which is undeclined in the LXX as well as in the New Testament, Josephus employs τὸ Σιναιῶν, with ὄρος sometimes expressed, and sometimes understood. See Ant. ii. 13. 2, iii. 5. 1. As an opposite example, Σαρωνᾶς, which follows the first declension in Acts ix. 35, is the same with Σάρων, undeclined, in Isai. xxxiii. 9, xxxv. 2. LXX. In the Latin Fathers the Hebrew proper names are very commonly undeclined.

§ 11.—*Defectives and Indeclinables.* (BUTTM. § 57.)

1. Many nouns in the New Testament which are used in the *plural*, though a single object only is designated, may probably be regarded as *defective*, though the reference is, it should seem, to the several parts of which the object consists: as in Matt. v. 16, οἱ οὐρανοί, *the heavens*, of which the Jews reckoned *three* (2 Cor. xii. 2); viii. 11, ἀνατολαὶ καὶ δυσμαί, *the east and west*, i. e. the countries so situated; Heb. i. 2, οἱ αἰῶνες, *the worlds*, or the universe;² ix. 24, τὰ ἅγια, *the temple*, as consisting of three parts. Thus also Matt. xx. 21, ἐκ δεξιῶν, ἐξ εὐωνυμῶν, which include the entire *right* and *left* sides of the body; and in like manner, Luke xvi. 23, ἐν τοῖς κόλποις, John i. 13, ἐξ αἱμάτων. To this head may also be referred τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα, in 2 Tim. iii. 16; the names of certain festivals which lasted several days, as τὰ ἄζυμα, γενέσια, ἐγκαίνια (Matt. xxvi. 17, Mark vi. 21, John x. 22);³ and of some cities, as Ἀθηναί, Φίλιπποι, &c.

Obs. 1. Although τὰ σάββατα in the plural denotes not only a *week* or period of seven days (Matt. xxviii. 1, Mark xvi. 2, Luke xxiv. 1, John xx. 1. 19, Acts xx. 7, 1 Cor. xvi. 2), but also the *Sabbath day* (Luke iv. 16, Acts xiii. 24, xvi. 13, xvii. 2), the usage doubtless originated in the former meaning. Thus Joseph. Ant. iii. 10. 1, ἑβδομὴ ἡμέρα, ἥτις σάββατα καλεῖται. Some have thought the word not so much a real plural as a mere imitation of the Aramæan שַׁבְּתַיִם; but its occurrence in the oblique cases (Mark i. 21, ii. 23), independently of its easy reference to this class of nouns, renders this supposition entirely inadmissible.⁴

2. Several *indeclinables*, as τὸ πάσχα, and the names of letters, ἄλφα, ὤμεγα, ἰῶτα, occur in the New Testament. There are also, besides those already adduced (§ 10), many other in-

¹ See Passov. Lex. in v.

² The usage is the same as in the Hebrew עֲלֵמִים.

³ There is the same usage in the Latin *Saturnalia*, *Lupercalia*, &c. Josephus (Ant. xii. 7. 7) uses τὰ φῶτα for τὰ ἐγκαίνια.

⁴ Winer's *Sprachidiomz*, § 27. 2, 3; Alt, Gram. N. T. § 24. 2, 3.

declinable names from the Hebrew; such as Βηθλεὲμ, Ναζαρέτ (Matt. ii. 6. 23), Ἀβιά (Luke i. 5), Σιλωὰμ (Luke xiii. 2), Κανὰ (John ii. 1. 11, iv. 46, xxi. 2); Βηθεσδὰ (John v. 2), Συχὲμ (Acts vii. 16), Μαδιάμ (Acts vii. 29), Σινᾶ (Acts vii. 30. 38, Gal. iv. 24. 25), &c. &c.

Obs. 2. In addition to the indeclinable form Ἱερουσαλὴμ (Matt. xxiii. 37, Mark xi. 1, Gal. iv. 25), the *neuter plural* Ἱεροσόλυμα, -ῶν, is very generally used; and so Σόδομα, -ων, in Matt. x. 15, xi. 23, Rev. xi. 8. Some commentators understand a third form, regarding Ἱεροσόλυμα in Matt. ii. 3 as the *nom. sing.* of a *feminine* noun; but it is far more probable that πᾶσα agrees with πόλις understood. At the same time Γόμορρά is declined both as a *fem. sing.* and a *neut. plural*. Compare Matt. x. 15, 2 Pet. ii. 6.

Obs. 3. The formula expressive of Christ's eternity, ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος, assumes the character of an indeclinable noun in Rev. i. 4, *et alibi*.

§ 12.—Of the Adjectives. (BUTTM. § 59—64.)

The declension of *Adjectives* in the New Testament presents very little variation from the ordinary usage. It is merely necessary to remark that compound adjectives in -ος, and those in -ιος, which are derived from substantives (Buttm. § 60. 4. and *Obs. 3.*) are not always *common* in the New Testament. Thus ἀργὸς is formed with a feminine termination in the verse of Epimenides, cited in Tit. i. 12, Κρῆτες ἀεὶ ψευσταὶ, κακὰ θηρία, γαστέρες ἀργαί. We have also in 2 Thess. ii. 16, παράκλησιν αἰωνίαν. Heb. ix. 12, αἰωνίαν λύτρωσιν. On the other hand, ὁσιος, which has almost universally three terminations,¹ is common in 1 Tim. ii. 8, ἐπαίροντας ὁσίους χεῖρας. To refer ὁσίους to ἄνδρας in the preceding clause, is extremely harsh; and the various reading, ὁσίας, is but weakly supported.

Obs. Griesbach would also read ἴρις ὁμοιος, instead of ὁμοία, in Rev. iv. 3, upon very good authority.²

§ 13.—Of the Degrees of Comparison. (BUTTM. § 65 et seqq.)

1. The New Testament writers follow the ordinary rules in forming the degrees of comparison; though a few later forms are also observable.

Obs. 1. The comparative of ταχὺς is ταχίων in the New Testament, not the more Attic form θάσσων, or θάττων.³ See John xiii. 27, xx. 4, 1 Tim. iii. 14, Heb. xiii. 19, 23. (Buttm. § 67. 3.)

¹ Matthiæ (Gr. Gram. § 118.) says *always*; but there is an exception, if genuine, in Plat. Legg. viii. p. 831. D.

² Alt, Gram. N. T. § 7.

³ Fisch. Prolus. p. 672. Phryn. p. 76.

Obs. 2. Of superlatives, which have no regular positive, there is a new instance in the form *σιτιστός*, which is not employed by the more ancient Greeks.¹ Herodian. p. 473. *σιτιστοὺς ὄρνιθας, οὓς νῦν σιτιστοὺς λέγουσι.* The word occurs in Matt. xxii. 4, and in Joseph. Ant. viii. 2. 4, Athen. xiv. p. 656. E. It is formed from the obsolete adjective *σιτός*,² or probably from the substantive corresponding to it. (Buttm. § 69, 3, and *Obs. 1.*)

Obs. 3. New forms of comparison sprung up rapidly in the later speech; of which two only are found in the New Testament. In Eph. iii. 8 we have the new comparative *ἱλαχιστότερος*, from the superlative *ἱλάχιστος*; and *μειζότερος* from the comparative *μίζων*, in 3 John 4.³ (Buttm. § 69. 3. *Obs. 3.*)

Obs. 4. The *positive* is put with *μᾶλλον* for the *comparative* in Mark ix. 42, *καλὸν ἔστιν αὐτῷ μᾶλλον εἰ, κ. τ. λ.* This adverb is also frequently put with the *comparative*, thereby forming a sort of *double comparative*; as in Mark vii. 36, 2 Cor. vii. 13, *μᾶλλον περισσότιμον.* And, with a yet greater degree of emphasis, in Phil. i. 23, *πολλῷ μᾶλλον κρείσσον.* The Latins also have a like usage. Thus Plaut. Men. v. 4. 22, *Magis dulcius.*

2. There are some modes of expressing a *superlative* in the New Testament which indicate a Hebrew origin. Thus a *subst.* is sometimes repeated in the *genitive*; as in Heb. ix. 3, *ἅγια ἁγίων, the Holy of Holies*, i. e. the most holy place. Rev. xix. 16, *βασιλεὺς βασιλέων καὶ κύριος κυρίων.* Precisely similar is 1 Tim. vi. 15, *ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν βασιλευόντων, καὶ κύριος τῶν κυριευόντων.* So in Levit. xxiii. 32, *σάββατα σαββάτων.*

Obs. 5. A similar form is also used to imply *eternity*: as in Luke i. 50, *εἰς γενιάς γενιῶν*, Gal. i. 5, 1 Tim. i. 17, Rev. i. 6. 18, *εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.* In 2 Pet. iii. 18, it is *εἰς ἡμέραν αἰῶνος.* The Hebrews expressed the same idea by a *copula*, *εἰς γενιὰν καὶ γενιάν.* There is an analogous repetition of the same word to express *continuity* in 2 Cor. iv. 16, *ἀνακαινοῦνται ἡμέρα καὶ ἡμέρα.*⁴

Obs. 6. It is also according to the Hebrew idiom that the *name of God* is frequently used, with or without an adjective, to denote some *superlative* quality of an object. See Gen. xxii. 6, Exod. iii. 1, 1 Sam. xiv. 15, Cant. viii. 6, Isai. xxviii. 2, xxiv. 1. It will be observed however, that the usage obtains only with the names of real substances, or visible effects, and never with *abstract nouns*; so that it is improperly applied by some commentators in such cases as the following: 2 Cor. i. 12, *ἐν εὐκρινείᾳ Θεοῦ, the sincerity which God approves*, not *perfect sincerity*: Col. ii. 19, *τὴν αὐξήσιν τοῦ Θεοῦ, a growth in grace which God requires*, not *an exceeding growth*: Mark xi. 22, *πίστιν Θεοῦ, faith in God*, not *a strong faith* (see § 44. 1); Rev. xxi. 11, *τὴν δόξαν τοῦ Θεοῦ, the glory derived from God*, not *an exceeding glory*; James v. 11, *τέλος Κυρίου, the end which God put to Job's troubles*, not *the glorious end* of them. Nor is the idiom required in Luke i. 15, *μέγας ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ.* 1 Thess. iv. 16, *ἐν σάλπιγγι Θεοῦ* (Compare 1 Cor. xv. 52); Rev. xv. 2, *κιδάρας τοῦ Θεοῦ.* Much less will it admit of an extension, so as to include such expressions as those in Rom. xiii. 1, *ταῖς γλώσσαις τῶν ἀγγέλων.* 2 Cor. xi. 10, *ἀληθεία Χριστοῦ.* Col. ii. 18, *θρησκεία τῶν ἀγγέλων.* Compare Acts vi. 15, Rom. ix. 1, Rev. xxi. 7.⁴ These passages are, indeed,

¹ Mœris, p. 794.

² Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 5.

³ Winer's *Sprachidioms*, § 37, 2, Alt, Gr. N. T. § 23, 3 and 35. 1 b. *Gesen.* § 173, *Obs. 1.*

⁴ See Haab's Heb.-Gr. Gram. N. T. p. 162.

more readily intelligible from the simple meaning of the words employed; and even in Acts vii. 21, the expression ἀστυῖος τῇ Θιῷ, though it may well be rendered *exceedingly beautiful*, will admit of explanation upon ordinary principles. See § 47, 2, Obs. 6.

Obs. 7. Certain figurative expressions, and others indicative of intensity or emphasis, may be herenoticed; though they do not, in reality, partake of the nature of a superlative. Such are Matt. xvii. 20, ἴαν ἔχητε πίστιν ὡς κόκκον σινάπιδος, i. e. *the least degree of faith*; 1 Cor. xiii. 2, πίστιν, ὥστε ὅρη μιδιστάνειν, i. e. *the greatest faith*; Rev. i. 14, αἱ τρίχες, λευκαὶ ὡσεὶ ἔριον λευκόν, ἢ χιών· καὶ οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ αὐτοῦ, ὡς φλόξ πυρὸς, κ. τ. λ. Such also are those passages, in which two or more words of the same or cognate meaning are joined by a *copula*; as in Matt. ii. 18, θρῆνος καὶ κλαυθμὸς καὶ ὀδυρμὸς πολὺς; Luke i. 14, ἵσταί χαρὰ σοὶ καὶ ἀγαλλίασις. See also Rom. ii. 8, 1 Thess. ii. 9. A like reason will probably explain the expression in Heb. x. 37, μικρὸν ὅσον ἔσται, which signifies a *very very* short period. Precisely similar are Arist. Vesp. 213, ὅσον ὅσον σπίλην, Arrian. Indic. 29, ὅσον ὅσον τῆς χάριτος. Words are thus doubled frequently in the Hebrew; and thence in the LXX, as in Exod. i. 12, σφόδρα σφόδρα. Hence such forms are generally regarded as Hebraisms; but there is a yet more striking example, in which the same adjective is repeated with καὶ, in the Rosetta Inscription, v. 9, Ἑρμῆς ὁ μέγας καὶ μέγας, i. e. *μέγιστος*.¹

§ 14.—Of Numerals. (BUTTM. § 70, 71.)

1. The cardinal number εἷς is very commonly employed in the New Testament instead of the indefinite pronoun τις. Thus, in Matt. viii. 19, εἷς γραμματεὺς εἶπεν αὐτῷ. xxi. 19, ἰδὼν συκῆν μίαν ἐπὶ τῆς ὁδοῦ. John vi. 9, ἔστι παιδάριον ἐν ᾧδε. See also Matt. ix. 18, xvi. 4, xviii. 24, 28, xix. 18, xxvi. 69, Mark xii. 42, Luke v. 12, 17, John vii. 21, xx. 7.

Obs. 1. This was probably an imitation of a similar Hebrew usage, though it also occurs sometimes in Greek. In the same way the Latins also employ *unus*; as in Plin. N. H. xxxv. 36, *Tabulam anus una custodiebat*. Terent. Andr. I. i. 91, *Forle unam aspicio adolescentulam*.

Obs. 2. For the ordinal πρῶτος, the cardinal εἷς is also frequently used; more especially in speaking of *the first day of the week*; as in Matt. xxviii. 1, εἷς μίαν σαββάτον. Mark xvi. 2, πρῶτῃ τῆς μιᾶς σαββάτων. Also in Luke xxiv. 1, John xx. 19, Acts xx. 7, 1 Cor. xvi. 2. In enumerations εἷς may generally be rendered either as a cardinal or an ordinal. See Gal. iv. 24, Rev. vi. 1, ix. 12, and compare Thucyd. iv. 115, Herod. iv. 161, Herodian vi. 5. 1. Thus also, in Latin, Cic. Orat. pro Cluent, c. 64, *unum, alterum, tertium diem quiescebat*. In the Hebrew the cardinal number is constantly put for the ordinal, as in Exod. xl. 2, Levit. xxiii. 24, Numb. i. 1, 18, xxix. 1, Deut. i. 3, Ezra iii. 6, x. 17, Ezek. xxvi. 1, Hagg. i. 2, ii. 1. Sometimes also, though more rarely, in Greek and Latin. Thus in Diod. Sic. iii. 16, μιᾶς Ὀλυμπιάδος. Cic. Senect. c. 5, *uno et octogesimo anno*. See also Herod. v. 89.²

¹ Winer, § 37. Alt, § 35. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3, 29.

² Alt, Gr. N. T. § 45. 1. Winer, § 17. Obs. 3. Ast ad Plat. Legg. 219. Schæfer ad Longi Past. 399. Passov. Lex in v. τις. Tursellin. de Partic. Lat. in v. unus, n. 17.

Obs. 3. In Matt. xviii. 22 the cardinal number ἑπτά is used, *euphoniae causâ*, for the adverb ἑπτάκις, *seven times*. A similar usage occurs in the Hebrew of Ps. cxix. 164, and is preserved by the LXX in Gen. iv. 24. It may also be remarked by the way, that the number *seven*, being constantly employed by the Jews as a round number (Isa. iv. 1, xxiii. 14, Jerem. xxv. 11, *et alibi*), is used with the like indefiniteness in the New Testament. See Matt. xii. 45, xviii. 21, Luke xi. 26.

2. The numeral δύο is frequently undeclined in the New Testament. It occurs in the genitive, for instance, in Matt. xxi. 31, xxvii. 21, John i. 41, Acts i. 24.

Obs. 4. In Acts xii. 6 the dative δυοῖ is used. So also in Gen. ix. 22, LXX, and constantly by Aristotle and Theophrastus. Matthiæ¹ cites a solitary example from Thucydides; but there δυοῖν is probably the correct reading.²

3. Instead of the compounds οὐδεὶς and μηδεὶς, for which the Hebrews have no corresponding expression, the writers of the New Testament, in accordance with their vernacular idiom, sometimes employ the adjective πᾶς, with a negative particle closely connected with the verb. Thus, in Matt. xii. 25, πᾶσα πόλις μερισθεῖσα καθ' ἑαυτῆς οὐ σταθήσεται, xxiv. 22, Mark xiii. 20, οὐκ ἂν ἐσώθῃ πᾶσα σὰρξ. Luke i. 37, οὐκ ἀδυνατήσῃ παρὰ Θεῶ πᾶν ῥῆμα. (Here ῥῆμα signifies *a thing* according to the Hebrew usage; and, indeed, the passage is cited from Gen. xviii. 14. In Greek, however, ἔπος has frequently the same import.) John vi. 29, ἵνα πᾶν, ὃ δέδωκέ μοι, μὴ ἀπολέσω. Acts x. 14, οὐδέποτε ἔφαγον πᾶν κοινόν. Eph. iv. 29, πᾶς λόγος σαπρὸς ἐκ τοῦ στόματος ὑμῶν μὴ ἐκπορευέσθω. 1 John ii. 21, πᾶν ψεῦδος ἐκ τῆς ἀληθείας οὐκ ἔστι. Rev. xxii. 3, πᾶν κατανάθεμα οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι. Add John iii. 15, Rom. iii. 20, 1 Cor. i. 29, Eph. v. 5, 2 Pet. 20, 1 John ii. 21, Rev. vii. 1, 16, ix. 4, xviii. 22, and compare Judith xii. 20, Susan. 27. A similar expression, but somewhat stronger, is Matt. x. 29, ἐν ἐξ αὐτῶν οὐ πεσεῖται ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν. (Compare Isai. xxxiv. 16, in the Hebrew.)

Obs. 5. When the negative particle is not immediately connected with the verb, but with πᾶς, the exclusion is not necessarily universal. Thus in Matt. xix. 11, οὐ πάντες χωροῦσι τὸν λόγον τοῦτον, ἀλλ' οἷς δίδοται, i. e., *not all, but some only*. So 1 Cor. xv. 39, οὐ πᾶσα σὰρξ ἡ αὐτὴ σὰρξ, i. e., *there are different kinds of flesh*. See also Matt. vii. 21, Rom. ix. 6, x. 16. Although both these forms are philosophically accurate, the former is not found in classical Greek, nor is it very common in the New Testament.³

4. *Reciprocity* is sometimes expressed by the repetition of

¹ Matth. Gr. Gr. § 138.

² Thom. M. p. 253. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 211. Wahl's Lex. in v.

³ Winer, § 26, 1. Alt, § 45, 3.

εἷς in a different case; as in 1 Cor. iv. 6, ἵνα μὴ εἷς ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἑνὸς φυσιοῦσθε, *one over another*. So 1 Thess. v. 11, οἰκοδομεῖτε εἷς τὸν ἕνα. Equivalent are the forms in Acts ii. 12, ἄλλος πρὸς ἄλλον. Rom. xv. 2, ἕκαστος τῷ πλησίον.¹

5. The Greeks and Romans, as well as the Hebrews, omitted the names of *measures* and *monies* after *numerals*; and thus δραχμῶν must be supplied in Acts xix. 19, ἀργυρίου μυριάδας πέντε. This is the only example in the New Testament.²

6. An *ordinal* number may be concisely employed, so as to include the companions of the individual designated; as in 2 Pet. ii. 5, ὁ γάρων Νῶε ἐφύλαξε, i. e., *Noah with seven others*. In such cases αὐτός is usually added, as in Polyb. xvi. 2, τρίτος αὐτός δὲ Διονυσόδωρος ἀπενήχαστο. Sometimes, however, the pronoun is omitted, as in Plutarch. Pelop. p. 284, εἰς οἰκίαν δωδεκατος κατελθών. Appian. Punic. p. 12, τρίτος πότε ἐν σπηλαίῳ κρυπτόμενος ἔλαθε. Compare 2 Macc. v. 27.³

§ 15.—Of Pronouns. (BUTTM. § 72—80.)

1. In the New Testament the *gen.* of the *personal pron.* is more usually employed than a *possessive pronoun*. See § 34. 4. (Buttm. § 72. 4.)

Obs 1. Instead of a *possessive pron.* the *adj* ἴδιος is occasionally employed, as in Matt. xxii. 6, αἱ δὲ ἀπῆλθον, ἡ μὲν εἰς τὴν ἰδίαν ἀγρὸν, ἡ δὲ εἰς ἱμφορίαν αὐτοῦ. xxv. 14, ἐκέλευε τοὺς ἰδίους δούλους. 1 Pet. iii. 1, αἱ γυναῖκες, ὑποτασσόμεναι ταῖς ἰδίαις ἐκκλησίαις (ιστοί). So Josh. vii. 10, Prov. xxvii. 8. LXX. More generally, however, this adjective is not simply equivalent to a possessive pronoun, but implies an antithesis or distinction, as denoting *one's own*, in opposition to that of another. Thus, Matt. ix. 1, ἦλθεν εἰς τὴν ἰδίαν πόλιν. So Polyb. xxiii. 9. 14, δάλυσαι εἰς τὰς ἰδίας ἱκαστοι πόλεις. Again, Matt. xxv. 15, ἐκέλευε κατὰ τὴν ἰδίαν δύναμιν. Rom. xiv. 4, οὐ εἰς εἰς ἡ κρίσις ἀλλότριος οἰκίστη; τῇ ἰδίᾳ κυρίῳ στήκει, ἢ πίπτει. Compare also Luke x. 34, John x. 3, 4, Acts ii. 6, iv. 32, Rom. viii. 31, xi. 24, Heb. vii. 7. The antithesis is clearly marked in 1 Cor. vii. 2, ἕκαστος τὴν ἑαυτοῦ γυναῖκα ἡγεῖται, καὶ ἑαυτὴν τὸν ἴδιον ἄνδρα ἡγεῖται. When a pronoun is added, as in Tit. i. 12, ἴδιος αὐτῶν προφήτης, it merely indicates a possession which is more distinctly marked by the adjective. The meaning therefore is *a native poet*, not *a foreigner*. Compare Æschin. c. Ctesiph. 143. Xen. Hell. i. 14. 13. In a similar way the later Roman authors use *proprius*.

2. The pronoun αὐτός has the following senses (Buttm. § 74. 2.) :—

1. Joined with a noun, or as the nominative to a finite verb, it signifies *self*, as in John xxi. 25, οὐδὲ αὐτὸν οἶμαι

¹ Winer, § 26, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 45, 4.

² See Kuinoel ad loc.

³ Winer, § 6. 1, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 46, 4, 5, 6. Wetstein & Kypke on 2 Pet. ii. 5. Tursellin, Partic. Lat. in v. *ipse*, n. 18.

τὸν κόσμον χωρῆσαι τὰ γραφόμενα βιβλία See also Rom. viii. 16, 1 Cor. ix. 27, 2 Cor. xi. 11.

Obs. 2. Connected with this sense is its use to point out, emphatically, a person or thing of peculiar dignity, as when servants speak of their masters, children of their teachers, &c. Thus also it is used of *God* in Rom. x. 12, Heb. xiii. 5; and of *Christ* in Matt. i. 21.¹

2. It is used in the oblique cases as a mere personal pronoun, though generally with reference to some preceding word, as in Matt. i. 18, 19, 20, *et alibi passim*.

Obs. 3. There are many places in which it appears to be used in a *reflexive* sense for αὐτός. Thus in Matt. xxi. 45, οἱ Φαρισαῖοι ἔγνωσαν ὅτι περὶ αὐτῶν λέγει John iv. 47, ἠρώτα αὐτόν, ἵνα ἰάσῃται αὐτοῦ τὸν υἱόν. Add Matt. iii. 16, John i. 48, xiii. 11, Lph. i. 9, Heb. xi. 21. This may be a Hebrew idiom, though it may also be supported by a similar usage in the Greek writers. Thus Diod. Sic. xvi. 64, τὴν πρὸς αὐτὸν ἰννοίαν. Add Herod. ii. 2, Thucyd. vii. 5, Aristot. Ethic. xi. 4, Arrian. Epict. i. 17, 11, Herodian. i. 17. 2, ii. 4. 13, iv. 11. 13. Compare also 1 Macc. i. 2. It is seldom, however, that in such cases some manuscripts do not exhibit a variation in the breathing.²

3. With the article prefixed it signifies *the same*, as in Matt. xv. 46, xxvi. 4, Luke ii. 8, Acts i. 15, xv. 27, 1 Cor. vii. 5, 1 Thess. ii. 14, Heb. i. 12, xiii. 8.

4. It is used sometimes, though rarely, in the sense of *sponte*. Thus in Luke xi. 4, καὶ γὰρ αὐτοὶ ἀφίμεν παντὶ ὀφείλουσι ἡμεῖν. Compare John xvi. 27, 1 Pet. ii. 24.³

5. It stands sometimes for μένος, as in Mark vi. 31, δεῦτε ἡμεῖς αὐτοὶ κατ' ἰδίαν. See also 2 Cor. xii. 13.⁴

6. For the sake of emphasis it is sometimes added to the subject of the verb, when the sentence contains some case of the reflexive pronoun ἐαυτοῦ, so as to exclude any other agent. Thus Rom. viii. 33, ἡμεῖς αὐτοὶ ἐν ἐαυτοῖς στενάζομεν. Add 2 Cor. i. 9.

Obs. 4. There is also an emphasis, when αὐτός is connected with a primitive pronoun; as in Luke ii. 35, καὶ σοῦ δὲ αὐτῆς τὴν ψυχὴν διελεύσεται ῥομφαία. John iii. 28, αὐτοὶ ἡμεῖς μὲν μαρτυροῦμεν.

3. In the New Testament the interrogative pronoun τίς (Buttm. § 77) is used, as in other writers, both in direct and indirect questions. See Matt. v. 25, 31, Mark v. 9, 30, 31, ix. 33, 34, Luke vi. 11, Acts xiii. 25, *et alibi*. So also when τίς is equivalent to εἷς τίς, as in 1 Cor. vii. 18, περιτετμημένους τίς ἐκλήθη; μὴ ἐπισπάζω. Compare James iii. 13, v. 13.

¹ See Heinsius ad Hesiod. Op. D. p. 226.

² Winer, § 22. 5. Att. Gram. N. T. § 8. 3. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 148. *Obs.* 3.

³ Att. Gram. N. T. § 6. Pass v. Lex. iii. v.

⁴ Kuster ad Arist. Act. iii. 506

Obs. 5. The interrogative power, though still less direct, is also plainly discernible in such passages as Matt. vi. 3, *μὴ γνώτω ἡ ἀριστιὰ σου τί ποιεῖ ἡ δεξιὰ σου*. xi. 22, *οὐκ οἶδατε τί αἰτιῶσθαι*. Compare John x. 6, xix. 24. It also retains this import in the formula *τίς ἐστιν ἐξ ὑμῶν ἄνθρωπος*; and the like, in which *Is there any one?* is put for *who?* Compare Matt. vii. 9, xii. 11, xxiv. 45, Luke xi. 5, 11, xii. 45, xiv. 5.

Obs. 6. There are many passages in which, however rare the usage may be in classical Greek, *τίς* is used for the relative *ὅστις*. Thus in Matt. xv. 32, *οὐκ ἔχουσι τί φάγωσι*. Luke xvii. 8, *ἐποίημασεν τί διπνήσω*. Add Matt. x. 19, Mark vi. 36, xiv. 36, Rom. viii. 26, 1 Tim. i. 7.

Obs. 7. On the other hand, the relative is put for the interrogative pronoun in Matt. xxvi. 50, *ἰταῖρε, ἐφ' ᾧ πάρεμι*.

Obs. 8. Frequently *τίς* is used for *πότις*, *which of two*: as in Matt. xxi. 31, *τίς ἐκ τῶν δύο ἐποιήσει τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς*; xxvii. 21, *τίνα θείλεις ἀπὸ τῶν δύο ἀπολύσω ὑμῖν*; So Matt. ix. 5, xxiii. 17, xxvii. 17, Luke v. 23, xxii. 27, John ix. 2, Phil. i. 22.

Obs. 9. Followed by a *negative* particle, *τίς* implies a strong affirmation, as in 1 John ii. 22, *τίς ἐστιν ὁ ψεύστης, εἰ μὴ κ. τ. λ.*; *Every one is a liar, who denies, &c.* So 1 John v. 5, Rev. xv. 4. On the other hand, it denies *without* a negative; as in Matt. vi. 27, *τίς δὲ ἐξ ὑμῶν δύναται*; *none of you is able.*¹

4. In its proper acceptation *τίς* is found in Matt. v. 23, Acts xi. 36, *et sæpius*. Sometimes *εἷς τις* occurs, as in Mark xiv. 51, *καὶ εἷς τις νεανίσκος ἠκολούθει αὐτῷ*. Luke xxii. 50, *εἷς τις ἐξ αὐτῶν*. So John xi. 49. See also § 69. iv. *Obs. 1.* There are besides the following usages in the New Testament:—

1. It is added to adjectives of *quality, quantity, or magnitude*, both when they stand alone, and with a substantive, for the purpose of marking *dignity or eminence*, or giving *intensity* to an expression, as in Acts viii. 9, *λέγων εἶναί τινα ἑαυτὸν μέγαν*. Heb. x. 27, *φοβερά τις ἐκδοχὴ κρίσεως*. So Diod. Sic. v. 39, *ἐπίπονός τις βιός*. Compare Heliod. ii. 23. 99, Lucian. D. M. v. 1, Plutarch. V. Cic. p. 784.

Obs. 10. In the same sense it is found with a substantive in James i. 18, *εἰς τὸ εἶναι ἡμᾶς ἀπαρχὴν τινα τῶν αὐτοῦ κτισμάτων*, unless, perhaps, the meaning is merely a *kind of first-fruits*. The adjective is sometimes wanting, *τις* being used by itself in the sense of *eminent, distinguished*. Thus in Acts v. 36, *λέγων εἶναί τινα ἑαυτόν*. Also in the phrase *εἶναί τι*, *to be somewhat of importance*: as in 1 Cor. iii. 7, *ὥστε οὗτοι ὁ φυτεύων ἐστὶ τι*. Gal. ii. 6, *δοκούντων εἶναί τι*. Compare also 1 Cor. viii. 2, x. 19, Gal. vi. 3, and see above.²

2. With *numerals* it is frequently redundant, or may be supposed to indicate that the number is not to be regarded as strictly exact. Thus in Luke vii. 19, *προσκαλεσάμενος δύο τινὰς τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ*. See also Acts xix. 14, xxiii. 23.

¹ Winer, § 25. 1. Alt, § 43. Passov. Lex. in v. *τίς*. ² Winer, § 25. 2. Alt, § 44.

3. Added to *proper names*, it has been supposed to designate an obscure individual; in which sense the English frequently say *one*. Thus in Acts xix. 9, ἐν σχολῇ Τυράννου τίνος, *of one Tyrannus*; xxi. 16, Μνάσωνί τινι. Compare Acts xxv. 19.

Obs. 11. Some commentators suppose that the nouns ἀνὴρ and ἄνθρωπος sometimes supply the place of τις in the New Testament, in imitation of the Hebrew; in support of which such examples are adduced as Matt. xix. 6, ὁ οὖν ὁ Θεὸς συνίζιuzzi, ἄνθρωπος μὴ χωρίζτω. Luke ix. 38, ἀνὴρ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου ἀνιβόησι. In the former of these passages, however, ἄνθρωπος is plainly opposed to Θεός, and in the latter may be appropriately rendered *a man among the crowd*: nor is there any reason against a similar rendering in other places, though it is true that the Hebrew words שׂוֹן and דָּן are rendered by τις in Nehem. iv. 17, Prov. vi. 27, Ecclus. vi. 8, LXX. Compare Matt. ix. 9, Luke v. 18, vi. 31, Acts x. 5, *et alibi*. The same remark will also apply to the alleged use of ἄνθρωπος for ἴκαστος, since *a man*, or *mankind* generally, will equally meet the sense; as in 1 Cor. iv. 1, οὕτως ἡμᾶς λογιζίσθω ἄνθρωπος, ὡς ὑπηρετίας Χριστοῦ. xi. 28, δοκιμαζίστω ἄνθρωπος ἑαυτόν. Compare Prov. xxiv. 12. It may also be remarked, that ἀνὴρ will sometimes admit of being rendered by the demonstrative pronoun, when it is followed by a relative; as in Rom. iv. 8, μακάριος ἀνὴρ, ὃς οὐ μὴ λογίσσεται Κύριος ἁμαρτίαν. So also James i. 12, μακάριος ἀνὴρ, ὃς ὑπομένει πειρασμόν. This last, however, is the only instance in which such examples are not citations from the Old Testament. Compare 1 Kings xix. 8, Ps. xxxii. 2.

OF THE VERB.

§ 16.—*The Augment and Reduplication.* (BUTTM. § 82—86.)

In the flexion of verbs there are several peculiarities in the later speech, some of which accord with the Attic, and some with the Doric, dialect; but no traces of the Ionic are observable in the New Testament.

Obs. 1. The Attic form εἴληφα is used, instead of λείληφα. See Rev. ii. 27, iii. 3. xi. 17.—(Buttm. § 83. *Obs.* 3.)

Obs. 2. The three verbs, βούλομαι, δύναμαι, and μέλλω, sometimes take the *temporal* augment instead of the *syllabic*, in the *aorist* and *imperfect* tenses, after the Attic usage. Thus in 2 John 12, ἡβουλήθη, Matt. xvii. 16, ἡδυνήθησαν, xxvi. 9, ἡδύνατο, Luke vii. 2, ἤμελλε. The practice, however, is not uniform; for in other places the syllabic augment is used; as in Matt. i. 19, ἐβουλήθη, xxii. 46, ἰδύνατο, Luke x. 1, ἔμελλε.¹ (Buttm. § 83. *Obs.* 5.)

Obs. 3. The omission of the augment in the *plusquam perf.* continually occurs. Matt. vii. 25, Luke vi. 48, τεθριμείλωτο, Mark xiv. 44, δίδάκει, xv. 7, πεποιήκεισαν, 10, παραδιδώκεισαν, xvi. 9, ἐκβεβλήκει, Acts xiv. 23, πεπιστεύκεισαν, 1 John ii. 19, μεμνήκεισαν. These and similar omissions of the augment, which occur in the later speech, have sometimes been referred to the poetic figure *Aphæresis*, and supposed

¹ Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 3. Georg. Hierocr. p. 32.

to be a vestige of the *Pætic* dialect; but they are simply indications of negligent writing, equally prevalent in Attic Greek.¹ (Buttm. § 83. *Obs.* 6.)

Obs. 4. In verbs beginning with εὐ there is the usual fluctuation between εὐ and ηὐ, in the tenses which take the augment; and the MSS. variations are proportionably numerous.² Thus we have in Matt. iii. 17, εὐδόκησα, Luke iii. 22, ηὐδόκησα, Acts xvii. 21, εὐκαίρουν, Mark vi. 31, ηὐκαίρουν, x. 16, ηὐλόγει, Acts xi. 29, ηὐπερῆτε, xxvii. 29, ηὐχοντο. For texts in which the readings vary, see Luke xii. 16, Acts ii. 26, xxvii. 35, Rom. i. 21. It may here be observed that the verb εὐαγγελίζειν invariably takes the augment after εὐ, in the manner of verbs compounded with prepositions: Gal. iii. 8. προσηγγιλίσαστο, Heb. iv. 2, 6, εὐηγγελισμένοι, Rev. x. 7, εὐηγγίλισι. (Buttm. § 84. 5. and 86. 2.)

Obs. 5. In John xix. 31, κατιαγῶσι, 3 pl. aor. 2, pass. of κατάγνυμι, has the syllabic augment, instead of the temporal. (Buttm. § 84. *Obs.* 5.)

Obs. 6. The syllabic augment is prefixed to the temporal in the *perf.* ἰώρασα, in Luke ix. 36, and elsewhere. With respect to the verb ἀνοίγειν, instead of the forms ἀνίωξα, ἀνιῶχθην, ἀνιῶγην, employed by the Attics, the New Testament writers use ἥνοιξα, &c. Thus John ix. 17, 21, ἥνοιξε, Acts xii. 10, ἥνοίχθην, Rev. xi. 19, xv. 5, ἥνοίγη. Sometimes this verb is found even with a triple augment, as in Rev. iv. 1, θύρα ἠνεωγμένη, xx. 12, ἠνιῶχθην. So in Gen. vii. 11, LXX, ἠνιῶχθησαν, viii. 6, ἠνιῶξε. The regular form occurs in Luke i. 64, John ix. 14, 30, Rev. x. 2.³ (Buttm. § 84. *Obs.* 8.)

Obs. 7. A reduplicate form in the *perfect* of verbs beginning with a vowel, which is very common in the Attic dialect, is not unusual in the New Testament. For instance, ἀκήκοα, in Luke vii. 24, John iv. 42, 1 John i. 1; ἀπολωλῶς, Luke xv. 4, *et alibi sæpius*; and the *plusq. perfect* ἐηλύθην, in Luke viii. 2, John viii. 20, Acts viii. 27, ix. 21. (Buttm. § 85. 1, 2.)

Obs. 8. In 2 Cor. xi. 4, ἠνείχισθαι is read with a double augment, instead of ἀνίχισθαι. There is also a various reading which gives ἀπικατιστάθην for ἀποκατιστάθην, both in Mark iii. 5, and in Luke vi. 10. Similar instances are of frequent recurrence, especially in the later writers; and they seem to have arisen from the variable usage by which the augment is placed sometimes before, and sometimes after, the preposition, which led to its insertion, in some cases, both in the beginning and middle of a compound verb. (Buttm. § 86. *Obs.* 4.)

§ 17.—Formation of the Tenses. (BUTTM. § 93 et seqq.)

1. The Attic contraction of the future of verbs in -ίζω into -ιῶ occurs very frequently, but not universally, in the New Testament. Among others, the following examples will suffice.⁴ Matt. xii. 21, ἐλπιοῦσι, xxv. 32, ἀφοριεῖ, Luke i. 48, μακαριοῦσι, xix. 44, ἐδαφιοῦσι, Acts vii. 43, μετοικιῶ, Rom. x. 19, παροργιῶ, Heb. ix. 14, καθαριεῖ, x. 37, χρονιεῖ, James iv. 8, ἐγγιεῖ, 1 Pet. v. 4, κομιεῖσθε. On the other hand, Matt. iii. 11, βαπτίσει, xxv. 31, καθίσει, Mark xvi. 3, ἀποκυλίσαι, 2 Cor. ix. 6, δερίσει. To these may be added σαλπίσει, which is used in 1 Cor. xv. 52, for the more regular form σαλπίγξει.⁵ (Buttm. 95, 9.)

¹ Poppo on Thucyd. t. i. p. 228. Leusden de Dial. N. T. p. 17.

² Alt, Gr. N. T. § 16. Georg. Hier. i. 3. 13.

³ Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 3.

⁴ Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 11.

⁵ Thom. M. p. 789. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 191.

Obs. 1. There is a similar analogy in the noun *σαλπιστής*, for which the older writers used *σαλπιγετής*, Rev. xviii. 22.

2. The formation of the *second aorist* after the manner of the *first* has been attributed to the Cilicians,¹ but it was equally prevalent with the Alexandrians. It is followed by the LXX in a multiplicity of passages. Thus 1 Sam. x. 14, εἶδαμεν, 2 Sam. x. 14, εἶδαν, ἔφυγαν, xvii. 20, εὗραν, xix. 42, ἐφάγαμεν, xxiii. 16, ἔλαβαν, 2 Chron. xxix. 6, ἐγκατέλιπαν, Esth. v. 4, ἐλθάτω, Ps. lxxvi. 18, ἔφαναν, Prov. ix. 5. ἔλθατε, Isai. xxxviii. 14, ἐξείλατο, ἀφείλατο, Amos iv. 4, ἐπληθύνετε, ἠνέγκατε. There is one unquestionable example in the New Testament, where we find εὐράμενος, in Hebr. ix. 12. Nor is there reason to doubt, from the very great consent of the best MSS., that the true reading is in Matt. xxv. 36, ἦλθατε, Luke vii. 24, ἐξήλθατε, xi. 52, εἰσήλθατε, John vi. 10, ἐνέπесαν, Acts ii. 23, ἀνείλατε, vii. 10, xii. 11, ἐξείλατο, vii. 21, ἀνείλατο, xii. 7, ἔπесα, Rom. xv. 3, ἐπέπесαν, 1 Cor. x. 8, Rev. vi. 13, ἔπесαν. (Buttm. § 96. *Obs. 1.* note.)²

Obs. 2. In the second person singular, and, in the infinitive, this form never appears; unless, which is probably the case, the aorist εἶπα, from εἶπι, should be referred to this head. It occurs in the second person sing. in Matt. xxvi. 25, Mark xii. 32, Luke xx. 39. The imperative εἶπὼν is found in Gen. xii. 13, xx. 13, Exod. vi. 6, viii. 5. 16, Levit. xxi. 1, and elsewhere repeatedly; and the manuscripts vary between εἶπὼν and εἶπὲ in Acts xxviii. 26. In other places, however, it is always εἶπὲ, even when a vowel follows. See Matt. iv. 3, xii. 17, Luke iv. 3, vii. 7, x. 40. Nevertheless we have εἶπατε in Matt. x. 27, xxi. 5, Col. iv. 7; and εἰπάσσαν in Acts xxiv. 20. The Alexandrian manuscript has also εἶπαν, indic. 3 pl. in Mark xi. 6, Luke xix. 39, Acts i. 11, and the part. εἶπας in Acts xxii. 24.³

Obs. 3. From ἀρπάζω, the aor. 2. pass. ἡρπάγην, and part. ἀρπαγίς, are found 2 Cor. xii. 2, 4. Some copies also read ἡρπάγην, for ἡρπάσθην, in Rev. xii. 5. This aorist is rarely used by the Attics. (Buttm. § 100. *Obs. 9.*)

Obs. 4. It may admit of a doubt whether the Attics gave the preference to η or α in the aorist of verbs in -αίνω. Grammarians, however, decide in favour of the former, although the exceptions are almost as numerous as the proofs of the rule, independently of various readings.⁴ In the New Testament we have ἰσθήματα in Luke i. 79; ἰσθήματα in Acts xi. 28, xxv. 27. (Buttm. § 101, 4, and *Obs. 2.*)

§ 18.—Verbals. (BUTTM. § 102.)

Verbals, derived from verbs pure, have σ before the final syllable, which however is frequently omitted. Thus the more ancient Greeks used ἀπείρατος, or *Ionice*, ἀπείρητος, as in Hom. Il. M. 304. Pind. Ol. xi. 18. Nem. i. 33. But although ἀπείρασ-

¹ Heraclides ap Eustath. p. 1759, 10.

² Matt. Gr. Gr. §§ 201, 6. and, 232.

³ Sturz. de Dial. Alex. pp. 60, seqq.

⁴ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 24.

τας is used in James i. 13, and in the Epistles of Ignatius to the Philippians, the latter can scarcely be considered as a new form, since both were indifferently employed by the Attics in other instances; as γνωστός and γνωτός, in Soph. Œd. 7. 361, 396. ἀθέμιστος and ἀθέμιτος, in Xen. Cyr. i. 6. 6. Eurip. Ion. 1093. respectively.¹

Obs. 1. The above remarks are equally applicable to the noun βιαστής, Matt. xii. 12. With this orthography it is found only in Philo, and in the Ecclesiastical writers. It is elsewhere βιατής, as in Pind. Nem. ix. 130.²

Obs. 2. New compounds, however, were frequently formed by the later writers, which were not to be found in their predecessors. For example, ἀκαταπαυστός, *unceasing*, for which ἀπαυστός was formerly used, occurs in 2 Pet. ii. 14; and ἀρτιγέννητος, *new-born* for νεογενής or ἀρτιγενής, in 1 Pet. ii. 2. Compare Polyb. iv. 17. 4. Lucian. Dial. Marin. xii. 1.

§ 19.—*Verbs Barytone and Contract.* (Buttm. § 103, 105.)

The *Paradigmas* of τύπτω, ποιέω, τιμάω, and μισθόω, are equally applicable to the *conjugation* of the verbs in the later writers, and the New Testament. It is merely necessary to subjoin the following remarks:—

Obs. 1. The termination -ισαν of the third person plural of the plusq. perfect is much more usual than -ισαν. See the examples at § 16. *Obs. 3.* We have in Rev. vii. 11, ἰστήκισαν, but ἰστήκεισαν in Luke xxiii. 10, Acts ix. 7, and elsewhere.

Obs. 2. Of the Æolic form of the optat. aor. 1, in -ια, -ιας, -ιι, there are two instances, and two only, in the New Testament, and both in the third person plural, viz., Luke vi. 11, ποιήσιαν, Acts xvii. 27, ψηλαφήσιαν. (Buttm. § 103. II. *Obs. 4.*)

Obs. 3. In the third person plural of the imperative the termination -τωσαν, for which the Attics more commonly employed -των, is used in the New Testament. Thus, Acts xxiv. 20, εἰπάτωσαν, xxv. 5, κατηγορεῖτωσαν, 1 Cor. vii. 9, γαμησάτωσαν, 36, γαμίστωσαν, 1 Tim. v. 4, μανθανέτωσαν. (Buttm. § 103. II. *Obs. 5.*)

Obs. 4. In the New Testament the original termination of the second person sing. of the present and future, both in the passive and middle voice, is retained: as, ὀδυνᾷσαι for ὀδυνᾶ, Luke xvi. 25; καυχᾷσαι for καυχᾶ, Rom. ii. 17. 23, 1 Cor. iv. 7. With respect to δύνασαι, which occurs in Matt. viii. 2, Mark i. 40, and elsewhere, the grammarians maintain that it is the proper form, and condemn the use of δύνῃ, except in the conjunctive.³ It is somewhat curious therefore, that δύνῃ is found in the indicative in Rev. ii. 2, and so also in Job xxxiii. 5, Esth. vi. 13. 24. See also Polyb. vii. 11, Ælian V. H. xiii. 32. Synes. Ep. 80, Diog. Laert. p. 158. E. To this head belong the forms φάγισαι and πίισαι,⁴ being the second person sing. of the

¹ Planck de Orat. N. T. § ii. 5.

² Leusden de Diall. N. T. p. 16.

³ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 359. Thom. M. p. 252.

⁴ Wetstein in Luke xvii. 8. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 183. Winer improperly regards the forms φάγισαι and πίισαι as *first aorists*, either infinitive or imperative; and others, no less incorrectly, explain them to be *present* tenses with a *future* signification.

obsolete futures *φάγομαι* and *πίομαι*, of the former of which the third persons sing. and plural, *φάγεται* and *φάγονται* are found in James v. 3, Rev. xvii. 16, respectively. (Buttm. § 103. III. *Obs.* 1.)

Obs. 5. The contract form in *-μι*, which is commonly employed in three verbs only, is found in two of them, *ᾔψιμι* and *βούλωμι*. See Matt. xxvii. 4, Luke xxii. 42. Of the third, *οἶμι*, there is no example; but there is another instance of the same form, if the word be genuine, in Luke vii. 4. Here, however, the best manuscripts read *παρίξῃ*, according to the common orthography, which should probably be received into the text. (Buttm. § 103. III. *Obs.* 3.)

Obs. 6. Peculiar to the later speech is the termination of the third person plural, both in the imperf. and second aorist, in *-σαν*, instead of *-ον*. Of this form there is one example in the New Testament, viz., *ἰδολιοῦσαν* for *ἰδολιοῦν*, in Rom. iii. 13. Some manuscripts also read *ἐλάβοσαν* for *παρίλαβι*, in 2 Thess. iii. 6. In the LXX the form is very frequently found, which proves it to have been essentially Alexandrian,¹ though it has been also referred to the Chalcidians and the Asiatic Greeks.² Thus, Gen. vi. 4, *ἐγενῶσαν*, Exod. i. 1, *εἰσήλθοσαν*, xvi. 24, *κατελίποσαν*, xviii. 26, *ἐκρίνοσαν*, Deut. i. 24, *ἐλάβοσαν*, Ps. xiii. 3, *ἰδολιοῦσαν*, xlvii. 4, *ἤλθοσαν*, lxxvi. 16, *εἶδοσαν*, &c. &c. It was also commonly employed by the Byzantine historians: as in Niceph. Greg. vi. 5, *εἶδοσαν*, Nicet. xxi. 7, *μιστήλθοσαν*. Since verbs in *-μι* have precisely the same formation, the ending may be traced to the ancient language of the Greeks, and Phavorinus ascribes it to the Dorians.³ (Buttm. § 103. V. *Obs.* 1.)

Obs. 7. The termination *-αν* for *-ας* in the third pers. pl. of the perfect active is said by some to have been in use at Chalcis,⁴ but it seems to have prevailed more especially in the Alexandrian dialect.⁵ It might readily arise out of a confusion between the similar inflexion of the first aorist.⁶ Besides the various readings, Luke ix. 36, Rom. xvi. 7, and elsewhere, there is in John xvii. 7, *ἔγνωκαν*, Rev. xix. 3, *εἶρηκαν*. In the LXX the usage is much more frequent; as in Deut. xi. 7, *ἐώρακαν*, Isai. v. 29, *παρίστηκαν*. (Buttm. § 103. V. *Obs.* 3.)

Obs. 8. Instead of the usual Attic forms *πεινῆν* and *διψῆν*, the New Testament writers use the contraction into *ᾶ*; as, for instance, in John vii. 37, Rom. xii. 20. We find also the future *πεινάσω* for *πεινήσω*, in Rev. vii. 16; but the other form, *διψήσω*, in the same text. So the aorist *ἐπείασα* in Matt. xii. 1, Mark ii. 25, xi. 12; and again in John vi. 35, where, however, it is coupled with *ἰδίψησα*. The verbs *ζῆν* and *χεῖσθαι* follow the Attic usage.⁷ (Buttm. § 105. *Obs.* 5.)

§ 20.—*Verbs in μι.* (BUTTM. § 107.)

The Paradigms of the Conjugation in *-μι* suggest the following observations:—

¹ Planck, *ubi supra*: Sturz. de Dial. Alex. pp. 59, 60.

² Eustath. pp. 1759, 35; 1761, 30. Tzetzes ad Lycophr. 21. 252.

³ Fischer in Prolus. p. 681. Phavorin. in v. *ἰφύγοσαν*. The third person plural of the optative in *-οισαν* and *-αισαν*, for *-οισιν* and *-αισιν*, is frequently met with in the LXX. For example, Psalm xxxiv. 25, *εἴποισαν*, Job xviii. 7, *θηρεύσασιν*. In the New Testament this form does not occur. See Matt. Gr. Gr. p. 318.

⁴ Tzetzes ad Lycophr. 252. The form is found in the inscription on Trajan's Pillar, and in the Oxford Marbles.

⁵ Sext. Empir. adv. Gramm. § 213, *λεῖξαι ἢ παρὰ τοῖς Ἀλεξανδρεῦσιν, ἐλήλυθαν καὶ ἀπελήλυθαν*. See Sturz. de Dial. Alex. p. 58.

⁶ Planck de Orat. N. T. § ii. 3.

⁷ Lobeck ad Phryn. pp. 61. 204.

Obs. 1. There are occasional instances of the third person plural of the present in *-ασι*: as *τιθίσαι*, for *τιθῆσσι*, in Matt. v. 15, xxiii. 4, Mark xv. 17. (Buttm. § 107. *Obs. i. 1.*)

Obs. 2. The contract form of verbs in *-μι*, which passed from the Ionic and Doric dialects into the later speech, is common in the New Testament. Thus we have Matt. xiii. 13, 2 Cor. x. 12, *συνιοῦσι*, Matt. xiii. 23, Rom. iii. 11, *συνιῶν*, Matt. xviii. 8, xxvi. 26, Mark xv. 23, *ἰδίῳ*, Acts iii. 2, *ἰτίθουν*, Rom. iii. 31, *ἰσπῶμεν*, 2 Cor. iii. 13, *ἰτίθου*, iv. 2, *συνιστῶντες*. In Rev. ii. 20, many copies read *ἀφῆμις*, instead of *ἰᾶς*. For these forms in the LXX see 1 Chron. xxv. 7, 2 Chron. xxxiv. 12, Psal. xli. 1, Jerem. xx. 12, and elsewhere.¹ (Buttm. § 107. *Obs. 1, 2.*)

Obs. 3. Although the aor. 2 opt. *δῶην* is very generally censured by the old grammarians, it is sometimes regarded as a regular Ionic form, contracted from *δοίην*.² It is found in Rom. xv. 5, Eph. i. 17, iii. 16, 2 Tim. i. 18, iii. 7, and in Gen. xxviii. 4, xliii. 14, LXX, and elsewhere. In Plat. Gorg. p. 481, Lysias c. Andocid. t. iv. p. 215, recent editors have substituted *δῶ* for *δῶην*. Later writers frequently employed it. See Themist. Orat. 13, 174. Appian. Punic. xviii. 324.³ (Buttm. § 107. *Obs. i. 3.*)

Obs. 4. There is an instance of the plusq. perf. *ἰστήκειν*, with the simple augment, in Rev. vii. 11. Some manuscripts have also *ἰστήκισαν* for *ἰσπήκισαν*, in Luke xxiii. 10, Acts i. 10, ix. 7. (Buttm. § 107. *Obs. i. 7.*)

Obs. 5. Among the unusual inflexions of this class of verbs which the New Testament exhibits, may be noticed the aor. 1 conjunctive *δώση*, from *ἰδωσα*, for *ἰδωσα*, in John xvii. 2, Rev. viii. 3, xiii. 1, 6. This has been regarded as a Doric form; but the texts are most probably corrupt. In every instance the copies vary between *δώση*, *δώσει*, and *δῶσιν*, of which *δώσει* is probably the true reading. Many critics, indeed, regard *δώση*, not as the *aorist*, but as the future conjunctive.⁴ Examples of this tense are occasionally met with in the older Greek writers, but they are universally attributed to the errors or ignorance of transcribers. Instances also occur in the New Testament, which are still retained in the text; as in 1 Cor. xiii. 3. *καυθήσωμαι*, 1 Pet. iii. 1, *κερδηθήσονται*. The various readings also give in Rom. xi. 26, *σωθήσεται*, 1 Tim. vi. 8, *ἀρκισθησώμεθα*. In no one passage, however, is there even a tolerable consent among the manuscripts; so that the future indicative should unquestionably be replaced in every instance.⁵

Obs. 6. With respect to the second person singular of the imperative, we have *δίδου*, for *δίδοθι*, in Matt. v. 42, Luke vi. 30. In compound verbs, *ἀνάστα*, for *ἀναστῆθι*, is found in Acts xii. 7, Eph. v. 14. So also Mark xv. 30, *κατάβα*, Rev. iv. 1. *ἀνάβα*. Nevertheless we find *ἀναστῆθι*, in Acts ix. 6, 34, *ἰπιστῆθι*, 2 Tim. iv. 2. (Buttm. 107. *Obs. i. 14.*)

Obs. 7. Syncopated forms of the perfect participle of *ἵστημι* frequently occur, both in the simple and compound verb. See Mark xiv. 70, Luke i. 11, John xi. 42, Acts xxii. 20, xxiii. 4, xxviii. 2. So also the infinitive *ἱστάναι*, for *ἱστηκέναι*, in 1 Cor. x. 12. (Buttm. § 107. II. *Obs. 3.*)

¹ Georg. Hierocrit. ii. 3. 17.

² Thom. M. p. 326.

³ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 346. Georg. Hierocrit. 3. 15. Sturz. de Dial. Alex. p. 52. There is a similar contraction in the substantives, *πατραλώας* and *μητραλώας* in 1 Tim. i. 9. See Wetstein in loc. The Attic form *πατραλοίας* occurs in Plat. Phæd. § 62.

⁴ Glass. Phil. Sacr. t. i. p. 313. Georg. Hierocrit. p. 253.

⁵ Lobeck ad Phryn. pp. 720, seqq. Abresch. Diluc. Thucyd. pp. 293, 795. Obs. Misc. t. iii. p. 13. Lipsius de indicativi usu in N. T. § 6. Gebser on James iv. 13.

§ 21.—*The verbs ἔημι and εἰμί.*I. ἔημι, *to send.* (BUTTM. § 108. 1.)

1. The imperfect of the compound ἀφίημι has frequently the augment at the beginning; as ἤφιε, in Mark i. 34, xi. 16.¹

2. The third person plural of the perfect, ἀφένται, for ἀφείνται, occurs in Matt. ix. 2, 5, Luke v. 20, 23, 1 John ii. 12, and elsewhere.

Obs. 1. This form has been attributed to the Attics, and supposed to be analogous to the word εἴωθα, which is prolonged in a similar manner from εἴθα.² But it is nowhere employed by any other writer; and the grammarians more generally refer it to the Doric dialect.³ The syntax will not admit of the supposition that it is an aor. conjunctive,⁴ as ἀφίη, for ἀφῆ, in Homer.

II. εἰμί, *I am.* (BUTTM. § 108. 4.)

1. Of the imperfect ἤμην, which the grammarians strongly condemn, the use is sufficiently frequent in the writers of the Alexandrian period.⁵ In the New Testament it is found in John xi. 15, xvi. 14, xvii. 12; Acts x. 30, xi. 5, 11, 17, and elsewhere. The second person ἤσθα occurs in Matt. xxvi. 69, Mark xiv. 67.⁶ Of the 3 pers. plural ἦν, for ἤσαν, there is an instance in Luke ii. 33.

2. For ἔστω, in the imperative, we have ἦτω, 1 Cor. xvi. 22; James v. 12. So also in Ps. civ. 31, LXX. This inflexion is said to have been Doric.⁷

Obs. Instead of ἔνεστι, the syncopated form ἔνι is used in Gal. iii. 28, Col. iii. 11, James i. 17.

§ 22.—*Anomaly of signification.* (BUTTM. § 113.)

1. In the New Testament, as in other writings, the *causative* and *immediative*, or the *transitive* and *intransitive*, significations of verbs are frequently, and for the same reasons, interchanged; so that the *act.*, *midd.*, and *pass.* voices deviate from their proper meanings in a multiplicity of instances. Thus the *immediative* is changed into the *causative* sense in Matt. v. 45, τὸν ἥλιον ἀνατέλλει. Luke xii. 37, ἀνακλινεῖ αὐτούς. 2 Cor. ii. 14,

¹ See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 170. and 212, 7.

² Etym. M. p. 107, l. Phavorin. in v.

³ Suidas in v. ⁴ Eustath. p. 1077, 8.

⁵ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 152.

⁶ See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 201, 8.

⁷ Heraclid. ap. Eustath. p. 1411, 22.

τῷ θριαμβεύοντι ἡμᾶς. Phil. iv. 10, ἀνεθάλετε τὸ ὑπὲρ ἐμοῦ φρονεῖν. 1 Thess. iii. 12, ὑμᾶς ὁ Κύριος πλεονάσαι καὶ περισσεύσαι. Compare 2 Cor. ix. 8, *et alibi*. The verb, σπεύδειν signifies not only *to make haste* (Luke ii. 16, xix. 1, 6), but transitively, *to desire earnestly*, as in 2 Pet. iii. 12, προσδοκῶντας καὶ σπεύδοντας τὴν παρουσίαν τῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμέρας. See also Prov. xxviii. 22, LXX; Thucyd. vi. 39, Eur. Hec. 1175, 1201; Ælian. V. H. xiii. 30; Polyb. iii. 62. 8.

Obs. 1. It is probable, indeed, that to most of the above verbs were attached by the Greeks a double import, and thus ἀνατίλλειν has an active sense in Anac. lili. 40, Diod. Sic. xvii. 7; and ἀνάκλινειν, in Polyb. xxxi. 4, 5. At the same time the LXX have frequently thus expressed by a neuter verb the *causative* import of the Hebrew *Hiphil*; as in Gen. xlvii. 6, κατοίκισον τὸν πατέρα σου. 1 Sam. xv. 35, ἱβασίλειυσιν τὸν Σαούλ ἐπὶ Ἰσραήλ. See also 1 Sam. viii. 22, 2 Kings xiv. 21, Ps. lxxi. 21, cxix. 50, cxxxii. 17, Isai. xvi. 5, Ezek. xvii. 24. As frequently, however, by a periphrasis with ποιεῖν, as in Deut. xxxii. 39, ζῆν ποιήσω, Isai. xxix. 21, ποιοῦντες ἀμαρτιῶν, Jerem. xxviii. 15, πισποθῆναι ἰποιήσας. Sometimes the Latins also employed a neuter verb in an active sense; as in Virg. Æn. vi. 132; *Ne tanta animis adu-escit bella.*¹

2. With some verbs used *intransitively* the reflective pronoun may probably be supplied; though many verbs were doubtless originally endued both with a transitive and intransitive signification. Of such we have examples in Mark ix. 29, ὅταν δὲ παραδῶ ὁ καρπὸς, i. e. *presents itself*: v. 37. τὰ κύματα ἐπίβαλλεν εἰς τὸ πλοῖον, *poured themselves*, or, with a like intransitive sense in the English, *poured into the ship*: Acts xxvii. 14, ἔβαλε κατ' αὐτῆς ἄνεμος, *set against it*. Add to these Luke ix. 12, ἡ δὲ ἡμέρα ἤρξατο κλίνειν. So again, Luke xxiv. 29. (Compare Judg. xix. 9 11, LXX. Herod. iv. 181, Arrian. Exped. iii. 4.) Luke xviii. 24, Tit. i. 5, iii. 13, λείπειν, *to be wanting*; Acts vii. 42, ἔστρεψε δὲ ὁ Θεός. (This verb is regularly intransitive in the New Testament, except in Rev. xi. 6, στρέφειν αὐτὰ εἰς αἶμα.) Acts xxvii. 41, ἡ πλώρα ἐρείσασα ἔμεινεν

¹ Alt, § 49.—As the active sometimes bears the sense of the Hebrew *Hiphil*, so it has been thought the passive may express that of the *Hophal*; and examples of this signification have been adduced from 1 Cor. viii. 3, xiii. 8, 12, iv. 9. In each of the passages it has been argued that γινώσκισθαι signifies, *to be caused to know*, i. e. *to be taught*; but in the first οὗτος ἔγνωσται, *he is known*, refers to God, not to him who loves God. In the last γνωσθῆναι will more appropriately mean *approved*, or *loved*, which is a common sense of the verb. Compare Matt. vii. 23, John viii. 55, Rom. vii. 15, 2 Tim. ii. 19, Heb. xiii. 23. In 1 Cor. xiii. 8, the insertion of καὶ, after καθώς, is altogether overlooked in the proposed translation: whereas καθώς καὶ ἰπιγνώσθην, clearly indicates a sense identical with the preceding word, τότε ἰπιγνώσομαι, *then shall I know even as also I am known*, i. e. of God: or in other words, my knowledge will be perfect and universal. Compare Glass. Phil. Sac. p. 253. Pott. ad 1 Cor. viii. 3.

ἀσάλευτος. 43, ἐκέλευσε τοὺς δυναμένους κολυμβᾶν, ἀπορρίψαντας (*scil.* ἑαυτοὺς εἰς θάλασσαν), πρωτοὺς ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἐξίεναι. Here also belongs αὐξάνειν, *to grow*, in Matt. vi. 28, Luke i. 80, and elsewhere; which intransitive sense it also bears in the later Greek writers.

Obs. 2. Sometimes a noun is required to complete the sense; as in Matt. vii. 1, προσίχιν, *scil.* τὸν νοῦν, *to observe*; Mark xiv. 72, ἐπιβάλλειν, *scil.* τὴν διάνοιαν, *to reflect*. (Some understand simply ἑαυτὸν; but compare Diod. Sic. ii. 7; M. Anton. x. 30. The omission is supplied in Diod. Sic. xx. 44, πρὸς οὐδὲν ἐπίβαλε τὴν διάνοιαν.) Luke v. 3, 11, ἱπανάγειν and κατάγειν, *scil.* τὴν ναῦν, *to put out to sea* and *to make the land*, respectively; Acts xxvii. 15, ἐπιδιδόναι, *scil.* τὸ πλοῖον. So Heliod. Æth. i. 3, ἐκδόντος τῷ ἀνέμῳ. Here also some supply ἑαυτούς. We have in Sil. Ital. xi. 275. *Purpim dat vento*.¹ To this head of transitives used intransitively has been also referred, but improperly, John xiii. 2, τοῦ διαβόλου ἥδη βεβληκότος εἰς τὴν καρδίαν Ἰούδα, where the object is implied in the subsequent words ἵνα αὐτὸν παραδῷ.² Also in Acts ix. 19, the verb ἰσχυίειν is naturally intransitive, though it has an active sense in Luke xxii. 43.³ The verb ἵστημι is used in various senses both transitive and intransitive; the present, imperfect, aor. 1, and fut. 1. tenses bearing an active signification, and the perfect, plusq. perfect, and aor. 2, a neuter one. For examples, see Matt. iv. 5, x. 3, xii. 46, 47, xiii. 2, xxvi. 15, Mark ix. 36, Luke ix. 47, xix. 8, John i. 26, viii. 44, Acts i. 23, viii. 38, xvii. 31, xxvi. 22, Rom. iii. 31, Heb. x. 9, *et alibi*. Properly the compound δίστημι signifies *to separate* in an active sense (Isai. lix. 2, Prov. xvii. 9, LXX); but it is intransitive in Luke xxi. 59, xxiv. 51, Acts xxvii. 28.⁴

Obs. 3. The *middle* sense is apparent in many active verbs: as in 2 Cor. xi. 20, εἴ τις ὑμᾶς καταδουλοῖ. Compare Gal. ii. 4. Perhaps also 2 Tim. iv. 4, ἀπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας τὴν ἀκοὴν ἀποστρέψουσιν. Sometimes the reflexive pronoun is added, as in Matt. xxvi. 65, διέρρηξε τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ. So Mark xiv. 63, Acts xiv. 14. The verb ποιεῖν is frequently used in the New Testament where the early Greeks would rather have used ποιεῖσθαι. Thus in Mark ii. 23, ὁδὸν ποιεῖν, *to make a journey*; which in good Greek would signify *to make a road*; Acts xxiii. 13, συνωμοσίαν ποιεῖν. Compare Herod. vi. 42, vii. 42, Xen. Anab. iv. 8. 6, v. 17. See also John xiv. 23, Ephes. iii. 11. Likewise εὐρίσκειν, *to obtain*, for εὐρίσκεισθαι, in Luke i. 30, ix. 12, Rom. iv. 1, 2 Tim. i. 18. But Lucian. Reviv. T. i. p. 396, μόλις γοῦν εὐρόμην πολλὰ ἰκιστεύσας. Occasionally the active and middle are used indifferently, as in Luke xv. 6, συγκαλεῖ τοὺς φίλους καὶ τοὺς γείτονας, which is repeated in v. 9, with συγκαλεῖται.⁵

Obs. 4. The following instances of the active, in a passive sense, are closely allied to a reflexive import: 1 Pet. ii. 6, περιέχει ἐν τῇ γραφῇ, for περιέχεται. So in Joseph. Ant. xi. 4. 7, καθὼς ἐν αὐτῇ (τῇ ἐπιστολῇ) περιέχεις. The same verb occurs in its proper active sense in Acts xxiii. 25, 1 Macc. xv. 2, 2 Macc. ix. 18, Joseph. Ant. xi. 4. 9, xiv. 12. 2. There is another example in Ant. i. 11, εἰς στύλην ἄλος μετέβαλεν, *she was changed*, viz. Lot's wife.⁶

¹ Winer, § 39, 1. Alt, Gr. N. T. § 48, 1. Reitz. ad Lucian. T. vi. p. 591. Bip. Poppo ad Thucyd. i. p. 186. Wetstein and other Interpp. ad ll. cc.

² See Kypke ad l. c.

³ Passov. Lex. in v.

⁴ Winer, *ubi supra*.

⁵ Winer, § 39, 6. Alt, § 48, 4. Kuster de V. M. pp. 37. 67. Dresig. p. 401. Poppo ad Thucyd. pp. 185. 189.

⁶ Winer, § 39, 1. Alt, 48, 2. Georg Hierocrit. i. 3. 31. Glass. Phil. Sacr. v. 245. Krebs et Pott ad 1 Pet. ii. 6.

3. *Passive verbs* have sometimes an *active* or *neuter* signification; as in Acts xx. 13, οὕτω γὰρ ἦν διατεταγμένος. Tit. ii. 11, ἐπεφάνη γὰρ ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡ σωτήριος πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις. See also 2 Pet. i. 3, 4.

Obs. 5. The construction is peculiar in Acts xxvi. 16, εἰς τοῦτο ἔφθην σοι, προσχέσασθαι σε ὑπηρίτην καὶ μάρτυρα, ὧν τι εἶδεις, ὧν τι ἐφθήσομαι σοι. From the similarity of the two last clauses, some regard them as equivalent to μάρτυρα τούτων ἃ εἶδεις, καὶ τούτων ἃ ἐφθήσομαι σοι, and render ἐφθήσομαι, in an *active* sense, *I will make to appear to you, or will show you.* Since, however, the aor. 1. ἔφθην has its true passive import, *I have been seen, or have appeared,* it is preferable to render ἐφθήσομαι in the passive also, understanding διὰ or περὶ with the second ὧν. Hence the sense will be, *those things which thou hast now seen, and those concerning which I will hereafter appear to you.* The same future has a passive sense in Isai. xl. 5, LXX.¹

Obs. 6. The perf. and plusq. perf. pass. are sometimes used in the sense of the middle; but chiefly, if not exclusively, in those verbs in which the regular middle form is wanting or incomplete. Thus in John ix. 22, συνιτίθεντο οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι. Acts xiii. 2, ἀφορίσασθαι δὲ μοι τὸν Βαρνάβαν καὶ τὸν Σαῦλον εἰς τὸ ἔργον, ὃ προσκίκλημαι αὐτούς. (Compare Acts xvi. 10, xxv. 12.) 1 Pet. iv. 3, πιπορευμένοις ἐν ἀσελγείαις. Compare 1 Sam. xiv. 17, 2 Kings v. 25, Job xxx. 28. It may sometimes appear doubtful whether the passive or middle acceptation is intended; but the former is generally to be preferred in such cases; as, for example, in Rom. xiv. 23, ὁ δὲ διακρινόμενος, ἐὰν φάγῃ, κατακρίνεται, ὅτι οὐκ ἐκ πίστεως. Phil. iii. 12, οὐκ ὅτι ἤδη ἔλαβον, ἢ ἤδη τετελείωμαι. 1 Pet. iv. 1, ὁ παλῶν ἐν σαρκί, πίπτει ἀμαρτίας. A middle sense, however, is indicated in Acts xxiii. 1, πιπολίτιυμαι τῷ Θεῷ, *I have conducted myself obediently to God's laws.* Compare 2 Macc. vi. 1. In like manner the aor. 1. pass. has sometimes a middle sense; as in Matt. x. 26, μὴ εὖν φοβηθῇτε αὐτούς. So in Matt. xvi. 2, xvii. 11, Luke xxii. 8, ἀποκριθῆναι. (The middle is used in Mark xiv. 61, Luke xxiii. 9.) In Matt. xxi. 21, Mark xi. 23, Rom. iv. 20, we have διακριθῆναι. (Compare Acts x. 20.) Again, in Acts v. 26, ἀνίστη Θευδᾶς, ᾧ προσεκολλήθη ἀριθμὸς ἀνδρῶν ὡσεὶ τετρακοσίων. James iv. 10, ταπεινώθητι ἐνώπιον τοῦ Κυρίου. So 1 Pet. v. 6. Compare Ecclus. xviii. 21. In Acts xvii. 4, προσεκληρώθησαν, and in Eph. i. 11, ἐκληρώθημεν, are doubtful. Of the aor. 2. passive, so used, there is an example in John viii. 59, Ἰησοῦς δὲ ἐκρύβη, καὶ ἐξῆλθεν. Perhaps also καταλλαγῆναι, in 1 Cor. vii. 11, 2 Cor. v. 20.²

4. *Deponent verbs*, which have a *middle* or *passive* form with an *active* or *neuter* sense, require no particular notice, except that some of the *passive* tenses are frequently used in a passive sense. This is more particularly the case with the *aor. 1 pass.*, when the *aor. 1. mid.* is also in use. Thus we find ἐθεάθην in Matt. vi. 1, Mark xvi. 11. (compare Thucyd. iii. 28); ἰάθην in Matt. viii. 13, Luke vi. 18, (and in Isai. liii. 5. LXX); ἐλογίσθην in Rom. iv. 3. (compare Herod. iii. 95, Xen. Cyr. iii. 1. 33); ἐχαρίσθην in 1 Cor. ii. 12, Phil. i. 29; and ἐρῥύσθην in 2 Tim. iv. 17. The *perfect* ἴαμαι is found in Mark v. 29, and παρήτημαι in Luke xiv. 19. Of *futures*, there are in Matt. viii.

¹ Winer, § 40, 3. *Obs.* 1. Alt, § 50, 3, *Note.* Schott et Kuinoel ad Acts xxvi. 16.

² Winer, § 40, 23. Alt, § 50. Lex. Passov. et Wahl. in vv. citt.

8, *ιαθῆσομαι*, Luke xii. 9, *ἀπαρνηθῆσομαι*, Rom. ii. 26, *λογισθῆσομαι*. The *present* of this last verb has a *pass.* sense in Rom. iv. 5. Sometimes *εἰργασμαι* has an *active*, and sometimes a *passive*, signification. Compare John iii. 21, 2 John 8.¹

5. The *middle* voice is frequently used in an *active* signification; as in Luke i. 1, *ἀνατάξασθαι διήγησιν*. vii. 4, *ἄξιός ἐστιν, ὃ παρέξει τοῦτο*. (Here *παρέξει* has been regarded as the 3 sing. active, instead of the 2 sing. middle. That the latter is correct, other examples of the middle voice of this verb in an active sense abundantly prove. Some manuscripts read *παρέξη*. See above, § 19. *Obs.* 5.) Acts xix. 24, *παρείχετο τοῖς τεχνίταις ἐργασίαν οὐκ ὀλίγην*. (In Acts xvi. 16 the active is used in precisely the same sense.) Eph. i. 23, *τοῦ τὰ πάντα ἐν πᾶσι πληρουμένου*. Col. i. 29, *τὴν ἐνέργειαν τὴν ἐνεργουμένην ἐν ἐμοί*. (It seems that the active *ἐνέργειν* is used with reference to *persons*, and the middle *ἐνέργεσθαι*, with reference to *things*. Compare Matt. xiv. 2, 1 Thess. ii. 13, 2 Thess. ii. 7.) Col. iv. 1, *τὸ δίκαιον καὶ τὴν ἰσότητα τοῖς δούλοις παρέχεσθε*.

Obs. 7. Hence it frequently happens, that the middle voice is accompanied with a reflexive pronoun; as in John xix. 24, *διμερίσαντο τὰ ἱμάτια μου ἑαυτοῖς*. (Compare Matt. xxvii. 35.) Tit. ii. 7, *ἑαυτὸν παριχόμενος τύπον καλῶν ἔργων*. So Xen. Cyr. viii. 1. 39, *παράδειγμα τοιόνδε ἑαυτὸν παρίχιστο*.

Obs. 8. It is scarcely possible to regard *φανερούμεινον*, in Eph. v. 13, in any other light than as a passive participle, since it is immediately preceded by *φανερῶνται* in the same voice. Some, however, refer it to this head; and the passage is somewhat obscure; but the sense may be that *whatsoever is made manifest is*, i. e., has the nature of, *light*, and is adapted to the exposure of error.²

Obs. 9. A great number of active futures, from which, although perfectly regular in their formation, the ancients sedulously abstained, are nevertheless used by the later writers; and the following, among others, are found in the New Testament. Matt. v. 33, *ἐπιορκήσω*; xii. 14, 15, *ἀκούσω*; xviii. 21, *ἁμαρτήσω*; xix. 18, *κλίψω*; Mark xiv. 13, *ἀπαντήσω*; Luke i. 13, *καλίσω*; vi. 21, *γελᾶσω*; 25, *κλαύσω*; xiii. 24, *ζητήσω*; John vii. 38, *ρεύσω*; ³ Acts xv. 29, *πράξω*; ⁴ xviii. 9, *σιωπήσω*; xxii. 5, *ἄξω*; ⁵ 1 Cor. xi. 23, *ἱπαινίσω*; 2 Pet. i. 15, *σπουδάσω*; Rev. ix. 6, *εὐρήσω*. For these several forms the Attics used *ἐπιορκήσομαι*, *ἀκούσομαι*, *ἁμαρτήσομαι*, *κλίψομαι*, *ἀπαντήσομαι*, *καλοῦμαι*, *γελᾶσομαι*, *κλαύσομαι*, *ζητήσομαι*, *ρεύσομαι*, *πράξομαι*, *σιωπήσομαι*, *ἄξομαι*, *ἱπαινίσομαι*, *σπουδάσομαι*, *εὐρήσομαι*. In Rom. vi. 2. 8, 2 Tim. ii. 11, *ζήσω* occurs; but *ζήσομαι* in Matt. iv. 4, Mark v. 23, John vi. 51, xi. 23. It is difficult to account for the neglect of these forms by the older writers; but probably it arose from something ungrateful in the sound, to which their descendants were less sensible.

¹ Winer, § 39. 7.

² Winer, § 39. 6. Alt, Gr. N. T. § 51. 3, 4. Kuster de V. Med. p. 69.

³ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 789.

⁴ Mæris, p. 293.

⁵ Mæris, p. 38. The form, however, occurs in Eur. Iph. T. 11. 24.

Obs. 10. Analogous to these futures are certain *first aorists*, which in the earlier writers assume the middle form.¹ For instance, Matt. i. 2, Luke i. 57, *ἐγέννησάμην*; Matt. viii. 21, Acts v. 6. 10, *ἔθαψα* for *ἐθαψάμην*; Matt. xx. 24, *ἐκράνησα* for *ἐκρανησάμην*; Acts iv. 25, *ἐφρούαξα* for *ἐφρουαξάμην*; James v. 5, *ἐθρήνησα* for *ἐθρηνησάμην*. In Luke i. 47, *ἡγαλλίασι*, but *ἡγαλλιασάμην* in Luke x. 21, Acts ii. 34. To these may be added several other forms of rare occurrence; such as *ἔβλασθησα* 2 Pet. ii. 5.² Also *ἠμάρτησα*, *εὐρησα*, *ἔζησα*, *ἐγάμνησα*, of which see the list of defective verbs.

6. Of *middle* verbs for *passives*, the usage prevails not only in those tenses for which the middle has no distinct form, but also in the future and aorists. It has been doubted, whether the New Testament affords any example of such practice; but certainly it exists, according to the received text, in 1 Cor. i. 2, *πάντες εἰς τὸν Μωσῆν ἐβαπτίσαντο*. Many manuscripts, however, read *ἐβαπτίσθησαν*, which is very probably correct. There can be no question respecting Gal. v. 12, *ὄφελον καὶ ἀποκόψοντι*, *would that they were cut off*, i. e., *destroyed*, or, perhaps, *excommunicated*.

Obs. 11. Another interpretation has certainly been proposed, but it is scarcely consistent with the Apostles' character and dignity. In Acts xv. 22. 25, it is certainly possible that *ἐκλιξαμένους* may have been used rather than *ἐκλεχθῆναι*, in order to indicate that the delegates had a voice in their own appointment, or consented to undertake the mission; but such an interpretation seems somewhat more refined than the occasion requires. It is therefore preferable to consider the passage as another example of the usage under consideration.⁴

Of anomalous signification in the tenses, see the *Syntax*, § 50.

§ 23.—*List of Anomalous or Irregular Verbs.* (BUTTM. § 114.)

Several verbs belonging to this class exhibit moods and tenses in the later speech, which were never used by the more approved writers of ancient Greece, and are consequently condemned by the old grammarians. The following peculiarities occur in the New Testament:—

* *ἄγω* (*I lead*) has the *fut.* *ἄξω*, instead of *ἄξομαι*, Acts xxii. 5, 1 Thess. iv. 14. The *aor.* 1. *ἤξα* is very uncommon in the

¹ Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 3.

² Gataker ad M. Anton. x. 13.

³ Matt. Gr. Gr. § 222. in v.

⁴ Winer, § 39. 5. Kuinoel and Elsner on Acts xv. 22.

old writers; but the compound *part.* ἐπάξας occurs in 2 Pet. ii. 5. See § 22. *Obs.* 9, 10.

αἰρέω (*I take*). Of the *aor.* 2. εἰλάμην, see above, § 17. 2. Some manuscripts exhibit the rare *fut.* ἀφελεί in Rev. xxii. 19.

ἁμαρτάνω (*I sin*). *Fut.* 1. ἁμαρτήσω, for which the Attics used ἁμαρτήσομαι, Matt. xviii. 21. *Aor.* 1. ἡμάρτησα, instead of ἡμαρτον, Rom. v. 14, 16.¹

βίωω (*I live*). Of this verb the *aor.* 1. *infin.* βιώσαι occurs in 1 Pet. iv. 2; instead of which the *aor.* 2. βιώναι, as from βίωμι, is ordinarily employed.

βλαστάνω (*I bud*). The *aor.* 1. ἐβλάστησα, which occurs in Matt. xiii. 26, James v. 18, is only found in the later writers. It is used by Hippocrates, de Aliment. i.

γαμέω (*I marry*). In Mark vi. 17 the *aor.* 1. ἐγάμησα is found; but the regular form ἔγημα in Luke xiv. 20, 1 Cor. vii. 28. The *aor.* 1. *pass.* ἐγαμήθην, which is rarely met with in profane writers, occurs in Mark x. 12, 1 Cor. vii. 39.

γίγνομαι (*I become*). The *aor.* 1. *pass.* ἐγενήθην, which is chiefly confined to later writers, is used in John i. 13. Hence the *part.* γενηθεῖς, Heb. vi. 4. The old *aorist* ἐγενόμην is commonly employed; as in Matt. xix. 8, Mark i. 11, John i. 14, Acts xii. 11, Phil. ii. 7, and elsewhere.

εἶδω (*I see*). Of this verb the plural number of the *perfect*, οἶδαμεν, -ατε, -ασι, for which ἴσμεν, ἴσθε, ἴσασι are more commonly used,² is very generally retained in the New Testament. See Matt. vii. 11, xxvii. 65, Mark xi. 33, John x. 5, xv. 21, 1 Cor. viii. 1, ix. 13, Gal. iv. 13.

εἰπεῖν (*To say*). *Aor.* 1. εἶπα. *Imper.* εἶπον. See above, § 17. 2. *Obs.* 2.

ἔρχομαι (*I go*). *Imperf.* ἤρχόμην, Mark i. 45, ii. 15, John iv. 30, vi. 17. *Fut.* ἐλεύσομαι, Matt. ix. 15; ἀπελεύσομαι, xxv. 45. See also Matt. ii. 6, John xiv. 23, 2 Cor. xii. 1, and elsewhere. Instead of the *imperf.* ἥειν is more commonly used in Attic; and εἶμι, with a future acceptation, instead of ἐλεύσομαι. It is only in Homer, and the later writers, that this last is found, either in the simple or compound state: as Arrian. Exped. Alex. vi. 12, Philostr. Apollon.

¹ Thom. M. p. 420. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 732

² Thom. M. p. 474.

iv. 4, Max. Tyr. Diss. xxiv. p. 295, Chrysost. Orat. 33. p. 410. So likewise in Gen. xix. 2, LXX, *et alibi*.¹

εὕρισκω (*I find*). Aor. 1. εὔρησα, Rev. xviii. 14. The aor. 2. εἶδρον is used by Attic writers. Of the aor. 2. mid. εὐράμην, see above, § 17. 2.

ἔχω (*I have*). The fut. mid. of the compound verb is ἀνέξομαι, not ἀνασχῆσομαι, in Matt. xvii. 17, Mark ix. 19, Luke ix. 41, 2 Tim. iv. 3.

ζάω (*I live*). Fut. 1. ζήσω. Aor. 1. ἔζησα. See above, § 22. Obs. 9, 10. For this last the old writers used ἐβίωσα.

ἵμαι (*I sit*). The less genuine imperative κάθου, of the compound verb κάθημαι, is used for κάθησο in Matt. xxii. 44. In Acts xviii. 3, the 2. sing. pres. indic. is κάθη, instead of κάθησαι.²

καίω (*I burn*). From the aor. 2. pass. of the compound verb, κατεκάην (Rev. viii. 7), a new future, κατακαήσομαι, occurs in 1 Cor. iii. 15, 2 Pet. iii. 10. The fut. 1. κατακαυθήσομαι, which is usually employed, is found in Rev. xviii. 8.³

κεράννυμι (*I mix*). Part. perf. pass. κεκερασμένος, Rev. xiv. 10. Although this form is sometimes used by the older writers, yet κεκραμένος is preferred. An analogous form is πεπετάσμαι, for πέπταμαι, Herod. i. 62.⁴

κερδαίνω (*I gain*). Aor. 1. ἐκέρδησα, Matt. xviii. 15, xxv. 20. Conj. κερδήσω, 1 Cor. ix. 19, James iv. 13. Infin. κερδήσαι, Acts xxvii. 21. Part. κερδήσας, Luke ix. 25.⁵

κτείνω (*I kill*). In the compound verb, the aor. 1. pass. is written ἀπεκτάνθην, for ἀπεκτάθην, in Rev. ii. 13, ix. 18, 20, xi. 13, xix. 21. Infin. ἀποκτανθῆναι, Luke ix. 22, Rev. xiii. 10.⁶ See § 3. Obs. 1.

ὄλλυμι (*I destroy*). Generally in the New Testament the fut. is ὀλέσω, as in Matt. xxi. 41, John vi. 39, and elsewhere; but the Attic form ἀπολῶ is used in 1 Cor. i. 19. The part. ἀπολλύων, for ἀπολλύς, occurs as a proper name in Rev. ix. 11, *et passim*.⁷

ὀνίνημι (*I benefit*). Aor. 1. opt. ὀνείμην, Philem. 20.⁸

¹ Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 3.

² Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 359.

³ Thom. M. p. 511.

⁴ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 582.

⁵ Ibid. p. 740.

⁶ Ibid. pp. 36. 757.

⁷ Mæris, p. 12. Thom. M. p. 98.

⁸ Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 13.

ὀφείλω (*I owe*). The *aor.* 2. ὀφελον, as employed in the expression of a wish, is used without the augment in 1 Cor. iv. 8, 2 Cor. ix. 1, Gal. v. 12, Rev. iii. 15.¹

πετόμαι (*I fly*). The *pres. part.* πετώμενος, formed as it were from the contract verb πετάομαι, is used in Rev. iv. 7, viii. 13, xiv. 6, xix. 17. Some MSS., however, have the old form πετόμενος.²

πίνω (*I drink*). *Fut. mid.* πίομαι, for πιοῦμαι. See above, § 19. *Obs.* 4.

πίπτω (*I fall*). *Aor.* 2. ἔπεσα. See above, § 17, 2. Some consider this form as a regular *aorist* from the obsolete root πέτω.

ῥέω (*I flow*). *Fut.* 1. ῥεύσω. See above, § 22. *Obs.* 9.

στρώννυμι (*I strew*). The compound verb has the *aor.* 1. *pass.* κατεστρώθην, 1 Cor. x. 5. Grammarians say ἐστορέσθην.

τρέφω (*I nourish*). *Aor.* 1. ἔθρεψα. See above, § 22. *Obs.* 10.

φάγω (*I eat*). *Fut. mid.* φάγομαι. See above, § 19. *Obs.* 4.

φύω (*I produce*). The *aor.* 2. *part. pass.* φυείς, which is an Hellenic form, occurs in Luke viii. 6, 7, 8.

χαίρω (*I rejoice*). Instead of the Attic *fut.* 1. χαιρήσω, we have χαρήσομαι, which prevailed in the other dialects, in Luke i. 14, John xvi. 20. 22, Phil. i. 18. Some would take ἐχάρησαν from the *aor.* 1, ἐχάρησα, in Mark xiv. 11, Luke xxii. 5. It may equally come from the *aor.* 2, ἐχάρην, which is more usual, and is found in Luke xxii. 8.

χέω (*I pour*). The compound verb ἐκχέω has χεῶ in the *future*, instead of χεύσω, Acts ii. 17. Properly this form belongs to verbs of which λ μ ν ρ are the characteristic letters, though it has sometimes been transferred to other conjugations. Hence perhaps the idea of a second future, in the scheme of the regular verb, suggested itself to grammarians.³ The same future is employed by the LXX, in Exod. iv. 9, xxix. 12, Ezek. xii. 14, and elsewhere.

ὠνέομαι (*I buy*). *Aor.* 1. ὠνησάμην, Acts vii. 16. For this *aorist* the Attics always used ἐπριάμην, with the single exception of the proverb in Athen. vi. p. 91. Χῖος δεσπότην ὠνήσατο. It occurs in Pausan. iii. 4. 4, Phædr. Fab. 75.

¹ Lipsius de Indic. § 1.

² Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 581.

³ Planck de Orat. N. T. ii. 3. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 182. *Obs.* 1.

§ 24.—*Terminations of words.* (BUTTM. § 119.)

1. It may here be proper to direct attention to an extensive class of nouns substantive, which in the later speech take the form of neuters of the third declension ending in *μα*, instead of the terminations *-η*, *-εια*, and *-σις*, of synonyms in the ancient language.¹ Several instances occur in the New Testament. Thus in Luke ii. 7, *κατάλυμα*, *an inn*, of which there is no example in Attic writers, and instead of which *κατάλυσις* is used, in the same sense, in Eur. Elect. 393. Plat. Protag. p. 220, D.² The word *ἀνταπόδομα*, *retribution*, which occurs in Luke xiv. 1. 2, Rom. xi. 9, and also in 2 Chron. xxxii. 25, Ps. xxviii. 4, Eccles. xii. 2, LXX, is nowhere else to be met with; but *ἀνταπόδοσις* has the same meaning in Thucyd. iv. 81, Polyb. vi. 5. 3, xx. 7. 2, xxxii. 13. 6. For the Attic form *αἴτησις*, *a petition*, we have *αἴτημα* in Luke xxiii. 24, Phil. iv. 6. Compare Judg. viii. 24, Ps. cv. 16, LXX. None of the Grammarians or Lexicographers mention the word *ἄντλημα*, which denotes *a bucket* in John iv. 11. Except in Rom. xv. 1, *ἀσθένημα* is nowhere found; and the Attics used *ἀσθένεια*, as in Eur. Herc. F. 269. To these may be added *ἡττημα*, *inferiority*, in Rom. xi. 12, 1 Cor. vi. 7; instead of which *ἡσσα* is found in Thucyd. iii. 109, vii. 72; and *ἡττα* in Xen. Cyr. iii. 1. 11. Also *ἀπόκριμα*, *a sentence of condemnation*, in 2 Cor. ii. 9, in lieu of *ἀπόκρισις*, which bears a like sense in Isocrates and Plato.

Obs. 1. Many other examples of the same nature might be adduced from the Septuagint, but the above from the New Testament are sufficient to mark the peculiarity; which perhaps, after all, belongs rather to the department of the Lexicon: and though the termination is remarkable from its frequency, it is not to be denied that words, having two forms without any change of sense, occasionally present themselves in the best writers. Thus, for instance, *ἔνδειγμα* and *ἔνδειξις* in Demosthenes; *φρόνημα* and *φρόνησις* in Eur. Suppl. 862, Tem. fr. 13; *ἴαμα* and *ἴασις* in Thucyd. ii. 51, Soph. Elect. 876; *ζήτημα* and *ζήτησις*, in Eur. Bacch. 1137. Thuc. i. 20.

Obs. 2. It may also be remarked that the above is not the only change in the forms of substantives, which has been pointed out in the New Testament. Grammarians have noticed *μιστοικισία* in Matt. i. 11, instead of *μιστοίκισις*, which is used by Plato (De Legg. viii.), or *μιστοικία*, in Æsch. Eum. 1016. There is also *μαθητρια*, for *μαθητρις*, in Acts ix. 36,³ and *καύχησις*, for *καύχη*, in Rom. iii. 27, *et passim*.

¹ Passov. Gram. N. T. p. 571. Planck de Orat. N. T. § ii. 5.

² The Attics commonly used *καταγώγιον* in this sense. See Mœris p. 241. Thom. M. p. 501.

³ Mœris, p. 263. Thom. M. p. 593.

Analogous with this last, however, are the duplicate forms *αὔξη* and *αὔξησις*, Plat. Phæd. p. 1211. D. Xen. Œcon. 5. 1; *βουλὴ* and *βούλησις*, Xen. Hell. vi. 4. 35, Thucyd. vi. 69.

2. The terminations of *adjectives* were frequently changed by the later usage; and a prominent example of such change in the New Testament is afforded by those ending in *ινὸς*, accented on the final syllable, and involving the notion of *time*. Thus, instead of *καθημέριος*, the later writers have *καθημερινὸς*, which is also found in Acts vi. 1. Compare Soph. Elect. 1414.

Obs. 3. In Rev. xxii. 16, the MSS. vary between *ὁρθρινὸς* and *πρωινὸς*, both of which are new forms; instead of which the more ancient authors employed *ὄρθριος* (which is also used in Luke xxiv. 12) and *πρωῖος*. See Xen. *de Vectig.* i. 3. The latter of the two readings is preferable; and the adjective also occurs in Rev. ii. 28. Another form is *πρωῖμος*, cognate with *ὄψιμος*, with which it is found in conjunction in James v. 7. These, however, are rather lexicographical distinctions, and, as well as others of a like character, are duly marked by *Wahl*, and in the late edition of *Parkhurst*, by *Rose*.

P A R T II.

SYNTAX.

§ 25.—*Of the Noun.* (BUTTM. § 123.)

1. An *Adjective*, whether used as an epithet or predicate, ought properly to agree with its *substantive* in *gender* and *number*; and the same is true of *adjective pronouns* and *relatives*. From this rule there are some deviations in the New Testament; as, for example, when the concord is regulated by the sense of the substantive, so that a noun is accompanied by an adjective, participle, or pronoun, in a different grammatical *gender*.

Obs. 1. This construction occurs with an *adj.* or *part.* in Eph. iv. 17, τὰ λοιπὰ ἔθνη περιπατοῦντες, ἱσχοτισμένοι τῇ διανοίᾳ ὄντες. 2 John 4, ἡγάγην λίαν, ὅτι εὗρηκα (τινα) ἐκ τῶν τέκνων σου περιπατοῦντας. Rev. iv. 8, τέσσαρα ζῶα ἀνάπαυσιν οὐκ ἔχουσιν, λέγοντες. (Another reading is λέγοντα.) xix. 14, τὰ στρατεύματα ἰνδιδυμένοι βύσσινον λευκὸν καὶ καθαρόν. Compare also Rev. v. 13. Some refer to this head Eph. ii. 11, ὑμεῖς, τὰ ἔθνη ἐν σαρκί, οἱ λεγόμενοι, κ. τ. λ.; but it is scarcely an example in point. The following are examples of different gender in *the pronoun*: Matt. xxviii. 19, μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, βαπτίζοντες αὐτούς. Mark v. 41, κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου, λέγει αὐτῇ. Acts xv. 17, πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, ἐφ' οὓς ἐπικέκληται, κ. τ. λ. Rom. ix. 23, ἐπὶ σκεύη ἑλίου, ἃ προητοίμασεν εἰς δόξαν, οὓς καὶ ἐκάλεισεν, κ. τ. λ. Gal. iv. 19. τέκνιά μου, οὓς πάλιν ᾠδίνω. Col. ii. 19, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἐξ οὗ πᾶν τὸ σῶμα, κ. τ. λ. 2 John 1. τοῖς τέκνοις αὐτῆς, οὓς ἀγαπᾷ. Rev. xvii. 16, τὰ δίκαια κέρατα, ἃ εἶδες ἐπὶ τὸ θηρίον, οὗτοι μισήσουσι τὴν πόρνην. Also in John vi. 9 the true reading seems to be ἵστι παιδάριον ἐν ᾧδε, ὃς ἔχει, κ. τ. λ. (Vulgo ὄ.) The apposition in John xv. 26, renders the example irrelevant.¹ In Latin the same syntax is also common; as in Ter. And. iii. 5. 1, *Scelus, qui me perdidit.* Hor. Od. i. 37. 21, *monstrum, quæ, &c.*

2. A *collective noun* in the *singular* is often accompanied

¹ Winer, § 21, 1, and 35, 1, a. Alt, § 33, 1, a, and 36, a. Georg. Vind. i. 3. 26. Elsner ad Matt. xxviii. 19.

with an *adj.* or *pronoun* in the *plural*, and sometimes in a different *gender*.

Obs. 2. There are instances with an *adject.* or *partic.* in Luke ii. 13, *πλῆθος στρατιᾶς οὐρανόυ, αἰνοῦντων τὸν Θεόν.* xix. 37, *ἤρξαντο ἅπαν τὸ πλῆθος τῶν μαθητῶν χαίροντες αἰνῶν τὸν Θεόν.* Acts iii. 11, *συνίδραμε πᾶς ὁ λαὸς, Ἰκθαμβοί.* v. 16, *συνήρχετο τὸ πλῆθος, φέροντες, κ. τ. λ.* Rev. vii. 9, *ὄχλος πολὺς, ἱστῶντες ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου.* There is a double construction in Mark viii. 1, *παμπόλλου ὄχλου ὄντος, καὶ μὴ ἔχόντων τὶ φάγωσι, κ. τ. λ.* So Diod. Sic. xiv. 78, *τοῦ πλήθους συντρέχοντος, καὶ τοὺς μισθοὺς πρότερον ἀπαιτούντων.* Again with a *pronoun*, in Matt. i. 21, *αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν.* Mark vi. 46, *ἀποταξάμενος αὐτοῖς, i. e. τῷ ὄχλῳ.* Eph. v. 11, *μὴ συγκοινωνεῖτε τοῖς ἔργοις τοῖς ἀκάργοις τοῦ σκότους· τὰ γὰρ κρυφῇ γινόμενα ὑπ' αὐτῶν, scil. ἱσκοτισμένων, κ. τ. λ.* Phil. ii. 15, *γενιᾶς σκολιᾶς, ἐν αἷς φαίνεσθαι.* 3 John 9, *ἔγραψα τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ἀλλ' ὁ φιλοπρωτεύων αὐτῶν Διοτρεφὴς οὐκ ἐπιδίχεται ἡμᾶς.* Compare 1 Macc. i. 25. Indeed similar examples are frequent in the LXX. On the other hand, it has been thought that a singular relative is referred to an antecedent in the plural in Phil. iii. 20, *ἡμῶν γὰρ τὸ πολίτευμα ἐν οὐρανοῖς ὑπάρχει, ἐξ οὗ καὶ σωτῆρα ἀπεκδιχόμεθα.* But *ἐξ οὗ, subaud. τόπου,* is constantly used adverbially in the sense of the Latin *unde*.¹

Obs. 3. Since the adjective *πᾶς* includes the idea of multitude, the same construction is employed with reference to it; as in Acts xv. 36, *κατὰ πᾶσαν πόλιν, ἐν αἷς, κ. τ. λ.* So also with *ordinals*; as in 2 Pet. iii. 1, *ταύτην ἤδη διευτίραν ὑμῖν γράφω ἐπιστολὴν, ἐν αἷς, κ. τ. λ.*: that is, *in both of which*.

3. The word, to which an adjective or pronoun is referred, is sometimes merely *implied* in some preceding word, or suggested by the nature of the context. This is particularly the case in the New Testament with the demonstrative pronoun *αὐτός*, which constantly indicates in a collective sense the inhabitants of a country, mentioned in the preceding sentence. Thus in Matt. iv. 23, *περιῆγεν ὅλην τὴν Γαλιλαίαν ὁ Ἰησοῦς, διδάσκων ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς αὐτῶν, i. e. Γαλιλαίων,* implied in *Γαλιλαίαν*. Acts viii. 5, *Φίλιππος δὲ κατελθὼν εἰς πόλιν τῆς Σαμαρείας, ἐκήρυσσεν αὐτοῖς τὸν Χριστὸν, i. e. to the Samaritans.* Add Matt. ix. 35, Luke iv. 15, Acts xx. 2, 2 Cor. ii. 13, 1 Thess. i. 9.

Obs. 4. Occasionally the reference is somewhat more obscure; as in Matt. xi. *καὶ ἐγένετο ὅτι ἐτίλειεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς διατάσσων ταῖς δώδεκα μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, μετίβη ἐκείθεν, ὃς διδάσκειν καὶ κηρύσσειν ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν αὐτῶν, i. e. of the Galileans,* in whose country Jesus then was. Compare Matt. xii. 9, Luke v. 17, Acts iv. 5. Closely similar is the use of *αὐτῶν* in 1 Pet. iii. 14, *τὸν δὲ φόβον αὐτῶν μὴ φοβηθῇτε, i. e. τῶν κακούντων ὑμᾶς,* with reference to *ὁ κακώων* in the preceding clause. Sometimes the reference is indicated by some official designation, or an abstract noun, preceding; as in Luke xxiii. 51, *οὗτος οὐκ ἦν συγκατατιθεμένος τῇ βουλῇ καὶ τῇ πράξει αὐτῶν, i. e. of the council,* of which Joseph has just been described as a member (*βουλευτῆς*); Rom. ii. 25, *ἐὰν οὖν ἡ ἀκροβυστία τὰ δικαιώματα τοῦ νόμου φυλάσσει, οὐχὶ ἡ ἀκροβυστία αὐτοῦ εἰς*

¹ Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*; Poppo ad Thucyd. i. 92. Passov. Lex. in vv. ix, 85.

περιτομήν λογισθήσεται; where αὐτοῦ must mean an *uncircumcised individual*, included in the *abstractum pro concreto* of the foregoing clause.

Obs. 5. It is usual to class under this head John viii. 44, ὅτι ψεύστης ἐστὶ, καὶ ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ, on the supposition that αὐτοῦ refers to ψεύδους implied in ψεύστης. But it is manifest that after ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ the words ψεύστης ἐστὶ are to be repeated; for if ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ is to follow ἐστὶ, the article is wholly inadmissible. Compare vv. 31, 42, 54, of this same chapter, and see § 27. 4. *infra*. The sense of the passage is rendered abundantly simple by supplying εἰς before λαλή in the preceding clause. See § 37. 7. Obs. 17. In the beginning of the verse it had been said, *You are of your father the devil*: and it is here added, *When any of you speaks falsely, he speaks after the manner of his kindred: for he is a liar, and so also is his father.*¹

Obs. 6. The reference of αὐτῆς is sometimes only discoverable from the subject under consideration; as in Luke i. 17, αὐτὸς προσελύσεται ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ, where αὐτοῦ can only refer to the *Messiah*, as being uppermost in the thoughts of the person addressed; John x. 15, Κύριε, εἰ εὐ βουλεύσας αὐτὸν, ὑπὲρ μου τοῦ αὐτὸν Ἰησοῦς. No person has here been mentioned, but the dead body of Jesus is plainly intended. Compare 1 John ii. 12, 2 John 6.²

Obs. 7. There is no case in the New Testament in which an adjective or pronoun is referred, in respect to *gender*, to a word implied in a preceding one, except it be perhaps in Matt. xxi. 42, Mark xii. 11, λίθον, ὃν ἐπιδοκίμασαν αἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγινήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας· παρὰ Κυρίου ἐγίνετο αὕτη, καὶ ἔστι θαυμαστὴ ἐν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν. Since αὕτη and θαυμαστὴ cannot be referred to κεφαλὴ γωνίας, the construction is generally considered as a Hebrew idiom, according to which, there being no neuter, the feminine is constantly employed, where in other languages the neuter is necessary.³ The LXX have retained this idiom in Gen. xxiv. 14, Judg. xix. 30, 1 Sam. iv. 7, xi. 2, Ps. xxvii. 4, and elsewhere: and the passage under consideration is a citation from Ps. cxviii. 22. It may not, however, be altogether improbable that the feminine adjective may have a reference to οἰκοδομή, implied in the participle οἰκοδομοῦντες. There is a precisely similar example in Epiphanius. Hær. ii. 363. A. εὐχαί μοι, πάντε, ἔστω ὑγιαίνω. Πίστις, εὐχὴ, τῇ ἁγιογραφίᾳ, καὶ ἔστι ταύτη, εὐχὴ τὴν ὑγιαίνω. A Hebrew feminine has been also supposed to exist in Luke xi. 33, οὐδὲ ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον, εἰς κρυπτὴν τίθησιν, οὐδὲ ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον. It should rather seem that κρυπτὴ is a substantive,⁴ with which the word *crypt* corresponds in English; more especially as ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον follows in immediate connexion with it.

4. Pronouns, whether *demonstrative* or *relative*, instead of taking the *gender* of the substantive to which they refer, are put in the *neuter singular*, when the substantive is to be considered generally in the abstract as a thing or matter, and that even if the substantive be *plural*. This will explain Mark xii. 42, ἔβαλε λεπτὰ δύο, ὃ ἐστὶ κοδράντης.

Obs. 8. Similarly an *adject.* or *pron.* is put in the neuter singular, when it refers to

¹ See Middleton on the Gr. Art. Note in *loc.*

² Winer, § 22. 3. Alt, § 36. 2.

³ Vorstius de Hebraismo. N. T. p. 282. Fischer ad Leusden. de Hebr. N. T. p. 80. Gesen. § 169, 2.

⁴ Bretschneider and Passow in γ.

a word, or an entire proposition preceding, and a masculine or feminine substantive is added *per exegesis*. Thus 2 Cor. xiii. 9, ταῦτο δι' ἐκχρόνου, τῇ ὑμῶν κακότητι. By a like enallage the adjective πᾶς is used in the masculine or neuter, with reference to a substantive in a different gender and case. Of this there is an example in Mark xii. 28, ποία ἐστὶ πρώτη πάντων ἐντολὴ. So Thucyd. iv. 52, τὰς τε ἄλλας πόλεις καὶ πάντων μάλιστα τὴν Ἀντανδροῖ. Lucian. Pisc. p. 583, μία πάντων ἦγε ἀληθὴς φιλοσοφία.¹

5. If an *adj.*, *part.*, or *pron.* refers to two or more substantives in the *same gender*, it is properly in *this gender* in the *plural*: as 1 Pet. i. 18. οὐ φθαρτῆς ἀργυρίῳ ἢ χρυσίῳ ἐλυτρώθητε. Very generally however the *singular* number is used. Thus in Acts i. 25, λαβεῖν τὸν κληρὸν τῆς διακονίας ταύτης καὶ ἀποστολῆς. This is even sometimes the case, when one of the substantives is in the *plural*; as in Matt. vii. 12, οὗτος γὰρ ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος καὶ οἱ προφῆται. When all are plural, the rule is strictly observed; as in Matt. iv. 24, ποικίλαις νόσοις καὶ βασάνοις συνεχομένους. Mark ii. 15, πολλοὶ τελευτᾷ καὶ ἁμαρτωλοί. Acts vi. 8, ἐποίει τέρατα καὶ σημεῖα μέγαλα.

Obs. 9. If the substantives are of *different genders*, and inanimate objects are signified, the *neuter plural* is commonly employed; as in Acts ii. 45, τὰ κτήματα καὶ τὰς ὑπάρξεις ἐπίστρασκον, καὶ διμερίζον αὐτὰ πᾶσι. With animated beings the *adj.* is placed in the *masc.* as the *worthier gender*, if one of the substantives be in the *masc.*; as in Matt. xii. 50, αὐτός μου ἀδελφὸς καὶ ἀδελφὴ καὶ μήτηρ ἐστίν. xix. 5, ἀνδρες σφραγισθήσονται τῇ κυνικῇ αὐτοῦ· καὶ ἔσονται οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα μίαν. It also happens continually that an *adj.* agrees in gender or number with one only of its substantives. Luke x. 1, εἰς πᾶσαν πόλιν καὶ τόπον. 2 Thess. i. 4, ἐν πᾶσι τοῖς διωγμοῖς ὑμῶν καὶ ταῖς θλίψεσιν, αἵς ἀνίσχεται. Equally common, though perhaps with a view to some degree of emphasis, is the *adj.* repeated with each substantive; as in Matt. iv. 23, ix. 35, x. 2, θιγαπιύων πᾶσαν νόσον καὶ πᾶσαν μαλακίαν ἐν τῷ λαῷ. xxi. 37, ἀγαπήσεις Κύριον τὸν Θεόν σου ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ καρδίᾳ σου, καὶ ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ ψυχῇ σου, καὶ ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ διανοίᾳ σου. Add Mark xiii. 1, Acts iv. 7, 1 Pet. ii. 1, Rev. xxi. 1. Compare 3 Esdr. iii. 5, Arist. Nicom. vii. 9. In James i. 17, πᾶσα δόσις ἀγαθὴ, καὶ πᾶν δῶρημα τέλειον, ἀνωθεν ἐστὶ καταβαῖνον, the *part.* agrees with the *neuter noun* only. There are each of the three genders with one repetition of the adjective in Eph. i. 21, ὑπεράνω πάσης ἀρχῆς καὶ ἐξουσίας καὶ δυνάμεως καὶ κυριότητος, καὶ πάντος ὀνόματος ὀνομαζομένου. In Heb. ix. 9, 10, there is a double construction, in which two of the above principles are combined. The former *part.* δυνάμιναι agrees with the *fem.* substantive only, although referring equally to both; and the latter ἱπικείμενα is in the *neut. plur.*, not with more especial reference to δῶρα, but because the things indicated are inanimate. It has been proposed to read ἱπικείμενα, without any authority, and little necessity.²

Obs. 10. Several adjectives are frequently joined to one substantive without a *copula*, so as to present one undivided image to the mind. Thus Heb. vii. 3, εὗτος ὁ Μελχισεδεκ, ἀπατὴρ, ἀμήτωρ, ἀγινιολόγητος, &c. James i. 8, ἀνὴρ διψυχος, ἀκατάστατος ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ὁδαῖς αὐτοῦ. In like manner, a second *adj.* refers to the entire

¹ Alt, §§ 33, 2. 36, note 2.

² Winer, § 35. 2.

idea, which a substantive forms together with a preceding *adj.*; as in 1 Pet. i. 18, ἡλυτρώθητι ἐκ τῆς ματαίας ὑμῶν ἀναστροφῆς πατροπαράδετου, *from the vain conversation, which (vain conversation) was traditionally derived from our ancestors.*

Obs. 11. The contrary usage in the case of *πολὺς*, which the Greeks join by *καὶ* with another adjective expressive of *praise* or *blame*,¹ is not observed in the New Testament. Thus we have in John x. 32, πολλὰ καλὰ ἔργα ἴδιξα ὑμῖν. 2 Tim. iv. 14, Ἀλίξανδρος ὁ χαλκὺς πολλά μοι κακὰ ἐνιδίξατο.

Obs. 12. An *adj.* is frequently followed by another *adj.* or a *part.*, which emphatically repeats the sense in a negative form; as in Acts xiii. 11, τυφλὸς, μὴ βλέπων τὸν ἥλιον. Eph. v. 15, μὴ ὡς ἄσσοφοι, ἀλλ' ὡς σοφοί. Nearly the same is 1 John ii. 27, ἀληθὺς ἴσται, καὶ οὐκ ἴσται ψεῦδος.

Obs. 13. The *adj.* or *part.* sometimes, though rarely, agrees with the *relative* instead of the *substantive*, from which it is separated; as in Rom. iv. 24, ἡγάφη δ' ἡμᾶς, οἷς μέλλει λογίζεσθαι, τοῖς πιστεύουσιν, κ. τ. λ.

6. *Adjectives* are sometimes used in the sense of *substantives*, and take a *subst.* in the *genitive*, or another *adj.* in concord; as in Mark x. 42, οἱ μέγαλοι αὐτῶν. Acts xxv. 2, οἱ πρῶτοι τῶν Ἰουδαίων. See also 1 Cor. i. 26. To the same class belongs Acts xxv. 5, οἱ δυνατοὶ ἐν ὑμῖν.

Obs. 14. Hence, perhaps, the origin of substantives; and hence, in the New Testament as in other writings, the addition of the words *ἄνθρωπος* and *ἄνθρωπος* to a personal denomination expressive of an office, employment, situation, or the like; and also in addresses. Such forms occur in Matt. xii. 41, ἄνθρωποι Νινευῖται. xiii. 45, ἄνθρωπος ἐμπόρου. 52, ἄνθρωπος οἰκοδομητότης. Luke ii. 15, ἄνθρωποι ποιμένες. Acts i. 16, ἄνθρωποι ἀδελφοί. ii. 14, 22, ἄνθρωποι Ἰουδαῖοι. viii. 27, ἄνθρωπος Αἰθίοψ. xvii. 22, ἄνθρωποι Ἀθηναῖοι. Compare Gen. ix. 5. 20, xiii. 8, xlii. 20, 33, Exod. ii. 14, Levit. xxi. 9, 1 Sam. xiv. 15, in the Hebrew and LXX. The Hebrew has no corresponding word in Levit. xx. 10, xxi. 20, *et alibi*. Precisely similar is *παῖς οἰκίτης*, in Gen. ix. 25. Strictly speaking, *ἄνθρωπος* more commonly implies *respect*, *ἄνθρωπος*, *contempt*; but in the New Testament this distinction does not appear to have been observed, though it sometimes obtains; as, for example, in Matt. xi. 19, ἄνθρωπος φάγος καὶ οἰνοπότης. xiii. 28, ἐχθρὸς ἄνθρωπος. It has been thought that *γυνὴ χήρα* (Luke iv. 26) is a circumlocution of a similar kind; but *χήρα* is in fact a feminine adjective, which is used elliptically in Luke ii. 37, vii. 12, 1 Tim. v. 3. So, in Latin, C. Nep. Præf. c. 4. *fœmina vidua*. Terent. Heaut. v. 1. 80, *viduæ mulieri*.²

Obs. 15. The *adj.* also, when referred to a *masc.* or *fem.* substantive, supplies the place of an adverb; as in Mark iv. 28, αὐτομάτη γὰρ ἡ γῆ καρποφορεῖ. John viii. 7, ὁ ἀναμάρτητος ὑμῶν πρῶτος τὸν λίθον ἐκ' αὐτῇ βαλίτω (some manuscripts read *πρῶτον*); x. 4, ἦλθε πρῶτος εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον. Acts xii. 10, ἦτις (πύλη) αὐτομάτη ἠνοίχθη αὐτῷ. xiv. 10, ἀνάστηθι ὁρθός. 1 Cor. ix. 17, εἰ γὰρ ἐκὼν τοῦτο πράσσω, μισθὸν ἔχω· εἰ δὲ ἄκων, οἰκονομίαν πιπίστυμαι. 1 Tim. ii. 13, Ἀδὰμ γὰρ πρῶτος ἐπλάσθη, ὥτα Εὐα. Compare Herod. ii. 66, viii. 138, Xen. Cyrop. i. 4. 2, iv. 2. 11, v. 3. 55, vi. i. 45, vii. 5. 49, Anab. ii. 3. 19, iv. 3. 8, v. 7. 3, Diod. Sic. i. 8, Arrian. Alex. vii. 4. 8, Isocr. Epist. 8, Dio Chrysost. xl. p. 495, 2 Macc. x. 33. Thus also adjectives denoting *time*; as in Luke xxiv. 22, γινόμεναι ὁρθεῖσαι ἐπὶ τὸ μνημεῖον. So Job xxix. 7, LXX, ἔξισο-ρευόμεν ὁρθεῖος. Of adjectives in *αἶος*, derived from ordinals, thus employed, we have examples in John xi. 39, *τις αἰὶς γάρ ἴσται*; Acts xxviii. 13, *διυτρεῖται ἡλδομεν εἰς Πυτιόλους*. So Herod. vi. 106, Xen. Cyrop. v. 2. 2.³

¹ Matt. Gr. Gr. § 444.

² Alt, Gram. N. T. § 23. 2.

³ Winer, § 58. 2. Valckn. ad Herod. viii. 130.

7. Substantives expressive of a general idea are frequently put for a definite person or thing: *abstractum pro concreto*. Thus in Matt. xv. 13, *πᾶσα φυτεία*, for *πᾶν φυτὸν*, the *act of planting* for the *plant itself*; Rom. iii. 30, *περιτομὴν καὶ ἀκροβυστίαν*, the *circumcised and uncircumcised*; 2 Cor. viii. 23, *ἀπόστολοι ἐκκλησιῶν*, *δόξα Χριστοῦ*. Col. iv. 11, *οἵτινες ἐγενήθησάν μοι παρηγορία*. 1 Pet. ii. 17, *τὴν ἀδελφότητα ἀγαπᾶτε*. See also Phil. iii. 2, 1 John iv. 10. Thus also *ψεῦδος* signifies a *false god*, or *idol*, in Rom. i. 25. On the other hand, the *author* of anything is put for the *thing* itself; as when *Moses* and *Christ* are put for the *Law* and the *Gospel*: Luke xvi. 29, *ἔχουσι Μωσέα καὶ τοὺς προφῆτας*. Eph. iv. 20, *ὕμεῖς δὲ οὐχ οὕτως ἐμάθετε τὸν Χριστόν*.¹

Obs. 16. Many manuscripts read for *βασιλεῖς καὶ ἱερεῖς*, in Rev. i. 6, *ἐποίησαν ἡμᾶς βασιλείαν, ἱερεῖς*. For examples in the LXX see Gen. xix. 6, Ps. xxi. 7.

8. Two substantives are employed in the same case, one of which must be rendered as an adjective or participle. Thus in Mark xiii. 19, *ἔσονται γὰρ αἱ ἡμέραι ἐκεῖναι θλίψις*, i. e. *τεθλιμμένοι*. So in Herod. i. 32, *πᾶς ἐστὶ ἄνθρωπος συμφορά*. Arrian. Epict. ii. 1, *τί γὰρ ἐστὶ παιδίον; ἄγνοια· τί ἐστὶ παιδίον; ἀμαθία*.² Again 1 Cor. ix. 5, *ἀδελφὴν γυναῖκα*, i. e. *a Christian wife*. 1 Tim. ii. 2, Tit. i. 3, ii. 10, iii. 4, *τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Θεοῦ*, *our Saviour God*.

§ 26.—Of the Noun in Apposition.

1. *Apposition* is frequently used in the New Testament as an explanation, more or less direct, of a preceding substantive. Luke ii. 30, *εἶδον οἱ ὀφθαλμοί μου τὸ σωτήριόν σου ὡς εἰς ἀποκάλυψιν ἐθνῶν, καὶ δόξαν λαοῦ σου Ἰσραήλ*. xiv. 1, *τῶν ἀρχόντων τῶν Φαρισαίων*, *rulers, who were Pharisees*. Add Rom. viii. 25, Eph. i. 7, ii. 15.

Obs. 1. Although, strictly speaking, *Apposition* should agree in *gender* and *number*, an *abstract noun* in the *neut. sing.* frequently answers to a plural; as in James v. 10, *ὑπόδειγμα λάβετε τοὺς ἀποστόλους*. See § 25. 8. We have also in 1 John v. 16, *δώσει αὐτῷ ζωὴν, τοῖς ἁμαρτάνουσι μὴ πρὸς θάνατον*, where *αὐτῷ* is used *distributively*, *ἁμαρτάνουσι* *collectively*. Of the use of the article in apposition see §§ 27. 4. Obs. 12. and 30. 2. The following cases are also to be noticed:—

1. *Apposition* is sometimes used, though the word which it defines is omitted; as in 1 Pet. v. 1, *πρεσβυτέρους τοὺς ἐν ὑμῖν παρακαλῶ ὁ συμπρεσβύτερος καὶ μάρτυς, κ. τ. λ.*, where *ὁ συμπρεσβύτερος* is in apposition with *ἐγὼ*, contained in *παρακαλῶ*.

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 23. 1.

² Kypke ad Mark xiii. 19.

2. Sometimes a *whole* is put in apposition with its *parts*, a *vessel* with its *contents*, and the like. Thus Mark viii. 8, ἦσαν περισσυσύματα κλασμάτων, ἴσπερ σπυρίδας. 1 Pet. ii. 5, ὡς λίθοι ζῶντες οἰκοδομησθῆναι, ὅπως πνευματικοί, κ. τ. λ.
3. A substantive, sometimes accompanied with an *adj.*, is added by way of explanatory apposition to a whole sentence. Rom. xii. 1, παρακαλῶ ὑμᾶς, ἀδελφοί, παραστήσαι τὰ σώματα ὑμῶν θυσίαν ζῶσαν, ἁγίαν, ἐυάριστον τῷ Θεῷ, τὴν λογικὴν λατρίαν ὑμῶν, i. e., ἣ ἴστί λογικὴ λατρεία. So 2 Thess. i. 4, 1 Tim. ii. 6. So, in Latin, Q. Curt. iv. 7. 13, *Repenle obductæ cælo nubes condidere solem, ingens æstu fatigatis auxilium*. Upon this principle is to be explained the introduction of an *adj.* or *part.*, with or without an article, as an apposition with an entire sentence: as, for instance, τὸ λοιπὸν, *what remains*; τὸ μέγιστον, *what is greatest*; and the like. Thus in Gal. ii. 7, ἀλλὰ τοῦναντίον, κ. τ. λ. 1 Thess. iv. 1, τὸ λοιπὸν οὖν, ἀδελφοί, κ. τ. λ. Heb. viii. 1, κεφαλῶν δὲ, κ. τ. λ. To the same class must be referred Mark vii. 19, καὶ εἰς τὸν ἀφιδρωῖνα ἱκανοῦνται, καθάριζον πάντα τὰ βρώματα, *which*, i. e., τὸ ἱκανοῦνται εἰς τὸν ἀφιδρωῖνα, *purifies all meats*, or, in other words, separates the nutritious part from that which is ejected as useless.
4. An intervening word or sentence is sometimes interposed between the apposition and the leading noun; as in James i. 7, μὴ γὰρ οἴσθω ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἐκείνος, ὅτι λήψεται τι παρὰ Κυρίου· ἄνθρωπος δίψυχος, ἀκατάστατος, κ. τ. λ. In this case apposition will sometimes agree with a relative, of which the leading word is the antecedent. Thus in Phil. iii. 18, πολλοὶ γὰρ περιπατοῦσιν, οὓς πολλάκις ἔλιγον ὑμῖν, τοὺς ἰχθεὺς τοῦ σταυροῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ. 1 John ii. 25, αὕτη ἰστὶν ἡ ἱπαγγιλία, ἣν αὐτὸς ἀπηγγείλατο ὑμῖν, τὴν ζωὴν τὴν αἰώνιον. Somewhat similar is 1 Pet. iii. 21, δισώθησαν δι' ὕδατος, ὃ καὶ ἡμᾶς ἀντίτυπον νῦν σώζει βάπτισμα, *which still*, i. e., *its antitype, baptism, saves us*. The reading *ᾧ* has every appearance of being the correction of some transcriber.

2. Instead of an *apposition*, the latter *subst.* is occasionally put in the genitive. This is the case particularly with the *names of places*, as in 2 Pet. ii. 6, πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομόρρας. So the Latins said *urbs Romæ, fons Timavi, fluvius Euphratis*, and the like.

Obs. 1. The same construction is employed in other instances; as in 2 Cor. v. 5, ὁ δὸς ἡμῖν τὸν ἀρραβῶνα τοῦ πνεύματος, *who has given us the spirit, as a pledge*: Rom. iv. 11, σημεῖον ἔλαβι περιτομῆς, where another reading is *περιτομῆν*. Another example is Acts iv. 22, τὸ σημεῖον τοῦτο τῆς ἰάσεως, *this miracle of healing*, i. e. which consisted in healing. Add Col. iii. 24, Heb. xii. 11, 1 Pet. iii. 3. To this head should also, in all probability, be referred Eph. iv. 9, κατίβη πρῶτον εἰς τὰ κατώτατα τῆς γῆς, which does not mean *the lower parts of the earth*, but the *lower regions*, namely, *the earth*, as the context plainly indicates. Thus we have in Isai. xxxviii. 14, LXX, τὸ ὕψος τοῦ οὐρανοῦ. Compare Acts ii. 19. In Latin the genitive is used in the same manner; as, for example, in Cic. Off. ii. 5, *Commemoratis cæteris causis, eluvionis, pestilentia, &c.*, that is, *quæ consistunt in eluvione, pestilentia*.

3. A new proposition, in which ὅς ἐστι may be supplied, occupies the place of an *apposition* in a few instances. Thus in James iii. 8, τὴν γλῶσσαν οὐδεὶς δύναται ἀνθρώπων δαμάσαι· ἀκατάσχετον κακὸν, μεστὴ ἰοῦ θανατηφόρου. Rev. i. 5, ἀπὸ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ,

ὁ μαρτυρὸς ὁ πιστὸς, κ. τ. λ. Somewhat similar are the *anacolutha*, which are noticed in § 69. II.

Obs. 2. It should seem that an apposition is involved, as it were, in the concise expression of 2 Cor. vi. 13, τὴν αὐτὴν ἀντιμισθίαν πλατύνθητι καὶ ὑμῖς, i. e. τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον, ὃ ἐστίν, ἀντιμισθία.¹

Of the Articulus Præpositivus. (BUTTM. § 124, 125.)

§ 27.—*Insertions and Omissions of the Article.*

1. The difference in the use of the article by the old Greek poets and the Attic writers is rather apparent than real. As to the assertion that there is no article, properly speaking, in Homer (Buttm. § 126. *Obs.* 7.), it must be received with considerable limitation ;² for it is not to be denied that there are numberless passages which precisely correspond with the Attic usage. Still the pronominal nature of the article is, in some instances, established beyond contradiction ; as in Il. ii. 793, Τοῦ δ' ἀπὸ μὲν κρατὸς κυνέην βάλε Φοῖβος Ἀπολλῶν, Ἡ δὲ κυλινδομένη καναχὴν ἔχε ποσσὶν ὑφ' ἵππων. Had the sentence ended here, it is evident that ἡ would be a pronoun referring to κυνέην, exactly as τοῦ refers to Patroclus ; but it so happens that αὐλῶπις τρυφάλεια follows in the next verse. Hence the difference between the *præpositive article* and *pronoun* is not *essential*, but *accidental* ; and, consequently, there is in fact no difference at all. It becomes therefore only necessary to inquire whether it ever loses this pronominal character, not only in Homer, but in other Greek writers ; and it will be seen that the article ὁ and the pronoun ὁ are essentially the same thing, differing only in *having or not having an adjunct*.

Obs. 1. The *adjunct* is annexed to the *art.* by means of the participle of existence understood ; so that the *art.* may be considered as the *subject*, and its adjunct as the *predicate* of a proposition, which differs from ordinary propositions, only as *assumption* differs from *assertion*. Thus ὁ ἀνὴρ signifies He, or the male, being, or *assumed to be* a man ; and the same reasoning will hold if the predicate be an *adjective*. Sometimes indeed the participle of existence is *expressed*, though the author's meaning would have been equally certain had it been omitted. Thus Arist. Ethic. Nicom. iv. 2, οἱ μάλιστα ἄξιοι ὄντες ἥκιστα πλουτοῦσι. If the predicate be a participle, it is plain that it contains an *assumption within itself*, which supplies the place of the *participle of existence*.

Obs. 2. Since the article and its predicate together constitute an *assumptive pro-*

¹ Winer, § 48. Alt, § 31. Erfurdt ad Soph. Œd. T. 602. Monk ad Eur. Alcest. 7. Matthiæ ad Eur. Phœn. 223. Stalbaum ad Plat. Gorg. p. 228.

² See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 264.

position, it can be employed only where an assumption will be allowed, either from its reference *positively* to something which has preceded, or *hypothetically* to something which is about to become the subject of an assertion. The article therefore may be used, either when conjointly with its predicate it recalls some former idea, or when it is the representative of something, of which, whether known or unknown, an assumption is to be made. In the latter case the use of the article is not, as the grammarians say, *indefinite*; but it denotes the whole particular class of objects to which its adjunct can apply.¹

2. When a person or thing *recently mentioned* is spoken of again, or when the existence of such a person or thing is *assumed* from what has been said, or when a *well-known* person or thing is mentioned κατ' ἐξοχὴν, the *article* is always inserted.² Thus in Matt. i. 24, ὁ ἄγγελος is *the* angel recently mentioned, and τοῦ ὕπνου refers to ὄναρ preceding. Matt. ii. 11, τὴν οἰκίαν, *scil.*, ἐπάνω ἧς εἶδον τὸν ἀστέρα; v. 25, ὁ ἀντιδίκος, ὁ κρίτης, ὁ ὑπὸν ῥέτης, persons *well known* in the courts of law; viii. 12, ὁ κλαυθμὸς καὶ ὁ βρυγμὸς τῶν ὀδόντων, *scil.* of the person last mentioned; xiii. 2, τὸ πλοῖον, *the* boat appropriated to Jesus and his disciples; 26, τὰ ζιζάνια, a *renewed mention* from the preceding verse. So again in v. 27; but many MSS. there omit the article, which may be right; since the servants would rather perhaps express surprise at there being *any tares at all*, than at the *particular tares* in question. Again, Matt. xxi. 12, τὰς περιστέρας, *the* doves, expressly prescribed for the offerings of the poor; Luke ix. 16, τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους καὶ τοὺς δύο ἰχθύας, *the loaves and fishes* spoken of in v. 12; John vi. 10, ἐν τῷ τόπῳ, *scil.* ἐν ᾧ ἔστηκεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς; vii. 51, τὸν ἀνδρῶπον, *the* man amenable to the law; 1 Cor. iv. 5, ὁ ἔπαινος, *the* praise, with reference to the action which merits it; 2 Cor. vii. 11, ἐν τῷ πράγματι, *the* main business respecting the incestuous person; and so in 1 Thess. iv. 6, *the* matter in hand; Eph. vi. 12, ἡ πάλη, *the* contest implied in the preceding verses; Heb. xi. 28, ὁ ὀλοθρεύων, *the* destroying angel mentioned by Moses; James ii. 25, τοὺς ἀγγέλους, *the* well-known spies. In John vii. 24, τὴν δίκαιαν κρίσιν κρίνατε specifies *the judgment which is strictly just*, and not in appearance only. The use of the article in this passage is similar to the example cited by Matthiæ (Gr. Gr. § 267.) from Eur. Iph. A. 305. Its force will be seen by resolving thus, ἡ κρίσις, ἣν κρίνατε, δικαία ἔστω. Of words used κατ' ἐξοχὴν

¹ Middleton on the Gr. Art. ch. 1.

² Middleton on the Gr. Art., part i ch. 3, § 1, 2. Most of the examples are taken from *Winer*, but his mode of illustration is generally different.

there are examples in Matt. i. 23, ἡ πάρθενος, *the virgin* foretold by Isaiah (vii. 14); Matt. xi. 3, ὁ ἐρχόμενος, *the person confessedly expected to come*, i. e. the Messiah; Mark i. 7, ὁ ἰσχυρότερος, *that one who is stronger*, i. e. Christ; John i. 21, ὁ προφήτης, *the prophet* promised in Deut. xviii. 15, sqq.; Acts iv. 12, ἡ σωτηρία, *the expected salvation*. Thus also ὁ διάβολος, ὁ πονηρὸς, ὁ πειράζων, by which expressions *the devil* is designated κατ' ἐξοχὴν.

Obs. 3. Under this head may be placed the *monadic nouns*; i. e. nouns indicating persons or things which exist *single*, or of which, if there be several, only one, from the nature of the case, can be the subject of discourse.¹ Thus Matt. v. 15, τὸν μέδιον, *the measure*; τὴν λυχνίαν, *the lamp*; of which articles only one would probably be found in a house; Luke iv. 20, τῷ ὑπηρέτῃ, *the only attendant* who was employed in the synagogue; John xiii. 5, τὸν νιπτῆρα, *the only basin* used on the occasion. In Matt. iv. 5, τὸ πτερυγίον is evidently something *monadic*; but it is difficult to determine what part of the Temple is meant. By τὸ ποτήριον, in Matt. xxvi. 27, a *single cup* is designated, though it may have been filled several times during the Paschal feast. So also, in the preceding verse it has been thought that a *single loaf* is indicated; but here some important MSS. omit τὸν, and the omission is rendered highly probable by a comparison with the parallel places in Mark xiv. 22, Luke xxii. 19.²

Obs. 4. It is evidently the reference to a *single* portion of time which explains such expressions as the following: Matt. xx. 2, ἐκ δηναρίου τὴν ἡμέραν. Luke xviii. 12, δις τοῦ σαββάτου. Heb. ix. 7, ἀπαξ τοῦ ἱνιαυτοῦ. For the same reason, the true reading in Matt. x. 29 is probably τοῦ ἄσσερίου, which is found in some MSS.

Obs. 5. The numerous examples, in which the *article* has the sense of a *possessive pronoun*, may be explained on the same principles. Thus Matt. xi. 29, ταπεινὸς τῇ καρδίᾳ, *lowly in my heart*; Mark vi. 55, τοῖς κρεβάτοις, *their beds*; Rom. xiv. 13, τῷ ἀδελφῷ, *your brother*. See also Matt. iii. 12, xxvii. 50. So again in 1 Cor. v. 9, 2 Cor. vii. 8, ἐν τῇ ἐπιστολῇ, *in my letter*. The proper mode of expressing simply *by letter* is δι' ἐπιστολῆς, or δι' ἐπιστολῶν. See 1 Cor. xvi. 3, 2 Thess. ii. 2. In 2 Cor. x. 10, αἱ ἐπιστολαὶ are *his* (St. Paul's) *Epistles* in general.³

Obs. 6. In connexion with this class of insertions it may also be remarked, that the subject of proverbial allusions has the *article*; since allusions naturally suppose the thing alluded to to be generally known. Thus in Matt. xxiii. 24, τὸν κώνωπα, τὴν κάμηλον.

Obs. 7. It is scarcely to be expected, that no anomalies should present themselves in the use of the *article*, for which it may be difficult or impossible to account; but, at the same time, it is satisfactory to find that the deviations from the regular practice may be arranged under specific heads, and that they are *omissions* where the *article* might have been inserted, not *insertions* irreconcilable with its alleged nature.

1. Nouns employed κατ' ἐξοχὴν, and under the similar circumstances noticed above, are frequently *anarthrous after prepositions*; and consequently their definiteness or indefiniteness must, in such cases, be determined on other grounds. Thus in Matt. i. 18, ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου, *by the Holy Ghost*: and here it may be observed that, in its personal sense, πνεῦμα or πνεῦμα ἅγιον is

¹ Middleton, part i. ch. 1. § 3.

² Middleton in ll. cc.

³ Middleton on 1 Cor. v. 9.

never anarthrous, except in cases where other terms, confessedly most definite, lose the article; but when his *influences* or *operations*, which are of various kinds, are indicated, the article, unless there be *renewed mention* or some other reference, is omitted. Matt. x. 15, xi. 22, ἐν ἡμέρᾳ κρίσεως. Acts xvii. 13, παρὰ πόταμον. Rom. v. 13, ἄχρι νόμου, ἐν κόσμῳ. Similar examples abound.

2. Where two or more nouns are coupled together by conjunctions, or where the conjunctions are omitted by the figure *Asyndeton*, the article, which would otherwise be inserted, is frequently rejected. In the New Testament, *Enumerations* of this kind are very common: as, for instance, Matt. x. 28, καὶ ψυχὴν καὶ σῶμα. Luke xviii. 29, γονῆς ἢ ἀδελφούς, κ. τ. λ. xxi. 25, ἐν ἡλίῳ καὶ σελήνῃ καὶ ἀστροῖς.¹ 1 Cor. xiii. 13, πίστις, ἐλπίς, ἀγάπη. Heb. iv. 12, ψυχῆς τε καὶ αἵματος, and again, ἐν θυμῷ καὶ ἐν νοῷ. See also Heb. vi. 2, 5, 1 Pet. ii. 13, *et alibi passim*.
3. It might be expected that *ordinals* would uniformly be preceded by the article, since, in a series of things of the same class, only one can be *first*, *second*, &c. Ordinals, however, for the most part, whether the nouns with which they agree be expressed or understood, are anarthrous. Matt. xiv. 26, τετάρτη φυλακῇ. xii. 38, πρώτη ἐντολή, δευτέρα δὲ ὁμοία αὐτῇ. In Luke xiv. 21, the anomaly seems to have extended its influence so far as to cause the omission of the article before ταύτην, and a similar reason may possibly account for its absence in Acts i. 5, xxiv. 21. See § 35. 1. Compare also John xxi. 14, 2 Cor. xiii. 1. Many MSS. omit τὴν in Matt. xx. 3, and in other places the same variety is observable: nor can the correct readings be ascertained with any degree of accuracy. The reason of the irregularity seems to be, that while their natural definiteness gives to ordinals a right to the article, it at the same time renders it unnecessary.
4. Superlatives have so close an affinity to the ordinals signifying *first* and *last*, that they also sometimes reject the article. There are but few, if any, instances in the New Testament. Such expressions as υἱὸς ὑψίστου (Luke i. 32) may be accounted for upon other grounds.¹ The above anomalies will also be found to occur in some other relations, to be subsequently noticed.

Obs. 8. Analogous to the use of the article with *monadic* nouns, is the reason of its insertion before the *great objects of nature*: as in Matt. v. 45, τὸν ἥλιον. vii. 25, 27, ἡ βροχὴ, οἱ ποταμοὶ, οἱ ἄνιμοι. viii. 26, τοῖς ἀνέμοις καὶ τῇ θαλάσσῃ. Acts iv. 24, τὸν οὐρανόν, καὶ τὴν γῆν, καὶ τὴν θαλάσσαν. Compare Matt. xxiv. 29, 33, Luke xii. 30, xvi. 17, Acts ii. 20, Rev. v. 13, vi. 12, *et alibi*. In Matt. xiii. 6 a single MS. has the article; but there are several instances, both in the New Testament and in the classical writers, in which ἥλιος is anarthrous. A principal reason of this may be, that it is one of those nouns, which are closely allied to the nature of *Proper Names*; but in genitives absolute, as in the place in question, the case differs little from an *assertion of existence only*; and the same remark will generally hold, when merely *the time* when an event is said to happen is expressed. So Matt. xiv. 6, γενέσθαι ἀγομένων. Luke xxiii. 54, σάββατον ἐπίφωσκει. Acts xvi. 35, xxiii. 12, ἡμέρας γενομένης.²

Obs. 9. Not only the names of the elements, but of many other objects which exist *singly*, or singly in certain relations, have been supposed to present great irregularities in the use of the article; and Winer³ has given a list of words which, both

¹ Middleton, part i. ch. 6. See also his notes on the several examples cited.

² Middleton, part i. ch. 3, § 5. See also his note on Matt. l. c., and compare Krüger on Xen. Anab. ii. 10. 15.

³ Part iii. ch. i. § 18. 1. See Rose's Preliminary Observations to the last edition of Bishop Middleton's work.

in the New Testament and the best Greek writers, he supposes to take or reject the article *ad libitum*, on the ground that they are so definite in their nature as to leave no room for mistake. It will be seen, however, on a very slight examination, that the irregularities lie, almost without exception, within one or other of the limitations already indicated. Those from the New Testament alone demand attention in this place. They are the following:—

ἥλιος. Out of thirty-two instances in the New Testament the article is omitted only eight times. Of these, Mark iv. 6 is parallel with Matt. xiii. 6, which has been already noticed. In Luke xxi. 25, Winer gravely observes that the article is omitted, because *the sun* is mentioned in connexion *with the moon and stars*. The case is one of *Enumeration*; and so is Acts xxvii. 20. We say, in like manner, *Sun, moon, and stars*. Nearly similar is 1 Cor. xv. 41, though it may here depend upon the *regimen*; as it does in Rev. vii. 2, xvii. 12, xxii. 5. See also § 30, 1.

γῆ. *Regimen* prevails in Mark xiii. 27. A preposition precedes in Luke ii. 14, Heb. viii. 4. In Acts xvii. 24 it is a case of *Enumeration*. So also in 2 Pet. iii. 10, where the article is also omitted in many MSS. before οὐρανοί, and, it should seem, correctly. Compare v. 12. With respect to v. 5 of the same chapter, οὐρανοὶ ἦσαν καὶ γῆ, *there were heavens and an earth*, is a simple assertion of existence. § 27. 4.

οὐρανός, οὐρανοί. The omission of the article is confined to cases of *Enumeration*, as those just cited, or to those in which a preposition occurs.¹

Θάλασσα. Before this word the article is very rarely omitted. In Acts vii. 36, x. 6, 32, 2 Cor. xi. 26, it fails after a *preposition*; and in James i. 6, Jude 13, the *regimen* excludes it. The existence of *a sea* is asserted indefinitely in Rev. iv. 6. As a case of *Enumeration*, Luke xxi. 25 has been already noticed; and Rev. xiv. 7 must fall under the same head, though it is somewhat peculiar. If the received text be correct, however, 2 Pet. iii. 10 is a similar instance.¹ There is an obscurity in Matt. iv. 15, where the words ἰδὼν θαλάσσης are copied from the LXX version of Isaiah ix. 1. The translator probably regarded ἰδὼν in the light of a *preposition*, as the original Hebrew word has sometimes the sense of *versus*; but *regimen* will also account for the omission of the article.

μυσημβρία. There are no omissions except after a *preposition*; as in Acts viii. 26, xxii. 6.

ὥς. With this word may be combined ἡμέρα and ὥψια, though omitted in Winer's list. All the cases in which they occur without the article are either simple assertions made by a *verb substantive*, and notes of time similar to those above cited,² or they fall within the established exceptions. Matt. xvi. 2, ὥψιας γενομένης. xxv. 6, μέσης νυκτός. Luke vi. 13, xxii. 66, ὅτι ἐγένετο ἡμέρα. Acts xii. 3, ἦσαν δὲ ἡμέραι τῶν ἀζύμων. The article fails before an *ordinal* in Acts xxvii. 33; after *prepositions*, and in *enumerations*, in 1 Thess. v. 2, 5.

ἀγορά. The article is omitted after *prepositions* in Matt. xi. 16, Mark vii. 4, Luke vii. 32. It is much more frequently inserted.³

ἀγρός. Mark xv. 21, Luke xxiii. 26, ἀπ' ἀγροῦ, *from the country*, as distinguished from *a city or town*; Luke xv. 25, ἐν ἀγρῷ. These are the only cases of omis-

¹ The first noun of an *Enumeration* sometimes takes the article, though the others do not. Mr. Rose cites an example from Æsch. Socr. Dial. ii. 2, τὰ ἀνδρόποδα, καὶ ἵπποι, καὶ χρυσός, καὶ ἄργυρος.

² So, in English, we say, *day breaks, morning dawns, night advances*.

³ The well-known expression πληθούσης ἀγορᾶς, cited by Winer from Xenophon (Anab. i. 8. 1), Herodotus (iv. 181), and Ælian (V. H. xii. 30), is a mark of time similar to those just noticed.

σιον, except in an *Enumeration* in Mark vii. 56. In the sense of a *field* or *piece of land*, the insertion of the article depends upon the definiteness or indefiniteness of the sentence. The plural, as well as the singular, occurs in both senses.

Θεός. Winer observes that the absence of the article is most frequent in the epistles, and particularly when the genitive Θεοῦ depends upon a governing noun, as in Rom. iii. 5, xiii. 4, xv. 7, 8, 1 Cor. xi. 7, 2 Cor. viii. 5, 1 Thess. ii. 13; in the forms Θεὸς πατὴρ (1 Cor. i. 3, 2 Cor. i. 2, Gal. i. 1, Phil. i. 2, 1 Pet. i. 2), and εἰς or τίνος Θεοῦ (Rom. viii. 14, 16, Gal. iii. 26, Phil. ii. 15, 1 John i. 2), and when it is joined with an adjective, as 1 Thess. i. 9, Θεὸς ζῶντι καὶ ἀληθινῷ. He adds the expression Θεοῦ Σίλουτος from Acts ii. 18, 21. The fact is, that the words Θεός and κύριος, in the sense of God, take or reject the article indiscriminately, in consequence of their partaking of the nature both of *appellative* and *proper names*. It is, nevertheless, remarkable that Θεός, which occurs in the New Testament more than 1300 times, invariably conforms to the laws of *regimen*, and frequently to the other rules of common appellatives; but κύριος, by which the LXX frequently expressed the Hebrew יהοוא, approaches more nearly to a *proper name*. Generally, therefore, though not universally, when there is no reason for omitting the article, ὁ Θεός is put for the *one true God*, as distinguished from other *Deities*; and κύριος, without the article, without the addition of the name of *Christ*, and so circumstanced that no rule of appellatives will account for the omission of the article, is almost invariably used of *God the Father*. There are, however, a few instances in which it is so used of *God the Son*. See 2 Cor. iii. 17, 18, 1 Thess. v. 2, 2 Pet. iii. 10. All Winer's instances are examples of the use of Θεός in *regimen*, or as a *proper name*.

πνεῦμα ἅγιον. See above, *Ὁρα*, 7. 1.

πατὴρ and μητήρ. These are not used without the article, except under the usual circumstances. Winer's examples are Matt. xix. 12, ἐκ παιλίας μητρός. John. 14, μονογενοῦς παρὰ πατρός.

ἀνὴρ and γυνή. Most of the apparent irregularities fall within one or other of the rules which have been repeatedly noticed: and, indeed, the frequent omission of the article before words implying *relationship*, which has been remarked by numerous critics,¹ accords very well with their continual use in *Enumerations* and *exclusive propositions*. See Matt. xii. 50, Mark x. 29, 30, and elsewhere. In Matt. v. 32, xix. 9, Luke xvi. 18, ἀπολιμνίστην does not indicate a particular individual, but *any woman who has been divorced*; and ἀνδρὶς wants the article by reason of the *preposition*. The proposition is *exclusive*,—*no husband or wife whomsoever*; and so 1 Tim. ii. 12. See § 28. 3. Many manuscripts want the article in Eph. v. 23; nor is the sense of the passage affected either by the omission or insertion. There is a difficulty in 1 Cor. v. 1, ὅσσοι γυναῖκά τινα τοῦ πατρὸς ἔχουσιν. Since γυναῖκα ἔχειν is a common phrase signifying *to take a wife*, may it be that this led to a casual omission of the article, which seems to be indispensable? Compare Mark vi. 18.

πρόσωπον. The article is omitted after a *preposition* in Luke v. 12, xvii. 16, Acts xxv. 16, 1 Cor. xiv. 25. To these instances, cited by Winer, may be added a case of *Enumeration* in 1 Pet. iii. 12. In the expressions πρόσωπον λαμβάνειν (Luke xx. 21), and πρόσωπον θαυμάζειν (Jude 16), the article is plainly inadmissible.

ἐκκλησία. This word, which occurs very many times in the New Testament, seems to be used with the strictest regularity. In 1 Tim. iii. 15 it follows a *verb substantive*; in Heb. ii. 12 the *regimen* expels the article; and in 3 John 6 a *preposition* precedes. Middleton doubts respecting 1 Cor. xix. 4 (Winer's

¹ Schaefer ad Soph. Œd. T. 630. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 264. p. 462.

remaining example), and prefers the reading *ἐκκλησίαν Θεοῦ*, which is found in two or three copies. There is no reason, however, why the word may not here signify, indefinitely, *any church or congregation*.

δῆπνον. John xiii. 2, *δῆπνον γινόμενον*, *during supper*. This is a mark of time similar to those already noticed. The phrase *ποιεῖν δῆπνον*, *to make a feast* (Mark vi. 21, *et alibi*), is of course anarthrous. In 1 Cor. xi. 20, the old Syriac version renders *Κυριακὸν δῆπνον*, *a meal which is proper for the Lord's day*; but the article may also be rejected by the same licence, by which it is so frequently wanting in *Κύριος*.

θάνατος. The usage of this word is perfectly regular in the New Testament. Of Winer's examples, two (Matt. xxvi. 38, 2 Cor. iv. 11) are after *prepositions*; and one (Rom. i. 32) is owing to the *regimen*. In Luke ii. 26, *θάνατος* is personified, and therefore used as a *proper name*; and so also in the similar expressions *γινέσθαι θανάτου*, *διωρεῖν θάνατον*, in Matt. xvi. 28, John viii. 51.

θύρα. There is no irregularity in the use of this word. The article is omitted after *prepositions* in Matt. xxiv. 33, Mark xiii. 29.

νόμος. In St. Paul's Epistles the import of this word is very extensive. It is used of every *rule of life*; of every *revelation*, and especially of the *Law of Moses*, both moral and ceremonial; and even of that *moral obedience* which it is the object of every law to inculcate. These various senses are undoubtedly calculated to produce perplexity, though the context will generally aid in affixing the particular sense required. With respect to the article, it may be observed that when the *Mosaic Law*, *κατ' ἐξοχήν*, or the *Jewish Scriptures*, are indicated, it is always inserted, except in those cases where it would be excluded by words the most definite. When the word is used in any of its subordinate senses, the insertion or omission of the article is, of course, regulated by the laws of its ordinary usage. In a large majority of the instances which Winer has adduced of its omission before *νόμος*, in the sense of the *Mosaic Law*, a *preposition* is the regulating cause: but in some few the Mosaic Law is not intended. Thus in Rom. iii. 31, it means *moral obedience*, as opposed to *faith*; in Rom. v. 20, it is the *Law of Nature*, or a *Rule of Life*, an *actuating principle* generally: and in Rom. vii. 1, it is *any natural or revealed Law* whatsoever.

νεκροί. Taken generally, the dead are *οἱ νεκροί*, although there may be reasons for omitting the article. Thus 1 Cor. xv. 15 *νεκροὶ οὐκ ἐγείρονται* is an *exclusive proposition* (§ 28. 3); and so throughout the chapter. The expressions *ἐγείρειν*, *ἐγείρεσθαι*, *ἀναστῆναι ἐκ νεκρῶν*, of which alone Winer's examples consist, omit the article by reason of the *preposition*. When used for *dead bodies*, it is properly anarthrous; as in the passages cited by Winer from Thucyd. iv. 14, v. 10, Ælian. V. H. i. 34.

κόσμος. Matt. xiii. 35, Heb. iv. 3, *ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου*. John xvii. 24, *πρὸ κατ. κόσμου*. Matt. xxiv. 24, *ἀπ' ἀρχῆς κόσμου*. These formulæ are perfectly regular; besides which Winer cites only *ἐν κόσμῳ*, from Rom. v. 13, *et alibi*. With *κόσμος* may be classed *αἰὼν*, which, in the New Testament, always has the article, except after *prepositions*, or from some other causes. In the singular it denotes *life, eternity, the Jewish and Christian dispensations, &c.*; which are all *monadic*: in the plural, it may be classed among the *objects of Nature*.¹

ᾧσα. With *ordinals* and *superlatives*, the article is omitted in Matt. xv. 33, xxvii. 45, Acts xxiii. 23, 1 John ii. 18, &c.

ἀρχή. There is not a single instance of irregular usage in this word throughout the New Testament. Winer's examples (Matt. xix. 18, John i. 1, 2, Acts xi. 15, xxvi. 4, 2 Thess. ii. 15, 1 John i. 1), are all governed by *prepositions*. In

¹ Middleton on John xiv. 16.

Mark i. 1, ἡδὲ ἰστὶν is understood; and there is a similar ellipsis in Mark xiii. 9. Hence the verb substantive excludes the article.

κύριος. See under θεός. It may be added that in a single instance (Acts xxv. 26), ὁ κύριος is used of the Roman emperor, κατ' ἐξοχήν.

διάβολος. With the exception of Acts xiii. 10, 1 Pet. v. 8, Rev. xx. 2, the article is always prefixed, if *the Devil* is meant. The first and last are cases of ordinary usage; and in 1 Pet. v. 8, ἀντίδικος is an *adjective*, so that the true rendering will be, *your opposing evil spirit*. So τῷ σωτῇ ὑμῶν Θεῷ, *your Saviour God*, in Tit. iii. 4.

3. In expressions similar to the well-known Græcism, εἰσὶν οἱ λέγοντες, a class of persons is distinguished by the particular action attributed to them; i. e., the existence of such persons is *assumed*, and consequently the article is necessary. Thus in Gal. i. 7, τινὲς εἰσὶν οἱ ταρασσόντες ὑμᾶς, the existence of some *who troubled* the Galatians is assumed, and they are spoken of *definitely* as such. The case is similar in Luke xviii. 9, εἶπε πρὸς τινὰς τοὺς πεποιθότας ἐφ' ἑαυτοῖς. Here certain persons not accurately defined (τινες) are more exactly marked by a character well known to belong to them. So again in Acts ii. 47, τοὺς σωζομένους are those particular persons who, being admitted into the church, were thereby placed in a state of salvation.

Obs. 10. In like manner, after verbs signifying *to call*, or *name*, the predicate takes the article, when the name given is universally recognised as the appropriate designation of the individual specified, and of him exclusively; as in Rev. vi. 8, ἔνομα αὐτῷ ὁ θάνατος. xix. 13, καλεῖται τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ.¹

4. The case is very different in propositions which merely *affirm* or *deny* existence, or where a verb or participle, *substantive* or *nuncupative*, is used to indicate, as hitherto unknown or unnoticed, the very truth, which the presence of the article would imply to be known or supposed already. This usage arises out of the nature of the article, which always implies the existence of the person or thing, to the name of which it is prefixed; and therefore to *affirm* or *deny* an existence which is already assumed, would be either superfluous or absurd. Examples everywhere abound. as, Matt. v. 9, υἱοὶ Θεοῦ κληθήσονται. xxiii. 9, πατέρα μὴ καλέσητε. Mark xi. 13, οὐ γὰρ ἦν καιρὸς σύκων. Luke xxi. 25, ἔσται σημεῖα ἐν ἡλίῳ. John v. 2, ἔστι δὲ κολυμβήθρα. Rom. iii. 18, οὐκ ἔστι φόβος. Eph. v. 18, ἐν ᾧ ἔσται ἀσωτία. In Rev. viii. 11, the article is unquestionably spurious; and it may be remarked, that many of the best manuscripts omit it

¹ Winer. Compare Xen. Cyrop. iii. 3. 4, Anab. vi. 6. 7, cited by Matthiæ.

even in Rev. vi. 8, xix. 13. There is an apparent irregularity in Matt. viii. 12, ἐκεῖ ἔσται ὁ κλαυθμὸς, κ. τ. λ. ; but the affirmation here terminates in ἐκεῖ, not in ἔσται.¹

Obs. 11. To this head may be referred, by an easy transition, the omission of the article after verbs of *appointing, choosing, creating, &c.*, since the existence of an appointment cannot be recognised before it is made. Thus Luke xii. 14, τίς με κατίσθησι δικαστὴν ἢ μισιστὴν ἰφ' ὑμᾶς ; John x. 33, ποιῶς σιαυτὸν θιόν. Acts xx. 28, ἔθιτο ἐπισκόπους. Rom. iv. 17, πατέρα πολλῶν ἱθνῶν τίθεικά σι. This case may, in fact, be resolved into the former by means of εἶναι or γινέσθαι understood. Sometimes, indeed, they are expressed ; as in Deut. xxvi. 17, 18, LXX, τὸν Θεὸν εἴλου σήμερον εἶναί σου Σιὸς, καὶ Κύριος εἴλετό σε γινέσθαι λαόν.

Obs. 12. It seems to be from the same cause that nouns in *apposition*, explanatory of the *end* or *object* to which a person or thing is said to be subservient, are always anarthrous ; for in such examples some case of ὧν, or ὥστε εἶναι, may be supplied.² Thus Rom. viii. 23, νιόθισίαν ἀπειδεχόμενοι, τὴν ἀπολύτρωσιν τοῦ σώματος ἡμῶν, *waiting for the redemption of our bodies, as our adoption.* Compare Matt. ii. 11, iii. 9, Mark xii. 23, Rom. iii. 25, James v. 10. When the apposition is explanatory of the *essence* of the preceding noun, the case is different. See below, § 30. 2.

§ 28.—*Hypothetic use of the Article.*

1. It has been observed that the article is not only employed to recall to the mind some familiar object, but as the representative of something respecting which an *assumption* is to be made. This is called its *hypothetic* use ; and takes place in what may be denominated *universal* propositions. Thus ὁ ἄνθρωπος means *mankind in general* ; as in John ii. 25, ἐγίνωσκε τί ἦν ἐν τῷ ἄνθρώπῳ.³ If the noun be limited by any qualification, it will still include the full extent of such qualification : as in Matt. xii. 35, ὁ ἀγαθὸς ἄνθρωπος, *every good man* ;⁴ and so a little before, in verse 29, ὁ ἰσχυρὸς conveys a like general notion.

¹ See Middleton *ad loc.*

² Middleton on the Greek Article, part i. ch. iii. §. 1—4. The numerous examples which are cited as anomalous by Gersdorf (*Beiträge*, pp. 325. 399) are, in fact, so many confirmations of Bishop Middleton's theory.

³ The irregularity of the use of the article with ἄνθρωπος is frequently noticed by the critics ; and passages continually occur in which it is difficult to account for its omission or insertion. See Stalbaum on Plat. Crit. p. 51, A. Protag. p. 355, A. Pol. p. 619, B. Borneman de gem. Cyrop. recens. p. 65. N. With respect to the plural, Mr. Rose throws out a suggestion whether ἄνθρωποι, without the article, may not be used in a less decided sense than *men* generally ; as we say, for example, *The man passed among men for an old man.* Compare Thucyd. i. 41.

⁴ The passage above cited from Matt. xii. 35 demands a moment's attention. It stands thus : ὁ ἀγαθὸς ἄνθρωπος ἐκβάλλει τὰ ἀγαθὰ, καὶ ὁ πονηρὸς ἄνθρωπος πονηρά. There is something remarkable in the insertion of the article before ἀγαθὰ, and its omission before πονηρά. If the reading be correct, πονηρά will merely be less definitely marked than τὰ ἀγαθὰ ; but it is scarcely probable that the difference originally existed. The article is omitted before ἀγαθὰ in very many manuscripts, and it ought to be rejected : for the *assumption*, that the things brought forth were good, is scarcely allowable ; this being the very thing to be asserted.—Middleton *ad loc.*

It has been thought, indeed, to have a reference, κατ' ἐξόχην, to *Satan*; but the parallel place in Luke (xi. 21, 22) has ὁ ἰσχυρότερος, which will not admit of this supposition.¹ See also Matt. xviii. 17, xxv. 32, Luke vii. 28, Gal. ii. 20.

Obs. 1. In the same manner the article is used to denote *a whole class*, or *genus*; and, in the plural, *whole classes* or *descriptions* of persons or things. Thus in Matt. v. 9, οἱ εἰρηνοποιοί. viii. 20, αἱ ἀλάπικες. xv. 26, ταῖς κυναρίαις. xviii. 3, τὰ παῖδα. xxiii. 23, τὸ ἡδύοσμον καὶ τὸ ἄνηθον καὶ τὸ κύμινον. Luke xiv. 34, τὸ ἄλως. 1 Cor. vii. 28, ἡ πάρθενος, *virgins* generally; 2 Cor. xi. 4, ὁ ἑχόμενος, *any or every one who cometh*. So in Rev. xii. 14, τοῦ αἰτοῦ τοῦ μεγάλου, *the Great Eagle*, a species so called. In Matt. v. 16, we have ὡς πρόβατα, but οἱ ὄφεις. This minute distinction is not without reason; for *all* sheep are not to be supposed to be in the midst of wolves, but *all* serpents are supposed to be prudent. The use of the article in these examples may be termed *inclusive*, as distinguished from the case of *exclusive* propositions, which will be noticed hereafter.² Where only *some* of a class are intended, the article is omitted; as in Matt. x. 8, xi. 5, xv. 30, *et alibi*.

2. The insertion of the article by way of *hypothesis*, and its omission after verbs substantive, will explain the usage in that class of propositions in which the subject is found *with* the article, and the predicate *without* it. Such propositions being conversant, not about *particular*, but about *universal* truths, the declaration is made universal by means of the article in its *inclusive* sense; but the predicate not being equally unlimited, the article necessarily fails after the verb substantive. There is a good example in Job xxviii. 28, LXX, ἡ θεοσεβεία ἐστὶ σοφία. Here it is asserted that *Piety*, however comprehensively understood, and in all its forms, *is Wisdom*; not wisdom, indeed, in the same comprehensive sense, because benevolence also is wisdom, and so is temperance; but a species of wisdom, so that he is wise, but not he *alone*, who is pious.

Obs. 2. An excellent example in the New Testament, as illustrating the use of the article in making a distinction between *assumption* and *assertion*, is Luke xviii. 27, τὰ ἀδύνατα παρὰ ἀνθρώποις, δυνατά ἐστι παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ. *Things* assumed to be impossible *with men* are assuredly possible *with God*. Similar instances are 1 Cor. iii. 19, ἡ γὰρ σοφία τοῦ κόσμου τούτου μαρρία παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστι. 1 John iii. 15, ὁ μισῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ ἀνθρωποκτόνος ἐστι.

Obs. 3. If both the subject and the predicate are equally comprehensive, as when two things or attributes may be predicated either of the other, the article will then be prefixed to both terms alike. It is not to be expected, from the nature of these propositions, that examples will frequently occur; but they are to be met with occasionally in the New Testament. Thus in Matt. vi. 22, ὁ λύχνος τοῦ σώματος ἐστὶ ὁ ὀφθαλμός. xiii. 38, ὁ δὲ ἀγρός ἐστιν ὁ κόσμος κ. τ. λ.³ 1 John iii. 4, ἡ ἀμαρτία ἐστὶν

¹ Middleton *ad loc.* See also Winer.

² Middleton, part i. ch. ii. sect. 2, and note *ad l. c.*

³ In v. 39, several manuscripts have ἡ συντίλεια, which seems to be correct; and ἄγγελοι must be rendered simply *angels*. Compare, however, v. 49, *infra*, and Matt. xxv. 31. See Middleton *in loc.*

ἡ ἀνομία. Care must be taken not to confound these *universal* propositions with others widely different in character, though similar in form. In the last example, for instance, ἀμαρτία and ἀνομία had both been previously mentioned, but so mentioned that the article affixes to each word its fullest import; whereas, in 1 Cor. x. 4, ἡ δὲ πέτρα ἦν ὁ Χριστός, the first article indicates *renewed mention* simply, and the second is emphatic.¹

Obs. 4. It may be observed also that convertible propositions are sometimes found, in which the article is wanting either with the subject, or predicate, or both, when its absence may be accounted for upon some of the principles which have been already developed. There is an example in Matt. v. 34, ὅτι θεόνομος ἐστὶ θεοῦ. Here ὁ οὐρανός, understood, is the subject; and θεόνομος is equally definite by reason of its relation with θεοῦ. See § 30. 1. There is also another form, in which two convertible terms form the united subject of a proposition, whereof the predicate is ταὐτόν, or its equivalent ἵν. So 1 Cor. iii. 8, ὁ φυτεύων καὶ ὁ ποτίζων ἵν εἰσιν.

Obs. 5. Analogous to these *reciprocating* propositions are those, in which the *predicate* after εἰμί frequently has the article, where the subject is a *pronoun personal* or *demonstrative*; as in Matt. xiv. 16, σὺ εἶ ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ. xxvii. 11, σὺ εἶ ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων; Mark vi. 3, οὐχ οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ τίς τιν; John x. 7, ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ θύρα τῶν προβάτων. Rev. xxii. 16, ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ ῥίζα Δαβὶδ. Compare John viii. 12, xv. 1, Eph. ii. 14, Rev. i. 17, *et scipius*. In such instances the existence is *assumed*; the purport of the proposition being to identify the predicate with the subject.² So in Mark vii. 15, ἐκτενά ἐστι τὰ κοινοῦντα, where τὰ κοινοῦντα is the basis of the proposition, in which it is assumed that there are things which defile a man, and the object is to identify them with those under consideration. Thus again in John iii. 10, σὺ εἶ ὁ διδάσκαλος τοῦ Ἰσραήλ. The English version translates indefinitely, *a master of Israel*: but the allusion is doubtless to a title by which Nicodemus was distinguished from less celebrated teachers, and similar to that of ὁ λύχνος ὁ καιόμενος, applied to the Baptist in John v. 35.³ There is no real difficulty in John iv. 37, ἐν γὰρ τούτῳ ὁ λόγος ἐστὶν ὁ ἀληθινός. If we render, *in this instance the saying is true*, the article must be omitted; and a few MSS. are without it; but if, *in this is exemplified the true saying*, it is absolutely necessary; as in John i. 9, vi. 32, xv. 1. See § 30. 3.

Obs. 6. Sometimes a *personal pronoun* is one of two subjects where ἵν is the predicate. So in John x. 30, ἐγὼ καὶ ὁ πατήρ ἵν ἐσμεν. There are also cases closely similar to these convertible propositions, in which ἄλλος is the subject: as, for instance, John iv. 37, ἄλλος ἐστὶν ὁ σπείρων, καὶ ἄλλος ὁ θερίζων. v. 32, ἄλλος ἐστὶν ὁ μαρτυρῶν περὶ ἐμοῦ.

Obs. 7. It is observable that in examples of this kind the verb substantive is always expressed. There is apparently an exception in Mark xii. 26, ἐγὼ ὁ θεὸς Ἀβραάμ, κ. τ. λ. This, however, is a direct citation from the Hebrew, and in that language the verb in such cases is almost invariably understood. The LXX, however, insert the article in Exod. iii. 6. In Eph. iii. 1, the sense is interrupted by a parenthesis, and ἐγὼ Π. ὁ δίσμιος, where some would supply εἰμί, is the nominative to the verb πάμπαν, in v. 14. Compare Eph. iv. 1.³

¹ These, and other examples equally discrepant, are classed together by *Winer* under the same head.

² Grotius supposed the article to be employed κατ' ἐξοχὴν in Rev. iii. 17, σὺ εἶ ὁ θαλάσσιος, κ. τ. λ., which brings the place under this head; but such usage before an adjective is unexampled in Greek. The Hebrew ׀ is, however, frequently so used; and the Hebraisms in the Apocalypse are so numerous, that very probably this may be of the number. See Middleton *ad loc.*

³ Middleton, part i. ch. 3. § iii. 4. 1, and notes ad ll. cc. See also *Winer's Sprachidioms*, part iii. ch. 1. § 17. 4, 5.

3. In propositions which are not merely *negative*, but in which the negative extends to every individual, or to the whole species in question, so as to *exclude universally*, the article is omitted. It has been seen that there is in the article an *inclusive* or *generic* sense (§ 28. *Obs.* 1.), which renders it unfit to appear in cases of *total exclusion*; for in all such cases the word *any* may be supplied in English before the noun or nouns employed, or, which is the same thing, the negative must be rendered by *no*.¹ Thus in Matt. x. 24, οὐκ ἔστι μαθητὴς, *no disciple*; xviii. 14, οὐκ ἔστι θέλημα, *there is no wish*; 2 Cor. vi. 17, ἀκαθάρτου μὴ ἄπτεσθε, *any unclean thing*; 1 Tim. 12, γυναικὶ διδάσκειν οὐκ ἐπιτρέπω, *any woman whatever*. In James ii. 20, 26, χωρὶς τῶν ἔργων is not *without works* generally, but *without the works produced by faith*: for χωρὶς ἔργων would exclude *all works whatsoever*.²

4. The use of the article with adjectives and participles without a substantive, which thereby acquire the sense of substantives, is of frequent occurrence in the New Testament. Thus Matt. iv. 3, 1 Thess. iii. 5, ὁ πειράζων. Matt. v. 4. sqq., οἱ πενθοῦντες, οἱ πρᾶξις, οἱ ἐλεήμονες, κ. τ. λ. viii. 22, τοὺς νεκροὺς. Luke viii. 5, ὁ σπείρων. Matt. xiv. 14, τοὺς ἄρρώστους.

Obs. 8. Although in all such cases it is the article which gives to its adjunct the force and nature of a substantive, still its use is regulated according to the strictest principles. Thus, for instance, ὁ πειράζων is *the tempter* κατ' ἐξοχὴν, and ὁ σπείρων may either be considered as having a special reference to *the Messiah*, or the article may have the import which it usually bears in proverbs and parables. See above, § 27, *Obs.* 6. Where a noun thus formed is not intended to be definite, the article may be omitted before the participle. See § 35. 2. *Obs.* 4. It is, however, in its *inclusive* sense that the article is thus more frequently employed, as indicating the *whole class* of individuals to whom the adjective or participle applies, as in the examples from Matt. v. 4. sqq. Of the *art.* with a *neut. adj.*, see § 36. 1.

§ 29.—Article with Attributives.

1. When two or more *attributives*, whether *subs.* *adject.* or *part.*, are joined together by *conjunctions*, and *assumed* of the

¹ Middleton, part i. ch. 3. § 5.

² Winer, § 17. 1. Mr. Rose inquires whether this may not extend to interrogations, where an exclusion is conveyed, though not in a direct form? Thus 2 Cor. vi. 15, τίς μερὶς πιστῶ μετὰ ἀπίστου. This amounts to, *there is no portion for any believer*: and if it had been τῶ πιστῶ, the rendering would have been, *there is no portion for believers generally*. The proposition is equally exclusive with that in the next verse but one, which is cited above; and there seems to be no reason why the same principle should not prevail. Compare also 1 Cor. i. 20. At the same time *μερὶς* and *πιστῶ* being *correlatives*, the omission of the article with the former rejects it from the latter. See § 30. 1.

same person or thing, the article is *inserted* before the first attributive, and *omitted* before the remaining ones.¹ Examples are—Matt. xiii. 23, ὁ ἀκούων καὶ συνίων. Mark ix. 25, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄλαλον καὶ κωφόν. Mark xvi. 16, ὁ πιστεύσας καὶ ὁ βαπτισθεὶς. John vi. 40, ὁ θεωρῶν καὶ πιστεύων. xxi. 24, ὁ μαθητὴς ὁ μαρτυρῶν περὶ τούτων καὶ γράψας. Acts ii. 20, τὴν ἡμέραν κυρίου τὴν μεγάλην καὶ ἐπιφανῆ. iii. 14, τὸν ἅγιον καὶ δίκαιον. Eph. i. 3, εὐλογημένος ὁ θεὸς καὶ πατήρ. v. 5, ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ Θεοῦ. So Phil. iii. 3, Tit. ii. 13, Heb. iii. 1, 2 Pet. i. 1, Jude 4. Add Mark xvi. 16, Luke vi. 49, John vi. 40, x. 1, xxi. 24, Rom. xii. 2, 2 Cor. i. 3, Gal. i. 7, Phil. iv. 20, Col. ii. 2. iii. 17, 1 Thess. iii. 11, 2 Thess. ii. 12, 16, &c. &c.

Obs. 1. The remarkable exclamation in John xx. 28, ὁ Κύριός μου καὶ ὁ Θεός μου, is an apparent exception; but in this instance the Evangelist has deemed it important to retain the Hebrew idiom in which it was delivered. In this language the affix is necessarily subjoined to both nouns; and the LXX have translated יְיָוָה יְיָוָה by ὁ Θεός μου καὶ ὁ Κύριός μου, in Ps. xxxv. 23. See also Ps. v. 3. In each case the nominative with the article is used for the vocative.²

2. When *different* persons or things are intended, the article is repeated; as in Matt. xviii. 17, ὁ ἔθνικός καὶ ὁ τελώνης. Luke xv. 6, τοὺς φίλους καὶ τοὺς γείτονας. John ix. 8, οἱ γείτονες καὶ οἱ θεωροῦντες αὐτόν. Acts xiii. 50, τὰς σεβομένας γυναῖκας καὶ τοὺς πρώτους τῆς πόλεως. xxvi. 30, ὁ βασιλεὺς καὶ ὁ ἡγεμών. xxvii. 11, τῷ κυβερνήτῃ καὶ τῷ ναυκλήρῳ. Add Col. ii. 13, v. 1, Rev. vi. 15, xiii. 10.

Obs. 2. The reason of this usage is readily deduced from the nature of the article, considered as a *pronoun* united with its *adjunct* by means of the *participle* ὢν understood; for if the *art.* be united to each of two nouns coupled by a conjunction, such nouns cannot refer to the same person without involving the absurdity of joining an individual to himself. Care must be taken, however, to distinguish such passages as John ii. 7, οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ πλάγιος καὶ ἀντίχριστος. Here it is not the intention of the writer to *assume* the identity of the two characters, but to *assert* that they are united in certain persons. Compare Rev. i. 11. Be it observed, moreover, that the rule is strictly limited to *attributives*, being inapplicable to the names of *substances*, *abstract ideas*, and *proper names*. And this is just what might be expected. Though the same object may possess divers attributes, it is impossible that substances in their nature distinct and incompatible can be predicated of the same individual, that several abstract ideas should be amalgamated into a single essence, or that the name of two persons should be applied to one only. In such cases, since no ambiguity can possibly arise from inattention to the rule, it is not always

¹ This is the celebrated canon of *Mr. Granville Sharpe*. The passage cited by Matthiæ (Gr. Gr. § 268, *Obs.* 1) from Plat. Phæd. p. 78, is a good illustration of it; but the several examples there considered, as coming under the same head, do not fall within the canon, but require other methods of explanation.

² Middleton *ad loc.*

accurately observed; but of things or qualities in their nature *utterly incompatible*, the name of the first only has the article in numberless instances. With respect to plurals also the rule is not always applicable; for though one individual may act in several capacities, yet it is not likely that a multitude of individuals should act in the same several capacities. When, however, two or more persons or things are so related, that what is attributed to one is attributed to all, and any ambiguity would arise from an infringement of the rule, it seems to have been invariably observed. The following examples will illustrate the above remarks; and others will continually present themselves:—Mark xv. 1, *μετὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ γραμματέων*. Luke xiv. 23, *εἰς τὰς ἑοὺς καὶ φραγμούς*. Acts iii. 11, *τὸν Πέτρον καὶ Ἰωάννην*. Phil. i. 19, *διὰ τῆς ὑμῶν διήσεως καὶ τριχοφυΐας*. ii. 17, *τῇ θυσίᾳ καὶ λειτουργίᾳ*. Col. ii. 23, *τὰ ἱντάλματα καὶ διδασκαλίας*. Heb. ix. 19, *τῶν μύσχων καὶ τευχῶν*. Rev. v. 12, *τὴν δυνάμιν καὶ σλαυτὸν*. In none of these instances could any ambiguity arise from the omission of the article, since the two ideas in each case are essentially distinct.

§ 30.—Article with Correlatives, &c.

1. Nouns having a mutual relation to each other, and therefore called *correlatives*, or said to be in *regimen*, have the article prefixed to *both* of them, or to *neither*; and to a series of nouns in regimen the rule is equally applicable. To give a familiar example, we must either say, *λέοντος σκυμνίου*, or *τὸ τοῦ λέοντος σκυμνίου*; for, though we may say, in English, *the cub of a lion*, yet the accuracy of philosophical language denies that of *λέοντος*, which is indefinite, there can be any definite *σκυμνίου*, or *vice versa*. In Matt. xii. 27, *ὁ Θεὸς νεκρῶν*, if the words were in regimen, could not be tolerated; but the passage is elliptical, and would stand thus in full: *οὐκ ἔστιν ὁ Θεὸς νεκρῶν Θεός, ἀλλὰ Θεὸς ζώντων*. The construction in 2 Cor. x. 13, is not *ὁ Θεὸς μέτρου*, but *οὗ μέτρου ὁ Θεὸς ἐμέρισε τὴν ἡμῶν*.

Obs. 1. Many examples will occur which are apparently repugnant to this canon. The principle of omission, however, requires that the governing noun should not only be *anarthrous*, but also *indefinite in sense*; for it may, though definite, have lost its article by some rule which does not require that the governed noun should become *anarthrous* also. In Hebr. i. 3, the former article is omitted after the participle *ᾧ*, which the very nature of the article requires; and again in the same verse after a verb of *appointing*. See § 27, *Obs.* 11. *Enumeration* sometimes also, though extremely seldom, interferes with the laws of *regimen*. In 1 Pet. iii. 3, the reading is unquestionably *ἐκ πλακῆς*.¹ Nor is it only where a noun is indefinite in sense that the usage takes place. Even where it is from its nature definite, as in the case of *proper names*, &c., if it be *anarthrous*, the governing noun is not unfrequently *anarthrous* also.² Thus Rom. xi. 34, 1 Cor. ii. 16, *τίς ἔγνω νοῦν Κυρίου*. A very striking instance will also be found in the very first verse of St. Matthew.³ But it may be

¹ Middleton *ad loc.*

² Middleton, part i. ch. 3. In the Epistles of St. Paul *anarthrous* forms are peculiarly prevalent, and even more so in those of St. Peter.

³ Perhaps, however, *οἱ οὐρανοὶ καὶ ἡ γῆ* may be literally translated from the Hebrew, which in the *status constructus* does not usually admit the *ἦ* emphatic; and *βίβλος γένεσως*

well to illustrate the rule by examples: Luke i. 5, τῶν θυγατέρων Ἀαρών. i. 66, Acts xi. 21, χεὶρ Κυρίου. Luke iii. 4, ἐν βίβλῳ λόγων Ἡσαίου. xiii. 19, κόκκῳ σιναπίως, and τὰ πτερινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ. Acts viii. 5, εἰς πόλιν τῆς Σαμαρείας. Rom. i. 20, ἀπὸ πίστεως κόσμου. 1 Cor. xvi. 15, τὴν οἰκίαν Στιφανᾶ, and ἀπαρχὴ τῆς Ἀχαΐας. Eph. iv. 30, εἰς ἡμέραν ἀπολυτρώσεως. Phil. iv. 3, ἐν βίβλῳ ζωῆς. Col. iii. 10, κατ' εἰκόνα τοῦ κτίσαντος. Heb. xii. 2, τὸν τῆς πίστεως ἀρχηγόν. 1 Pet. iii. 20, ἡ τοῦ Θεοῦ μακροθυμία. 1 Pet. ii. 6, πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομορρᾶς.¹ In 1 Cor. xi. 3, there is an apparent, but not real, breach of the rule; for πάντος ἀνδρὸς is equivalent to τοῦ ἀνδρὸς with the article in its inclusive sense.²

Obs. 2. It is perhaps unnecessary to observe that the second of two correlatives is not necessarily, though usually, in the genitive case. The rule is equally applicable in 1 Cor. vi. 16, ὁ κολλώμενος τῇ πόρῃ.³ Be it remarked also that genitives, used in an adjective sense, and placed before the governing noun (see below § 44. 6, *Obs. 20*,) omit the article. Thus Origen, c. Cels. p. 116, τὴν ἀνθρώπων φύσιν, i. e. ἀνθρωπινήν. Such examples, however, are extremely rare in the New Testament.

Obs. 3. Analogous to the case of words in regimen is that of *partitives*, between which and their respective *wholes* a mutual relation subsists. Thus Phil. i. 14, τοὺς πλείονας τῶν ἀδελφῶν. Some partitives indeed are of such a nature as not to admit the article before them, or else admit it only in particular cases; of which the following are examples:—Matt. xvi. 28, τινὲς τῶν ὧδε ἱστηκότων. xxi. 31, τίς ἐκ τῶν δύο ἰποιῆσι; Acts xvii. 12, τῶν Ἑλληνίδων γυναικῶν τῶν εὐσχημόνων καὶ ἀνδρῶν οὐκ ὀλίγοι. Rev vi. 1. μίαν ἐκ τῶν σφραγίδων. It might be expected in Luke xix. 30 that ἀνθρώπων, after οὐδεὶς, would have the article; but the proposition is there exclusive, and therefore the article is rejected. See § 28. 3.

Obs. 4. On the same principle of mutual relation may be explained the two articles which are employed in divisions with μὲν and δέ. In the *pronominal* use of the article this usage is extremely common; nor is it unusual where the article has its adjunct, or even when the opposition is between *persons* and *things*. Thus Luke x. 2, ὁ μὲν θρισμὸς πολὺς, οἱ δὲ ἔργαται ὀλίγοι.⁴

2. When a noun in *apposition* is explanatory of the *essence* of a preceding noun, as when a term of distinction, such as an appellation of office, or title of honour, is added to a proper name for the purpose of affixing it more accurately to a particular individual, it takes the article; as in Matt. iii. 1, Ἰωάννης ὁ Βαπτιστής. xiv. 1, Ἡρώδης ὁ τετράρχης. Acts xviii. 8, Κρίσπος ὁ ἀρχισυνάγωγος. xxi. 8, Φιλίππου τοῦ εὐαγγελιστοῦ. See also Matt. x. 1—4, xiv. 2, Luke i. 5, John xx. 1, Acts xiii. 1, xviii. 17, xxiii. 26. If, however, it be not intended as a specific definition, but merely to indicate *one of a class*, the article is omitted. Thus Luke ii. 36, Ἀννα προφῆτις. Acts vii. 10, Φαραὼ βασιλέως. x. 32, Σίμωνος βυρσέως. xx. 4, Γάϊος Δερβαῖος. 2 Cor.

is exactly rendered from the Hebrew תולד פד, which sometimes signifies a *pedigree*; as in Gen. v. 1.

¹ These examples are chiefly from Winer (ch. i. § 18. 2. b.), who seems to regard them as irregularities, though he notices a like usage in the best writers. He unites in the same class those cases in which a personal pronoun is the correlative; but he instances only in cases where a preposition precedes.

² Middleton ad l. c.

³ See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 268, *Obs. 2*.

⁴ Middleton, part i. ch. 3., § 8 and 9.

i. 1, Παῦλος ἀπόστολος. In inscriptions to letters, indeed, this seems to have been the usual practice; as in 1 Macc. xv. 16, Λυκίος ὑπατος Ῥωμαίων Πτολεμαίῳ βασιλεῖ, χαίρειν. Compare, however, Acts xxiii. 26.

Obs. 5. Nearly similar is the case of an attributive, placed in apposition with a personal pronoun; as in Luke vi. 24, ὑμῖν τοῖς πλουσίοις. xi. 46, ὑμῖν τοῖς ἡμαρῖν. xviii. 13, ἐμοὶ τῷ ἁμαρτωλῷ. The article implies the *assumption* of the attribute, and in this last example the sense will be, *seeing that I am a sinner*. So again Rom. ii. 27, σὺ τὸν διὰ γράμματος καὶ περιτομῆς, scil. ὄντα, *albeit you profess to observe the law*; Heb. x. 10, (ἡμεῖς) οἱ διὰ τῆς προσφορᾶς, *we who partake of the sacrifice*. Much in the same manner must be understood the greatly disputed expression 1 Cor. xv. 8, ὡςπερ ἐγὼ ἐκτρώματι ὤφθην καὶ μοί. St. Paul here intends to apply the term *εκτρώμα* to *himself*, and it was therefore necessary to employ the article, otherwise the meaning would have been that *εκτρώματα* commonly saw what he had seen, not that he was, *as it were*, an *εκτρώμα*, or *last born child* (for such is probably the meaning of the word in this place), among the Apostles.¹

Obs. 6. With the nouns υἱός, παῖς, θυγάτηρ, γύνη, understood, the form is variable. Matt. i. 6, τῆς τοῦ Οὐρίου. iv. 21, Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ζεβεδαῖα. Mark xv. 47, Μαρία Ἰωάννου. Luke vi. 16, Ἰούδαν Ἰακώβου, where ἀδελφός is probably the word to be supplied. In Rom. xvi. 10, 11, 1 Cor. i. 2, the sense requires οἰκίων. So also in Acts xvi. 23.²

3. When a *part.* or *adj.* is added to a noun for the sake of *definition*, both the noun and defining word take the article. Thus Acts xxi. 38, ὁ Αἰγύπτιος ὁ ἀναστατώσας. Eph. i. 3, ὁ Θεὸς ὁ εὐλογήσας.

Obs. 7. So with personal pronouns; as in Eph. i. 13, ἡμᾶς τοὺς προηλπιόντας. And with words, which, being otherwise *definite*, omit the article; as 1 Thess. i. 10, Ἰησοῦν τὸν ῥυόμενον ἡμᾶς. See also Acts i. 11, 23, 1 Thess. ii. 4, iv. 5, Heb. iv. 3, vi. 18, James iii. 6, 1 Pet. i. 3, 1 John v. 13. The nominative of the pronoun is included in the verb in Rom. ii. 1, τὰ γὰρ αὐτὰ πράσσεις ὁ κρίνων.

Obs. 8. If, on the other hand, no express definition is intended, but the participle merely indicates a simple act or possible contingency, it rejects the article. Thus Acts iii. 26, ὁ Θεὸς, ἀναστήσας τὸν παῖδα αὐτοῦ, ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν κ. τ. λ. Rom. ii. 27, ἡ ἐκ φύσεως ἀκροβυστία, τὸν νόμον τελοῦσα. So John iv. 6, 39, Rom. xvi. 1, 1 Cor. viii. 7, Heb. x. 2. The difference between this and the preceding case is clearly marked in 1 Pet. v. 10, ὁ Θεὸς ὁ καλίσας ἡμᾶς ὀλίγον παθόντας. Compare also Rom. viii. 1, 4.³

Obs. 9. A similar apposition is sometimes expressive of *irony* or *sarcasm*; as in Matt. xxvii. 40, (σὺ), ὁ καταλύων τὸν ναὸν, σῶσον σίαυτόν.

4. The *neut. article* τὸ is commonly placed before an entire phrase or sentence, which is cited as a maxim or proverb, or repeated as the main subject of discourse; and also before single words which are to be explained or illustrated. Thus in Matt. xix. 18, τὸ Οὐ φονεύσεις κ. τ. λ. Mark ix. 23, τὸ, εἰ

¹ See Middleton on Luke xviii. 13, 1 Cor. xv. 8. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 22. b.

² Winer, p. 116, *Note*, and § 19. 3. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 22. a 3, and Addend. p. 277.

³ Winer, § 19. 1.

δύνασαι. Luke i. 62, τὸ, τί ἂν θέλοι καλεῖσθαι αὐτόν. xxii. 2, τὸ, πῶς ἀνέλωσιν αὐτόν. Acts iv. 21, τὸ, πῶς κολάσωνται αὐτούς. Rom. viii. 26, τὸ γὰρ, τί προσευξώμεθα καθὸ δεῖ. Add Luke ix, 46, xxii. 4, 23, 37, Acts xxii. 30, Rom. xiii. 9.

Obs. 10. It will be observed, that this mode of writing is chiefly employed by St. Luke and St. Paul. Of the usage before a single word, of which an explanation is offered, there is an instance in Gal. iv. 25, τὸ γὰρ Ἄγαρ Σινᾶ ὄρος ἐστίν, *the name of Agar designates Mount Sinai*.¹ Closely similar is 2 Cor. i. 20, ὅσαι γὰρ ἐπαγγελίαι Θεοῦ, ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ Ναὶ, καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ Ἀμήν, i. e., whatever God has promised, he will assuredly fulfil through Christ; in whom is *the Yea, and the Amen*—*ναὶ* and *ἀμήν* being well-known asseverations of the Truth.²

Obs. 11. Most of the other cases, in which the article is used *absolutely* by Greek writers generally, may be equally illustrated by examples from the New Testament. It stands, for instance,

1. In a collective sense, before a noun which limits the signification; as in Matt. xxvi. 51, τῶν μιστ' Ἰησοῦ. Acts v. 17, οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ. xii. 1, τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας. xvii. 11, τῶν ἐν Θισσαλονίκη. Rom. iv. 14, οἱ ἐκ νόμου. Heb. xiii. 24, οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας. Phil. iv. 22, οἱ ἐκ τῆς Καίσαρος οἰκίας.
2. With a noun understood; as in Matt. xiv. 35, τὴν περιχῶρον ἐκίνην, *scil.* γῆν. Luke vii. 11, ἐν τῇ ἑξῆς, *scil.* ἡμέρᾳ. John viii. 23, τῶν κάτω, τῶν ἄνω. Col. iv. 9, τὰ ἄδι. 1 Tim. iii. 7, οἱ ἔξωθεν. iv. 8, ζωῆς τῆς νῦν. 2 Pet. i. 9, τῶν πάλαι αὐτοῦ ἀμαρτημάτων. When the substantive is not expressed, it may always be readily supplied from the context.
3. With neuter adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial expressions; as Matt. xxiv. 21, Luke xxii. 69, τὸ νῦν. Luke ix. 3, τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν. Acts iv. 29, τὰ νῦν, *scil.* πράγματα. xviii. 1, τὸ καθ' ὅλον. Phil. iv. 8, τὸ λοιπόν.
4. With the genitive of a substantive, either as denoting possession or property, or serving the mere purpose of a periphrasis. Thus Matt. xxi. 21, τὸ τῆς συκῆς. xxii. 21, τὰ Καίσαρος, τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Luke ii. 49, τοῖς τοῦ πατρός. Rom. viii. 5, τὰ τῆς σαρκὸς, τὰ τοῦ πνεύματος. 1 Cor. x. 24, τὸ ἑαυτοῦ, τὸ τοῦ ἑτέρου. James iv. 14, τὸ τῆς αὔριον. 2 Pet. ii. 22, τὸ τῆς ἀληθοῦς παροιμίας.
5. With prepositions and their case: John xxi. 2, Ναθαναὴλ ὁ ἀπὸ Κανᾶ. Acts xii. 20, τὸν ἐπὶ τοῦ κοιτῶνος. xxiv. 22, τὰ περὶ τῆς ὁδοῦ. Rom. ii. 8, οἱ ἐξ ἐριθείας. ix. 11, ἡ κατ' ἐκλογὴν πρόθεσις. xi. 27, ἡ παρ' ἐμοῦ διαθήκη. Phil. i. 27, τὰ περὶ ὑμῶν. Col. iii. 2, τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. Heb. ii. 17, τὰ πρὸς τὸν Θεόν. Tit. ii. 8, ὁ ἐξ ἐναντίας.³ Of the formula οἱ περὶ τινα, see § 68.

§ 31.—Article with Abstract Nouns and Proper Names.

1. *Abstract nouns*, or the names of *Attributes* and *Qualities*, generally reject or take the article, as they are used in a *particular* or *universal* acceptation respectively; and this is precisely what might be expected: for as οἱ ἄδικοι will signify *all*

¹ Alt, Gr. N. T. § 22. a. 8. Rosenmuller and Kuinoel on Mark ix. 23. Whitby on Gal. iv. 25.

² Middleton *ad loc.*

³ Alt, Gr. N. T. § 22. a. 7. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 272. The observation of Matthiæ, that this construction is generally explained by supplying the *part.* ὅν, is strongly corroborative of *Bishop Middleton's Theory*. It will be remarked that the idiom is very constantly employed by St. Paul.

who are unjust, so ἡ ἀδικία will signify *every act* of which *injustice* can be assumed.¹

Obs. 1. The practice is, however, somewhat irregular; and many instances in which the noun is anarthrous, when the *mere abstract* sense would have been equally true. But there is a wide difference between omitting the article which might have been used, and inserting it where it would be out of place. Thus verbs of *having, obtaining, fulness, &c.*, and adjectives allied to the last, the article is always omitted; for no attribute or quality can belong to one person so exclusively, that it cannot be ascribed to any other. Hence such expressions as the Matt. vii. 29, ἰξουσίαν ἔχων. xxiii. 28, μιστοὶ ὑποκρίσεως καὶ ἀνομίας. Luke i. 1, ἐπλήσθησαν θυμῷ. 1 Cor. xiii. 1, 2, 3, ἀγάπην ἔχω. James ii. 14, πίστιν ἔχω. of *partaking* also for the most part, though not invariably, follow the same rule, though *attributes or qualities*, as *wholes*, cannot be exclusively claimed by any individual, yet he may have a *part* in such wholes. On the same principle, in the compound phrases, ἄνοιαν ἐφλισκάνειν, δίκην δίδοναι, ἡσυχίαν ἄγειν, and the like, the article is variably omitted. A somewhat similar expression is ἀίμα δίξις, in 1 Cor. ix. 12.

Obs. 2. Similarly we may account for the *anarthrous* use of *abstract nouns*, when they are employed in the dative case *adverbially*, with reference to the *person or thing* to which anything is said to have happened; as in Gal. iv. 8, τοῖς μὴ φύσει ὄντι. See § 47. 2. In the same way such words as σὰρξ, πνεῦμα, καρδία, στόμα, &c. are used in the dative *adverbially*, to express the characteristic qualities of those persons or things. Compare Rom. viii. 13, x. 10, Gal. iii. 3, v. 5, 16, 18, 25, *et alibi*. In such cases the reference is not to any particular subject; and if it were, as it might be, the article would be prefixed. Sometimes it is immaterial whether the reference is limited or not; as in Luke i. 80, and elsewhere.

2. Besides its use as an indication of their *most abstract* sense, the article is sometimes prefixed to *abstract nouns* in the sense of a possessive pronoun; and also where there is a kind of reference, or where the attribute is personified. Acts xxviii. 4, ἡ Δίκη is the *Goddess of Justice*; and in many instances the practice seems to be founded on the *notorious celebrity* of these imaginary persons. In 1 Cor. xiii. 4, ἡ ἀγάπη may either be used in its most general sense, or it may be personified, or the article may be the index of *renewed men*. In 2 Cor. i. 17, τῇ ἐλαφρίᾳ indicates the sin of *light-mindedness*.

supposes to exist in the several words which he has enumerated, will be found to be in very close conformity with the nature of the article, as it has been here explained. They are *δικαιοσύνη*, Matt. v. 10, Acts x. 35, Rom. viii. 10, Heb. xi. 33, &c. ; *ἀγάπη*, John v. 42, Gal. v. 6, 2 Cor. ii. 8, &c. ; *πίστις*, Acts vi. 5, Rom. i. 5, iii. 28, 2 Cor. v. 7, 1 Thess. v. 8, &c. ; *κακία*, 1 Cor. v. 8, Eph. iv. 31, James i. 21 ; *πλεονξία*, 1 Thess. ii. 5, 2 Pet. ii. 3 ; *ἁμαρτία*, Rom. iii. 9, Gal. ii. 17, 1 Pet. iv. 1, &c.¹

3. With respect to *Proper Names*, which, from their very nature, belong to *definite* individuals, it seems to be deducible from the practice of the best writers, that they never have the article, except where the individual has been *recently mentioned*; or when, from some cause or other, a person is of such *notoriety*, that even without previous mention he may be immediately recognised by the reader.

Obs. 4. Although the poems of Homer do not suffice to establish these points, yet their *origin* may be traced to him ; and the assertion of *Heyne*, that Homer never prefixed the article to *proper names*, is altogether untenable.² The very many passages which are at variance with his opinions, he considers to be either corrupt or spurious ; but it will be sufficient here to advert to the remarkable instance in *I. A. 11*, Οὐνικα τὸν Χρῦσιν ἠτίμησ' ἀρητῆρα Ἀτρεΐδης. It is certainly a difficulty that Chryses is here mentioned for the first time ; but he was known by all to have been the author of the pestilence just described, and the article is therefore inserted on the ground of *notoriety*.³ So in *I. A. 532*, the article is prefixed to Τυδείδης, there named for the first time, as being the well-known antagonist of Hector. At the same time the simple circumstance of *notoriety*, which was a sufficient cause for the insertion of the article by subsequent authors, is not enough to account for the practice of Homer ; but the *notoriety* must be marked by some *fact* in immediate connexion with the introduction of the name.⁴ It furnishes, however, the origin of the more enlarged usage which afterwards prevailed ; and of which the New Testament supplies a variety of examples. Thus Luke i. 7, ἡ Ἐλισάβετ, *renewed mention* from v. 5 ; ii. 16, τὴν τε Μαριάμ καὶ τὸν Ἰωσήφ, from ch. i. 27 ; Acts i. 1, ὁ Ἰησοῦς, where, as elsewhere repeatedly, the article indicates *celebrity*. It is needless to multiply instances, which are to be met with in almost every page ; and it will be merely necessary, on the part of the student, to take into consideration the various exceptions to which, as in the case of common nouns, the application of the rule is liable.⁵

Obs. 5. In the Genealogy of Jesus Christ, as given in Matt. i. 2, sqq., the use of the article is directly the reverse of the Greek practice, which would require Ἀβραὰμ ἐγέννησιν Ἰσαάκ· ὁ δὲ Ἰσαάκ ἐγέννησιν Ἰακώβ· ὁ δὲ Ἰακώβ κ. τ. λ. The article with the accusative represents the particle *ἃν*, which is also so rendered by the LXX. Compare 1 Chron. vi. 4, Ruth iv. 18, *et passim*. In the Genealogy by St. Luke the use of the article is strictly Greek, τοῦ being everywhere an ellipsis of τοῦ υἱοῦ.

Obs. 6. It is upon the principle of *notoriety* that the names of *Gods* and *Heroes* usually take the article, as well as the proper names of *places*. Winer indeed

¹ Winer, § 18. 1.

² Heyne on *I. A. 11*. See also Matt. Gr. Gr. § 264.

³ Wolf ad Reizium de pros. Gr. p. 74. *Nihil dubito quin τὸν Χρῦσιν Poeta dixerit, ut personum fama celebrem, et auditoribus jam tum, cum primum ejus nomen audirent, notissimam.*

⁴ Middleton on the Greek Article, part i. ch. iv.

⁵ See Middleton.

observes, that although, in the New Testament, the names of *countries* and *cities* with the exception of Αἴγυπτος and Μακεδονία, seldom want the article, those of *cities* are occasionally anarthrous. The exceptions, however, will be found to consist chiefly, though not entirely, of cases, in which a *preposition* precedes, or there is an *enumeration*, or the *regimen* or some other ground of limitation interferes. See Matt. ii. 13, 14, 15, iv. 25, Luke v. 17, vi. 17, xxiii. 28, Acts xiv. 21, xvi. 9, xvii. 10, 15, xx. 15; and elsewhere. In Matt. ii. 3, iii. 5, ἡ πόλις, is in all probability to be supplied before Ἱερουσόλυμα: and in Acts xix. 26, some MSS. read ἦ, Ἐπίου. Winer himself remarks that in Acts xvi. 10, sqq., the article is inserted six times before Μακεδονία, though it is again omitted, but after a *preposition*, in Acts xx. 3.¹

§ 32.—Position of the Article in concord.

Although the *Art.* is frequently prefixed to adjectives, it is always a substantive expressed or understood, conjointly with the adjective, which must be considered as forming the entire adjunct, between which and the article the participle of existence is the connecting link. Hence the position of the article in concord is by no means immaterial; and care must be taken to distinguish the *assertive* from the *assumptive* relation between an adjective and substantive. Thus ἐμὸς ὁ πατήρ and ὁ ἐμὸς πατήρ are by no means equivalent; for the former will mean *mine is the father*; whilst in the latter something is to be predicated of the person *already assumed* to be my father: as, for instance, ὁ ἐμὸς πατήρ ἀπέθανε. Hence,

Obs. 1. If the adjective be a qualifying word, belonging essentially to the substantive, supposing one article only to be employed, it must be placed immediately before the adjective: as in Matt. xxviii. 19, τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος. John iv. 23, οἱ ἀληθινοὶ προσκυνηταί. The reason of this position is plain; for unless the qualifying adjective were placed before the substantive, the mind of the reader would rest satisfied with the sense contained in the substantive alone, without looking further; and should any limitation or explanation be required, the repetition of the article becomes necessary. In such cases, the rule invariably is that the substantive with its article should be placed first; since in such an expression as ὁ ἀγαθὸς ὁ ἄνθρωπος, the addition of ὁ ἄνθρωπος would be without meaning; and as in ὁ ἄνθρωπος there is a complete sense, if any thing more is to be assumed of the *definite* individual indicated by the article, it must be repeated. So Luke iii. 22, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον. John i. 9, τὸ φῶς τὸ ἀληθινόν. vi. 13, τῶν πέντε ἄρτων τῶν κριθίνων. What has been said respecting adjectives, is equally applicable to participles, adverbs, and prepositions with their cases, employed in the capacity of adjectives. Examples of the several cases will be found in Matt. ii. 2, ὁ τεχθεὶς βασιλεύς. iii. 7, τῆς μελλούσης ὁργῆς. John iv. 11, τὸ ὕδωρ τὸ ζῶν. Phil. iv. 3, τῆς ἁνὴ κλήσεως. Rom. xi. 24, τῆς κατὰ φύσιν ἱξικόπης. 2 Cor. viii. 4, τῆς διακονίας τῆς εἰς τοὺς ἁγίους. James i. 1, ταῖς φυλαῖς ταῖς ἐν τῇ διασπορᾷ. See also Matt. ii. 7, iii. 17, vi. 6, Mark iv. 31, xiii. 25, Luke i. 70, ii. 17, iii. 22, vii. 47, viii. 8, xv. 22, 23, xx. 35, John i. 46, xii. 21, Acts

¹ Middleton, *ubi supra*: and Rose's note at p. 82. Winer, § 17. 7.

xi. 22, xii. 20, xv. 23, xxiv. 5, xxvi. 4, 12, 22, Rom. iv. 11, vii. 5, 10, viii. 39, x. 5, xiv. 19, xv. 26, 31, xvi. 1, 1 Cor. ii. 11, 12, iv. 17, vii. 14, xii. 2, xvi. 1, 2 Cor. ii. 6, viii. 22, ix. 1, Gal. iv. 26, Eph. i. 10, 15, 1 Thess. iv. 10, 1 Tim. iii. 13, 2 Tim. ii. 1, James i. 9, iii. 7, 1 Pet. i. 11, iii. 3, 16, Rev. ii. 12, xiv. 17, xvi. 12, xix. 40, xx. 13.¹

Nor is this order ever violated, though the first article is sometimes omitted, inasmuch as that with the adjective is alone sufficient to correct the indefiniteness of the substantive. Thus in Acts x. 41, *μάρτυσι τοῖς προεχειροτονημένοις*. Compare Acts x. 41, xix. 11, xxvi. 18, 22, Rom. ix. 30, Phil. i. 11, iii. 6, 1 Tim. i. 4, iv. 8, 2 Tim. i. 13, 14, ii. 10, James iv. 14, 2 John 7, Jude 4.² In 1 Tim. i. 17, the adjectives *ἀφθαρτῷ, ἀοράτῳ*, are in concord with *Θεῷ*, not with *βασίλῳ*.

Obs. 2. It does not appear that there is any material difference between the two forms *ὁ ἀγαθὸς ἄνθρωπος* and *ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁ ἀγαθός*. Thus *τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα* and *τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον* are strictly equivalent in the New Testament. There may be some instances which seem to confirm the opinion, that the former is employed when the principal idea is conveyed by the adjective, and the latter when the main stress is to be laid on the substantive;³ but this is far from being the universal practice. At the same time it is not always a matter of indifference, which of the two forms is used. The former, as it is the more simple and natural, is by far the more common; the latter seems to be employed either in a sense of *limitation*, or to mark an *emphasis* or *opposition*. Although the import of *τὸ πνεῦμα*, for instance, is in general sufficiently clear, yet the addition of *τὸ ἅγιον* prevents at once the possibility of misconception; and, on the other hand, our Saviour calls himself *ὁ ποιμὴν ὁ καλός* (John x. 11), as opposed to him who is *μισθωτός*.⁴

Obs. 3. If the *adj.* is the predicate, or where the attribute is not *assumed* of the substantive, the adjective stands without the article either before or after the substantive. The first case, in which the verb is either expressed or understood, needs little illustration. Such examples as *καλὸς ὁ νόμος* (*scil. ἔστι*), continually occur; as, for instance, in Rom. ii. 13, *οὐ γὰρ οἱ ἀκροαταὶ τοῦ νόμου δίκαιοι*. In the other case, the adjective does not belong to the substantive *essentially*, but as it were *incidentally*. Thus Mark viii. 17, *ἔτι πιπωρωμένην ἔχετε τὴν καρδίαν ὑμῶν*, i. e. *ὥστε εἶναι πιπωρωμένην*. Acts xxvi. 24, *μεγάλῃ τῇ φωνῇ ἔφη, the voice, with which he spoke, was loud*; not that his voice was naturally loud. 1 Cor. x. 3, *πάντες τὸ αὐτὸ βρῶμα πνευματικὸν ἔφαγον, καὶ π. τ. α. πόμα πν. ἔπινον*, *the meat and drink, of which they all partook, had a spiritual import*. So also with *prepositions* and their case; as in Matt. iii. 4, *ἔχει τὸ ἵνδυμα αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τριχῶν καμήλου*, *the clothing, which he wore, was of camel's hair*. Compare John v. 36, Acts xiv. 10, Rom. ix. 3, 1 Cor. x. 18, xi. 5, 2 Cor. vii. 7, Eph. i. 15, ii. 11, Col. i. 4, 1 Tim. vi. 17, Heb. vii. 24, 2 Pet. i. 19. The distinction between this kind of construction, and that with the article repeated, is readily apparent. For example, to render *ὁ βασιλεὺς ὁ μέγας ἀπέθανε*, *the King, who is great, is dead*, would be nonsense. It should seem however that Winer and others have never seen the distinction clearly.⁵ In Luke xii. 12, the true reading is, unquestionably, *τὸ γὰρ ἅγιον πνεῦμα*; and in 1 John v. 20, many MSS. read *ἡ ζωὴ ἡ αἰώνιος*, as in cc. i. 2, ii. 25. The clause *κατὰ δύναμιν Θεοῦ*, in 2 Tim. i. 8, belongs to

¹ In Heb. ix. 1, if *ἅγιον* and *κοσμικὸν* are both adjectives, it is the latter which must be taken *substantively*; but, probably, it is the Rabbinical noun *קִמְיָה*, which signifies *furniture*. See Middleton ad loc. and Buxtorf's *Lex. Talm.* p. 2006. Otherwise the sense must be, *Its sanctuary was κοσμικὸν*, according to *Obs. 3.*

² Middleton on the Gr. Article; Pt. i. ch. viii. Winer, § 19. 2, 4.

³ See Hermann, *Hym. Hom.* p. 4, and on *Soph. Trach.* 736.

⁴ Middleton, *ubi supra*.

⁵ Middleton, *ubi supra*. Compare Winer, § 17. 2, and 19, 2. Alt, p. 277, in *Ad-dendis*.

the verb *συγκακοπάθησον*, and care should be taken not to confound this and similar examples with those which depend upon the principle under consideration.

§ 33.—*The Article as a Pronoun.* (BUTTM. § 126.)

1. Of the Homeric use of the article, in the sense of the *pron.* οὗτος, there is one unequivocal example in the New Testament; but it occurs in a quotation from Aratus (Phœn. 5.) in Acts xvii. 28, τοῦ γὰρ γένος ἐσμέν.

2. In divisions with ὁ μὲν, ὁ δέ, the pronominal sense is very frequent; as in Acts xvii. 32, οἱ μὲν ἐχλεύαζον, οἱ δὲ εἶπον, κ. τ. λ. See also Matt. xiii. 23, xxii. 5, 6, Acts xxviii. 24, Rom. ii. 7, 8, Gal. iv. 23, Phil. i. 16. Without ὁ μὲν preceding, ὁ δέ, and, in the plural, οἱ δέ, constantly occur. Thus Matt. ii. 5, ὁ δὲ εἶπε αὐτῷ. xxi. 29, ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπε: and so *passim*. Compare also Matt. ii. 14, iv. 20, xv. 25, 27, 34, xix. 17, Mark iii. 4, xii. 14, Luke v. 33, 34, John xix. 29, *et alibi*.¹

Obs. 1. In Matt. xxviii. 17, οἱ is evidently employed in the sense of *τινές*. There is a similar passage in Xen. Anab. i. 5. 13, ὥστε ἐκείνους ἐκπεπληχθαι, καὶ εἰπὼ Μενῶνα, καὶ τρίχιν ἐπὶ τὰ ὄπλα· οἱ δὲ καὶ ἴστασαν ἀποροῦντες. See also Ælian. V. H. iii. 35, Lucian. Timon. p. 68.²

Obs. 2. Instead of ὁ δέ, it frequently happens that ὁ μὲν is followed by some other word, as ἄλλος, ἕτερος, &c. Thus in Matt. xvi. 14, οἱ μὲν Ἰωάννην, ἄλλοι δὲ Ἡλίαν, ἴσμεν δὲ Ἰερεμίαν. Compare Matt. xii. 5. Sometimes ὅς μὲν—ὅς δὲ is substituted; as in Matt. xxi. 35, ὃν μὲν ἴδμεν, ὃν δὲ ἀπέκτειναν. 1 Cor. xi. 21, ὅς μὲν πεινᾷ, ὅς δὲ μεθύει. So Matt. xxv. 15, Luke xxiii. 33, Acts xxvii. 44, Rom. ix. 21, xiv. 5, 2 Cor. ii. 16. Also ὁ μὲν, ἄλλος δέ. Thus Matt. xiii. 4, 5, ὁ μὲν ἔπισσε παρὰ τὴν ὁδόν, ἄλλα δὲ ἐπὶ τῇ πετρώδῃ. 1 Cor. xii. 8, ὃ μὲν δίδεται λόγος σοφίας, ἄλλω δὲ λόγος γνώσεως, ἰσχύς ἢ πίστις, ἄλλω δὲ χαρίσματα ἰαμάτων, ἄλλω δὲ ἐνεργήματα δυνάμεων, ἄλλω δὲ προφητεία, ἄλλω δὲ διακρίσεις πνευμάτων, ἰσχύς δὲ γένη γλωσσῶν, ἄλλω δὲ ἑρμηνεία γλωσσῶν. Compare v. 28; where, in a like enumeration, οὓς μὲν πρῶτον is followed by διούτερον, τρίτον, and ἔπειτα. In Rom. xiv. 2, ὁ δὲ answers to ὅς μὲν, but in this instance the article ὁ has an adjunct in the participle ἰσθίων.³

Obs. 3. Besides the above methods of marking *partition* or *division*, other usages are adopted in the New Testament, which it may be proper to notice in this place.

1. Of these the most remarkable is the form εἷς καὶ εἷς, with or without the article; as in Matt. xxiv. 40, 41, xx. 21, xxvii. 38, Mark x. 37, Gal. iv. 22. It is to be observed, however, that although in these instances the omission or insertion of the article is obviously a matter of indifference, still ὁ εἷς is never employed except with reference to *some one other* person or thing; and where three or more are in question the article is omitted. Thus in Mark

¹ Winer, § 20. 1, 2. Alt, § 22, a. 9.

² Schol. ad Lucian. l. c. ὁμοία ἡ σύνταξις αὕτη τῇ ἐν ἱερᾷ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου Ματθ. συγγραφῇ, τῇ οἱ δὲ ἰδόντες ἀντὶ γὰρ τοῦ τινὲς τὸ οἱ κεῖται. See Kuinoel on Matt. xxviii. 17.

³ Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*; Georg. Hierocr., p. 109.

iv. 8, 20, ἑφερὶν ἐν τριάκοντα, καὶ ἐν ἑξήκοντα, καὶ ἐν ἑκατόν. We find ὁ εἷς used for *one of two* in Luke xxiv. 18. Compare Mark xiv. 10. In cases where there is no division, the article is never inserted, except where there is *renewed mention*, or some kind of reference. See Matt. xxv. 18, Rom. v. 15, 1 Cor. iv. 6, x. 17, xii. 11, Phil. ii. 2, 1 Thess. v. 11.¹ With respect to the form itself, some have regarded it as founded upon the Hebrew idiom, which will be found in Exod. xvii. 12, Levit. xii. 8, xv. 15, 1 Sam. x. 3, and elsewhere.² It is, however, closely allied to the expression εἷς μὲν—εἷς δέ, which occurs in Aristot. Ethic. vi. 1, Rhet. ii. 20.³

2. In other places of the New Testament εἷς is followed by ἑτερος or by ἄλλος. Luke vii. 41, ὁ εἷς ὠφείλει δηνάρια πεντηκόσια, ὁ δὲ ἑτερος πεντήκοντα. Rev. xvii. 10, ὁ εἷς ἐστὶν, ὁ ἄλλος οὕτως ἦλθε. See also Luke xvi. 13, xvii. 34, 35, xviii. 10. There is a peculiarity in Matt. vi. 24, where the article is omitted before ἑνος, and supplied before ἑτερος. May not the preposition in the compound verb ἀνθίσταται account for the omission?

3. In Phil. i. 15, τινὲς μὲν, -τινὲς δὲ answers the purpose of a division.

Obs. 4. An example of the use of the article in the sense of a *relative* pronoun, which it frequently bears in Homer and the Ionic and Doric writers, and sometimes in the Tragedians, has been erroneously supposed to exist in Acts xiii. 9, Σαῦλος, ὁ καὶ Παῦλος. The participle ὦν, or λεγόμενος, is here undoubtedly understood. A more likely instance would have been the expression ὁ ἦν, which forms part of the indeclinable title of Christ in Rev. i. 4. Here however the article is applied to ἦν, as if it were a participle of the perfect tense; and it is a peculiarity which, like many others in the *Apocalypse*, it is impossible to reconcile to the Greek usage. In these cases, however, as in most instances where it is joined with a participle, its original relative import is distinctly traced, and indicates the principle that the article is in fact a *relative* and not a *demonstrative* pronoun, of which the relation is explained by some adjunct annexed to it by means of the participle of existence. This relation may be more or less obscure according to circumstances; but it has been seen that a reference is always at least implied to some object, which, though perhaps not previously expressed, has occupied the mind of the writer. Some indeed have thought that the accent is the only distinction between the relative and the article, at least in the Ionic writers; but this is merely a distinction which must be at once rejected as arbitrary and unphilosophical.⁴ Its nature, as the *subject* of an *assumptive* proposition, explains the reason why it is prefixed only to nouns, adjectives, or their equivalents, viz. participles, and verbs of the infinitive mood; for it is plain that the word associated with it must be such, that the insertion of ὦν is admissible without forming a double proposition. Thus, if an *assertion* is made, that ὁ ἐστὶν—, the vacancy could not be filled up by περιπατεῖ: and the same is true, if, instead of an *assertive* proposition, *He is*, we take an *assumptive* one, *He being*. We can therefore only say, ὁ φιλόσοφος, ὁ σόφης, ὁ περιπατῶν.⁵

§ 34.—Pronouns. (BUTTM. § 127.)

1. Between οὗτος and ὅδε, the distinction seems to be, that the former refers to what immediately *precedes*, and the latter

¹ See Middleton on Phil. ii. 2, 1 John v. 7, 8.

² Vorstius de Hebraism. c. 7, p. 180.

³ Winer, § 26. 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 45, 4. Fischer ad Leusden, de Dial., p. 35.

⁴ See the Lexicons of Schleusner and Passow under ὁ, ἡ, τό.

⁵ Middleton, pt. i. ch. 2.

to what *follows*. Thus, Matt. vii. 12, οὗτος γάρ ἐστιν ὁ νόμος καὶ οἱ προφῆται, referring to the *foregoing* precept. Acts xv. 23, γράψαντες τὰδε, viz. the *subjoined* letter. This is, however, so far from being an invariable usage, that exceptions continually occur. In Luke x. 39, τῇδε refers to *Martha*, mentioned in the *preceding* verse; and in Acts iv. 11, οὗτος refers to Χριστοῦ, not to Θεός, which immediately precedes.

In other connexions, οὗτος refers to a *more distant* object, ὅδε to a *nearer* one; but ἐκεῖνος refers to what is *remote* or *absent*. Luke xvi. 25, ἀπέλαβες σὺ τὰ ἀγαθὰ σου ἐν τῇ ζωῇ σου, καὶ Λάζαρος τὰ κακὰ ὁμοίως· νῦν δὲ ὁδε (Lazarus, the *nearer* object) παρακαλεῖται, σὺ δὲ ὀδυῖσαι. Acts xv. 11, πιστεύομεν σωθῆναι, καθ' ὃν τρόπον κακεῖνα (scil. τὰ ἔθνη, v. 7).

Obs. 1. Some have referred αὕτη in Acts viii. 26 to the substantive ὅδε, but it belongs more probably to Γάζαν. There is also another doubtful case in 1 John v. 20, οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀληθινὸς Θεός, καὶ ἡ ζωὴ αἰώνιος. It is here doubted whether the reference is to *God the Father* or to *Christ*; but since ἡ ζωὴ αἰώνιος is a term which St. John invariably uses of Christ, and the true grammatical construction requires such a reference, there can be no solid reason for violating the rule.

Obs. 2. As the demonstrative pronoun, so the relative sometimes refers to a *remote* noun. Thus, in 1 Cor. i. 8, ὃς must refer to Θεός in v. 4. See also 2 Thess. ii. 9, Heb. v. 7, ix. 2, *et alibi*.¹

2. The *senses*, in which the pronoun αὐτός is commonly used, having been already noticed (§ 15. 2), it remains to subjoin the following observations on the *demonstrative* pronouns in general:—

Obs. 3. When the verb is separated from its case by a parenthesis, or after a proposition beginning with a relative, the demonstrative pronoun is frequently *redundant*. John xv. 2, πᾶν κλῆμα ἐν ἑμοὶ μὴ φέρον καρπὸν, αἴρει αὐτό· καὶ πᾶν τὸ καρπὸν φέρον, καθαίρει αὐτό. Acts iv. 10, ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὃν ὑμεῖς ἵσταυρώσατε, ἐν τούτῳ κ. τ. λ. Compare Acts ii. 22, 23, 36, v. 30, 31, vii. 35, 40, x. 38, sqq., and elsewhere.

Obs. 4. Frequently the pronoun is repeated for the sake of emphasis, as in Matt. vi. 4, καὶ ὁ πατήρ σου ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρύπτῳ, αὐτὸς ἀποδώσει σοι ἐν τῷ φανερῷ. xxiv. 13, ὁ δὲ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος, οὗτος σωθήσεται. Mark vii. 15, τὰ ἐκπορευόμενα ἀπ' αὐτοῦ, ἐκὶνέ ἐστι τὰ κοινούντα τὸν ἄνθρωπον. Compare v. 20, 1 Pet. v. 10.²

Obs. 5. Before and after participles, the demonstrative pronoun is frequently *redundant* without a parenthesis; as in Matt. iv. 16, τοῖς καθημένοις ἐν χώρα καὶ σκιᾷ θανάτου, φῶς ἀντίτιλιν αὐτοῖς. v. 40, τῷ θείοντί σοι κριθῆναι, καὶ τὸν χιτῶνά σου λαβῆναι, ὅφεις αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον. Compare also Acts i. 21, 22, James i. 25, Rev. ii. 7, 17, vi. 4. Sometimes αὐτός is twice added; as in Matt. viii. 1, κατὰβαντι δὲ αὐτῷ ἀπὸ

¹ Winer, § 23. 1. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 41. 1.

² Winer, § 23. 3.

τοῦ ὄρους, ἠκολούθησαν αὐτῷ ὄχλοι πολλοί. Mark v. 2, ἐξελθόντι αὐτῷ ἐκ τοῦ πλοίου, εὐθίως ἀπήντησεν αὐτῷ ἄνθρωπος. Add Matt. viii. 5, 23, 28, xxvi. 71, Mark ix. 28.

Obs. 6. With the infinitive also, the pronoun is in like manner pleonastic. Thus 2 Cor. ii. 1, ἵνα δὲ ἐμαυτῷ τοῦτο, τὸ μὴ πάλιν ἰλθεῖν ἐν λύπῃ πρὸς ὑμᾶς. Of a like character is the use of a pronoun before the particle ἵνα, or ὅτι, when the following sentence is emphatic; as in Acts ix. 21, εἰς τοῦτο ἰληλύθει, ἵνα διδιδόμενοι αὐτοὺς ἀγάγη εἰς τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς. So xx. 29, xxiv. 14. The usage is especially prevalent in the writings of St. John and St. Paul. See John vi. 29, xv. 8, Rom. vi. 6, xiv. 9, 1 Cor. i. 12, xv. 50, 2 Cor. ii. 9, v. 14, x. 7, 11, Eph. vi. 22, Phil. i. 6, 25, 1 Tim. i. 9, 1 John i. 5, ii. 3, 6, iii. 8, 16, 19, iv. 13, 17. Compare 1 Pet. iii. 9.¹ Sometimes the neuter plural ταῦτα is used with reference to a single object; as in John xv. 17, ταῦτα ἐντέλλομαι ὑμῖν, ἵνα ἀγαπᾶτε ἀλλήλους. 3 John 4, μειζότεραν τούτων οὐκ ἔχω χαρὰν.²

Obs. 7. Instead of repeating the relative, the demonstrative pronoun is frequently used in continuation of a proposition beginning with a relative; as in Acts iii. 13, ὁ Θεὸς ἐδόξασεν Ἰησοῦν, ὃν ὑμεῖς παρεδώκατε, καὶ ἠρνήσασθε αὐτόν. 1 Cor. viii. 6, ἡμῖν εἰς Θεὸς ὁ πατήρ, ἐξ οὗ τὰ πάντα, καὶ ἡμεῖς εἰς αὐτόν· καὶ εἰς Κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, καὶ ἡμεῖς δι' αὐτοῦ. So 1 Pet. ii. 22, 2 Pet. ii. 3, Rev. xvii. 2. Compare Ps. lxxxviii. 5, LXX. Very similar also is Rev. ii. 18, τάδε λέγει ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὁ ἔχων τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς αὐτοῦ ὡς φλόγα πυρὸς, καὶ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ ὅμοιοι χαλκολιβάδων (εἰσι).

Obs. 8. The demonstrative pronoun even follows the relative in the same proposition; as in Mark i. 7, οὗ οὐκ εἰμὶ ἱκανὸς λῦσαι τὸν ἱμάντα τῶν ὑποδημάτων αὐτοῦ. Mark vii. 25, ἥς εἶχε τὸ θυγάτριον αὐτῆς πνιῦμα ἀκάθαρτον. Acts xv. 17, Rev. viii. 2. The same construction obtains with other pronouns; as in Mark xiii. 19, θλίψεις, οἷα οὐ γέγονε τοιαύτη ἀπ' ἀρχῆς κτίσεως. Also with *adverbs*; as in Mark vi. 55, ὅπου ἤκουον ὅτι ἐκεῖ ἐστι. So Rev. xii. 14, xvii. 9. To this head have also been referred, but incorrectly, Matt. iii. 12, Gal. iii. 1. For similar examples in the LXX, see Exod. iv. 17, Levit. xvii. 5, Josh. iii. 4, Judg. xviii. 5, 6, 1 Kings xiii. 10, 25, 2 Kings xix. 4, Nehem. viii. 12, ix. 19, Joel iii. 7, Baruch ii. 17, Judith v. 19, x. 2, xvi. 3, 3 Esdr. iii. 5, iv. 54, vi. 32.

Obs. 9. It is also to be remarked, that a demonstrative pronoun is often found at the beginning of a new clause, in which a relative would rather have been expected. Thus in Luke ii. 36, ἦν Ἀννα πρόφητις· αὕτη προβιβηκυῖα κ. τ. λ. John i. 6, ἐγένετο ἄνθρωπος, ὄνομα αὐτῷ Ἰωάννης. Acts x. 36, εὐαγγελιζόμενος εἰρήνην διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· οὗτός ἐστι πάντων κύριος. In this last example, however, as in Acts viii. 26, the clause may be considered as a parenthetical observation. Although the usage is common in Hebrew, it is also found in the later Greek writers. See Ælian. V. H. xii. 18, Strabon. viii. 371, Philostr. Soph. i. 25.³

Obs. 10. By means of the demonstrative pronoun, two propositions, of which one contains the verb εἰμὶ, and the other a relative, are sometimes contracted into one; as in Luke xvi. 2, τί τοῦτο ἀκούω περὶ σοῦ, i. e. τί (ἐστι) τοῦτο, (οὗ) ἀκούω. 2 Pet. iii. 1, ταύτην ἥδη δευτέραν ὑμῖν γράφω ἐπιστολὴν, for αὕτη ἐστι ἡ δευτέρα ἐπιστολή, ἣν γράφω.

Obs. 11. With respect to the use of these pronouns in the New Testament, it may also be observed that—1. αὐτός is sometimes put with καὶ, as *et is* or *isque* in Latin, in the sense of *and indeed*, *and that too*; as in Luke vii. 12, υἱὸς μονογενῆς τῇ μητρὶ αὐτοῦ· καὶ αὕτη χήρα, *and she too a widow*; i. e. in addition to her other sufferings. 1 Cor. vi. 6, ἀδελφὸς μιστὰ ἀδελφοῦ κρίνεται, καὶ τοῦτο ἐπὶ ἀπιστῶν. 8, ἀδικεῖτε καὶ ἀποστερεῖτε, καὶ ταῦτα ἀδελφούς. Add 1 Cor. ii. 2, Eph. ii. 8, Phil. i. 28. And, 2. The neuter accusatives τοῦτο and ταῦτα are used adverbially, with κατὰ or διὰ

¹ Winer, §§ 22. 4, 23. 4. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 38. 2.

² Winer, *ubi supra*.

³ Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*; Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 551. Götting ad Callim. p. 19. Poppo ad Xen. Cyr. p. 478. Bornemann ad Xen. Conv. p. 196.

understood, as in Heb. x. 33, τοῦτο μὲν,—τοῦτο δὲ, *on the one hand and on the other*. Compare Herod. i. 30, iii. 132, Lucian. Nicor. 16. Again, in 2 Pet. i. 5, καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦτο δὲ, *and for this very cause*.¹

Obs. 12. In Hebrew the pronoun sometimes refers to a noun expressed in the succeeding sentence; and a like usage has been pointed out with αὐτός in two passages of the New Testament. These are, Matt. xvii. 18, ἐπιστήμῃσιν αὐτῷ ὁ ἴσως. Acts xii. 21, ἰδημηγόρει πρὸς αὐτούς. In the first passage, however, αὐτῷ may be readily be referred to the dæmoniac as the dæmon, which are so frequently interchanged in the Gospels, that no support can be drawn from the parallel place of Mark ix. 25, to the proposed interpretation; and in the latter, αὐτούς refers more properly to the deputies from Tyre and Sidon, mentioned in the preceding verse, than to δῆμος in the following.

Obs. 13. The pronoun αὐτός is sometimes interchanged with σὺ, as in Matt. xiii. 37, Ἱερουσαλὴμ, Ἱερουσαλὴμ, ἡ ἀποκτείνουσα τοὺς προφῆτας, καὶ λιθοβολοῦσα τοὺς ἀποστόλους πρὸς αὐτήν, ποσάκις ἠθίλησα ἐπισυναγαγῆναι τὰ τέκνα σου. Compare Rev. xviii. 23, 24. Thus also a general turn is given to the words of Elizabeth in her address to Mary, in Luke i. 45, καὶ μακαρία ἡ πιστεύσασα, ὅτι ἔσται τελείωσις τοῖς λελελεγμένοις αὐτῇ παρὰ Κυρίου. Such transitions, which seem to originate in the fervour of a writer, who is more intent upon the importance of his subject than the accuracy of his language, are very common in Hebrew.²

Obs. 14. The reflexive pronoun ἑαυτοῦ is frequently put for the other personal pronouns compounded with αὐτός. Thus, for the 2 pers. sing. in John xviii. 34, ἐγὼ ἑαυτοῦ σὺ τοῦτο λέγεις; for the 1 pers. plur. in Acts xxiii. 14, ἀναδίματι ἀναδιματίζομεν ἑαυτούς; and for the 2 pers. plur. in Phil. ii. 12, τὴν ἑαυτῶν σωτηρίαν κατεργάζεσθαι. See also Matt. iii. 9, xxii. 39, xxiii. 31, John xii. 8, Acts xiii. 46, Rom. viii. 23, xiii. 9, 1 Cor. xi. 31, 2 Cor. i. 9, x. 12, 1 Thess. ii. 8. So, in Latin, Ovid. Epist. Herpid. v. 46, *Miscuimus lacrymas mæstus uterque suas*.

Obs. 15. The reflexive pronoun is also put for ἀλλήλων, as in Col. iii. 16, διδάσκατε καὶ νοσητοῦντες ἑαυτούς. 1 Thess. v. 13, εἰρηνίζετε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. See also 1 Pet. iv. 8, 10.³

3. The pronoun indefinite τις is either used alone, or with a substantive in the same case, or followed with a genitive (§ 41. 3), in the sense of *some one, a certain one, any one, something, or any thing*. Thus in Matt. v. 23, καὶ κεῖ μνησθῆς ὅτι ὁ ἀδελφός σου ἔχει τὶ κατὰ σοῦ. ix. 3, τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων εἶπον ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. xii. 47, εἶπε δὲ τις αὐτῷ. Acts ix. 36, ἐν Ἰόππῃ δὲ τις ἦν μαθητρία. Add Matt. xi. 27, xii. 19, xxi. 3, xxii. 46, Mark viii. 26, xi. 13, Luke xxii. 35, Acts ix. 2, xvii. 20, xxvii. 8, 44, 1 Cor. ix. 22, 2 Pet. iii. 16, *et alibi*.

Obs. 16. The cases are constantly omitted before *genitives* taken *partitively*. Thus in Matt. xxiii. 34, ἐξ αὐτῶν ἀποκτενίῃτε καὶ σταυρώσιντε, *scil.* τινάς. John xvi. 17, εἶπον οὖν ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν. Add Luke xxi. 16, Rev. ii. 10, xi. 9. Of the omission of τις in the nominative, see § 37. 7. *Obs.* 17.

4. In the New Testament the use of the possessive pronouns

¹ Winer, § 21. 2. *Obs.* 3.

² Alt, Gr. N. T. § 37. 4.

³ Winer, § 22. 5. Alt, § 39. Georgi Hierocrit. i. 3. 30. Viger de Idiot. p. 115. n. 7, and Herm. and Zeun. *ad loc.* Passov. Lex. in v.

is far less common than that of the genitive of the personal pronouns; and the position of these last is very frequently before the noun, even where there is no apparent emphasis to account for the departure from ordinary usage. (See § 44. 6. *Obs.* 20.) The practice is particularly observable in St. Luke and St. Paul. See Luke vi. 47, xi. 17, xii. 18, 30, 35, xv. 30, xvi. 6, xix. 35, Rom. xiii. 11, 1 Cor. viii. 12, ix. 11, 27, xi. 24, Eph. ii. 10, Phil. ii. 2, Col. ii. 5, iv. 18, 1 Thess. i. 3, iii. 10, 13, 2 Thess. ii. 17, iii. 5, 1 Tim. iv. 15, 2 Tim. i. 4, iii. 10, Tit. i. 15. It is often found also in St. John, and, though less frequently, in the other writers. Compare Matt. v. 16, vi. 4, 17, xix. 21, Mark ii. 9, John ii. 23, iii. 19, 21, 23, iv. 34, 47, ix. 11, 21, 26, xi. 32, 48, xii. 40, 1 John iii. 20, Rev. ii. 19, iii. 1, 2, 8, 15, x. 9, xiv. 18, xviii. 5.

Obs. 17. The possessive pronoun is sometimes expressed by means of a periphrasis, formed by the preposition κατὰ with an accusative of the personal pronoun: as in Acts xvii. 28, *τις τῶν κατ' ὑμᾶς ποιητῶν.* xviii. 15, *νόμου τοῦ κατ' ὑμᾶς.* Eph. i. 15, *τὴν κατ' ὑμᾶς πίστιν.* So Ælian, V. H. ii. 42. *ἡ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀριτή.* Dion. Hal. ii. 1, *οἱ κατ' ἡμᾶς χρόνοι.*¹

§ 35.—*The Article with Pronouns, πᾶς, &c.* (BUTTM.
§ 127. Text, 5, 6.)

1. With the demonstrative pronouns οὗτος, ὁδὲ, ἐκεῖνος, the noun, to which they are joined, takes the article in both numbers, because the identity of the noun and pronoun is *assumed*, and in no case can the sense be more definite and restricted. Matt. iii. 1, *ταῖς ἡμέραις ἐκείναις.* 9, *τῶν λίθων τούτων.* James iv. 3, *τὴνδε τὴν πόλιν.*

Obs. 1. A single MS. has βλίπεις ταύτην γυναῖκα, in Luke vii. 41: and the only other exceptions are cases of numerals and proper names. See § 27. 2. *Obs.* 7. 3. and § 31. 3. If, on the other hand, the identity is asserted, i. e. if the pronoun is the subject, and the noun the predicate, of a sentence, the article, unless the sense be otherwise restricted, is omitted: as in Rom. ix. 8, *ταῦτα τέκνα τοῦ Θεοῦ, These are the children of God.* Compare Luke i. 36, xxi. 22, John iv. 18, 54, Gal. iii. 7, iv. 24, 1 Thess. iv. 3.²

Obs. 2. In Matthew, Mark, Luke, and St. Paul's Epistles, οὗτος stands before the noun, and in St. John after it, with some few exceptions: but ἐκεῖνος usually follows the substantive, unless when a preposition occurs.³

2. When πᾶς or ἅπας is used in the singular to signify the

¹ Winer, § 22. 7. Alt, § 40. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 441.

² Middleton on Gr. Art. ch. vii. § 5, 6. Winer, § 17. 9.

³ Gersdorf's Beiträge zur Sprach-characteristik der Schriftsteller des N. T. p. 434.

whole of any thing, the substantive takes the article; but when *every individual* of a species is intended, it is anarthrous, since no definite individual can, by the nature of the case, be meant. Thus Matt. xxi. 10, *πᾶσα ἡ πόλις*, *the whole city*; iii. 10, *τὸ δένδρον*, *every tree*. Compare Matt. vi. 29, xiii. 47, Mark iv. 1, Luke ii. 1, iii. 5, John ii. 10, Acts iii. 23, 2 Tim. iii. 16. In Eph. iv. 31, *πᾶσα πικρία* may be rendered *every species of bitterness*. So Acts xxiii. 1, 2 Cor. ix. 8, James i. 2, 1 Pet. i. 15.

Obs. 3. There can be little doubt that *πᾶσα ἡ οἰκοδομή*, in Eph. ii. 21, is the true reading, though sanctioned by the smaller number of MSS., since the omission of the article would be a solœcism; and in Eph. iii. 15, *πᾶσα πατριὰ* is *every family*. Since Ἱεροσόλυμα is a neuter noun, ἡ πόλις may possibly be understood in Matt. ii. 3, though proper names are a constant reason of variation in the use of the article (§ 31. 3). It is probable also that in Acts ii. 36, *οἶκος Ἰσραὴλ* may be regarded as a single proper name. The article is also rejected by the same expression in Matt. x. 6, xv. 24, contrary to the correct usage, which is nevertheless adopted in Heb. viii. 8, 10. A similar diversity prevails in the LXX, and the Hebrew would correctly omit the article. Compare 1 Sam. vii. 2, 3, Nehem. iv. 16.

Obs. 4. When a participle is used instead of a noun, the article is inserted after *πᾶς* in the sense of *each individual*; as in Matt. v. 22, 28, *πᾶς ὁ ὀργιζόμενος*, *πᾶς ὁ βλίσκων*. See also Luke vi. 47, xviii. 14, John iii. 20, vi. 40, Act xi. 39, Rom. ix. 33, 1 Cor. ix. 25, Gal. iii. 15, 1 John ii. 23, *et alibi*. The reason is that the article is required to give the participle the force and nature of a substantive; and the expressions are evidently equivalent to *πᾶς ὅστις ὀργίζεται*, *ὅστις βλίσκει*, &c. &c. See below § 42.¹ In Luke xi. 4, the case is somewhat different, since *ὀφείλοντι* retains its participial character. Some copies, however, insert *τῷ*.

Obs. 5. In the plural, *πάντες* is almost always accompanied by the article in the New Testament.² When the noun has a distinct reference, the law of usage is obvious; and in those cases where it may be apparently indefinite, it will often happen that a whole class is intended, which will equally account for its insertion. Examples are Matt. ii. 4, *πάντας τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ γραμματεῖς*, i. e. all who were members of the Sanhedrim; xi. 13, *πάντες οἱ προφῆται*, *the Prophets* of the Old Testament; Rom. i. 5, *πᾶσι τοῖς ἔθνεσι*, *all the nations* of the world; Luke xiii. 27, *πάντες οἱ ἐργάται*, *all the workers*, namely of the class indicated by the genitive *τῆς ἀδικίας*, which follows. On the other hand, the article is omitted in Rom. v. 12, *πάντας ἀνθρώπους*, *all men*, i. e. without exception or limitation; and it is also remarkable that, in a great majority of cases, the word without the article is *ἄνθρωποι*.

Obs. 6. The position of the article is commonly between *πᾶς* and the substantive. There are, however, some few exceptions in the New Testament, in which *πᾶς*

¹ Middleton, *ubi supra*; and in his notes to the several passages cited. Winer, § 17. 10. Gersdorf's Beiträge, pp. 374. sqq.

² Gersdorf's Beiträge, p. 386. He observes that the few exceptions are, for the most part, suspected readings. There exists, however, no doubt respecting Luke xiii. 4, Acts xvii. 21, xix. 17, xxii. 15, Rom. v. 12, 18, 1 Thess. ii. 15, 1 Tim. ii. 4, Tit. iii. 2. Matthiæ's notice respecting the use of *πᾶς* with the article is extremely brief, and he has not adduced a single example from any classical writer: but the different usages are abundantly illustrated by Bishop Middleton and his recent Editor, Mr. Rose. See Matt. Gr. Gr. § 265.

follows, and still fewer in which it is between the article and substantive. Of the latter usage, Acts xix. 7, xx. 18, Gal. v. 14, 1 Tim. i. 16, are perhaps the only instances: for the former, see Matt. xxv. 29, Luke vii. 35, John xvii. 10, Acts vi. 26, viii. 40, 1 Cor. vii. 17, xiii. 2, xv. 7, 2 Cor. i. 1, xiii. 2, 12, and elsewhere. In such phrases as οὗτοι πάντες, τὰυτα πάντα, the article is regularly omitted; as in Mark x. 20, Luke vii. 18, Rom. viii. 37.¹

Obs. 7. The construction of ὅλος is precisely similar to that of πᾶς. A substantive, being without reference, requires the article; and *vice versâ*. John vii. 23, ὅλον ἄνθρωπον, *an entire man*. Rom. viii. 36, ὅλην τὴν ἡμέραν, *the whole day*.

3. It is seldom that ἕκαστος is used as an adjective in the New Testament. When so employed, it is always without the article; as in Luke vi. 44, ἕκαστον δένδρον. John xix. 23, ἐκάστῳ στρατιώτῃ. Heb. iii. 13, καθ' ἐκάστην ἡμέραν.² In other Greek writers the article is sometimes inserted; but in cases where the noun has a definite reference. It is only once (Matt. xxvi. 18.) that δεῖνα occurs in the New Testament, and of course with the article. With τοιοῦτος the article is employed to designate a person or thing marked by some specific quality or appurtenance, which has been previously mentioned or implied. Thus Mark ix. 37, τοιούτων τῶν παίδων, *such children as those* before them. In 2 Cor. xii. 2, 3, the reference is to ἄνθρωπον as limited by the words ἐν Χριστῷ. When *such an one*, or *any such*, is intended, the article is omitted, as in Mark vi. 2, ix. 8, Acts vi. 24, 1 Cor. xi. 16, and elsewhere.

4. In the employment of ἄλλος, πολὺς, αὐτὸς, &c. the New Testament usage is similar to that of the classical Greek. Thus ἄλλος is simply *another*; ὁ ἄλλος, *the other, the remaining one of two*; οἱ ἄλλοι, *the others, the rest*. Compare Matt. iv. 21, v. 39, John xx. 25.

Obs. 8. In John xviii. 15, some MSS. omit the article, and Griesbach has marked it as *possibly spurious*; but the weight of authority is greatly in favour of its being genuine. It is highly probable that there was some peculiar connexion between the two Apostles, Peter and John; so that after the mention of the former, ὁ ἄλλος μαθητὴς would in early times be readily understood to designate the latter. The same expression recurs in John xx. 2, 3, 4, 8; nor does the addition in the first of these verses render the explanation above given unnecessary.³

Obs. 9. In many texts of the New Testament οἱ πολλοὶ is used in a sense equivalent to πάντες, so as to denote the *bulk* or *generality of mankind*, or the *collective body of Christians*; as in Rom. v. 15, 19, compared with vv. 12, 18. See also Rom. xii. 5, 1 Cor. x. 17, *et alibi*. It may mean also *a definite multitude*, as *the many with whom the disciples were acquainted*, in 2 Cor. ii. 17. In Heb. ix. 28, Bentley

¹ Gersdorf, p. 447.

² Winer, who cites Orellius ad Isocr. Antid. p. 255, sqq.

³ Middleton *ad locum*.

would supply the article before πολλῶν; but the conjecture is devoid at once of all authority, and as unnecessary to the sense of the passage as in Matt. xi. 2. xxvi. 28, Mark x. 43, Heb. ii. 10.¹

Obs. 10. With respect to αὐτός, it is sufficient to remark, that, whenever in the New Testament it is joined to a substantive in the sense of *ipse*, the article is always inserted. Thus John xvi. 27, αὐτός ὁ πατήρ. Rom. viii. 26, αὐτὸ τὸ πνεῦμα. 1 Thess. xiv. 16, αὐτός ὁ κύριος. The exception in Luke xxii. 42, is a proper name. In other writers, where the emphasis is not so distinctly marked, it is frequently omitted.²

§ 36.—Of the Neuter Adjective. (Buttm. § 128.)

Adjectives and participles are used in the neuter, singular or plural, with the article, to express a *collective whole*, which might equally be expressed by the masculine or a substantive. Thus 1 Cor. i. 27, τὰ μωρὰ, τὰ ἀσθενῆ, τὰ ἰσχυρὰ, τὰ ἀγενῆ τῷ κόσμῳ, *the foolish, the weak, &c., portion of the world*; to whom the Apostle opposes τοὺς σοφούς. 2 Thess. ii. 6, τὸ κατέχον, *the restraining power*, which is generally supposed to indicate the Roman Empire. Heb. vii. 7, τὸ ἔλαττον ὑπὸ τοῦ κρείττονος εὐλογεῖται, i. e. *inferiors are blessed by their superiors*. (Thucyd. iii. 11, τὰ κράτιστα ἐπὶ τοὺς ὑποδεεστέρους ξυνεπῆγον.) 1 John v. 4, πᾶν τὸ γεγεννημένον ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ νικᾷ τὸν κόσμον.³

Obs. 1. Thus also the article is a frequent annexation to adjectives of the neuter gender, when used to indicate an attribute or quality in its general and abstract idea.⁴ Examples are Luke vi. 45, τὸ ἀγαθόν, τὸ πονηρόν. Rom. i. 19, τὸ γνωστόν. ii. 4, τὸ χρηστόν. In the plural τὰ ἀόρατα.

Obs. 2. Instead of agreeing with its substantive, a neuter adjective with an article is frequently followed by a substantive in the genitive, to which it seems to bear the relation of a *part* to its *whole*. Thus 2 Cor. iv. 17, τὸ ἑλαφρόν τῆς θλίψεως, i. e. ἑλαφρὰ θλίψις. Phil. iii. 8, τὸ ὑπερίχον τῆς γνώσεως, i. e. ὑπερέχουσαν γνώσιν. Heb. vi. 17, τὸ ἀμιτάδιον τῆς βουλῆς αὐτοῦ, i. e. ἀμιτάδιον βουλήν. It is less frequent that the genitive singular of a masculine or feminine substantive is preceded by an adjective in the neuter plural; but there is an example in 2 Cor. iv. 2, τὰ περὶ τὰς αἰσχύνης.⁵

Obs. 3. In the same way the neuter plural of αὐτός is followed by a genitive in 1 Pet. v. 9, τὰ αὐτὰ τῶν παθημάτων, for τὰ παθήματα. Of the neuter article with a genitive see § 30. 4. *Obs.* 11. 4.

Obs. 4. Adjectives are often put in the neuter singular or plural, with or without the article, for adverbs: Matt. v. 33, ζητεῖτε πρῶτον τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. xxi. 29,

¹ Middleton *ad locum*.

² Winer, § 17. 11. See Krüger *ad* Dion. Hal. p. 454. Bornemann *ad* Xen. Anab. p. 61. Poppo's Index to Xen. Cyrop. in v., and compare Xen. Cyr. i. 4. 7. v. 2, 29. Diog. Laert. ix. 7. 6.

³ Winer, § 27. 4, and 34. *Obs.* 3. Alt, § 32. 1. Poppo *ad* Thucyd. p. 114. Seidler *ad* Eur. Troad. p. 61.

⁴ Middleton classes this use of the article among the *insertions in reference*; but it seems clearly to belong to the *hypothetical* division.

⁵ Winer, § 34. 1. Alt, § 32. 1.

ὑστερον μεταμιληθεῖς. Mark v. 43, διςτείλατο αὐτοῖς πολλά. xii. 27, ὑμῖς οὖν πολὺ πλανᾶσθε. Luke vii. 42, τίς οὖν αὐτῶν πλεῖον αὐτὸν ἀγαπήσει. John x. 40, ὅπου ἦν Ἰωάννης τὸ πρῶτον βαπτίζων.

§ 37.—*Of the Noun in connexion. Subject and Predicate.*
(BUTTM. § 129.)

1. From the general rule that a nominat. in the neut. pl. has the verb in the sing., which is nevertheless commonly observed (Mark iii. 4, iv. 4, vii. 28, Luke viii. 38, xiii. 19, *et alibi*), there are frequent exceptions in the New Testament. Thus Matt. xii. 21, ἔθνη ἐλπιοῦσι. Mark v. 13, τὰ πνεύματα εἰσῆλθον. John x. 8, ἤκουσαν τὰ πρόβατα. James ii. 19, τὰ δαιμόνια πιστεύουσι καὶ φρίσσουσι. Nor are the exceptions confined to nouns which represent things which have life. Luke xxiv. 11, ἐφάνησαν τὰ ῥήματα. 1 Tim. v. 25, τὰ καλὰ ἔργα πρέδηλά ἐστι καὶ τὰ ἄλλως ἔχοντα κρυβῆναι οὐ δύνανται. Rev. xvi. 20, ὅρη οὐχ εὐρέθησαν.

Obs. 1. Sometimes both constructions are united with the same noun. Thus Luke iv. 41, ἐξήρχετο δαίμονια κ. τ. λ., ὅτι ἤδισαν. John x. 27, τὰ πρόβατα ἀκούει, καὶ ἀκολουθοῦσι. So 1 Cor. x. 11, 2 Pet. iii. 10, Rev. i. 19.¹

2. Properly the verb, which belongs to several subjects united by a conjunction, should be in the plural; as in Luke ii. 48, ὁ πατήρ σου καὶ γὰρ ὀδυνώμενοι ἐζητοῦμέν σε. viii. 19, παρέγνοντο πρὸς αὐτὸν ἡ μήτηρ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτοῦ. Acts xv. 35, Παῦλος καὶ Βαρνάβας διέτριβον ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ. Frequently, however, it is governed by the subject nearest to it, if it be a singular or a neuter plural. Thus, Luke ii. 43, οὐκ ἔγνω Ἰωσήφ καὶ ἡ μήτηρ αὐτοῦ. 1 Cor. xiii. 13, νυνὶ δὲ μένει πίστις, ἐλπίς, κ. τ. λ. 2 Pet. iii. 10, καὶ γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ ἔργα κατακαήσεται.

Obs. 2. The following examples, in which the verb which is expressed with the first subject may be considered as understood with the rest, are closely similar, if not exactly parallel. Matt. xii. 3, Luke vi. 3, ἐπείνασιν αὐτὸς καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ ὄντες. John iv. 12, καὶ αὐτὸς ἔπει, καὶ οἱ υἱοὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰ θρίμματα αὐτοῦ. Compare Luke viii. 22, xxii. 14, John ii. 12, Acts xxvi. 30, Rev. xxi. 22. So also in the second person in Acts xi. 14, ἐν οἷς σωθήσῃ συ καὶ πᾶς ὁ οἶκός σου. Although a like construction is employed in Hebrew, the usage is not thence perhaps derived by the New Testament writers, since it equally belongs to the Greek. Thus Platon. Conv. p. 173, A., ἴθυσιν αὐτός τε καὶ οἱ χορευταί. So Arist. Av. 890, Alciph. 1. 24. It will be observed that in these instances the verb generally precedes the subject. The syntax is curiously involved in Acts v. 29, ἀποκριθεῖς δὲ ὁ Πέτρος καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι εἶπον, where the participle refers to Peter only, though the verb is in the plural. In Luke ii. 33, Winer observes a similar construction; but ἦν is there the contracted form of ἦσαν.²

¹ Winer, § 47. 3. Alt, § 74. 5.

² Winer, § 47. 2. Alt, § 74. 4, 5.

3. The substantive, substantives related by 3, the verb usually follows in the singular, as in *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*. Compare Matt. x. 1. *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. The rule, indeed, that the verb follows in the singular, and applies to all the substantives alike, does not hold in all cases, even by the best writers. An example is given in *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*.

4. Nouns in the plural with the *αἱ*, *οἱ* in the plural occur in Matt. x. 1. *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. So Mark iii. 7. *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. For like examples in the LXX see 1 Sam. ii. 18, xii. 18, 19, 1 Kings iii. 2, Judg. iii. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100.

5. When there are two or more verbs it not unfrequently happens that the verb follows in the plural. Mark v. 24, *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*. Add 1 Tim. ii. 15, *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*. In this last example the change of number is explained, the change of number is explained, the change of number is explained.

6. The same construction is constantly employed with *ἡμεῖς*. John xvi. 32, *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*. Rev. v. 8, *ἡμεῖς τὸν νόμον τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν ἐστεινόμεθα*. In like manner the Hebrew *אנחנו* often takes a plural verb.

7. Of the use of the singular in a collective or generic sense, instead of the plural, the sacred writers have some instances in Gentile and other nouns and substantives, which have a singular import: as in Gal. iii. 28, *οἱ Ἕλληνες, οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι, οἱ σκλάβοι, οἱ ἐλεύθεροι, οἱ ἡμέτεροι, οἱ ἀλλοτρίοι, οἱ ἰσχυροὶ, οἱ ἀσθενεῖς, οἱ ἁγιοὶ, οἱ ἁμαρτωλοὶ, οἱ ἡμέτεροι, οἱ ἀλλοτρίοι, οἱ ἰσχυροὶ, οἱ ἀσθενεῖς, οἱ ἁγιοὶ, οἱ ἁμαρτωλοὶ*. Such comprehensive expressions are frequently used in the plural, as in 1 Pet. ii. 10, *οἱ ἡμέτεροι, οἱ ἀλλοτρίοι, οἱ ἰσχυροὶ, οἱ ἀσθενεῖς, οἱ ἁγιοὶ, οἱ ἁμαρτωλοὶ*. And the same may be said of the singular, but they depend rather upon the singular than upon the plural of the singular.

8. It not unfrequently happens that a substantive in the singular is joined with another in the plural, where both must equally be understood in the singular. Thus Luke xxi. 1, *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. 1 Cor. x. 12, *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. So also in Jerem. xvi. 1, *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*. Polyb. iii. 49. 12, *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*.

4. The use of the plural *ἡμεῖς* for *ἐγώ*, by means of which a writer associates himself, as it were, with those whom he addresses, is very common in St. Paul's Epistles. See Rom. ii. 8, 2 Cor. x. 12, Gal. ii. 4, Tit. iii. 3, *et ceteris*. So in many cases where the singular is absolutely intended, as in John iii. 11, *ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ὁ νόμος τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν*.

See Hammond, Macknight, Schott and Schulze.

Winer, § 47. 1. a. Alt. § 47. 1. See also Krüger ad Dion. Hal. p. 231. Jacobs ad Achil. Tat. p. 449, 622. Wesseling ad Dion. Sic. p. 105.

Winer, § 47. 2. Alt. § 21.

ἡμῶν οὐ λαμβάνετε. Compare 2 Cor. i. 8, sqq, 1 John i. 1, sqq.¹

Obs. 8. The use of nouns in the plural instead of the singular, when a writer would express in general terms what is more immediately referable to a single individual, is very common in most languages; and a due attention to this idiom will serve to reconcile many apparent discrepancies in the New Testament. Compare, for instance, Matt. vii. 28 with Mark v. 1, Luke vii. 26; Matt. xiv. 17, Mark vi. 38 with John vi. 8, 9; Matt. xv. 15 with Mark vii. 17; Matt. xxiv. 1 with Mark xiii. 1, Matt. xxvi. 8 with John xii. 4; Matt. xxv. 44 with Luke xxi. 39; Matt. xxvii. 48, Mark xv. 36, with John xix. 29; 1 John v. 9 with John v. 34, 36.² The same idiom occurs in Matt. ii. 20, *τεθνήκασι γὰρ οἱ ζητοῦντες κ. τ. λ.* where Herod only is meant; though there may be a reference to Exod. iv. 19, where the plural is properly employed. See also Matt. ix. 8, xxiv. 26, Mark i. 2, John vi. 45, Acts xiii. 40, *et alibi*.

Obs. 9. Some writers³ have imagined that the plural sometimes indicates a *high degree of excellence*, after the manner of the Hebrew. The examples quoted in illustration are John ix. 3, 2 Cor. xii. 1, 7, Heb. vii. 6, ix. 23, James ii. 1. In all these passages, however, with the exception perhaps of Heb. ix. 23, there is no reason to suppose that the writers intended to express themselves otherwise than in a general way; nor does it appear that the Hebrew usage in question is ever employed without a reference to the name of God.⁴

5. An *adjective* often stands as a *predicate* in the *neut. sing.* when the subject is *masc. or fem., or in the plural*. So, in Latin, Cic. Off. i. 4, *Commune omnium animantium conjunctionis appetitus*. See also Virg. Æn. iv. 569, Ov. Amor. i. 9. 4, Stat. Theb. ii. 399,⁵

Obs. 10. In like manner, οὐδὲν and μηδὲν are used with subjects of all genders; as in John vii. 54, *ἐὰν ἰγὼ δοξάζω ἑαυτὸν, ἡ δόξα μου οὐδὲν ἔστιν*. 1 Cor. v. 1. 19, *ἡ περιτομή οὐδὲν ἐστὶ, καὶ ἡ ἀκροβυστία οὐδὲν ἐστὶν, ἀλλὰ τηροῖς ἐντολῶν Θεοῦ*. xiii. 2, *ἐὰν ἀγαπῇ μὴ ἑ, οὐδὲν εἰμι*. So also τί, as in Gal. iii. 19, *τί οὖν ὁ νόμος;* *of what use then is the law?* vi. 3, *εἰ γὰρ δοκῇ τις εἶναι σι, μηδὲν ὄν, ἑαυτὸν φρονασπατά*. Plato has the same form in Apol. Socr. in fine: *ἐὰν δοκῶσι τί εἶναι, μηδὲν ὄντες, κ. τ. λ.* The masculine is also used in the same import; as in Acts v. 36, *λεγων εἶναι, τινὰ ἑαυτὸν*, where, however, several manuscripts and editions add *μίγαν*, as in Acts viii. 9. But the received text is parallel with Epictet. Ench. 18, *πάν δοξῇσι τισὶ εἶναι τίς, ἀπιστῶ σιαυτῷ*.⁶

Obs. 11. When the demonstrative pronoun is the subject, it usually takes the gender of the predicate; as in 1 John v. 3, *αὕτη γὰρ ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ*. See also vv. 4, 9, 14. Sometimes, however, it is in the neuter; as in 1 Pet. ii. 19, *τοῦτο γὰρ χάρις*. Also in the plural; as in 1 Cor. vi. 11, *ταῦτά τινες ἔτι, for τοιοῦτοι*.⁷

¹ For a similar usage in Latin, see Zumpt's Lat. Gr. § 694.

² In these parallel passages, the prominent part, which is attributed by one Evangelist to the individual who acted it, is by another divided among all the parties concerned therein.

³ Grass. Phil. Sac. T. 1, p. 59. Haab's Heb. Gr. Gram. § 49.

⁴ Winer, *ubi supra*; Gesen. & Lel. geb. § 171. 1.

⁵ Winer, § 47. 1. Alt, § 32. 2 and 74. 2. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 413. Wetstein, Kyprie, and Paret on Matt. vi. 34. Zumpt's Lat. Gr. § 368.

⁶ Wetstein and Kyprie on Acts v. 36, and Gal. ii. 6.

⁷ Alt, Gr. Gr. N. T. § 42. 3.

Obs. 12. Precisely similar is the use of *τά πάντα* in the plural in 1 Cor. xv. 22, ἵνα ἡ ὁ Θεὸς *τά πάντα* ἐν *πᾶσιν*. Col. iii. 11, ἀλλὰ *τά πάντα* καὶ ἐν *πᾶσι* Χριστῇ. So Lucian *de Diis Syriis*, T. ii. p. 892, καὶ οἱ *πάντα* Κομβάβος ἦν, *Combabius was all things to him*.

6. Personal pronouns are more frequently made the subjects of verbs in the New Testament than in the Greek writers generally. For instance, in Mark xiii. 9, βλέπετε δὲ ὑμεῖς ἐαυτοὺς. Rom. viii. 1, ὀφείλομεν δὲ ἡμεῖς οἱ δυνατοὶ κ. τ. λ. Eph. v. 32, τὸ μυστήριον τοῦτο μέγα ἐστίν· ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω κ. τ. λ. For the most part, however, an emphasis or distinction is marked by the pronoun, particularly when it follows its verb. Thus in Matt. v. 48, ἔσεσθε οὖν ὑμεῖς τελεῖοι, ὥσπερ ὁ πατήρ ὑμῶν τέλειός ἐστι. Mark vi. 37, δότε αὐτοῖς ὑμεῖς φαγεῖν. So Luke xvii. 8, John vii. 36. See also Mark xiii. 23, Luke xxiii. 40, John i. 31, 1 John iv. 19.

Obs. 13. There are a few instances where, in the same sentence, the pronoun is omitted with one verb, and inserted with another; as in Luke x. 23, μακάριοι οἱ ἰσχυροὶ οἱ βλέποντες ἀβλίσκον· λέγω γὰρ ὑμῖν, ὅτι πολλοὶ προφῆται καὶ βασιλεῖς ἠθέλησαν ἰδεῖν ἀβλίσκον, καὶ οὐκ εἶδον· καὶ ἀκοῦσαι ἀκούεσθαι, καὶ οὐκ ἤκουον. In this instance the pronoun bears a distinctive emphasis in the second clause, which is not so discernible in 2 Cor. xi. 29, τίς ἀσθενεῖ, καὶ οὐκ ἀσθενεῖ; τίς σκανδαλίζεται, καὶ οὐκ ἐκ πυροῦμαι.

Obs. 14. Where a pronoun would more regularly be employed, it frequently happens that the noun itself, or the name of a person, is repeated, or his official designation substituted. A remarkable instance of this usage is when Christ, instead of speaking of himself in the first person, emphatically calls himself *the Son of Man*; as in Matt. x. 23, ἀμὴν γὰρ λέγω ὑμῖν, οὐ μὴ τελίσητε τὰς πόλεις τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ, ἕως ἂν ἔλθῃ ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. See also Luke ix. 26, xii. 8. Other examples are Mark ix. 41, ἐν τῷ ὀνόματί μου, ὅτι Χριστοῦ ἐστί. John vi. 40, ἵνα πᾶς ὁ θινοῦν τὸν υἱόν, καὶ πιστεύῃ εἰς αὐτόν, ἔχῃ ζωὴν αἰώνιον, καὶ ἐγὼ κ. τ. λ. An intensity of expression, such as these passages seem to indicate, is not however always observable under similar circumstances. There is no apparent cause for the repetition of the noun in Mark ix. 40, Luke iii. 19, John x. 41. See also Mark i. 34, x. 46, xiii. 15, John xi. 22, 1 Cor. i. 21, 2 Cor. iii. 7, Eph. iv. 16. A demonstrative pronoun accompanies the repeated noun in Matt. iii. 24, ἐὰν βασιλεία ἐφ' ἑαυτὴν μερίσθῃ, οὐ δύναται σταθῆναι ἐν βασιλείᾳ ἐκείνῃ. It is in order to repeat the very words of the report which had reached the Pharisees, that Jesus is twice designated in John iv. 1, ὥς οὖν ἴστω ὁ κύριος ὅτι ἤκουσαν οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, ὅτι Ἰησοῦς πλείονας μαθητὰς ποιεῖ καὶ βαπτίζει ἢ Ἰωάννης, κ. τ. λ. With the Hebrews this mode of repeating the noun, instead of employing the pronoun, is particularly prevalent, and hence, in all probability, its frequent usage in the sacred writings, though it is not without example in the best Greek writers. See Thucyd. vi. 105. Xen. Ephes. ii. 13. Æsch. Prom. 312. Plat. Euthyphr. p. 31. Ed. Stalb. Altogether different are the passages in which there is an opposition or distinction; as in Mark ii. 27, τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἐγένετο, οὐχ ὁ ἄνθρωπος διὰ τὸ σάββατον. Rom. v. 12, δι' ἑνὸς ἀνθρώπου ἡ ἁμαρτία εἰς τὸν κόσμον εἰσῆλθε, καὶ διὰ τῆς ἁμαρτίας ὁ θάνατος.¹

¹ Winer, § 22. 2. Alt, § 35, 7. Raphel. ad John x. 41.

7. The *nomin.* is sometimes to be derived from a verb, which indicates a definite *act* or *occupation*; as in 1 Cor. xv. 52, *σαλπίζει γὰρ*, *scil.* *σαλπιγξ* or *σαλπιγκτής*. In citations also, the subject *nomin.*, being well known, is constantly omitted; as in 2 Cor. vi. 2, *λέγει γὰρ*, *scil.* *ὁ Θεός*. Gal. iii. 16, *οὐ λέγει*, *scil.* *ἡ γραφή*. Heb. vii. 17, *μαρτυρεῖ γὰρ*, *scil.* *τὸ πνεῦμα*. viii. 5, *Ὁρα γὰρ*, *φησι*, *scil.* *ὁ Θεός*. Compare 1 Tim. v. 18. The 3rd *pers. plur.* is also frequently used without a nominative, where *ἄνθρωποι* may be supplied. For examples see Matt. i. 22, v. 11, vii. 16, Mark x. 13, Luke vi. 38, xii. 20, 48, xvi. 4, 9, John xv. 6, xx. 2, Rev. xi. 9. So in Latin, Catull. iii. 9, *Qui nunc it per iter tenebrosum Illic, unde negant redire quemquam*. A passive form may be given to all these passages; as, *it shall be called*, *for men shall call*; and so on.

Obs. 15. The frequent use of *καὶ ἰγίνετο* at the beginning of a sentence is impersonal, but derived from the Hebrew. Other verbs are also sometimes used impersonally; as in Matt. vii. 7, *αἰτεῖτε, καὶ δοθήσεται ὑμῖν· κρούετε, καὶ ἀνοιγήσεται ὑμῖν*.

Obs. 16. In 1 John v. 16 the nominative to *δώσει* is *Θεός*, to be supplied from the context;¹ and in Acts ii. 4, *μία τῶν γλῶσσων* must be understood before *ἐκάθισι*.

Obs. 17. In general and indefinite expressions the verb is often found without a *nomin.*, where *τις* may be supplied. Thus in John vii. 51, *μὴ ὁ νόμος ἡμῶν κρίνει τὸν ἄνθρωπον, ἢ μὴ ἀκούσῃ παρ' αὐτοῦ πρότερον κ. τ. λ.* *unless one hears, &c.*; viii. 44, *ὅταν λαλῇ τὸ ψεῦδος*, *If any of you speaks falsely*; 2 Cor. x. 10, *αἱ μὲν ἐπιστολαὶ, φησὶ, βαρεῖαι καὶ ἰσχυραὶ*, *says some one*; Heb. x. 38, *ἢ ὑποστείληται*, *scil.* *τις*.

8. Nothing is more frequent in the New Testament than the omission of the *verb substantive* with *adjectives* and *substantives*, when the connexion between the subject and predicate renders the omission sufficiently apparent. Thus in Luke i. 45, *μακαρία ἡ πιστεύσασα*, *scil.* *ἐστί*. Heb. v. 13, *πᾶς ὁ μετέχων γάλακτος ἄπειρος (ἐστὶ) λόγου δικαιοσύνης*.

Obs. 18. This omission is particularly frequent when the adjective is followed by a relative in the succeeding member of the sentence; as in Rom. iv. 8, *μακάριος ἄνθρωπος, ὃς οὐ μὴ λογίζεται Κύριος ἁμαρτίαν*. James i. 12, *μακάριος ἄνθρωπος, ὃς ὑπομένει πειρασμόν*. Compare Matt. v. 3, 6, sqq., Rom. xiv. 22. Also with the interrogative pronoun *τίς*. Mark v. 9, *τί σοι ὄνομα*; Luke iv. 36, *τίς ὁ λόγος οὗτος*. So Matt. xxvii. 4, John xxi. 21, Acts x. 21, Rom. iii. 1, viii. 27, 1 Cor. v. 12, 2 Cor. vi. 14. To the same head may be referred the formula *τί ὅτι* in Mark xi. 16, Acts v. 4. We have at full *τί γίγνεται ὅτι* in John xiv. 2. Likewise *ιστὶ* fails with a verbal; as in Mark ii. 22, Luke v. 38, *οἶνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοὺς καινοὺς βλητέον*.

Obs. 19. Where a substantive, or its equivalent, is the predicate, the same usage prevails. Thus Rom. x. 4, *τέλος νόμου (ἐστὶ) Χριστός*. 2 Cor. iii. 11, *εἰ γὰρ τὸ καταργούμενον (ἦν) διὰ δόξης, πολλῷ μᾶλλον τὸ μένον (ἐστὶ) ἐν δόξῃ*. See also Rom. xi. 11, 12, 15, 16, Eph. iv. 4.

¹ Winer, § 49. Alt, § 48. 3. Wolf ad Demosth. Leptin. p. 288. Wytttenbach ad Plutarch. Mor. T. ii. p. 105.

Obs. 20. The first and second persons are never omitted, except where the pronouns *ἐγὼ* or *σύ* render mistake impossible; as in John xiv. 11, *ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ πατρὶ, καὶ ὁ πατήρ ἐν ἐμοί*. Heb. v. 6, *σύ ἱερεὺς εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα*. Compare Mark xii. 26, and see above, § 23. *Obs.* 7. There is, however, a remarkable exception in the case of the second person in Rev. xv. 4, *ὅτι μένος ὄσιος, scil. εἴ σύ*. Compare Plat. Gorg. p. 487, D. Very rare also are omissions of the third person plural. Winer's example from Heb. v. 12 is not in point; for after a neuter plural the verb would have been in the singular. In Luke ix. 28, *ἦσαν* is understood with the words *ὥστε ἡμέραι ὄκτω*, which form a parenthesis: for they can scarcely be construed with *ἰγίνετο*. See below § 69. II. 3. *Obs.* 2. More frequently, but still rarely, the imperative is wanting. Thus Rom. xii. 9, *ἡ ἀγάπη ἀνυπόκριτος, scil. ἔστω*. The ellipsis is repeated through several verses. See also Matt. xxi. 9, Luke i. 23.

9. When other verbs are omitted, they are either to be repeated, and sometimes with the subject also, from a preceding sentence, or they will be readily suggested by the context. The following are examples: Matt. xxvi. 5, Mark xiv. 2, *μὴ εἰ τῇ ἐορτῇ, scil. τοῦτο γενέσθω*. Acts ix. 6, *ὁ δὲ Κύριος πρὸς αὐτὸν, scil. εἶπεν*, as in the preceding verse. Rom. ix. 16, *ἄρα οὐ τοῦ θέλοντος κ. τ. λ. (τοῦτο ἐστί.)* 2 Cor. i. 6, *εἴτε θλιβόμεθα, ὑπὲρ τῆς ὑμῶν σωτηρίας (θλιβόμεθα)*. Eph. v. 24, *ὥσπερ ἡ ἐκκλησία ὑποτάσσεται τῷ Χριστῷ, οὕτω αἱ γυναῖκες τοῖς ἀνδράσιν (ὑποτασσέσθωσαν)*. 2 Tim. i. 5, *ἥτις ἐνέγκειν ἐν τῇ μάμμῃ σου, πέπεισμαι δὲ, ὅτι καὶ ἐν σοὶ (ἐνοικεῖ)*. To these may be added Matt. xxiii. 25, xxvi. 5, Mark xiv. 29, Luke vii. 43, John ix. 3, xv. 4, Rom. ix. 32, xiv. 23, 1 Cor. xi. 1, 2 Cor. ii. 10, v. 13, vii. 12, 1 John ii. 19, Rev. xix. 10.¹

Obs. 21. It has been thought that the sense requires the particular word, which is inclosed in brackets, to be supplied in the following passages. Acts x. 15, *φανὲρ πάλιν ἐκ δευτέρου πρὸς αὐτὸν (λίγει)*. Rom. iv. 9, *ὁ μακαρισμὸς ἐπὶ τὴν περιτομὴν ἢ ἐπὶ τὴν ἀκροβυστίαν (πίπτει)*; 1 Cor. vi. 13, *τὰ βρώματα τῇ κοιλίᾳ καὶ ἡ κοιλία τοῖς βρώμασι (προσέκει)*. In the first case, however, the ellipsis may be supplied by *ἰγίνετο*, and in the two latter by *ἔστί*. Some would repeat *γινώσκωμεν* before the second *ὅτι* in 1 John iii. 20. This particle, however, is in like manner doubled in Eph. ii. 11, 12; where it equally encumbers the sense: so that in both places its insertion is probably owing to the inattention of the writer, or the interpolation of a copyist. There is also a similar exuberance of the Latin *ut* in Cic. Epist. Att. v. 3, *Tantum te oro, ut, quoniam meipsum semper amasti, ut eodem amore sis*. The repetition of *γινώσκωμεν*, in the passage under consideration, would be fully as superfluous as the particle itself.

10. Instead of the *nomin.*, the *prep.* *εἰς* with an *accus.* is occasionally used for the predicate in the New Testament, after *εἶναι* or *γίνεσθαι*, in citations from the Old Testament, or expressions adopted from the Hebrew. Thus Matt. xix. 5, Mark x. 7, 1 Cor. vi. 16, Eph. v. 31, *ἔσονται οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα μίαν, i. e.,*

¹ Winer in Append. § 66. 1, 2.

σάρεξ μία (from Gen. ii. 24). Matt. xxi. 42, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας (from Ps. cxviii. 22). So also with λογίζεσθαι in Rom. iv. 3, 22, ἐλογίσθη αὐτῷ εἰς δικαιοσύνην (from Gen. xv. 6). Compare Rom. ix. 8, 1 Cor. xv. 45, Heb. viii. 10, 1 Pet. ii. 7: and, for similar forms in the Hebrew and LXX, Gen. ii. 7, viii. 20, xii. 2, xvii. 8, xxiv. 67, Deut. xxviii. 13, Ps. xciv. 22, Jerem. xxxi. 33, 1 Macc. i. 4, '33, 35.

Obs. 22. Although the above may be Heltraisms properly so called, this mode of explanation must be carefully confined within its proper limits. There are many passages in which the phrase εἶναι, or γίνεσθαι, εἰς τι is strictly Greek, either in the sense of *to become something*, i. e., *to undergo a change*, or *to serve some purpose*. As an instance of the former sense, in Acts v. 36, γίνεσθαι εἰς οὐδὲν is *to become a nullity, to fail*; and there is a precisely similar phrase, εἰς τὸ μηδὲν ἕκκειν, in Eur. Hec. 622. Other examples are John xvi. 20, Rev. viii. 11. The latter sense is found in Rom. i. 15, δύναμις Θεοῦ ἵστίς εἰς σωτηρίαν. So also 1 Cor. iv. 3, *et alibi*; and, in like manner, Æsop. Fab. xxiv. 2, εἰς μίζονά σοι ὠφέλιαν ἴσομαι. In the same way Luke ii. 34, οὗτος κίτται εἰς πᾶσιν καὶ ἀνάστασιν, is to be explained; and the verb λογίζεσθαι is so constructed in Xen. Cyr. iii. 1. 33, χρήματα εἰς ἀργύριον λογισθίνα.¹ In the later writers, indeed, and the Scholiasts particularly, λαμβάνειν and δίχισθαι are constructed with εἰς and an accusative; and the later Roman authors adopted a similar phraseology. Thus Tacit. Ann. vi. 13, *Silentium ipsius in superbiam accipiebatur*.² The construction of *esse* with a dative, in such forms as *auxilio esse*, *honori esse*, more appropriately affixes the import of the New Testament idiom. Matt. x. 41, Acts vii. 53, have been classed under the same head; but they are plainly irrelevant. See below, § 47. 2. *Obs. 5.* The verb λογίζεσθαι is followed by ὡς with a nominative in Rom. viii. 36, ἐλογισθήμεν ὡς πρόβατα σφαγῆς.

Obs. 23. Another construction which has been supposed to supply the place of the predicate after εἶναι or γίνεσθαι, is that of the preposition ἐν with a dative, to which the sense of the Hebrew בְּ (*Beth essentialis*) has been attributed.³ The passages adduced in support of this opinion are Mark v. 25, γυνή τις οὖσα ἐν ῥύσει αἵματος. John ix. 30, ἐν τούτῳ θαυμαστόν ἐστι. Eph. v. 9, ὁ καρπὸς τοῦ φωτός ἐν πάσῃ ἀγαθῇ σὺνῃ (ἐστι). 1 Tim. ii. 14, γυνὴ ἀπατηθεῖσα ἐν παραβάσει γίγνεται. Rev. i. 10, ἐγενόμην ἐν πνεύματι. Now, with the exception of ἐν τούτῳ, which may be rendered simply *herein*, or *in this respect*, all these examples obviously imply *the being in a certain state or condition*; and to say that ἐν παραβάσει, for instance, is equivalent to παράβασις, is manifestly absurd. In proof that a construction, analogous to that of the בְּ *essentialis*, exists in Greek or Latin writers, the expressions ἐν σοφῷ εἶναι and *in magnis viris haberi* have been cited from Euripides and Cicero; which evidently mean *to belong to the number of*. In order to meet the case, ἐν σοφῷ would have been used as equivalent to σοφός. Compare Exod. xxxii. 22, Ps. lxxviii. 5, Hos. xiii. 9, in the Hebrew. As little can the force of the Hebrew בְּ be imputed to the preposition ἐκ in Matt. v. 37, τὸ περισσὸν ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ ἐστίν. It is not here meant to say that τὸ περισσὸν is *evil in the abstract*, but that it *springs from an evil principle, or the Evil One*.⁴

¹ Winer, § 29. 2. *Obs. 1.* Gesen. Lex. Heb. in v. עָרַךְ.

² Alt, Gram. N. T. § 25. Note 5.

³ Gesen. Lehrb. § 228. Glass. Phil. Sacr. T. i. p. 31. Schleusner, Lex. in v. ἐν. Haab's Heb.-Gr. Gram. N. T. p. 337.

⁴ Winer, § 47. 3. *Obs.*

§ 38.—*Of the Vocative.*

In the New Testament the *Vocative* is used in simple addresses (Matt. xv. 28, Mark xv. 18, Acts xi. 7, xxi. 20, xxiii. 11, xxv. 26); in *interrogations* (Rom. ix. 20, James ii. 20); and in exclamations (Matt. xvij. 17, Luke xxiv. 25, Rom. ii. 33): and sometimes *with*, sometimes *without* α̃.

Obs. 1. Frequently the *nomin.* is used for the *vocat.*, as in Mark ix. 25, τὸ ἄλλαν, ἰγὼ σοι ἰπιτάσσω. Luke viii. 54, ἡ παῖς, ἰγίρευ. So Mark v. 41, Eph. vi. 1. Nor does this happen only in the authoritative address of superiors to inferiors; but also in prayers and exclamations. Thus Matt. xi. 26, καὶ, ὁ πατήρ, ὅτι οὕτως ἠγάπησέν με ἐν δόξῃ σου. xxvii. 29, χαῖρε, ὁ βασιλεὺς. See also Mark x. 47, xv. 34, Luke xii. 20, xviii. 11, 13, Heb. i. 8, and compare Ps. xviii. 29, xxi. 1, LXX.

Obs. 2. With the *vocat.* a characteristic or explanatory apposition is often added in the *nomin.*; as in Matt. i. 20, Ἰωσήφ, υἱὸς Δαβίδ. Mark xiv. 36, Rom. viii. 15, Gal. iv. 6, Ἀββᾶ, ὁ πατήρ. Rom. ii. 1, α̃ ἄνθρωπε πᾶς ὁ κρίνων. Rev. xv. 3, κῆ, ὁ κύριος, ὁ θεός.¹

§ 39.—*Object—Oblique Cases.* (BUTTM. § 130.)

The insertion of the personal pronouns in the oblique cases is much more frequent than in classical Greek. Thus in Matt. vi. 17, σὺ δὲ νηστεύων ἄλειψαί σου τὴν κεφαλὴν, καὶ τὸ πρῶτον σου νίψαι. xix. 20, πάντα ταῦτα ἐφυλαξάμεν ἐκ νεότητός μου. Mark x. 16, καὶ ἐναγκαλισάμενος αὐτὰ, τιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας ἐπ' αὐτὰ, ἠνέλογεν αὐτά. Luke x. 35, ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ ἐπανέρχεσθαι με ἀποδώσω σοι. John ii. 24, οὐκ ἐπίστευεν ἐαυτὸν αὐτοῖς, διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν γινώσκειν πάντας. Compare Gen. xvi. 3, xxi. 3, John xxiii. 2, xxiv. 1, Nehem. ix. 34, 1 Macc. i. 6.

Obs. 1. On the other hand, the pronoun is sometimes, though rarely, omitted, where its insertion might have been expected; as in Mark vi. 5, ὀλίγοις ἀρρώστους ἰπιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας, ἰθεράπιυσεν, scil. αὐτούς. Eph. v. 11, μὴ συγκοινωνεῖτε τοῖς ἔργοις τῶν σκότους, μᾶλλον δὲ καὶ ἐλέγχετε, scil. αὐτά. 1 Tim. i. 12, πιστὸν με ἠγασάτο, θίμιος (sc. ἐμὶ) εἰς διακονίαν. vi. 2, οἱ δὲ πιστοὺς ἔχοντες δισπότας, μὴ καταφρονεῖτωσαν, scil. αὐτούς. Add Matt. xxvii. 2, Luke xii. 36, John xx. 22, Acts xiii. 3, 42, 2 Thess. iii. 15, 2 Tim. ii. 11. In Matt. xxi. 7, the true reading is ἰπικάθισιν, and consequently it has been improperly placed under this head; and in 1 Cor. x. 9, ἰπύρασεν does not refer to τὸν Χριστὸν, but signifies, in an absolute sense, *they tried the divine patience*. There is an anomaly in Eph. iii. 18, where αὐτῆς, i. e., τῆς ἀγαπῆς τοῦ θεοῦ, must be supplied from the preceding clause.²

Obs. 2. Sometimes there is apparent negligence in the repetition of the same pronoun with reference to different persons; as in Mark viii. 22, φέρουσιν αὐτῷ (Χριστῷ) τυφλὸν, καὶ παρακαλοῦσιν αὐτὸν, ἵνα αὐτοῦ (τυφλοῦ) ἄψηται.

¹ Winer, § 29, 1. Alt, § 25, 1. Georg. Hierocr. i. 3. 12.

² Winer, § 22, 1, 4, 6. Alt, § 37, 2, 38, 1.

§ 40.—*Accusative*. (BUTTM. § 131.)

1. Little need be said of the *Accusative* as far as regards its more appropriate use in designating the object, to which the action of a verb more immediately refers; but many verbs which are not strictly *transitive*, and therefore in other languages do not take an *accusative*, are followed by that case in Greek. The rules of government admit, indeed, of considerable variety of construction; so that frequently it is almost a matter of indifference which of two or more forms is adopted, and it will always require a considerable degree of practice before the nice distinctions, which regulate any particular expression, will be duly appreciated. If, however, one class of verbs takes sometimes an *accusative*, and sometimes a *genitive* with or without a *preposition*; and another class is found either with a *dative* or *accusative*, or a *double accusative*; there is the same analogy to be met with in other languages, and in the English among the rest. We say, for instance, and with little or no variety of meaning, *to taste a thing*, and *to taste of a thing*; *to wrap one in a cloak*, and *to wrap a cloak about one*; but *to hear a person*, and *to hear of a person*, are different. The use of prepositions, by which the different shades of signification are rendered more distinct, will, however, be observed to be more frequent in the New Testament and the later writers, than in the more approved models of ancient Greece.

Obs. 1. Among those verbs with which, though in other languages, as the Latin for instance, they are followed by other cases, the Greeks employ the *accusative*, are,

1. *πείθειν*, *to persuade*: Matt. xxvii. 20, *ἔπεισαν τοὺς ὄχλους, ἵνα αἰτήσωνται τὸν Βαραββᾶν*. Acts xiii. 43, *ἔπειθον αὐτοὺς ἐπιμένειν τῇ χάριτι τοῦ Θεοῦ*. xviii. 4, *ἔπειθ' ἐτε Ἰουδαίους καὶ Ἑλλήνας*. This verb is also construed with two *accusatives*. See § 40. 6. *Obs.* 15.
2. *παραινεῖν*, *to exhort*; Acts xxvii. 22, *παραινῶ ὑμᾶς εὐθυμεῖν*. This verb takes a *dative* of the *person* in Æsch. Dial. ii. 13. Here too belongs, perhaps,
3. *βασκαίνειν*, *to bewitch*, i. e., *to seduce*; which has an *accusative* in Gal. iii. 1, *τίς ὑμᾶς ἐβάσκανε*. It takes a *dative* in Philost. Epist. 13.
4. *ὕβριζεν*, *to insult*, or *maltreat*: Luke xii. 45, *διδάσκαλε, ταῦτα λίγων καὶ ἡμᾶς ὕβριζεις*. Acts xiv. 5, *ὕβρισαι καὶ λιθοβολῆσαι αὐτούς*. Add Heb. x. 20, *τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς χάριτος ἐνυβρίσας*. This compound is followed in Ælian V. H. ix. 8, by a *dative*; and in Joseph. Ant. i. 4, by an *accus.* with *εἰς*. The form *ὕβριζεν εἰς τινα* does not occur in the New Testament; but there is, what is precisely similar, in Mark iii. 29, Luke xii. 10, *βλασφημεῖν εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον*. Elsewhere this verb takes a simple *accusative*; as in Matt. xxvii. 39, *ἐβλασφήμουν αὐτόν*. So in Luke xxiii. 39, Acts xix. 37, Rev. xiii. 6, and elsewhere. Of *λοιδορεῖν τινα*, and *ὀνειδίζειν τινα*, see § 45. 4. *Obs.* 5.
5. *ἀδικεῖν*, *to act injuriously*: Matt. xx. 13, *ἰταῖρε, οὐκ ἀδικῶ σι*. Acts vii. 26, 27,

ἵνα τί ἀδικεῖτε ἀλλήλους; ὁ δὲ ἀδικῶν τὸν πλησίον κ. τ. λ. Rev. vi. 6, τὸ ἔλαιον καὶ τὸν οἶνον μὴ ἀδικήσης. See also § 40. 5. Obs. 9.

6. ὠφελῖν, *to benefit*: Heb. iv. 2, οὐκ ὠφίλησεν ὁ λόγος τῆς ἀκοῆς ἰσαίους. Of the construction with a dative, and with two accusatives, see § 45. 5. Obs. 6. and *ubi supra*.

7. βλάπτειν, *to injure*: Mark xvi. 18, οὐ μὴ αὐτοὺς βλάψῃ.¹

2. It frequently happens that the action expressed by a verb has no immediate reference to the object which is put in the accusative, and which is only so far affected thereby as the sense would be imperfect without it. The following instances occur in the New Testament:—

1. προσκυνεῖν τινα. Luke xxiv. 52, προσκυνήσαντες αὐτόν. Add John iv. 22, 24, Rev. ix. 20. Much more frequently, however, this verb is joined with the dative. See § 45. 6. Both constructions are united in John iv. 23. We have also γονυπετεῖν τινα in Mark i. 40, x. 17. Some manuscripts, however, read αὐτῷ in both places. On the same principle ἐντρέπесθαι, *to reverence*, which has a genitive in classical Greek, has an accusative in Matt. xxi. 37, ἐντραπήσονται τὸν υἱόν μου. See also Heb. xii. 9.
2. φθάνειν, *to anticipate*; as in 1 Thess. iv. 15, οὐ μὴ φθάσωμεν τοὺς κοιμηθέντας.
3. λανθάνειν, *to escape notice*; as in Acts xxvi. 26, λανθάνει γὰρ αὐτόν τι τούτων οὐ πείθομαι οὐδέν. 2 Pet. iii. 5, λανθάνει γὰρ αὐτοὺς τοῦτο θέλοντας. See also v. 8.
4. ἐπιλείπειν, *to fail*; as in Heb. xi. 32, ἐπιλείψει γὰρ με διηγούμενον ὁ χρόνος. So Isocr. ad Demon. § 5, ἐπιλίποι δ' ἂν ἡμᾶς ὁ πᾶς χρόνος. Compare Jerem. xxxiii. 17, LXX.²
5. Verbs of *seeing*; as in Matt. ii. 2, εἶδομεν αὐτοῦ τὸν ἀστέρα. xviii. 10, οἱ ἄγγελοι αὐτῶν βλέπουσι τὸ πρόσωπον τοῦ πατρός μου. Luke xxiii. 49, ὁρᾶσαι ταῦτα. The emphatic accusative with εἰς or πρὸς, which indicates peculiar *attention, regard, or expectation*, is found in John xiii. 22, ἔβλεπον οὖν εἰς ἀλλήλους οἱ μαθηταί, ἀπορούμενοι περὶ τίς λέγει. Acts i. 10, ἀτενίζοντες εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν. iii. 4, ἀτενίσας εἰς αὐτὸν εἶπε, Βλέψον εἰς ἡμᾶς. It may be mentioned that the verb ἀτενίζειν is also constructed with a dative in Luke iv. 20, πάντων οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ ἦσαν ἀτενίζοντες αὐτῷ. We have in Lucian, *De Merc. Cond.* p. 455, πρὸς τὸ πρόσω-

¹ Winer, § 32. 1.

² Wetstein and Kypke ad Heb. xi. 32.

πον ἀτενίζειν, which is similar in form, though it does not bear the proverbial import of the expression βλέπειν εἰς πρόσωπον, in Matt. xxii. 16, Mark xii. 14. An accusative is also used after βλέπειν, when it signifies *mental vision*, or *consideration*, as in 1 Cor. i. 26, βλέπετε τὴν κλησιν ὑμῶν. Also in the sense, *to be heedful*, or *cautious respecting anything*; as in Mark xiii. 9, βλέπετε δὲ ὑμᾶς ἑαυτούς. Phil. iii. 2, βλέπετε τοὺς κύνας, βλέπετε τοὺς κακοὺς ἐργάτας, βλέπετε τὴν κατατομήν. In the same sense φυλάσσεσθαι takes an accusative in Acts xxi. 25, φυλάσσεσθαι αὐτοὺς τὸ εἰδωλόθυτον. 2 Tim. iv. 15, ὃν καὶ σὺ φυλάσσου. So in Xen. Mem. ii. 14, Diod. Sic. xx. 26, Lucian, Asin. 4. Both verbs are elsewhere followed by ἀπὸ with a genitive. Thus in Mark viii. 15, ὁρᾶτε, βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῆς ζύμης τῶν Φαρισαίων. xii. 38, βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῶν γραμματέων. Luke xii. 15, ὁρᾶτε καὶ φυλάσσεσθε ἀπὸ τῆς πλεονεξίας. Compare Xen. Cyrop. ii. 3. 9.

6. φεύγειν, and ἀποφεύγειν, *to flee from*; 1 Cor. vi. 18, φεύγετε τὴν πορνείαν. 1 Tim. vi. 11, ταῦτα φεῦγε. 2 Tim. ii. 22, τὰς νεωτερικὰς ἐπιθυμίας φεῦγε. 2 Pet. ii. 20, ἀποφυγόντες τὰ μιάσματα τοῦ κόσμου. Also with ἀπὸ and a genitive; as in Matt. iii. 7, φυγεῖν ἀπὸ τῆς μελλούσης ὀργῆς. Mark xvi. 8, ἔφυγον ἀπὸ τοῦ μνημείου. 1 Cor. x. 14, φεύγετε ἀπὸ τῆς εἰδωλολατρείας. 2 Pet. i. 4, ἀποφυγόντες τῆς φθορᾶς (where the genitive depends upon the compound verb).
7. After ὀμνύειν, the person or thing, which is sworn by, is put in the accusative in James v. 12, μὴ ὀμνύετε, μήτε τὸν οὐρανὸν, μήτε τὴν γῆν, μήτε ἄλλον τινὰ ὄρκον. So in Isai. lxxv. 16, LXX, Isocr. ad Demon. § 12, Diod. Sic. i. 29, Joseph. Ant. v. 1. 1. Hence Acts xix. 13, ὀρκίζω ὑμᾶς τὸν Ἰησοῦν. See § 40, 6. Obs. 15. The more common form, however, is ὀμνύειν ἐν τινι, or εἰς τινα, as in Matt. v. 35, sqq., μὴ ὀμόσαι ὅλως μήτε ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, μήτε ἐν τῇ γῇ, μήτε εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα, κ. τ. λ. Add Matt. xxiii. 16, sqq. xxvi. 74, Mark xiv. 7, Rev. x. 6; and compare Jerem. v. 2, 7, Ps. lxxii. 10, LXX. Another form, ὀμνύειν κατὰ τινος, is found in Heb. vi. 13, 16. So 1 Sam. xxviii. 16, Isai. xlv. 23, lxxii. 8, Amos. vi. 8, Zeph. i. 5, LXX. These forms are extremely rare even in the later Greek

writers, and in the New Testament they are doubtless of Hebrew origin.

8. With εὐσεβεῖν there is an accusative of the person in Acts xvii. 23, ὃν οὖν ἀγνοῶντες εὐσεβεῖτε, τοῦτον ἐγὼ καταγγέλλω ὑμῖν. Compare Xen. Hell. i. 7. 10.

Obs. 2. Of εὐσεβεῖν τινὰ the New Testament does not furnish an example. In Zeph. iii. 11, LXX, it is followed by εἰς with an accusative; and the same construction is used with ἀμαρτάνειν in Matt. xviii. 15, ἵαν δι' ἀμαρτήσῃ εἰς σὶ ὁ ἀδελφός σου κ. τ. λ. So also in Luke xv. 18, 21, xvii. 3, 4. Compare 1 Sam. xix. 4, Jerem. xxxvii. 17, LXX.¹

3. Many verbs which designate an *affection* or *emotion* of the mind, such as *shame*, *fear*, *compassion*, take an accusative of the exciting cause of such emotion: as in Matt. ix. 27, ἐλέησον ἡμᾶς, υἱὲ Δαβὶδ. xxi. 26, φοβούμεθα τὸν ὄχλον. Add Matt. xvii. 15, Mark viii. 38, x. 47, Luke ix. 26, Rom. i. 16, ix. 15, xi. 32, xiii. 3, 2 Tim. i. 8.

Obs. 3. The verb σπλαγχνίζεσθαι, which is not used by any profane writer, belongs to the same class; but, instead of an accusative, it is followed by a genitive, by ἐπὶ with a dative or an accusative, and by περὶ with a genitive. Examples are Matt. ix. 36, ἐσπλαγχνίσθη περὶ αὐτῶν. xiv. 14, ἐσπλαγχνίσθη ἐπ' αὐτούς. xviii. 27, σπλαγχνισθεὶς δὲ ὁ κύριος τοῦ δούλου καί σου, ἀπίλυσεν αὐτόν. Mark vi. 34, ἐσπλαγχνίσθη ἐπ' αὐτοῖς. Another form is found in Test. xii. Patr. p. 642. σπλαγχνίζεσθαι εἰς τινὰ.

Obs. 4. Probably the combined notion of fear and flight may have given rise to the double construction of φοβεῖσθαι in Matt. x. 28, μὴ φοβεῖσθαι ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποκτενόντων τὸ σῶμα· φοβηθῆντι δὲ μᾶλλον τὸν δυνάμενον κ. τ. λ. So in Luke xii. 4. That with ἐπὶ seems to be an Hebraism; which is preserved by the LXX, in Levit. xxvi. 2, Jerem. i. 8, 17, x. 2. The Greeks said φοβεῖσθαι τινι or ὑπό τινος. We find, however, φόβος ἀπὸ τινος in Xen. Cyrop. iii. 3. 58, vi. 3. 27.²

Obs. 5. It happens sometimes, but rarely, in the New Testament, that neuter verbs are followed by an accusative of the exciting object; as in Luke vii. 9, θαύμασεν αὐτόν. John v. 28, μὴ θαυμάζετε τοῦτο. Rom. xvi. 19, χαίρω τὸ ἐφ' ὑμῖν. Gal. iv. 19, στενάζω, οὗς πάλιν ὀδῶ. The constructions mentioned under § 47. Obs. 11. are far more usual. In like manner the middle verb κόπτεσθαι, *to bewail*, is followed by an accusative in Luke viii. 52, ἔκλαιον δι' πάντας, καὶ ἐκόπτοντο αὐτήν. See also Luke xxiii. 27. It is otherwise in Rev. i. 7, κόψονται ἐπ' αὐτὸν πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ τῆς γῆς. xviii. 9, κλαύουσιν αὐτήν, καὶ κόψονται ἐπ' αὐτῇ οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς. Thus we say in English, *to lament* or *bewail* a person, and *to lament over* him.

4. Many verbs, both *transitive* and *intransitive*, take a noun of kindred meaning in the accusative, so that the verb seems to

¹ Winer, § 32, 1. Alt., § 30. Spanheim ad Arist. Plut. 129. Wetstein ad Acts xvii. 23. Schæfer ad Long. Past. p. 353.

² Winer, § 32, 1. Alt., § 30. b.

stand in the place of some general term, which requires the object to be particularised. . Thus Matt. ii. 10, ἐχάρησαν χαρὰν μεγάλην, *they experienced great joy*; xxvi. 10, ἔργον καλὸν εἰργάσαντο, *they have performed a good work*; Mark iii. 28, βλασφημίαι, ὅσας ἂν βλασφημήσωσιν, *the blasphemies, which they utter*; iv. 41, Luke ii. 9, ἐφοβήθησαν φόβον μέγαν, *they felt great fear*; John v. 32, ἡ μαρτυρία, ἣν μαρτυρεῖ, *the testimony which he bears*; vii. 24, τὴν δικαίαν κρίσιν κρίνατε, *deliver a just judgment*; 1 Tim. vi. 12, ὡμολογήσας τὴν καλὴν ὁμολογίαν, *thou hast made a good confession*; Heb. viii. 10, ἡ διαθήκη, ἣν διαθήσομαι, *the covenant, which I will ratify*. Similar examples are Luke viii. 5, Eph. i. 19, 1 Tim. i. 18, 2 Tim. iv. 7, Rev. xvi. 9.

Obs. 6. There is some little difference, in as much as φυλακαὶ is not used in the abstract, but the concrete sense, in Luke ii. 8, φυλάσσοντες φυλακὰς τῆς νυκτός, *keeping the nightly watches, not keeping watch*. Compare Xen. Anab. ii. 6. 10.

Obs. 7. It will be remarked that an adjective, or some defining term, which might be rendered *adverbially*, is indicated by the substantive; as, for instance, *they rejoiced greatly, they feared exceedingly*, and the like; for the substantive is sometimes put with the cognate verb in the dative, with an *adverbial* import, as in the dative of the manner (§ 47, 2. *Obs.* 3.); so as to express with greater emphasis the action indicated by the verb. Thus in Matt. xiii. 14, ἀκοῇ ἀκούσιν. Luke xxii. 15, ἐπιθυμία ἐπιθύμησα. John iii. 29, χαρᾷ χαίρει. Acts iv. 17, ἀπειλῇ ἀπειλησόμεθα. v. 28, παραγγιλία παρηγγίλαμιν. xxiii. 14, ἀναθέματι ἀναθεματίσαμεν. James v. 17, προσευχῇ προσηύχατο. A word of the same meaning, but of a different root, is added in Matt. xv. 4, Mark vii. 10, θανάτῳ τελευτάτῳ. (Compare Gen. ii. 17, Exod. xxi. 15, 17, LXX.) The same mode of expression frequently occurs in the LXX, where the original Hebrew has the *infinitive absolute*. See Gen. xxxi. 30, 1 Sam. xii. 25, xiv. 39, Isai. vi. 9, lxvi. 10, Jerem. xlv. 5, Lam. i. 8. Hence some have regarded it as altogether an Hebraism.¹ It is however strictly classical. Thus Soph. Œd. T. 65, ὕπνῳ ὑδιν. Œd. C. 1625, Plat. Symp. p. 195, φιύγι φυγῇ. Ælian. V. H. viii. 15, νίκην ἰνίκησι.² An emphasis is produced by means of a preposition in Eph. iv. 16, διὰ πάσης προσευχῆς καὶ διήσειως προσευχόμενοι. In its import the passage is, however, plainly different from the preceding examples.

Obs. 8. There are a variety of constructions with an accusative, such as those in which the *nature of the contest* in which a victory is obtained, the *way* in which one goes, the *quality* in which one excels, &c. is put in that case, which are rarely, if ever, employed in the New Testament. To express these and similar meanings a preposition is usually adopted; as, for example, in Rom. iii. 4, ὅπως νικήσῃς ἐν τῷ κρίνοθαί σε. xvi. 19, θίλω δὲ ὑμᾶς σοφοὺς μὲν εἶναι εἰς τὸ ἀγαθόν, ἀπειραίους δὲ εἰς τὸ κακόν. Possibly the words ὁδὸν θαλάσσης in Matt. iv. 15, may be regarded as an elliptical form of the accusative after verbs of motion; of which there is an example in 1 Sam. vi. 9, LXX, ὁδὸν ὁρίων αὐτῆς πορεύσεται. Compare Exod. xiii. 18.

¹ Vorstius de Hebraismis N. T. § 32. Leusden de Heb. N. T. p. 122. See also Kuinoel on Luke xxii. 15. Pott on James v. 17.

² Winer, § 32, 2, and § 58, 3. Alt, Gram. N. T. §§ 47. 1. 82, 1. Georg. Hierocrit. i. p. 79, and Vindic. p. 199. Ast ad Plat. Epinom. p. 586. Schæfer ad Soph. ii. p. 213. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 408.

5. In Greek, not only the immediate object of an action, but the remoter object also is frequently put in the accusative. With the verbs signifying *to do*, and *to say*, for instance, *the thing done*, and *the word spoken*, are the immediate objects; and *the person, to whom* the thing is said or done, is the more remote; both of which may be in the accusative; or the latter only, if the former is expressed by an adverb. Thus with ποιεῖν signifying *to do good*, or *ill*; as in Matt v. 44, καλῶς ποιεῖτε τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς. Mark xiv. 7, δύνασθε αὐτοὺς εὖ ποιῆσαι.

Obs. 9. According to this analogy, those verbs in which the same idea is implied, are construed with two accusatives, of which one is generally either τι or a neuter adjective, to be rendered in English by *more*, *very*, *not at all*, &c. Thus in Luke iv. 36, μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτόν. Acts xxv. 10, Ἰουδαίους οὐδὲν ἡδίκησα. 1 Cor. xiv. 6, τί ὑμᾶς ὠφελήσω. Gal. iv. 12, οὐδὲν μοι ἡδίκησας. v. 2, ὑμᾶς οὐδὲν ὠφελήσει. Philem. 18, εἰ δέ τι ἡδίκησέ σοι, κ. τ. λ. As involving the adverbs, the verbs ἀγαθοποιῶν and κακοῦν take a single accusative; as in Luke vi. 33, ἵνα ἀγαθοποιήσῃτε τοὺς ἀγαθοποιοῦντας ὑμᾶς. Acts vii. 19, ἐπάκωσι τοὺς πατέρας ἡμῶν. 1 Pet. iii. 13, καὶ τίς ὁ κακόν ὑμᾶς, ἵνα τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ μιμηταὶ γίνησθε;

Obs. 10. The remoter object is also put in the dative, and sometimes in the accusative with εἰς. Thus in Matt. vii. 12, πάντα οὖν ὅσα ἂν θίλῃτε ἵνα ποιῶσιν ὑμῖν οἱ ἄνθρωποι, οὕτω καὶ ὑμεῖς ποιεῖτε αὐτοῖς. Mark xiv. 6, καλὸν ἔργον ἐργάσατο εἰς ἐμὶ. Luke vi. 11, διαλάλουν πρὸς ἀλλήλους, τί ἂν ποιήσαιαν τῷ Ἰησοῦ. John xv. 21, ταῦτα πάντα ποιήσουσιν ὑμῖν διὰ τὸ ὄνομά μου. Acts iv. 15, τί ποιήσωμεν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τούτοις; xvi. 28, μηδὲν πράξῃς σιαυτῷ κακόν. Except indeed in the two examples above cited, the expression εὖ and κακῶς ποιεῖν are in the New Testament always followed by a dative; and even in Matt. v. 44, some MSS. have τοῖς μισοῦσιν, as in Luke vi. 27. Both forms occur in the LXX. Compare Gen. xxxii. 9, 12, Zeph. iii. 20. In Philem. 18, also, some MSS. read ἡδίκησέ σοι. Of ἵν, inserted *Hebraice*, see § 46. 2.

Obs. 11. An accusative follows καλῶς εἰπῶν in Luke vi. 26, οὐαὶ ὑμῖν, ὅταν καλῶς ὑμᾶς εἴπωσι πάντες οἱ ἄνθρωποι, *when men speak well of you*. Hence βλασφημῶν τινά, and the like. See above, Obs. 1. 4. The verbs εὐλογεῖν and κακολογεῖν have in the New Testament a peculiar sense, but they also take an accusative; as in Matt. v. 44, εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους ὑμᾶς. xv. 4, ὁ κακολογῶν πατέρα καὶ μητέρα, θανάτῳ τιμιωτάτῳ. We also meet with λέγειν τινά, *to speak of or respecting any one*, in John vi. 71, viii. 27, 54, ix. 19, 1 Cor. i. 12, *et alibi*. In the same way *dicere* is used in Latin. See Ælian. V. H. iii. 36.¹

Obs. 12. An accusative of the person and of the thing is also found with—

1. Verbs signifying *to ask one about any thing*; as ἐρωτᾶν τινά τι. Matt. xxi. 24, ἐρωτήσω ὑμᾶς κατὰ λόγον ἵνα. So Mark iv. 10, John xvi. 23. Sometimes περὶ τινος is used; as in Luke ix. 45, ἐφοβοῦντο ἐρωτῆσαι αὐτὸν περὶ τοῦ ῥήματος τούτου.
2. Verbs signifying *to request, to desire*; as αἰτεῖν τινά τι. Mark vi. 23, ὃ ἵαν μοι αἰτήσης, δώσω σοί. So Luke xi. 11, 1 Pet. iii. 15. The person is sometimes put in the *genitive* with παρά. Thus Matt. xx. 20, αἰτοῦσά τι παρ' αὐτοῦ. James i. 5, αἰτείτω (σοφίαν) παρὰ τοῦ δίδόντος Θεοῦ πᾶσι ἀπλῶς. Com-

¹ Winer, § 32. 1, 4. a. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 29. b. Valcknaer ad Herod. vii. 144.

pare Xen. Anab. i. 3. 16. In Matt. xviii. 19, the *thing requested* is put in the genitive; but this is by an *attraction* of the *relative* into the case of its *antecedent*. See § 59. 1.

3. The verb φορτίζειν, *to load*, takes a *double accusative* in Luke xi. 46, φορτίζετε τοὺς ἀνθρώπους φορτία δυσβάστακτα. Opposed to this form is the expression ἀποφορτίζειν πλοῖον τὸν γόμον, *to unlade a vessel of her freight*. This is closely analogous to ἀφαιρῖσθαι τινὰ τι, *to take any thing from one*; but in the New Testament ἀφαιρῖσθαι is followed by ἀπὸ with a *genitive*, or by a *genitive* of the person which is governed by an *accusative* of the thing. Thus Matt. xxvi. 51. Mark xiv. 47, ἀφίλειν αὐτοῦ τὸ ὤτιον. Luke i. 25, ἀφίλειν τὸ ὄνειδος μου. Luke xvi. 3, ὁ κύριός μου ἀφαιρῖται τὴν οἰκονομίαν ἀπ' ἐμοῦ.

4. Two accusatives follow διδάσκειν, *to teach*, in John xiv. 26, ἰκύνετε ὑμᾶς διδάξει πάντα. It takes, however, a *genitive* with περὶ in 1 John ii. 27, διδάσκει ὑμᾶς περὶ πάντων. We find a *dative* of the person in Rev. ii. 14, ἐδίδασκεν τῷ Βαλάκ, where another reading is ἐν τῷ Βαλάκ. Were this reading correct, Balak would be represented as the *means* through whom the instruction was communicated; and so the *manner* of instruction is expressed in Col. iii. 16, ἐν πάσῃ σοφίᾳ διδάσκοντες ἑαυτούς. Winer has a reference to 2 Chron. xvii. 9, which is rendered in the LXX ἐδίδασκον ἐν Ἰούδα. The preposition here manifestly denotes *place*, at least in the Greek version; as in Matt. iv. 23, διδάσκων ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς. The simple *dative* is perhaps an *Hebraism*. Compare Job xxi. 22. See § 47. 1. *Obs.* 2.

5. With verbs signifying *to put on*, and *to put off*, as ἐνδύσαι, ἐκδύσαι, περιβάλλειν. Matt. xxvii. 31, Mark xv. 17, 20, ἐξίδυσαν αὐτὸν τὴν χλαμύδα, καὶ ἐνέδυσαν αὐτὸν τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ. Luke xxiii. 11, περιβάλλον αὐτὸν ἱσθῆτα λαμπράν. So John xix. 2. That which is *put on* is expressed by a *dative* with ἐν in Eph. vi. 14, 15, περιζωσάμενοι τὴν ἰσφὺν ὑμῶν ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, καὶ ὑποδησάμενοι τοὺς πόδας ἐν ἰτοιμασίᾳ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου. See also Rev. iii. 5, iv. 4. The simple *dative* is used, as frequently in classical authors, in Rev. xvii. 4, ἡ γυνὴ ἡ περιβεβλημένη πορφύρα καὶ κοκκίνῳ.¹

6. Those verbs, which in the passive take a double nominative, as *to call* or *name*, *to make*, *to choose*, *to appoint*, take in the active a *second accusative* of a substantive or adjective, which expresses some quality of the object predicated by the verb. Matt. iii. 3, εὐθείας ποιεῖτε τὰς τρίβους αὐτοῦ. xix. 4, ἄρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτούς. 17, τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; xxi. 13, ὑμεῖς δὲ αὐτὸν ἐποίησατε σπήλαιον ληστῶν. So Mark xii. 37, Luke vi. 13, 14, John vi. 15, xv. 15, Acts xx. 28, Heb. i. 2, 1 John i. 10.

Obs. 13. Sometimes these verbs employ the infinitive εἶναι to connect the object with the predicate; as in Matt. xvi. 13, τίνα με λέγουσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι. In like manner, an infinitive, as λαβεῖν, ἔχειν, &c. is redundant with verbs of *asking*, and *giving*. Thus Acts iii. 3, ἤρωτα ἰλιμοσύνην λαβεῖν. vii. 46, ἠτήσατο εὐρεῖν σκῆνωμα τῷ Θεῷ Ἰακώβ. So *donat habere* in Virg. Æn. v. 262. Winer refers to this head James v. 10, ὑπόδωγμα λάβετε τοὺς ἀποστόλους, which is evidently an apposition. See § 28.

Obs. 14. The preposition εἰς is sometimes prefixed to the predicate accusative; as in Acts vii. 21, ἀνιθρέψατο αὐτὸν ἑαυτῇ εἰς υἱόν. xiii. 22, ἔγειρεν αὐτοῖς τὸν Δαβὶδ εἰς βασιλεία. 47, τίθεικά σε εἰς φῶς ἰθύνων. This construction is derived, as in the similar substitution for the nominative (§ 37. 10), from the Hebrew; and it is constantly retained in the LXX. See Gen. xliii. 18, 1 Sam. xv. 11, 2 Kings iv. 1, Isai. xlix. 9, Judith v. 11. Those examples are altogether distinct, which have been pro-

¹ Winer, § 32, 4. a. Alt, Gr. Gr. N. T. § 30, c.

duced as parallel from Greek writers; as, for instance, from Herod. i. 34, *ταῖσι χρίονται εἰς πόλεμον*. Compare Eurip. Troad. 1207; and, in the New Testament, Phil. iv. 16, *εἰς τὴν χρείαν μοι ἐπέμψατι*. See also § 46. 5. (*Dat. com.*); and of Acts vii. 53, see § 47. 2. *Obs.* 5.¹

Obs. 15. In classical Greek the verbs *κρύπτειν* and *ἀποκρύπτειν* are followed either by two accusatives, or by a simple accusative of the person; but in the New Testament the person is put with *ἀπὸ* in the genitive. Thus Matt. xi. 25, Luke x. 21, *ἀποκρύψας ταῦτα ἀπὸ σοφῶν καὶ συνιτῶν*. Compare Luke xviii. 34, xix. 42, John xii. 36, Col. i. 26; and Dent. vii. 20, LXX. It frequently happens indeed, both in the sacred and profane writers, that verbs are found with two accusatives, although another construction may be equally or more common. To some which have been already noticed, the following from the New Testament may be added:—

1. *ἀναμνησκείν*. See § 42, 3. 1.
2. *ἐκανῶν*, to qualify: 2 Cor. iii. 6, *ὃς καὶ ἐκάνωσιν ἡμᾶς διακόνους καινῆς διαθήκης*. Otherwise in Col. i. 12, *ἐὺχαριστοῦντες τῷ πατρὶ τῷ ἐκανώσαντι ἡμᾶς εἰς τὴν μερίδα τοῦ κλήρου τῶν ἁγίων*.
3. *ἐρκίζειν*, to conjure; Mark v. 7, *ἐρκίζω σὶ τὸν θεόν*. So Acts xix. 13, 1 Thess. v. 27; and Gen. xxiv. 3, LXX. But in Matt. xxvi. 63, *ἐξερκίζω σὶ κατὰ τὸ θεοῦ τοῦ ζῶντος*. We have in Acts iii. 25, LXX, *ἐρκίζειν ἐν τῷ θεῷ*. Compare 1 Kings ii. 42, 2 Kings xi. 4; Xen. Symp. iv. 10. See also *Obs.* 2. 7.
4. *πείθειν*, to persuade, scil. by teaching: Acts xxviii. 23, *πείθων αὐτοὺς τὰ πρὸς τὸ Ἰησοῦ*. Hence *πείθισθαί τι*, as in Heb. vi. 9, *πιστίσμιθα περὶ ὑμῶν τὰ κρείττετα*. For another construction, see *Obs.* 1. 1.
5. *ποτίζειν*, to give drink: Matt. x. 42, Mark ix. 41, *ὃς γὰρ ἐν ποτίσῃ ὑμᾶς ποτήριον ὕδατος, κ. τ. λ.* 1 Cor. xiii. 2, *γάλα ὑμᾶς ἐπότισα*. But in Rev. xiv. 8, *ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ πιστότικε πάντα ἔθνη*. Elsewhere with the accusative of the person only, as in Matt. xxv. 35, xxvii. 48. The same construction is used with *ψωμίζειν*, which has two accusatives in Numb. xi. 4, Deut. viii. 16, LXX. Compare also Rom. xii. 20, 1 Cor. xiii. 3.
6. *χρίειν*, Heb. i. 9, *ἔχρισί σοι ὁ θεὸς ἔλαιον ἀγαλλιásiως*. Rev. iii. 18, *πολλοὺς ἔγχεσον τοὺς ὀφθαλμούς σου*. With a dative in Acts x. 38, *ἔχρισεν αὐτὸν ὁ θεὸς πνεύματι ἁγίῳ καὶ δυνάμει*. So Mark vi. 13, *ἤλειπον ἰλαίῳ πολλοὺς ἀρρώστους*.²
7. A very common construction is the employment of the accusative as an adverb; of which one of the most frequent instances is that of *πάντα* in the neuter plural, in all things, in every respect: Acts xx. 35, *πάντα ὑπιδίξα ὑμῖν, ὅτι κ. τ. λ.* 1 Cor. ix. 25, *πᾶς δὲ ὁ ἀγωνιζόμενος πάντα ἡγρεατιύεται*. Phil. iii. 8, *τὰ πάντα ἰζημιώθην*. So *πάντα τρόπον, ὃν τρόπον*, and the like; Matt. xxiii. 37, *ὃν τρόπον ἰπισυνάγει ὄρνις τὰ νοσσία ἑαυτῆς ὑπὸ τὰς πτέρυγας*. Add Acts i. 11, Jude 11. So Gen. xxvi. 29, Exod. ii. 24, LXX.

Obs. 16. Sometimes *κατὰ* is supplied; as in Acts xv. 11, *καθ' ὃν τρόπον ἀπέκρινον, scil. ἐσώθησαν*. Rom. iii. 1, *τί οὖν τὸ περισσὸν τοῦ Ἰουδαίου; πολὺ, κατὰ πάντα τρόπον* 2 Thess. ii. 3, *μηδεὶς ὑμᾶς ἐξαπατήσῃ κατὰ μηδὲνα τρόπον*. Possibly therefore *κατὰ* may generally be considered as understood in these cases, of which *τι* and *οὐδὲν*, in any thing, in nothing, are also examples. Thus 2 Cor. vii. 14, *εἴ τι αὐτῷ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν κεκαύχημαι, οὐ κατησχύνθην*. Gal. iv. 1, *οὐδὲν διαφέρει δούλου*.

Obs. 17. We have also in the New Testament the following among other instances of this adverbial usage, including definitions of time, number, distance, &c. Matt. xx. 2, *τὴν ἡμέραν, by the day, daily*; Luke ix. 14, *κατακλίνατι αὐτοὺς κλισίαις, in rows*; xxii. 41, *ἀπισπᾶσθαι ἀπ' αὐτῶν ὥσπερ λίθου βολὴν, distant about a stone's throw*; John vi. 10, *τὸν ἄριθμον ὥσπερ πεντακισχίλιοι*. viii. 25, *τὴν ἀρχὴν ὅτι καὶ λαλῶ ὑμῖν, what*

¹ Winer, § 32, 4. b.

² Winer, § 32. 4. a.

I told you at first; Acts x. 3, ὥσπερ ἔειπον ἐννάτην τῆς ἡμέρας. xviii. 3, σκηνοποιοὶ τὴν τέχνην, *by trade*. For τὸ γένος, *by birth*; and ὄνομα, *by name*; the dative is used in Acts xviii. 2, ἐνόματι Ἀκύλαν, Ποντικὸν τῷ γένει. So also Mark vii. 26, Acts iv. 36. It should be observed however that in the New Testament and the later writers these notions were more usually expressed by means of the prepositions κατὰ, ἐν, or πρὸς.¹

§ 41.—Genitive. (BUTTM. § 132.)

1. The relation or connexion indicated by the *Genitive* branches out into a variety of particulars, and frequently requires to be expressed in English either by some *preposition*, or such other circumlocution as the nature of the context may suggest. In the New Testament and the later writers generally, though it follows the ordinary usage in almost all its bearings, yet the insertion of a *preposition* is far more common, with a view to render the signification distinct.

2. The *gen.* is found in the New Testament, as in Attic Greek, with verbs which signify *to free, keep off, desist*; as well as with those expressive of *separation, removal*, and the like. Thus in Mark ii. 21, αἶρει τὸ πλήρωμα αὐτοῦ τὸ καινὸν τοῦ παλαιοῦ. Luke xiv. 4, ὅταν μετασταθῶ τῆς οἰκονομίας. Acts xv. 29, ἀπέχεσθαι εἰδωλοδύτων. xxvii. 43, ἐκώλυσεν αὐτοὺς τοῦ βουλήματος. 1 Tim. i. 6, ὧν τινὲς ἀστοχήσαντες κ. τ. λ. ix. 3, ἀπέχεσθαι βρωμάτων. xi. 5, παραδιατριβαὶ διεφθαρμένων ἀνθρώπων τὸν νοῦν, καὶ ἀπεστερημένων τῆς ἀληθείας. 1 Pet. iv. 1, ὁ παθὼν ἐν σαρκὶ πέπαυται ἁμαρτίας. So also with an *infin.* and *gen.* of the article; as in Luke iv. 42, κατεῖχον αὐτὸν τοῦ μὴ πορεύεσθαι. Rom. xv. 22, ἐνεκοπτόμην τοῦ ἐλθεῖν πρὸς ὑμᾶς. Compare Luke xxiv. 16, Acts x. 47, xx. 27.

Obs. 1. The whole of this class of verbs, however, are far more commonly followed in the New Testament by a *genitive* governed by ἐκ or ἀπό. Take the following examples from Matt. vi. 13, ῥῦσαι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πονηροῦ. ix. 16, αἶρει τὸ πλήρωμα αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ἱματίου. Mark vii. 6, ἡ καρδία αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπείχει ἀπ' ἑμοῦ. So Luke vii. 6, xii. 58, xiii. 15, Acts i. 4, ii. 40, v. 2, 3, xv. 20. Again, Acts xviii. 1, χωρισθεὶς ἐκ τῶν Ἀθηναίων. xix. 16, ἐκφυγεῖν ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου. See also Rom. vii. 24, 1 Cor. x. 14, 2 Tim. iv. 17, Tit. ii. 14, Heb. v. 7, 1 Pet. i. 18, Pet. iii. 10, Rev. xiv. 13. Add Matt. i. 21, Luke i. 74, xi. 4, xxiv. 13, Acts xviii. 2, Rom. v. 9, viii. 2, 21, 35, 1 Cor. vii. 10, 27, Heb. vii. 26, James v. 20, 2 Pet. ii. 9, Rev. xx. 7. To this head may be added the expressions λούειν ἀπὸ τινος (Acts xvi. 33, Rev. i. 5), and καθαρίζειν ἀπὸ τινος (2 Cor. vii. 1).² Compare Tobit iii. 14, Diod. Sic. i. 24, Appian. Syr. 59. In James v. 4, ὁ μισθὸς ὁ ἀπιστιρημένος ἀφ' ὑμῶν, *the recompence fraudulently withheld by you*, does not belong here.

¹ Winer, § 32, 6. Alt, Gr. N. T. § 30. 2. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 366.

² Winer, § 30, 6. Alt, §§ 27, 2 and 67, β. Bornemann ad Xen. Anab. p. 56.

3. All kinds of *partitives* are, from their very nature, followed by the *genitive*; and most of the cases which occur in other writers are found repeatedly in the New Testament. Thus with such adjectives as ὀλίγοι, πολλοί, ἡμῖς, &c., when the substantive is considered as the whole, and the adjective as a part:—Matt. iii. 7, πολλοὺς τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ Σαδδουκαίων. xv. 37, τὸ περισσεῦον τῶν κλασμάτων. Luke xix. 8, τὰ ἡμίση τῶν ὑπαρχόντων μου. Heb. xi. 21, τὸ ἄκρον τῆς ράβδου. With τις, as in Matt. xxvii. 47, τίνες τῶν ἐκεῖ ἐστώτων. Luke xiv. 15, τις τῶν ἀνακειμένων.

Obs. 2. Hence the superlative is followed in the New Testament, as in classical Greek, by the genitive plural of the substantive to which it belongs. Thus in 1 Cor. xv. 9, ὁ ἰλαχίστος τῶν ἀποστόλων. Another construction, however, with ἐν and a dative, occurs in Matt. ii. 6, cited from Micah v. 2, καὶ σὺ, Βηθλεὲμ, γῇ Ἰούδα, ὡς δαμῶς ἰλαχίστη εἶ ἐν τοῖς ἡγεμόσιν Ἰούδα. Somewhat akin to this exception from the usual form, is the similar use of the *positive*, to which the addition of a noun, indicating the class of persons or things to which it belongs, gives the force of a *superlative*; as in Mark x. 43, μέγας ἐν ὑμῖν. Luke i. 28, εὐλογημένη σὺ ἐν γυναῖξιν, *blessed among women*, i. e. *most blessed of women*. This has been regarded, and perhaps with justice, as a Hebraism, which the LXX have preserved in Cant. i. 6, καλὴ ἐν γυναίξιν. At the same time it is very similar to the Greek expressions ὦ φίλ' ἀνδρῶν, and the like, in which the positive is supposed to be put for the superlative;¹ not to mention that the exact form occurs in Pind. Nem. iii. 138, αἰετός ἀπὸς ἐν ποτανοῖς. So in Latin, Liv. xxiii. 44, *Magna inter paucos*, for *maxima*. There are also other passages, in which the positive has been thought to be put for the superlative: as, for instance, Matt. v. 19, οὗτος μέγας κληθήσεται, where, μέγας is opposed to ἰλαχίστος in the preceding clause. xxii. 36, ποῖα ἐντολὴ μεγάλη ἐν τῷ νόμῳ; (Compare v. 38.) Luke ix. 48, οὗτος ἔσται μέγας. x. 42, Μαρία τὴν ἀγαθὴν μερίδα ἐξελίξατο. 1 Cor. vi. 4, τοὺς ἐξουθενημένους ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, τούτους καθίζιτι. In these instances, however, may be understood a *great one*, the *great commandment*, the *good part*, the *despised*, κατ' ἐξοχὴν, without having recourse to a superlative sense.

Obs. 3. The *partitive* use of *adverbs of time* occurs in Matt. xxviii. 1, ὅψι σαββάτων, *at the close of the Sabbath*.

Obs. 4. After names of places, the name of the country in which they lie is in the *genitive*; as in Matt. ii. 5, ἐν Βηθλεὲμ τῆς Ἰουδαίας. iii. 1, ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ τῆς Ἰουδαίας. x. 23, πόλεις τοῦ Ἰσραήλ. Add Mark viii. 27, Luke iv. 25, Acts xiii. 13, xxiii. 3, xxvii. 5.

Obs. 5. When the article occurs as a *partitive pronoun* in the formula ὁ μὲν—ὁ δὲ, the whole is usually put in the same case as the parts, e. g. Acts xxvii. 44, τοὺς λαοὺς, οὓς μὲν ἐπὶ σανίσιν, οὓς δὲ ἐπὶ τίνων τῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ πλοίου.

4. There are many verbs in which the idea of *partition* is contained or implied, as well as the adjective and substantive corresponding to such verbs, which govern the *genitive*. Thus verbs signifying *to participate in any thing*; as μετέχειν, μεταλαμβάνειν, κοινωνεῖν τινός, &c. Thus 1 Cor. x. 21, οὐ δύνασθε τραπέζης

¹ Matt. Gr. Gr. § 320. 3. Monk ad Eur. Alcest. 743.

Κυρίου μετέχειν, καὶ τραπέζης δαιμονίων. 2 Tim. ii. 6, τὸν κοπιῶντα γεωργὸν δεῖ τῶν καρπῶν μεταλαμβάνειν. Heb. ii. 14, ἐπεὶ οὖν τὰ παιδία κεκοινώνηκε σαρκὸς καὶ αἵματος, καὶ αὐτὸς παραπλησίως μέτεσχε τῶν αὐτῶν, κ. τ. λ. v. 13, πᾶς ὁ μετέχων γάλακτος. vii. 13, φυλῆς ἑτέρας μετέσχηκεν, *participated in*, i. e. belonged to, *another tribe*. Add 1 Cor. ix. 10, Heb. v. 13, xii. 10. Of adjectives or substantives there are examples in 1 Cor. x. 16, 18, κοινωνία τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ Χριστοῦ, κοινωνοὶ τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου. Heb. iii. 1, κλήσεως ἐπουρανίου μέτοχοι. Add Heb. iv. 14, xii. 8, 1 Pet. v. i.

Obs. 6. In Acts xxiv. 25, μεταλαμβάνειν is followed by an accusative, but in a sense which scarcely belongs to this head; and the same phrase, μεταλαβὼν καιρὸν, *to take an opportunity*, is also found in Polyb. ii. 16. There is one instance in which μετίχιν is constructed with the preposition ἐκ in 1 Cor. x. 17, ἐκ τοῦ ἵνός ἑστου μετίχομεν. Once also κοινωνεῖν is followed by εἰς with an accusative expressive of the object, in Phil. iv. 15, οὐδεμία μοι ἐκκλησία ἐκοινώνησεν εἰς λόγον δόσεως καὶ λήψεως. The more usual construction of this verb, however, is with the dative; as in Rom. xv. 27, εἰ γὰρ τοῖς πνευματικοῖς αὐτῶν ἐκοινώνησαν τὰ ἔθνη, κ. τ. λ. 1 Tim. v. 22, μηδὲ κοινῶνι ἁμαρτίαις ἁλλοτρίαις, i. e. μηδὲν κοινὸν ἔστω σοι καὶ ταῖς ἀλλήλων ἁμαρτίαις.¹ So also Phil. iv. 15, 1 Pet. iv. 13, 2 John ii. With the dative of the person the verb occurs in Rom. xii. 13, Gal. iv. 15. Compare Polyb. ii. 32. 8, Ælian, V. H. iii. 17, Herodian, iii. 10. 15.

Obs. 7. Throughout the New Testament μεταδίδοναι occurs only with the accusative, expressed or understood; as in Luke iii. 11, ὁ ἔχων δύο χιτῶνας, μεταδότης τῷ μὴ ἔχοντι. Rom. i. 11, ἵνα τὸ μεταδῶ χάρισμα ὑμῖν πνευματικόν. 1 Thess. ii. 8, εὐδοκοῦμεν μεταδοῦναι ὑμῖν οὐ μόνον τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰς ἑαυτῶν ψυχάς. So also Test. xii. Patr. α' ἠκούσατε, μεταδοτε καὶ ὑμῖς τοῖς τέκνοις ὑμῶν. See also the LXX in Job xxxi. 17, Wisd. vii. 13, 2 Macc. viii. 13. Other verbs of a similar import are followed by a genitive with ἀπὸ or ἐκ, where an ellipsis of μέρος is manifest from Luke xxiv. 42, οἱ δὲ ἐπιδόσαν αὐτῷ ἰχθύος ὁπτοῦ μέρος, καὶ ἀπὸ μελισσίου κηρίου. So John xxi. 10, ἐνίγκατε ἀπὸ τῶν ὀψαρίων. Acts ii. 17, ἐκχυσὲ ἀπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος μου. 1 John iv. 13, ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος αὐτοῦ δίδωκεν ἡμῖν.²

Obs. 8. Sometimes εἶναι and γίνισθαι govern a genitive in a partitive sense, implying *to belong to*; as in Matt. vi. 13, σοῦ ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία. Luke xx. 33, τίνος αὐτῶν γίνισται γυνή; Compare Rom. xiv. 8, 2 Tim. ii. 19. Thus also in Heb. x. 39, ἡμεῖς οὐκ ἐσμὲν ὑποστολῆς, *we are not a portion of the drawing back*, i. e. *we do not belong to*, *we are not partakers with*, those who draw back. xii. 11, πᾶσα παῖδια οὐ δοκιᾷ χαρᾶς εἶναι, ἀλλὰ λύπης, i. e. *partakes of*, *is attended with*, *sorrow*. Again, in 1 Cor. i. 12, iii. 4, ἐγὼ μὲν εἰμι Παύλου, κ. τ. λ., *I am the follower or disciple of Paul*. The prep. ἐκ is, however, more usually employed, when *belonging to a sect or party* is signified; as in Matt. xxvii. 73, ἀληθῶς σὺ ἐξ αὐτῶν εἶ. Compare Luke xxii. 58, John vi. 64, viii. 23, xviii. 17, 25, Col. iv. 9, *et alibi*. There is one instance, in which the gen. is accompanied by πρὸς, where the expression signifies *to be of advantage to*. It occurs in Acts xxviii. 34, τοῦτο γὰρ πρὸς τῆς ὑμετέρας σωτηρίας ὑπάρχει.

Obs. 9. The gen. is also used with other verbs, when the reference is to a part only; as in Acts xxvii. 36, προσελάβοντο τροφῆς, *they took some nourishment*.

¹ Winer, § 30, 5.² Winer, *ubi supra*.

5. Of verbs signifying *to enjoy*, ὄνασθαι is followed by a genitive in Philem. 20, ἐγὼ σου ὀναίμην, *may I find comfort in thee*.

Obs. 10. The verbs which denote *eating* and *drinking*, ἐσθίειν, πίνειν, φαγεῖν, &c., take either a genitive or an accusative in the best Greek writers,¹ but in the New Testament these verbs are more commonly followed by a genitive with ἀπὸ or ἐκ.² Thus Matt. xv. 27, Mark vii. 28, τὰ κυνάρια ἐσθίει ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχίων. John iv. 13, πᾶς ὁ πίνων ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος τούτου. vi. 26, ἐφάγετε τῶν ἄρτων. 1 Cor. xi. 28, οὕτως ἐκ τοῦ ἄρτου ἐσθίτω, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ ποτηρίου πνίτω. Rev. ii. 17, δώσω αὐτῷ φαγεῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ μένου. Griesbach, however, considers the words φαγεῖν ἀπὸ, in this last example, as a gloss; in which case it will belong to Obs. 9. Sometimes the verbs under consideration are found with an accusative; as in Matt. xv. 2, ὅταν ἄρτον ἐσθίωσιν. xxvi. 17, φαγεῖν τὸ πάσχα. 1 Cor. xi. 26, ὁσάκις γὰρ ἀν ἐσθίητε τὸν ἄρτον τοῦτον, ἢ τὸ ποτήριον τοῦτο πίνετε, κ. τ. λ. Add Matt. xii. 4, Mark i. 6, iii. 20, vii. 2, John vi. 58, 1 Cor. xi. 20, Rev. x. 10; and compare Diog. Laert. vi. 2. 6. There may be this difference between the two forms, that ἐσθίειν τι signifies *to take food* as an adequate means of nourishment, and ἐσθίειν τινος or ἐσθίειν ἐκ τινος, *to eat a portion of any thing*. In like manner we say, in English, *to eat meat, to drink water; and also to eat of this, to taste of that*.

Obs. 11. The construction of γινίσθαι seems to have been indifferently with the genitive or the accusative. Thus we have the figurative expression γινίσθαι θανάτου (Matt. xvi. 28, Mark ix. 1, John viii. 52, Heb. ii. 9); and hence Tertull. c. Marcion, iii. 149, *Debitæ mortis gustavit*. John ii. 9, ὡς δὲ ἐγινύσατο ὁ ἀρχιτερίπλος τὸ ὕδωρ εἶναι γεγενημένον. Compare Diod. Sic. i. 89, Ælian, V. H. i. 8. In Heb. vi. 45, both constructions occur in the very same sentence.

6. The *person* or *thing*, from which any thing proceeds, is frequently put in the *genitive*; particularly, for instance, after verbs signifying *to hear*, *to get information*; as in Acts i. 4, τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν, ἣν ἠκούσατέ μου. In the New Testament, however, this is more generally expressed by παρὰ, ἐκ, or ἀπὸ. Thus in Matt. ii. 4, ἐπυνθάνετο παρ' αὐτῶν, ποῦ ὁ Χριστὸς γεννᾶται. Luke xxii. 71, αὐτοὶ γὰρ ἠκούσαμεν ἀπὸ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ. John xii. 34, ἡμεῖς ἠκούσαμεν ἐκ τοῦ νόμου.

Obs. 12. In the same manner, εἶναι and γίγνισθαι, implying *birth* or *origin*, are followed in the New Testament by ἐκ with a genitive; as in Matt. i. 20, γεννηθὲν ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου. John vii. 44, ὑμεῖς ἐκ πατρὸς τοῦ διαβόλου ἐστέ. Rom. i. 3, τοῦ γνημίου ἐκ σπέρματος Δαβὶδ. Gal. iv. 4, γινόμενον ἐκ γύναικος. Add Matt. xxi. 25, Luke ii. 4, John i. 47, iv. 22, vii. 52, xiii. 44, 1 Cor. xi. 8, 1 John iv. 5, 6, 7, *et alibi*.

Obs. 13. The same usage also prevails in expressing the *material* of which any thing is made; as in Matt. xxvii. 29, John xix. 2, στίφανον ἐξ ἀκανθῶν. Rev. xxi. 21, ἀνὰ εἰς ἕκαστος τῶν πυλῶνων ἦν ἐξ ἑνὸς μαργαρίτου. When, however, the *author* or *cause* of any thing is intended, the simple genitive is employed. Thus in 2 Cor. xi.

¹ See Monk ad Eur. Alcest. 855. Mitchell ad Arist. Acharn. 134.

² Winer excepts from this rule Heb. xiii. 10, ἔχομεν θυσιαστήριον ἐξ οὗ φαγεῖν κ. τ. λ. Since, however, θυσιαστήριον, which is here used for the *sacramental table*, with especial reference to the sacred elements of *bread* and *wine*, the passage may readily be explained upon the same principles.

26, κινδύνους ποταμῶν καὶ ληστῶν, *dangers occasioned by rivers and robbers*; (and so Heliod. ii. 4. 65, κίνδυνοι θαλασσῶν.) Eph. iv. 18, ἡ ζωὴ τοῦ Θεοῦ, *the life which God gives*; 1 Tim iv. 1, διδασκαλίαις δαιμονίων, *doctrines suggested by devils*. Also, though less frequently, when the 'genitive is to be taken passively; as in Matt. xxv. 34, εὐλογημένοι τοῦ πατρὸς. John vi. 45, διδάκτοὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Compare 1 Cor. ii. 13. Many good manuscripts read in 2 Pet. ii. 14, καρδίαν γιγυμνασμένην πλεονξίας (*vulgo πλεονξίαις*). Compare Philostr. Her. ii. 15, iii. 1, x. 1. The preposition ὑπὸ is inserted in 1 Thess. i. 4, ἡγαπημένοι ὑπὸ Θεοῦ. So also in Acts x. 41, *et alibi*.¹

Obs. 14. A somewhat similar idiom seems to obtain in the expression βάπτειν ὕδατος, *to dip into water*, which occurs in Luke xvi. 24. As an example of the same kind Wetstein cites from Aratus, βάπτων ἀκινάνοιο.² We find in Exod. xii. 22, LXX, βάπτειν ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος, *to dip into, i. e., to stain with, blood*. Compare Lev. xiv. 16. Here also may be referred Acts ix. 1, ἱμπνίων ἀπείλης καὶ φόβου, where the genitive indicates the *origin* of the passion, which affected the breath. So Heliod. Æth. i. 2, πνίειν φρονήματος.

Obs. 15. With respect to the analogous practice of expressing *qualities* of persons or things by the *gen.* of *substantives*, which receive the sense of *adjectives*, the following are instances:—Luke xvi. 8, τὸν οἰκονομὸν τῆς ἀδικίας, *the unjust steward*; Rom. i. 26, πάθῃ ἀτιμίας, for ἄτιμα. Eph. i. 13, 14, τῷ πνεύματι τῆς ἰσαγγιλίας, *eis ἀπολύτρωσιν τῆς περιποιήσεως, i. e., τῷ ἰσηγγιλμένῳ and περιποιηθεῖσαν*. iv. 29, πρὸς οἰκοδομὴν τῆς χρείας, *useful edification*. Add Acts ii. 19, ἀτμίδα καπνοῦ, *smoky vapour* (Hos. xiii. 3, LXX, ἀτμὶς καπνώδης). ix. 15, σκιὺς ἐκλογῆς, for ἐκλεκτόν. Rom. i. 4, πνεῦμα ἁγιοσύνης. Eph. ii. 2, τοῖς υἱοῖς τῆς ἀπειθείας. 1 Pet. i. 14, τίκνα ὑπακοῆς. The principal, not the *qualifying*, noun is placed in the genitive in Rom. vi. 4, ἐν καινότητι ζωῆς. Gal. iii. 14, τὴν ἰσαγγιλίαν τοῦ πνεύματος, i. e., πνεῦμα ἰσηγγιλμένον. 2 Thess. ii. 11, ἐνεργίαν πλάνης, *strong delusion*. 1 Tim. vi. 17, ἐπὶ πλούτου ἀδηλόγητι. A pronoun is sometimes added, which, though it relates to the entire idea included in both nouns, stands after that in the genitive; and, if an adjective, agrees with it in number and gender. Thus in Acts v. 20, πάντα τὰ ῥήματα τῆς ζωῆς ταύτης. xiii. 26, ὁ λόγος τῆς σωτηρίας ταύτης. Rom. vii. 24, σώματος τοῦ θανάτου τούτου, i. e., σώματος τούτου θανατηφόρου. Heb. i. 3, τῷ ῥήματι τῆς δυνάμεις αὐτοῦ, *by his powerful word*. Rev. xiii. 3, ἡ πληγὴ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ, *its mortal wound*. So Judith ix. 10, LXX, ἐκ χειλῶν ἀπάτης μου. When the governing noun has the force of the *adjective*, the idiom is rather to be regarded as an Hebraism; as in Luke i. 48, τὴν ταπεινώσιν τῆς δούλης, for δούλην ταπεινήν. In Rom. vi. 6, τὸ σῶμα τῆς ἁμαρτίας might perhaps be rendered *the sinful body*, or *the body in which sin exists*; but the metaphor seems to indicate that Sin is represented, as it were, with a body, and that body nailed to the cross. It is clear that those passages cannot be referred to this head, in which one of the nouns is not *qualified* by the other, but exhibits some particular characteristic of it, as in Col. ii. 5, βλέπων τὸ στεγνύμα τῆς εἰς Χριστὸν πίστεως ὑμῶν, *looking, not to your strong faith, but to the steadfastness of your faith*. The sense would, in like manner, be inadequately conveyed by an adjective in 2 Cor. iv. 7, ἵνα ἡ ὑπερβολὴ τῆς δυνάμεις ἢ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ μὴ ἐξ ὑμῶν. Gal. ii. 14, οὐκ ἐρθεδοποῦσι πρὸς τὴν ἀληθείαν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου. Eph. iv. 17, μηκέτι ὑμεῖς περιπατεῖν ἐν ματαιότητι τοῦ νοῦς αὐτῶν. 1 Pet. i. 2, ἐκλεκτοῖς ἐν ἁγιασμῷ πνεύματος. Again in 1 Cor. x. 16, τὸ ποτήριον τῆς εὐλογίας is not *the blessed cup*, but *the cup of blessing* (so called); in Eph. v. 2, Phil. iv. 18, ὁσμὴ εὐωδίας, which is rendered in the English Testament *a sweet-smelling savour*, is rather, perhaps, *an odour arising from sweet incense*, in allusion to the Levitical sacrifices (Exod. xxix. 18, Levit. i. 9, 13, ii. 2, iii. 5, LXX, *et alibi*); and in Heb.

¹ Winer, § 30. 2, 4. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 26. 2, 4.

² Wetstein on Luke xvi. 24. See also Matt. Gr. Gr. § 375. Obs. 2.

ix. 2, ἡ πρέσις τῶν ἄρτων should probably be translated *the setting on of bread*; though it may also be convertible with the ἄρτοι τῆς προθέσεως, *shew-bread*, of the Evangelists (Matt. xii. 4, Mark ii. 26, Luke vi. 4).¹

§ 42.

1. Words which express ideas of *relation* take the object of that relation in the genitive; and the rule, with certain exceptions, is observed by the writers of the New Testament. To this class belong,

1. Verbal adjectives whether used in an active or passive sense; as in James i. 13, ἀπείραστος κακῶν. 2 Pet. ii. 14, ἀκατάπαύστους ἁμαρτίας.

2. Words which represent an *action* or *affection* of the mind; as, for instance, adjectives denoting *experience*, *ignorance*, *lust*, *zeal*, &c. Thus Acts xxi. 21, ζηλῶται τοῦ νόμου. xxvi. 3, γνώστην ἐθῶν καὶ ζητημάτων. 1 Cor. x. 6, ἐπιθυμητὰς κακῶν. Heb. v. 13, ἄπειρος λόγου δικαιοσύνης.

2. Words which indicate *fulness* or *want* take a genitive expressive of that whereof anything is full or empty: as,

1. *Adjectives*. Matt. xxiii. 28, μεστοὶ ὑποκρίσεως καὶ ἀνομίας. Luke v. 12, πλήρης λέπρας. John i. 14, πλήρης χάριτος καὶ ἀληθείας. Acts ix. 36, πλήρης ἀγαθῶν ἔργων καὶ ἐλεημοσυνῶν. Rom. xv. 14, μεστοὶ ἐστε ἀγαθωσύνης. Add Matt. xiv. 10, xv. 37, Mark vi. 43, viii. 19, Luke iv. 1, John xix. 29, xxii. 11, Acts vi. 3, 5, 8, vii. 55, ix. 36, xiii. 10, Rom. i. 29, xv. 14, James iii. 8, 17, 2 Pet. ii. 14. Sometimes, however, the relation is expressed by ἀπὸ or ἐκ. Thus Matt. xxvii. 24, ἀθῶός εἰμι ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ δικαίου τούτου. Acts xk. 26, καθαρὸς ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος. 1 Cor. ix. 19, ἐλεύθερος ὢν ἐκ πάντων. Also by a *dative*, as in Rom. vi. 20, ἐλεύθεροι ἦτε τῇ δικαιοσύνῃ.

Obs. 1. Hence the names of vessels take the *gen.* of that *with which they are filled*; as in Matt. xiv. 13, κηράμιον ὕδατος, a *pitcher full of water*. Compare Jerem. xlviii. 1, 1 Sam. x. 3, LXX. Dion. Hal. iv. 2023. Theophr. Char. 17. Diog. Laert. vi. 1. 4, vii. 1. 3. Athen. i. p. 177.²

2. *Verbs*. Matt. xxii. 10, ἐπλήσθη ὁ γάμος ἀνακειμένων. Mark viii. 4, πόθεν τούτους δυνήσεται τις ὧδε χορτάσαι ἄρτων

¹ Winer, § 34. 2. · Alt. § 23 3. Hermann ad Viger, p. 890.

² Matt. Gr. Gr. § 355. c. Winer, § 30. 2.

ἐπ' ἐρημίας; xv. 36, γεμίσας σπόγγον ὄξους. Luke iv. 28, ἐπλήσθησαν πάντες θυμοῦ. xi. 39, τὸ δὲ ἔσωθεν ὑμῶν γέμει ἀρπαγῆς καὶ πονηρίας. xv. 17, πόσοι μίσθιοι τοῦ πατρὸς μου περισσεύουσιν ἄρτων, ἐγὼ δὲ λιμῶ ἀπόλλυμαι; John ii. 7, γεμίσατε τὰς ὑδρίας ὕδατος. Acts ii. 28, πληρώσεις με εὐφροσύνης. xxvii. 38, κορεσθέντες τροφῆς. Add Matt. xxvii. 36, Luke i. 15, 53, v. 26, John vii. 13, Acts v. 28, xiii. 52, xix. 29, Rom. iii. 14, *et alibi*. Again Luke xxii. 35, καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς, Ὅτε ἀπέστειλα ὑμᾶς ἄτερ βαλαντίου καὶ πήρας καὶ ὑποδημάτων, μὴ τινὸς ὑστερήσατε; οἱ δὲ εἶπον, Οὐδενός. Acts xvii. 25, οὐδὲ θεραπεύεται προσδεόμενος τινός. Rom. iii. 23, πάντες ἥμαρτον, καὶ ὑστεροῦνται τῆς δόξης τοῦ Θεοῦ. James i. 5, εἰ δέ τις ὑμῶν λείπεται σοφίας, αἰτείτω κ. τ. λ.

Obs. 2. All or most of these verbs, however, are equally followed by a genitive with *ἐκ* or *ἀπὸ*.¹ Thus in Matt. xxiii. 25, ἔσωθεν γίμουςιν ἐκ ἀρπαγῆς καὶ ἀδικίας. Luke xv. 16, ἐπιθύμει γεμίσαι τὴν κοιλίαν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν κερατίων. xvi. 21, ἐπιθυμῶν χορτασθῆναι ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχίων. John xii. 3, ἡ οἰκία ἐπληρώθη ἐκ τῆς ὁσμῆς. Heb. xii. 15, ὑστερῶν ἀπὸ τῆς χάριτος τοῦ Θεοῦ. Rev. xix. 21, πάντα τὰ ὄντια ἐχορτάσθησαν ἐκ τῶν σαρκῶν αὐτῶν. We have likewise, πληροῦν and περισσεύειν with a dative in 2 Cor. vii. 4. So in Eccles. xi. 12, πτωχία περισσεύει. See also Rom. i. 29.

Obs. 3. When followed by the prepositions *ἐν* or *εἰς*, the verbs περισσεύειν and ὑστερεῖσθαι, have the sense of *making progress*, or *falling short*, respectively. Thus in 1 Cor. i. 7, μὴ ὑστερεῖσθαι ἐν μηδενὶ χαρίσματι. xv. 58, περισσεύοντες ἐν τῷ ἔργῳ τοῦ Κυρίου πάντοτε. 2 Cor. ix. 8, δυνατὸς δὲ ὁ Θεὸς πᾶσαν χάριν περισσεύσαι εἰς ὑμᾶς, ἵνα περισσεύητε εἰς πᾶν ἔργον ἀγαθόν. So πλουτίζεσθαι, and πλουτεῖν ἢ ἐν τινι, in 1 Cor. i. 5, 1 Tim. vi. 18. We find also πληροῦσθαι with a similar construction and import in Eph. iii. 19, v. 18. This latter verb is also found with an accusative; as in Col. i. 9, πληρωθῇτε τὴν ἐπίγνωσιν τοῦ θειλήματος αὐτοῦ. In Phil. i. 11, the MSS. vary between καρπὸν and καρπῶν.² See below, § 48, 3.

Obs. 4. The verb δέσθαι, *to need*, *to require*, does not occur in its primary acceptation in the New Testament. In the derived sense, *to pray*, it takes a *genitive* in Matt. ix. 38, Luke v. 12, Acts xxi. 39, xxvi. 3, and elsewhere; (and thus also in James v. 17, προσηύξατο τοῦ μὴ βρέξαι.) It has a *gen.* of the *person* and an *accus.* of the *thing* in 2 Cor. viii. 4. We have also δέσθαι περί τινος, and δέσθαι ὑπὲρ τινος, *to pray for a person*, in Luke xxii. 32, Acts viii. 24. Compare Ps. xxix. 8, Job ix. 15, LXX. So Rom. viii. 27, ἐντυγχάνει ὑπὲρ ἁγίων. James v. 16, εὐχισθε ὑπὲρ ἀλλήλων. Add Rom. viii. 26, 34, Heb. vii. 25.

3. Several other *verbs* are sometimes, though not universally, found with a *genitive*; especially,

1. Those which signify *to remember* and *to forget*. Thus Luke xvii. 32. μνημονεύετε τῆς γυναικὸς Λῶτ. John xv. 20, μνημονεύετε τοῦ λόγου, οὗ ἐγὼ εἶπον ὑμῖν. Heb. vi. 10, ἐπιλα-

¹ Schweighäuser ad Athen. xiii. p. 569. et in Addend. et Corrigend. p. 478.

² Winer, § 30, 5. Alt, § 27, 1.

θέσθαι τοῦ ἔργου ὑμῶν. xiii. 2, τῆς φιλοξενίας μὴ ἐπιλανθάνεσθε. Add Mark xiv. 72, Luke i. 72, Acts xi. 16, 2 Pet. iii. 2, Heb. xi. 15, xiii. 2, 16, *et alibi*.

Obs. 5. An instance of the construction with *περὶ* occurs in Heb. xi. 22, τῆς ἐξόδου τῶν υἱῶν Ἰσραὴλ ἐμνημόνισαι, *made mention of the Exodus*. Compare Tobit iv. 1. Sometimes also these verbs are construed with an accusative; as in Matt. xvi. 9, οὐδὲ μνημονεύετε τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους. Phil. iii. 13, τὰ μὲν ἐπίσω ἐπιλανθάνομαι. See also 1 Thess. ii. 9, 2 Tim. ii. 8, Rev. xviii. 5. In a *transitive* sense, *to remind, to call to memory*, these verbs usually take a *double accus.* (John xiv. 26. 1 Cor. iv. 17); but the thing *to be recollected* is in the *gen.* with *περὶ* in 2 Pet. i. 12, διὰ οὗ ἀμελήσω ὑμᾶς αἰὶν ὑπομνήσκαι περὶ τούτων.

2. Those which signify *to be careful, or careless about any thing*: as in Luke x. 34, ἐπεμελήθη αὐτοῦ. 1 Cor. ix. 10, μὴ τῶν βοῶν μέλει τῷ Θεῷ; 1 Tim. iii. 5, πῶς ἐκκλησίας Θεοῦ ἐπιμελήσεται; iv. 14, μὴ ἀμέλει τοῦ ἐν σοὶ χαρίσματος. Heb. ii. 3, τηλικαύτης ἀμελήσαντες σωτηρίας. xii. 4, υἱέ μου, μὴ ὀλιγώρει παιδείας Κυρίου. Frequently the construction is with *περὶ* and a *genitive*. Thus Matt. xxii. 16, Mark xii. 14, οὐ μέλει σοι περὶ οὐδενός. John x. 13, οὐ μέλει αὐτῷ περὶ τῶν προβάτων. xii. 6, οὐχ ὅτι περὶ τῶν πτωχῶν ἔμελεν αὐτῷ. 1 Pet. v. 7, ὅτι αὐτῷ μέλει περὶ ὑμῶν. Compare Wisd. xii. 13, 1 Macc. xiv. 43. According to some,¹ there is an instance of *μέλει* with a *nominative* in Acts xviii. 17, οὐδὲν τούτων τῷ Γαλλίῳ ἔμελεν. By rendering *οὐδὲν, not at all*, it will equally suit the regular construction with a *genitive*.²

3. Verbs signifying *to long for anything, to covet*; as in Matt. v. 28, ὁ βλέπων γυναῖκα πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς. 1 Thess. ii. 8, ἰμειρόμενοι ὑμῶν. 1 Tim. iii. 1, εἴ τις ἐπισκοπῆς ὀρέγεται, καλοῦ ἔργου ἐπιθυμεῖ. Add 1 Tim. vi. 10, Heb. xi. 16.

Obs. 6. Under this head may be classed the expression *πεινῆν τινας* and *διψῆν τινας*, employed in a *figurative* sense. Thus Plutarch. *de Ira cohibenda*, t. ii. p. 460, ὁ μὴ πεινῶν μηδὲ διψῶν αὐτῆς, *scil. τιμωρίας*. Compare Xen. *Oecon.* xiii. 9, Joseph. B. J. iv. 11. 4. We find however the *accusative* in Matt. v. 6, μακάριοι οἱ πεινῶντες καὶ διψῶντες τὴν δικαιοσύνην.³ So also Joseph. B. J. i. 32. 2, διψήσας τοῦ μὲν αἵματος. The verb *διψῆν* is followed by a *dative* in Exod. xvii. 5, LXX, ἰδίψησιν ὁ λαὸς ὕδατι.

4. Verbs including an idea of *superiority, inferiority, forbearance, dominion*, and the like, often take the object

¹ Compare Schleusner and Wahl with Bretschneider, in v.

² Winer, § 30, 7.

³ Winer, *ubi supra*: Wetstein and Elsner on Matt. v. 6.

of comparison in the *genitive*. Thus in Matt. xvii. 17, ὧ γενεὰ ἄπιστος, ἕως πότε ἀνέξομαι ὑμῶν; Acts xviii. 12, Γαλλίωνος ἀνθυπατεύοντος τῆς Ἀχαΐας. 1 Tim. ii. 12, γυναῖκί δὲ διδάσκειν οὐκ ἐπιτρέπω, οὐδὲ αὐθεντεῖν ἀνδρός. Add Matt. xx, 25, Luke iii. 1, Acts xviii. 14, 2 Cor. i. 24, xi. 1, 2 Tim. iv. 3, Heb. xiii. 22, &c.

Obs. 7. To the same class may also be referred *καταναρκᾶν* τινος, *to be burdensome to any one*, in 2 Cor. xi. 8, xii. 13, 14. The exceptions, however, to this usage are extremely numerous; some of these verbs being found with a *dative*, or an *accusative*, or a *preposition* with its case. Thus Matt. ii. 22, Ἀρχέλαος βασιλεύει ἐπὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίας. Luke i. 33, βασιλεύσει ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον Ἰσραήλ. Acts vii. 10, ἡγούμενον ἐπ' Αἴγυπτον. xx. 28, ποιμαίνει τὴν ἐκκλησίαν Θεοῦ. 2 Cor. xii. 13, τί γὰρ ἐστίν, ὃ ἡττήθητι ὑπὲρ τὰς λοιπὰς ἐκκλησίας; Phil. iv. 7, ἡ εἰρήνη τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἡ ὑπερέχουσα πάντα νοῦν. 2 Thess. i. 4, ταῖς θλίψεσιν, αἷς ἀνίσχισθι (which may, however, be otherwise accounted for). 2 Pet. ii. 19, ὃ γὰρ τις ἡττήται, τουτῷ καὶ διδούλωται.¹ Rev. ii. 27, ποιμανῶ αὐτοὺς ἐν ῥάβδῳ σιδηρᾷ. See also Matt. ii. 6, Luke xix. 14, 27, Rev. v. 10. The form *ἀρχισθαι* ἔν τινι occurs in 1 Sam. ix. 17, x. 1, LXX.

Obs. 8. In the opposite sense, *to obey*, only *ἀκούειν* is found with a *genitive*; as in Luke x. 16, xvi. 29, 31, John viii. 47, Acts iv. 19, *et alibi*.² Other verbs of the same import are universally construed with a *dative*. Thus in Matt. viii. 27, οἱ ἄνθρωποι καὶ ἡ θάλασσα ὑπακούουσιν αὐτῷ. Acts v. 29, πειθαρχεῖν δεῖ Θεῷ μᾶλλον ἢ ἀνθρώποις. xxvii. 21, ἴδου μὲν πειθαρχήσαντας μοι μὴ ἀνάγισθαι ἀπὸ τῆς Κρήτης. Gal. iii. 1, v. 7, τῇ ἀληθείᾳ μὴ πείθισθαι. Add Mark i. 27, iv. 41, Luke viii. 25, xvii. 6, Acts v. 36, 37, 40, vi. 7, xxiii. 21, xxviii. 24, Rom. vi. 12, x. 16, Eph. vi. 1, Phil. ii. 12, 2 Thess. iii. 14, Heb. v. 9, xi. 8, xiii. 17, James iii. 3, 1 Pet. iii. 6; and compare Gen. xvi. 3, xli. 40, Deut. xx. 12, xxi. 18, Dan. iii. 12, Ælian, V. H. i. 34, iii. 23, Polyb. iv. 17. 7. So with *ἀπειθεῖν*, as in John iii. 36, ὁ δὲ ἀπειθῶν τῷ υἱῷ, οὐκ ὄψεται ζωὴν. Rom. ii. 8, ἀπειθοῦσι μὲν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, πειθομένοις δὲ τῇ ἀδικίᾳ. The adjective *ἀπειθής* also takes the *dative* in Acts xxvi. 19, Rom. i. 30. In Rom. xvi. 17, where the proper construction would have been *ὑπηκούσατε τῷ τύπῳ τῆς διδασχῆς εἰς ὃν παρεδόθητε*, the *antecedent* *τύπον* is attracted into the case of the *relative*. See § 59. The LXX frequently construe *ὑπακούειν* with a *genitive*. Compare Gen. xvi. 3, xxii. 18, Levit. xxvi. 27, Deut. xxi. 20, 2 Chron. xi. 13.³

5. Verbs of *accusing* take the *gen.* of the thing on account of which the charge is made, as in Acts xix. 40, ἐγκαλεῖσθαι στάσεως. More commonly, however, this *gen.* is accompanied with *διὰ* or *περὶ*, as in Acts xxiii. 29, ἐγκαλούμενον περὶ ζητημάτων τοῦ νόμου. When these take the *gen.* of the person, it is in consequence of their composition with the *prep.* *κατά*. Otherwise they take the *dat.* of the person. See § 45. 4.

6. Verbs of *sense*. The verb *ἀκούειν* is found with the *genitive* of the person in Matt. xvii. 5, xviii. 15, Luke ii. 46, John iii. 29, Acts ii. 6, x. 46, *et alibi*; and with

¹ See Kypke *ad loc.*² Winer, § 30, 7.³ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 29.

the *genitive* of the *thing heard*, in Luke vi. 47, xv. 25, John v. 25, Acts xi. 7, *et alibi*. Other verbs of sense, however, are followed by an *accusative*; and so also ἀκούειν itself in John viii. 43.

Obs. 9. It should seem that this verb, when simply marking *the sense of hearing*, is followed, according to ordinary usage, by a *genitive*; but when containing the additional idea of *understanding*, it takes the *accusative*; and this consideration will readily explain the apparent discrepancy in Acts ix. 7, compared with xxii. 9. Thus also the verbs ἐνθυμιῶσθαι, συνίναί, *to reflect, to understand*, are commonly in the New Testament followed by the *accusative*; as in Matt. ii. 20, ταῦτα δὲ αὐτῷ ἐνθυμηθέντος. ix. 4, ἵνα τί ὑμεῖς ἐνθυμιῶσθε πονηρὰ ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὑμῶν; Luke ii. 50, αὐτὸς οὐ συνῆκαν τὸ ῥῆμα. xviii. 34, αὐτοὶ οὐδὲν τούτων συνῆκαν. xxiv. 45, συνίναί τὰς γραφάς. The construction, however, with περί and a *genitive* is found in Acts x. 19, Πέτρος ἐνθυμουμένου περὶ τοῦ ὁράματος. Also with ἐπὶ and a *dative* in Mark vi. 52, οὐ γὰρ συνῆκαν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἄρτοις. In like manner ἀκούειν sometimes occurs with περί and a *genitive* of the *thing*. Thus Mark v. 27, Luke vii. 3, ἀκούσας περὶ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ. So in Acts xxiii. 20, πυνθάνεσθαι περὶ αὐτοῦ.¹

Obs. 10. It is not the preposition in a compound verb which regulates the case which it governs; for some verbs govern a *genitive*, which are compounded with prepositions not otherwise followed by that case; but the preposition *limits* or *fixes* the relation expressed by the verb. For instance, verbs compounded with κατὰ take the *genitive* of the person, *against whom* any thing is said or done. John v. 45, μὴ δοκίτε ὅτι ἐγὼ κατηγορήσω ὑμῶν πρὸς τὸν πατέρα· ἔστιν ὁ κατηγορῶν ὑμῶν, Μωσῆς. Rom. xi. 18, μὴ κατακαυχῶ τῶν κλάδων. James iv. 11, μὴ καταλαλιῇτε ἀλλήλων, *do not speak against*, i. e. calumniate, *one another*. Add John viii. 6, Acts xxv. 5, 1 Pet. ii. 12, iii. 16. The same import attaches to the preposition when separated from the verb, as in Rom. viii. 33, τίς ἐγκαλίσκει κατὰ ἐκλεκτῶν Θεοῦ; James iii. 14, μὴ κατακαυχᾶσθε καὶ ψεύδισθε κατὰ τῆς ἀληθείας. v. 9, μὴ στινάζετε κατ' ἀλλήλων. Compare 1 Macc. viii. 32, x. 61, 63, xi. 25. Instead of the *accusative* of the thing charged against one, which is usual in classical writers, the *genitive* is employed in Acts xv. 11, ὧν οὗτοι κατηγοροῦσί μου. Of the same class is καταφρονεῖν τινος, *to think against*, i. e. *to despise or slight, any one*, in Matt. vi. 24, xviii. 10, Rom. ii. 4, 1 Cor. xi. 22, Heb. xii. 2, *et alibi*; καταμαρτυρεῖν τί τινος, in Matt. xxvi. 62, xxvii. 13; καταγιλᾶν τινος, in Matt. ix. 24, Mark v. 39; καταστρηναῖν τινος, in 1 Tim. v. 11; καταγινώσκειν τινος, in 1 John iii. 20, 21. Other examples will continually present themselves, as well as frequent instances in which like compounds take an *accusative*. Thus in 2 Cor. iii. 18, τὴν δόξαν Κυρίου κατοπτριζόμενοι. Col. ii. 18, μηδεὶς ὑμᾶς καταβραβεύεται. With respect to verbs compounded with other prepositions governing a *genitive* in the New Testament, it may be observed, without multiplying examples, that sometimes the preposition may be separated from the verb without altering its sense, as in Acts vii. 40, ποίησον ἡμῖν θεοὺς, οἱ προπορεύονται ἡμῶν, i. e. *προεῖσονται πρὸς ἡμῶν*. Sometimes the *genitive* depends upon the relation expressed by the verb itself; as in Luke x. 35, ἐπιμελήθητι αὐτοῦ; and sometimes no regard is paid to the preposition, but another case is put for the *genitive*, as the sense of the verb may permit. Thus in Matt. v. 42, τὸν θέλοντα ἀπὸ σοῦ δανείσασθαι μὴ ἀποστράφῃς, i. e. *do not reject him*. Of words governing a *genitive*, although compounded with prepositions which are not followed by that case, as σὺν for instance, the following are examples:—Acts xiii. 1, Ἡρώδου σύντροφος. xxiii. 20, συνίδεντο τοῦ ἐρωτῆσαι σι. 1 Cor. ix. 23, συγκοινωνὸς αὐτοῦ. Phil. ii. 25, συνεργὸν καὶ συστρατιώτην μου.

¹ Winer, § 30, 7. Alt, § 27, 4. Kuinoel on Acts ix. 7.

§ 43.—*Of the Comparative.*

1. The ordinary syntax of the *Comparative* requires the things compared to be united in the same case by means of the particle ἤ, or the latter to be placed in the genitive. Without dwelling upon these usages, it will suffice to point out the more remarkable constructions of the comparative, which occur in the New Testament.

2. When the substantive is the same on both sides of the comparison, its repetition in the genitive is frequently omitted, and the comparison is referred, for the sake of conciseness, to the person of whom the thing compared obtains. Thus in Matt. v. 20, εἰ μὴ περισσεύσῃ ἡ δικαιοσύνη ὑμῶν πλεῖον τῶν γραμματέων κ. τ. λ., for τῆς δικαιοσύνης τῶν γραμματέων. John v. 36, ἐγὼ δὲ ἔχω τὴν μαρτυρίαν μείζω τοῦ Ἰωάννου. 1 Cor. i. 25, τὸ μωρὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ σοφώτερον τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐστὶ, καὶ τὸ ἀσθενὲς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἰσχυρότερον τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐστὶ.

Obs. 1. In this last example the genitives omitted are τῆς σοφίας and τοῦ ἰσχύος, or the opposite qualities to those in the former member. The same usage is found in the Hebrew of Isai. lvi. 5. Compare 3 Esdr. iii. 5. So, in Latin, Juv. Sat. iii. 74, *Sermo promptus et Isæo torrentior*; for *Isæi sermone*.

Obs. 2. The abbreviation is not confined to comparatives, but occurs after other words, as ὅμοιος for instance. Thus Jude 7, Σόδομα καὶ Γόμορρα, καὶ αἱ περὶ αὐτὰς πόλεις, τὸν ὅμοιον τούτοις τρόπον ἐκπορνεύσασαι, i. e. τῷ τούτων τρόπῳ. Rev. ix. 10, ἔχουσιν οὐρὰς ὁμοίας σκορπίοις. xiii. 11, εἶχε κέρατα δύο ὅμοια ἀρνίῳ.

Obs. 3. The particle ἤ is omitted before numerals in Acts iv. 22, ἐτῶν γὰρ ἦν πλείονων τισσαράκοντα. In Acts xxiv. 11, the true reading seems to be, οὐ πλείους εἰσὶ μοι ἡμέραι δεκαδύο. The Edd. insert ἤ.

3. Sometimes the thing compared is put in the accusative with παρά. Luke iii. 13, μηδὲν πλέον παρὰ τὸ διατεταγμένον ὑμῖν πράσσετε. Heb. i. 4, διαφορώτερον παρ' αὐτοὺς ὄνομα, where it will also be observed that παρ' αὐτοὺς is concisely put for παρ' αὐτῶν ὄνομα. iii. 3, πλείονος δόξης οὗτος παρὰ Μωσῆν ἡξίωται. xi. 4, πλείονα θυσίαν Ἀβελ παρὰ Κάϊν προσήνεγκε. Also with ὑπέρ. Luke xvi. 8, φρονιμώτεροι ὑπὲρ τοὺς υἱοὺς τοῦ φωτός. Heb. iv. 12, τομώτερος ὑπὲρ πᾶσαν μάχαιραν δίστομον. Compare Judg. xi. 25, xv. 2, xviii. 26, Ps. xix. 10. These prepositions in fact involve the idea of comparison: and thus, in Latin, Virg. Æn. i. 351, *Scelere ante alios immanior omnes*.

4. Some verbs, used in a comparative sense, are followed by ἤ, with μᾶλλον understood. This usage of βούλομαι is common

in the best writers; and θέλειν has a similar import in 1 Cor. xiv. 19, θέλω πέντε λόγους διὰ τοῦ νοός μου λαλῆσαι, ἢ μυρίους λόγους ἐν γλώσση. The same omission occurs with λυσιτελεῖ in Luke xvii. 2. Compare Tobit iii. 6, vi. 12.

Obs. 4. The comparative is often used without an expressed object of comparison, which is nevertheless implied in some additional circumstance which is passing in the mind. Thus John xiii. 27, ὁ παῖς, ποιήσει τάχιστα, *more quickly than is your present purpose.* Acts xvii. 21, Ἀθηναῖοι εἰς οὐδὲν ἴτιον ἐπαίρουσιν, ἢ λίγιστον καὶ ἐκείναις καινότερον, *something more new than the latest news, i. e. one novelty after another.* In the next verse the particle ὥς is inserted to qualify a disagreeable expression, and we may render ὥς διωιδαιμονιστίους, *somewhat more superstitious than, from your high philosophical notions, might be expected.* Again, in Acts xviii. 26, ἀκριβέστερον αὐτῷ ἰξίδιντο τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ὁδόν, *more accurately than he had hitherto been acquainted with it.* xxv. 10, ὥς καὶ σὺ κάλλιον ἐπιγινώσκεις, i. e. κάλλιον, ἢ ἐπιγινώσκων δεξιῶς. xvii. 13, ἔσσοι παρελθόντες τὴν Κρήτην, *nearer than they had intended.* Other examples are 2 Cor. vii. 7, Phil. i. 12, ii. 28, 1 Tim. iii. 14, 2 Tim. i. 18, Heb. xiii. 19, 23, 2 Pet. i. 19. Compare Theophr. Char. viii. 1, Eurip. Orest. 1327, Arist. Av. 254, Lucian. Asin. 41, Plat. Euthyphr. 1.

Obs. 5. There is no passage in the New Testament in which the sense is precisely the same as if the positive were used; for even in 2 Cor. ii. 4, περισσοτέρως may be rendered, *more abundantly than you imagine.* On the other hand, the positive is sometimes put for the comparative; as in Matt. xviii. 8, Mark ix. 43, καλὸν σοὶ ἐστὶν εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν ζωὴν χωλὸν ἢ κυλλόν, ἢ δύο χεῖρας κ. τ. λ. Luke xviii. 14, κατέβη ὄντως δεικναιμῆτος, ἢ ἐκείνος. Compare Gen. xlix. 12, Ps. cxviii. 8, Lament. iv. 9, Hos. ii. 7, Jonah iv. 3, LXX. So, in Latin, Plaut. Rud. iv. 4. 70; *Tacita paulier est bona semper, quam loquens.* We have also the positive with παρὰ in Luke xiii. 2, ἀμαρτωλοὶ παρὰ πάντας. This has been referred to an analogy with the Hebrew use of the particle מִן, in Exod. xviii. 11, Numb. xii. 3, Judith xiii. 18, and elsewhere.

But similar examples occur in Greek. Thus Dion. H. Ep. ad Pomp. ii. 3, ἀρεβέσις καὶ λιπτὴ παρ' ἡντινοῦν ἰτίραν διάλεκτον. Philostr. V. Apol. p. 110, παρὰ πάντας Ἀχαιοὺς μέγας. Eph. iii. 8, τῷ ἐλαχιστοτέρῳ πάντων τῶν ἁγίων. In the same way ὅτι is used in 1 Sam. i. 8, xv. 28, 2 Sam. xiii. 15, LXX. And thus *prope* in Cicero: *prope nobis beatus.* To this head belongs Luke xv. 7, χαρὰ ἵσταται ἐπὶ ἐνὶ ἀμαρτωλῷ μετνοοῦντι, ἢ ἐπὶ ἐννενηκονταετία δικαίῃς. Compare Gen. xxxviii. 26, LXX.¹ So, as some have supposed, Matt. xxvi. 24, Mark xiv. 21, καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ, εἰ οὐκ ἐγενήθη, which may, however, be rendered, *It were well for him, &c.*

Obs. 6. The comparative is put for the superlative; as in Matt. xi. 11, Luke vii. 28, ὁ δὲ μικρότερος ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τῶν οὐρανῶν μείζων αὐτοῦ ἵσται, i. e. μικρότερος τῶν ἄλλων ὁ μικρότατος. Matt. xviii. 1, Mark ix. 34, Luke ix. 46, 48, τίς ἄρα μείζων ἵσται; for μέγιστος. So Diog. L. vi. 1. 4, ἐρωτηθεὶς τί μακαριώτερον ἐν ἀνθρώποις, ἔφη, εὐτυχῶντα ἀποθανεῖν. To the above may be added 1 Cor. viii. 13, μείζων δὲ τούτων ἡ ἀγάπη. 2 Cor. xii. 15, εἰ καὶ περισσοτέρως ὑμᾶς ἀγαπῶν, ἥττον ἀγαπῶμαι. The case is different, where πάντων is connected with the comparative; as in Matt. xiii. 32, μικρότερον πάντων τῶν σπικμάτων. Mark iv. 32, πάντων τῶν λαχάνων μείζων. John x. 29, μείζων πάντων. 1 Cor. xv. 19, ἐλαυνότεροι πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἵσται. Eph. iii. 8, τῷ ἐλαχιστοτέρῳ

¹ Winer, § 36. Alt, § 34. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 29. Dorvill. ad Char. p. 538. Weiske de Pleonasm. p. 153. Wyttenbach ad Plut. Moral. i. p. 238. Ast ad Plat. Phædr. p. 395.

πάντων τῶν ἀγίων. In these cases πάντων gives a superlative sense ; but at the same time, the comparative has its proper sense and government. So Athen. iii. 15, πάντων καρχαῶν ἐφιλιμώτερα. Dio Chrysost. iii. p. 108., 44, ἀπάντων πιθανώτερος. Liban. iii. p. 17. ἀπάντων ἀτοπώτερον.

Obs. 7. The use of the superlative for the comparative is occasionally met with in the substitution of the adjective πρῶτος for πρότερος. Thus in John i. 15, πρῶτός μου ἦν. Acts i. 1, τὸν πρῶτον λόγον, *the former narrative*, namely, the Gospel of St. Luke. Also the adverb πρῶτον for πρότερον, as in John xv. 18, ἐμὶ πρῶτον ὑμῶν μιμήσκειν. Compare also Matt. v. 24, viii. 21, Heb. viii. 7. Another example, according to a very widely received interpretation, is Luke ii. 2, αὕτη ἡ ἀπογραφὴ πρώτη ἐγένετο ἡγουμενούντος τῆς Συρίας Κυρηναίου, *before Cyrenius was Governor of Syria*. The true meaning, however, seems to be, that the census in question, though decreed by the Emperor some years previously, *first took effect* under the presidency of Cyrenius.¹

§ 44.—*The Genitive in some particular connexions.*

1. The gen. frequently denotes the object, *with respect to which* the governing noun denotes some circumstance of action, speech, or sentiment. Thus in Matt. xiii. 18, τὴν παραβολὴν τοῦ σπείροντος, *the Parable* relative to *the sower* ; John xvii. 2, ἐξουσίαν πάσης σαρκός, *power over all flesh* ; Rom. xiii. 3, φόβος τῶν ἀγαθῶν ἔργων, *terror with respect to good works* ; 1 Pet. i. 2, ῥαντισμὸν αἵματος, *sprinkling with, or, by means of, blood*. So with verbs : as in 2 Pet. iii. 9, οὐ βραδύνει ὁ Κύριος τῆς ἐπαγγελίας, *with respect to his promise*. And with adjectives ; as in Luke xxiv. 25, βραδεῖς τῇ καρδίᾳ τοῦ πιστεύειν, *slow with regard to believing*. See also Eph. ii. 12, iii. 6, James ii. 5.

Obs. 1. An analogous usage is that of the genitive with substantives or verbs, in cases where περὶ is otherwise used ; as in Matt. iv. 24, ἀκοὴ αὐτοῦ, *the fame of him, or concerning him* ; for which we have ἡχος περὶ αὐτοῦ, in Luke iv. 37. Thus again in Acts vii. 19, ἐπάκουσε τοὺς πατέρας ἡμῶν τοῦ ποιῆν ἔκδικτα, κ. τ. λ., *ill-treated them in regard to the exposition* : xx. 3, γνώμη τοῦ ὑποστρέφειν, *an intention of returning*, i. e. in respect to returning. See also Matt. xiv. 1, Acts iii. 12, xxvii. 1, 1 Cor. ii. 2, vii. 37.

Obs. 2. A remoter relation, which requires to be more fully developed, exists in the following : Mark i. 4, βάπτισμα μετανοίας, *baptism which inculcates repentance* ; Luke xi. 29, σημεῖον Ἰωνᾶ, *the sign which Jonah affords* ; Rom. vii. 2, τοῦ νόμου τοῦ ἀνδρός, *the law which binds to the husband* ; viii. 36, πρόβατα σφαγῆς, *sheep destined for slaughter* ; Phil. iv. 9, ὁ Θεὸς τῆς εἰρήνης, *the God who gives peace* ; Col. i. 20, τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ σταυροῦ, *the blood shed upon the cross* ; ii. 19, αὔξησιν τοῦ Θεοῦ, *an increase required by God* ; 2 Thess. iii. 5, τὴν ὑπομονὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ, *patience similar to that of Christ* ; James ii. 4, κριταὶ διαλογισμῶν πονηρῶν, *judges who decide upon evil principles*. To the same head may be referred the expression πίστις Θεοῦ (Mark xi. 22), ὑπακοὴ Χριστοῦ (2 Cor. x. 5), and the like. Thus also Rom. i. 5, ὑπακοὴν πίστιως, *obedience upon a principle of faith*. Pet. i. 22, τῇ ὑπακοῇ τῆς

¹ See Interpp. *ad loc.*

ἀληθείας, the obedience required by the Gospel. For additional instances, see Matt. x. 1, xii. 31, xxiv. 15, John v. 29, vii. 35, Acts iii. 16, xiv. 9, Rom. iii. 22, ix. 21, 1 Cor. ix. 12, 2 Cor. v. 19, Gal. ii. 16, iii. 22, Eph. ii. 3, Phil. i. 27, iii. 9, Col. i. 23, Heb. vi. 2, James ii. 1, Jude 11, Rev. xiv. 12, xv. 2. The LXX. use the genitive in similar relations in Numb. xxvi. 9, Job xxi. 4, Obad. 2, Eccles. iii. 14, Wisd. viii. 3, 1 Macc. iii. 14. Compare Thucyd. i. 129, Heliod. ii. 4. 65, Theodoret, iv. 1140.

Obs. 3. There are also a class of expressions, which admit of different explanations in different contexts. Thus *ἀγάπη Θεοῦ* may mean either *the love which man owes to God*, (John v. 42, 1 John ii. 5, 15, v. 3), or *the love of God towards mankind*, (Rom. v. 5, viii. 35, 2 Cor. v. 14). Similarly in Pausan. viii. 7, *ὅρκαι Θεῶν*, *oaths by, or in the name of, the Gods*. The Latins likewise employed the genitive in a two-fold application after certain words, as observed in A. Gell. ix. 12, *Metus quoque et injuria atque alia quædam id genus, sic utroque versum dici possunt: nam metus hostium recte dicitur, et cum timent hostes, et cum timentur.*¹

Obs. 4. It may be doubted whether the expression *τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Χριστοῦ*, which repeatedly occurs, is to be rendered *the Gospel concerning Christ*, or *the Gospel preached by Christ*. In support of the former acceptance, Winer remarks, that it appears to be abridged, as it were, from the more complete form in Rom. i. 2, 3, *εὐαγγέλιον Θεοῦ περὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ*. He refers also to the similar expression, *τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τῆς βασιλείας*, in Matt. iv. 23, ix. 35. On the other hand, however, *εὐαγγέλιόν μου* is plainly *the Gospel preached by me* (St. Paul) in Rom. ii. 16, xvi. 25, 2 Tim. ii. 8. Both significations may therefore be included.

2. The genitive is constantly employed, to mark the *object* or *cause* of any feeling or affection of the body or mind. Thus Acts iv. 9, *ἐπὶ εὐεργεσίᾳ ἀνθρώπου*, *beneficence towards the man*; 2 Cor. i. 5, *παθήματα τοῦ Χριστοῦ*, *sufferings for the sake of Christ*; Eph. iii. 1, *ὁ δέσμιος τοῦ Χριστοῦ*, *a prisoner in the cause of Christ*; Philem. 13, *τοῖς δέσμοις τοῦ εὐαγγελίου*, *bonds for the sake of the Gospel*; Heb. xi. 26, *τὸν ὀνειδισμόν τοῦ Χριστοῦ*, *reproach on account of Christ*. Compare Col. i. 24, 2 Tim. i. 8, Philem. 9, Heb. xiii. 13. So with *adjectives*; Heb. iii. 12, *καρδία πονηρὰ ἀπιστίας*, *a heart which is wicked by reason of unbelief*. The Latins have a similar idiom; as in Virg. *Æn.* xi. 73, *Læta laborum.*²

Obs. 5. There are also passages in the New Testament as well as in other authors, in which the genitive is used, where the object may more properly be otherwise expressed. Thus Luke vi. 12, *τῇ προσευχῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ*, *in prayer to God*; instead of the more regular form *πρὸς τὸν Θεόν*, which occurs in Rom. xv. 30. So also Joseph. Ant. ix. 9, *ἐπὶ δίκησιν καὶ ἰκετεῖαν τοῦ Θεοῦ*. The Latins said, in like manner, *supplicia deorum* (Sall. Cat.). Very similar are the expressions *πίστις Θεοῦ*, *ὑπακοὴ Χριστοῦ*, &c. which have been already noticed. Thus also the possessive pronouns are sometimes put *objectively*; as in Luke xiii. 19, 1 Cor. xi. 24, *τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἑμὴν ἀνάμνησιν*.

¹ Winer, § 30, 1. Alt, § 26. 1, 2. Dorvill. ad Char. p. 498. Markland ad Eur. Suppl. 838. Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 72.

² Winer, § 30, 1. 4. Monk ad Eur. Alcest. 751.

in remembrance of me; Rom. xi. 31, τῷ ὑμῖν ἐκτεταμένη ἡ ἐλεος, *the mercy extended to you*; 1 Cor. xv. 31, τὴν ὑμῖν καύχουσαν ἢ ἔχω, *my boasting of you*. Winer adds 2 Tim. iv. 6, ὁ καιρὸς τῆς ἐμῆς ἀναλύσεως ἐφίστησι, which is not a case in point. The Latins have the same usage; as, for example, in Terent. Phorm. v. 8. 27, *Neque negligentia tua, neque id odio fecit tuo*; i. e. *erga te*.

Obs. 6. Instead of a genitive, the dative with *in* is put after a verb expressive of a mental affection in 2 Cor. v. 2, *in τούτῳ στινάζομεν*.

Obs. 7. The word *ἵnochos* is properly constructed with a dative in Matt. v. 21, 22, *ἵnochos ἵσται τῇ κρίσει, τῷ συνιδρίφ*. In the latter of these two verses it is also followed by *eis* with an accusative, and manifestly in the same sense. It is found with the genitive, *κρίματι* or some like word being understood, in Matt. xxvi. 66, Mark xiv. 64, *ἵnochos θανάτου*, Mark iii. 19, *ἵnochos αἰωνίου κρίσεως*. So also in 1 Cor. xi. 27, Heb. ii. 15, James ii. 10.

3. Words which imply a comparison with respect to *value*, as *ἄξιος*, *ἀνάξιος*, Matt. iii. 8, 1 Cor. vi. 2, *et passim*, are likewise followed by a genitive; and thence all words which have reference to *buying, selling, valuing, exchange, &c.* Matt. x. 29, *οὐχὶ δύο στρουθία ἀσσαρίου πωλεῖται*; xvi. 26, *τί δώσει ἄνθρωπος ἀνταλλάγμα τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ*; xx. 13, *οὐχὶ δηναρίου συμφώνησάς μοι*; xxvi. 9, *ἡδύνατο γὰρ τοῦτο τὸ μύρον πρᾶθῆναι πολλοῦ*. Acts xxii. 28, *ἐγὼ πολλοῦ κεφαλαίου τὴν πολιτείαν ταύτην ἐκτησάμην*. 1 Cor. vi. 20, *ἡγορασθῆτε γὰρ τιμῆς*. Rev. vi. 6, *χοῖνιξ σίτου δηναρίου, καὶ τρεῖς χοίνικες κριθῆς δηναρίου*.

Obs. 8. Upon the same principle the genitive is put after words which denote a distinction or difference; as after *διαφέρειν* in Matt. x. 31, *πολλῶν στρουθίων διαφέριτε ὑμῖς*. xii. 12, *πόσῳ οὖν διαφέρει ἄνθρωπος προβάτου*; 1 Cor. xv. 41, *ἀστὴρ γὰρ ἀστέρος διαφέρει ἐν δόξῃ*. Add Matt. vi. 26, Luke xii. 7, 24, Gal. iv. 1.¹

Obs. 9. Frequently the preposition *ἐκ* or *ἀντὶ* is inserted; as in Matt. xx. 2, *συμφωνήσας μετὰ τῶν ἰργατῶν ἐκ δηναρίου*. 28, *δοῦναι τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν*. xxvii. 7, *ἡγοράσαν ἐξ αὐτῶν (ἀργυρίων) τὸν ἀγρὸν τοῦ κισσαμῖως*. Acts i. 18, *ἐκτῆσατο χωρίον ἐκ τοῦ μισθοῦ τῆς ἀδικίας*. Heb. xii. 2, *ἀντὶ τῆς προκειμένης αὐτῷ χαρᾶς ὑπέμεινε σταυρόν*. So in Joel iii. 3, LXX, *τὰ κορασία ἐπώλουν ἀντὶ τοῦ οἴνου*. Epist. Jerem. v. 25, *ἐκ πάσης τιμῆς ἡγορασμένα ἵστί*. Compare Palæph. de Incred. xlv. 3. 4.

4. With active verbs which signify *to take, to seize, &c.* the part by which any thing is taken is put in the genitive, while the whole is put in the accusative; as in Mark ix. 27, *κρατήσας αὐτὸν τῆς χειρός*. Acts iii. 6, *πιάσας αὐτὸν τῆς δεξίας χειρός*. Compare Ezek. vii. 3, LXX, Plutarch, Apophthegm. p. 180, Lucian. Pisc. 12. At the same time the more unusual construction with a genitive only is also found. Thus in Luke viii. 54, *κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς αὐτῆς*. John xxi. 10, *ἐνέγκατε ἀπὸ τῶν ὀψαρίων, ὧν ἐπιάσατε νῦν* (though this may be an instance of *attraction*). Heb. vi. 18, *κρατήσας τῆς προκειμένης ἐλπίδος*.

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 27. 6. Wetstein on Matt. vi. 26.

Obs. 10. The more proper form is *πρατῖν τινα*, as in Matt. xiv. 3, xvii. 28, Mark iii. 21, *et alibi*. Compare also John vii. 30, 32, x. 39. Sometimes *ἐκ* is prefixed to this genitive, as in Acts xxviii. 4, *κρεμάμενον ἐκ τῆς χειρὸς*. Compare Herod. iv. 10, Xen. Mem. iii. 10. 13.

Obs. 11. Analogous to this usage is that of *λαμβάνειν* and some of its compounds, with *ἄπτεσθαι*, and *ἔχουσθαι*, signifying, in the middle voice, *to take hold of*. Thus Matt. xiv. 31, ὁ Ἰησοῦς, *ἐκτίνας τὴν χεῖρα, ἐπιλάβετε αὐτοῦ*. xvii. 7, *προσέλαβεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἡψατο αὐτῶν*. Luke i. 54, *ἀντιλάβετε Ἰσραὴλ παῖδες αὐτοῦ*. xx. 20, 26, *ἐπιλάβεσθαι λόγου, to lay hold of one's words*, i. e. with a view to make them a subject of accusation or blame; Heb. vi. 9, *ἐχόμενα σωτηρίας, things laying hold of*, i. e. connected with, salvation. Other examples will be found in Matt. vi. 24, viii. 15, ix. 20, 21, 29, Mark i. 41, v. 30, vi. 46, viii. 23, Luke ix. 47, xvi. 13, xxii. 51, Acts xx. 35, xxiii. 19, 1 Thess. v. 14, 1 Tim. vi. 2, Tit. i. 9; and in Gen. xxxix. 12, Job i. 19, xxxiii. 34, LXX. In the sense of *ἄπτεσθαι*, we find *θιγῖν* with a genitive in Heb. xi. 28, xii. 20. It is to be remarked however, that the verb *ἐπιλαμβάνειν* is also found with the accusative; but in a sense which indicates the *forcible seizure* of the *entire* person; as in Acts xvi. 19, *ἐπιλαβόμενοι τὸν Παῦλον καὶ τὸν Σίλαν, εἴλασσαν εἰς τὴν ἀγορὰν ἐπὶ τοὺς ἄρχοντας*. xviii. 17, *ἐπιλαβόμενοι Σωσθένην, ἔτυπτον ἐμπροσθεν τοῦ βήματος*. The verb *δράσσειν* also takes an accusative in 1 Cor. iii. 19. It is by no means agreed that *προσλαμβάνειν*, as employed in Matt. xvi. 22, is used in the sense which belongs to the class of words under consideration.

Obs. 12. The verb *τυγχάνειν*, signifying *to obtain*, is found in the New Testament with a genitive only; as in Luke xx. 35, *καταξωθέντες τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐκείνου τυχεῖν*. See Acts xxiv. 3, xxvii. 3, 2 Tim. ii. 10, Heb. xi. 35; and in the LXX, Job iii. 21, xvii. 1, [Prov. xxx. 23. So the compound *ἐπιτυγχάνειν*, in Rom. xi. 7, Heb. vi. 15, xi. 33. In Luke i. 9, *λαγχάνειν* takes a genitive: in Acts i. 17, 2 Pet. i. 1, as accusative. Except in Gal. iv. 30, (where it is used absolutely), *κληρονομῖν* is followed by an accusative of the thing which is inherited. Thus in Matt. v. 5, *αὐτοὶ κληρονομήσουσι τὴν γῆν*. Compare Matt. xix. 29, xxv. 34, Luke xviii. 18, 1 Cor. xv. 50, Gal. v. 21, Heb. i. 4, 14, *et alibi*. So in Prov. iii. 35, LXX, *δόξαν κληρονομήσῃ*. Such indeed is the general construction in the LXX, and also with the accusative of the person, as in Gen. xv. 4, *κληρονομήσει με, he shall be my heir*. The later writers, in general, adopted this usage.¹

5. The genitive of *place* and *time*, and of the former more especially, is very rare in the New Testament. Examples of the latter are *νυκτὸς*, in Matt. ii. 14, xxvii. 64, xxviii. 14, John vii. 50, 1 Thess. v. 7, *et alibi*; *ἡμέρας καὶ νύκτος*, in Mark v. 5, Luke xviii. 7, 2 Thess. ii. 9, 1 Tim. v. 5, *et alibi*; *χειμῶνος*, in Mark xiii. 18. Add *μεσονυκτίου ἢ ἀλεκτροφωνίας*, in Mark xiii. 35.

Obs. 13. Both *time* and *place*, in answer to the questions *when* and *where*, are usually expressed by the preposition *ἐν*, as in Matt. iii. 1, *ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ἐκείναις*. xiii. 4, *ἐν τῷ σπείρειν*. John v. 7, *ἐν ᾧ, sc. χρόνῳ*. Rom. xiii. 13, *ἐν ἡμέρᾳ*. So also, in the sense of *within* in John ii. 19, 20, *ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις*. Again, Acts ix. 10, 19, *ἐν Δαμασκῷ*. xix. 1, *ἐν Κορίνθῳ*, 2 Tim. iv. 13, 20, *ἐν Τρωάδι, ἐν Μιλήτῳ*. Both constructions are united in Matt. xxiv. 20, *προσέυχισθε δὲ ἵνα μὴ γίνηται ἡ φυγὴ ὑμῶν χειμῶς, μηδὲ ἐν σαββάτῳ*.

¹ Winer, § 30, 5. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 129.

Obs. 14. To the head of genitives of *time*, Winer¹ refers Rom. ii. 5, *ἡμέρα ὀργῆς* the day in which the divine wrath will be displayed; Jude 6, *κρίσις μεγάλης ἡμέρας*, the judgment which shall be executed upon the great day; but such examples belong rather to *Obs. 2, supra*. He adds Heb. vi. 1, *τὸν τῆς ἀρχῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ λόγον*, instruction at the beginning of a Christian life. It may be reasonably doubted if this be a correct interpretation of the passage.²

6. A few instances occur in the New Testament of two genitives being governed by one substantive in different relations; one of such genitives being usually, though not invariably, that of the person, and the other that of the thing. Thus in Acts v. 32, *ἡμεῖς ἐσμεν αὐτοῦ μάρτυρες τῶν ῥημάτων τούτων*, we are his witnesses with respect to these things; Phil. ii. 30, *τὸ ὑστέρημά μου τῆς λειτουργίας*. 2 Pet. iii. 2, *τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἡμῶν ἐντολῆς τοῦ Κυρίου*.

Obs. 15. This last example seems to be elliptical, and the sense may be thus supplied from the preceding clause, *τῆς ἐντολῆς τῆς προειρημένης ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων*. Compare Jude 17. Similar instances in Latin authors, are Cic., Off. ii. 22, *Cujusque custodia suæ rei sit libera*. Epist. Fam. i. 9. 54, *Crassi defensionem Gabinii*. In English one of these genitives takes a different form. Thus we say, *Scott's Edition of Swift*, or, *Scott's Edition of the works of Swift*, which would come under the next observation.

Obs. 16. Although two genitives, and even three or more, frequently come together, of which one governs the other, and that again a third, and so on; yet they present, for the most part, more of harshness than obscurity. Examples are 2 Cor. ii. 4, *τὸν φωτισμὸν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου τῆς δόξης τοῦ Χριστοῦ*. Eph. i. 6, *εἰς ἱπαινον τῆς δόξης τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ*. Col. i. 14, *εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ υἱοῦ τῆς ἀγάπης αὐτοῦ*. ii. 12, *διὰ τῆς πίστιως τῆς ἐνεργίας τοῦ Θεοῦ*. 2 Thess. ii. 14, *εἰς περιποίησιν δόξης τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν*. Heb. v. 12, *τὰ στοιχεῖα τῆς ἀρχῆς τῶν λογίων τοῦ Θεοῦ*. Rev. xiv. 8, *ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς*. Add Rom. ii. 4, Eph. i. 19, iv. 13, Col. i. 20, ii. 18, 1 Thess. i. 3, 2 Thess. i. 9, Rev. xvi. 19, xviii. 3, 14, xix. 15, xxi. 6. It will be seen that one of these genitives has generally the force of an adjective. See above § 41. *Obs. 15.* A like concurrence of genitives is sometimes, though less frequently, observable in Hebrew; as, for instance, in Job xii. 24, [Isai. x. 12].³

On the subject of the *genitive* the following remarks may also be added:—

Obs. 17. Genitives are found, where a preposition with its case would rather be expected. Such are Matt. i. 11, 12, *μισθοικισία Βαβυλῶνος*, the carrying away to Babylon; x. 5, *εἰς ὁδὸν Ἰερουσάλημ*, i. e. ἡ ἄγξις εἰς τὰ Ἱερουσαλήμ. So Gen. iii. 24, LXX, *ἡ ὁδὸς τοῦ ξύλου τῆς ζωῆς*. Jerem. ii. 18, *ἡ ὁδὸς Αἰγύπτου*. Compare Numb. xxi. 33. See however, *Obs. 2, supra*.

Obs. 18. A circumlocution by means of a preposition and its case is sometimes used, not indeed instead of a genitive, but to express more accurately, what a genitive might have rendered ambiguous. Thus in Mark iv. 19, *ἡ τῶν λοιπῶν ἐπιθυμία* might perhaps have been substituted for *ἡ περὶ τὰ λοιπὰ ἐπιθυμία*, but the latter does not so much mean *lust of other things*, as *lust which has relation to other things*. The same form of expression occurs in Heliod. Æth. i. 23, 45, *ἐπιθυμία περὶ*

¹ Winer, § 30, 2. 8.

² Kuinoel *ad loc.*

³ Gesenius, § 17. *Obs. 2.*

τὴν Χαρίκλειαν. Arist. Rhet. ii. 12, αἱ περὶ τὸ σῶμα ἐπιθύμειαι. Again in 2 Cor. viii. 7, τῇ ἡμῶν ἀγάπῃ removes the ambiguity which would have existed in τῇ ἡμῶν ἀγάπῃ. See below § 65. So Acts xxiii. 21, τὴν ἀπὸ σου ἐπαγγελίαν. Dion. H. p. 2235. 13, πολὺν ἐκ τῶν παρόντων κινήσας ἴλιν. Plat. Polit. ii. p. 363. A, τὰς ἀπ' αὐτῆς εὐδοκίμησιν. See also Arrian. Ind. xxix. 5, Polyæn. v. 11, Diod. Sic. i. 8, v. 39. Very different, again, from τὰ παθήματα Χριστοῦ is 1 Pet. i. 11, τὰ εἰς Χριστὸν παθήματα, which means *the sufferings, which, according to the Prophets, were to fall upon Christ*. Other instances are Acts xvii. 28, Rom. ix. 11, xi. 21, Eph. ii. 21, Tit. iii. 5, 1 Pet. ii. 9, v. 2, 2 Pet. ii. 7. It may be added that the form of the titles to the 4 Gospels, Τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον, &c. Εὐαγγέλιον, of which the correct import is *the Gospel written by Matthew, &c.* prevents any ambiguity similar to that which is noticed at § 65. Obs. So Polyb. iii. 6, αἱ κατ' Ἀννίβαν πράξεις, *the exploits performed by Annibal*.

Obs. 19. Certain nouns, by which the genitive is governed, are commonly wanting; as υἱός, in Matt. ix. 21, Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου. So also in Matt. iv. 21, Mark ii. 14, Luke vi. 16, John vi. 71, xxi. 2, 15, Acts i. 13, xiii. 22, *et alibi*. Other words thus omitted are γυνή, πατήρ, μητήρ, ἀδελφός. Thus Matt. i. 6, ἐκ τῆς τοῦ Οὐρίου, *scil.* γυναικός. Mark xv. 47, Μαρία Ἰωσή, *scil.* μητήρ. (Compare Matt. xvii. 56, Mark xv. 40,) Luke vi. 16, Acts i. 13, Ἰούδας Ἰακώβου, *scil.* ἀδελφός. (Compare Jude 1,) Acts vii. 16, Ἐμμέρ τοῦ Συχίμ, *scil.* πατρός. (Compare Gen. xxxiii. 19.) These last omissions are of rare occurrence; but there are parallel examples in Ælian, v. 11, xiii. 30, ἡ Ἀλιζάνδρου, *subaud.* μητήρ. Alciph. Ep. ii. 2, Τιμοκράτης ὁ Μητροδώρου, *subaud.* ἀδελφός. Steph. Byzant. Δαίδαλα· ἡ πόλις ἀπὸ Δαίδαλου τοῦ Ἰκάρου, *scil.* πατρός. Either οἰκιοί, *inmates*, or some word of like import, is wanting in Rom. xvi. 10, τοὺς ἐκ τῶν Ἀριστοβούλου, *those of the household of Aristobulus*. So also in 1 Cor. i. 11, ὑπὸ τῶν Χλόης. Another word which is frequently understood is οἶκος, or δῶμα. Thus Mark v. 35, ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρχισυναγώγου, *scil.* οἴκου. So John xviii. 28, ἀπὸ τοῦ Καϊάφα. In Luke ii. 49, ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρός μου, where some supply πράγμασι, it is better to understand οἴκοις or δώμασι in the plural. Compare John xix. 27. The classical phrase εἰς ἄδου occurs in Acts ii. 27, 31. Some, however, here supply χεῖρα from Ps. xxxvii. 33, Hos. xiii. 14.

Obs. 20. In the New Testament the position of nouns in regimen, which most frequently occurs, is that of the genitive after the governing noun; though it is not unusual to find it between the governing noun and its article. See examples under § 30. Obs. 1. There are a very few cases in which the article of the principal noun is repeated: as in Matt. xxvi. 28, τὸ αἷμά μου τὸ τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης. John xix. 25, Μαρία ἡ τοῦ Κλωπᾶ. Compare Matt. iv. 21, x. 2, Mark iii. 17, 1 Cor. i. 18. The genitive precedes the governing noun,

1. When it belongs to several substantives; as in Acts iii. 7, αὐτοῦ αἱ βάσεις καὶ τὰ σφυρά.
2. When it is emphatic, and especially where there is an antithesis. Thus Acts xiii. 23, τούτου ὁ Θεὸς ἀπὸ τοῦ σπέρματος ἡγίει σωτῆρα. 1 Cor. iii. 9, Θεοῦ γὰρ ἴσμεν συνεργοί Θεοῦ γιώργιον, Θεοῦ οἰκοδομή ἴστι. Phil. ii. 25, συστρατιώτην μου, ὑμῶν δὲ ἀπόστολον. See also Matt. i. 18, Rom. iii. 29, xiii. 4, 1 Cor. vi. 15, ix. 11, Gal. iii. 15, iv. 28, Eph. ii. 8, 10, vi. 9, Heb. vii. 12, x. 36, James i. 26, 1 Pet. iii. 21.
3. When it contains the leading idea of the proposition: as in Rom. xi. 13, ἰθὺν ἀπόστολος. 1 Tim. vi. 17, ἐπὶ πλούτου ἀδηλόγητι. Tit. i. 7, Θεοῦ εἰκόνα. It may here be observed also, that, in St. Paul's Epistles more especially, the genitive is frequently separated by some intervening word from the noun upon which it depends. Thus 1 Cor. x. 27, εἰ δὲ τις καλεῖ ὑμᾶς τῶν ἀπιστῶν.

Eph. ii. 3, τέκνα φύσει ὀργῆς. 1 Thess. ii. 13, λόγον ἀκοῆς παρ' ἡμῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ, i. e. λόγον Θεοῦ παρ' ἡμῶν ἀκούμενον. Compare Luke vii. 36, xiii. 11, xx. 36, John iv. 39, Phil. ii. 10, 1 Tim. iii. 6, Heb. viii. 5. Similar instances are found in profane writers. Thus Plutarch. Timol. 20, τὶς ὑπὲρ τῶν στρατιωμάτων.¹

§ 45.—*Dative*. (BUTTM. § 133.)

1. Where there is *relation to an object*, the general rule is that the person or thing, *to* or *for* whom or which the action takes place, is put in the *dative*; and the principle, with certain qualifications, prevails in the writings of the New Testament.

2. Thus the verbs signifying *to give*, *to yield*, *to tell*, are properly followed by the *dative*; as in Luke xi. 6, χρῆσόν μοι τρεῖς ἄρτους. Gal. iv. 5, οἷς οὐδὲ πρὸς ὥραν εἴξαμεν. Of διδόναι and εἰπεῖν so governed examples abound; but it may be well to observe that ἐν is sometimes added, as in Acts iv. 12, δεδομένον ἐν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις, i. e. *given among men*. So 2 Cor. viii. 1, τὴν χάριν τοῦ Θεοῦ δεδομένην ἐν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.

Obs. 1. We have παραδίδόναι with the *dat.* of the person; as in Matt. v. 25, μήποτε σε παράδω ὁ ἀντίδικος τῇ κριτῇ. When, however, the object is *punishment* or *misery*, this verb is followed by εἰς and an *accusative*; as in Matt. v. 17, 21, xxiv. 9, Rom. i. 28, 2 Cor. iv. 11.² Both are united in 1 Cor. v. 5, παραδοῦναι τὸν τοιοῦτον τῇ Σατανᾷ εἰς ὄλεθρον τῆς σαρκός.

Obs. 2. Many verbs signifying *to announce*, &c., which properly govern a *dative*, are found in the New Testament with εἰς or πρὸς and an *accusative*. Thus Luke xxiv. 47, κηρυχθῆναι μετάνοιαν εἰς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη. 1 Thess. ii. 9, ἐκηρύξαμεν εἰς ὑμᾶς τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Θεοῦ. So Pausan. viii. 5. 8, ἐς ἅπαντας ἐξηγγέλθη τὸ τόλμημα. The verb εὐαγγελίζισθαι takes the *dative* of the *person*, when it signifies *to bring glad tidings*, as in Luke i. 19, ii. 10, Rev. x. 7; or, *to preach the Gospel*, as in Luke iv. 18, Rom. i. 15, 1 Pet. iv. 6. More usually it bears the sense of *conveying evangelical instruction*, with an *accusative* of the person evangelised; as in Luke iii. 18, Acts viii. 25, xvi. 10, Gal. i. 9, 1 Pet. i. 12. So Hippol. de Antichr. § 26, εὐαγγελιζόμενος τὰς τῶν ἁγίων ψυχάς. If, however, the thing preached is put in the *accusative*, the person is still in the *dative*; as in Acts viii. 35, xvii. 18, 1 Cor. xv. 1, and elsewhere. Compare Heliod. Æth. ii. 16, Joseph. Ant. v. 1. 5, B. J. iii. 9. 6, Euseb. V. Constant. iii. 36. It is construed with ἐν and a *dative* in Gal. i. 16, ἵνα εὐαγγελίζωμαι αὐτὸν ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν, i. e. *among the gentiles*; and with εἰς and an *accusative* in 1 Pet. i. 25.³

3. After verbs signifying *to command*, *permit*, *exhort*, &c. the *dat.* is used. Thus Matt. viii. 21, ἐπιτρέψόν μοι ἀπελθεῖν.

¹ Winer, § 30. 3. Alt, § 28. Kruger ad Xen. Anab. ii. 5. 38. Jacobs ad Lucian. Tox. p. 46.

² Winer, § 31, 2.

³ Winer, § 31. 1, 32. 1. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 29. 6. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 268. Abresch. Obs. Misc. x. 2. p. 213.

xv. 35, ἐκέλευσε τοῖς ὄχλοις ἀνταπεσεῖν ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν. xxi. 6, ποιήσατε καθὼς προσέταξεν αὐτοῖς. Add Mark i. 27, viii. 6, 1 Tim iv. 6, Philem. 8. The same construction obtains with εἰπεῖν in the same sense in Matt. xxiii. 3, πάντα οὖν, ὅσα ἂν εἴπωσιν ὑμῖν τηρεῖν, τηρεῖτε καὶ ποιεῖτε. These verbs, however, are equally constructed with an accusative and an infinitive; as in Mark vi. 27, ἐπέταξεν ἐνεχθῆναι τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ. viii. 7, εἶπε παραθεῖναι καὶ αὐτά. Luke xviii. 40, ἐκέλευσεν αὐτὸν ἀχθῆναι. Acts x. 47, προσέταξεν αὐτοὺς βαπτισθῆναι.

Obs. 3. It is from their analogy with verbs of this class, that those signifying *to rule*, or *govern*, sometimes take the dative. See above § 42. 3, 4. On the other hand, παρακαλεῖν, παροτρυνεῖν, νουθετεῖν, &c. take only the accusative. See Luke iii. 18, Acts xi. 23, xiii. 50, xx. 31, Rom. xv. 14, 1 Cor. iv. 14, 1 Thess. v. 12, 14, *et alibi*.

Obs. 4. Another construction of these words is with ἵνα, ὅπως, &c. Thus Matt. iv. 3, εἰπὲ, ἵνα οἱ λίθοι οὗτοι ἄρτοι γίνωνται. viii. 34, παρικόλυσαν, ὅπως μεταβῇ ἀπὸ τῶν ὀρίων αὐτῶν. Mark vi. 56, παρικόλουν αὐτὸν, ἵνα καὶ τοῦ κρασπίδου τοῦ ἱματίου αὐτοῦ ἄψωνται.

4. Verbs signifying *to reproach*, *to blame*, *to rebuke*, *to accuse*, take the *dative* of the person or thing reproved, with or without the accusative of the charge. Matt. viii. 26, ἐπιτίμησε τοῖς ἀνέμοις καὶ τῇ θαλάσσῃ. Luke xxiii. 40, ὁ ἕτερος ἐπετίμα αὐτῷ. Acts xix. 38, ἐγκαλείτωσαν ἀλλήλοις. Heb. viii. 8, μεμφόμενος αὐτοῖς λέγει.¹ So 2 Macc. ii. 7, μεμψάμενος αὐτοῖς εἶπεν. Compare Ecclus. xli. 7, Arrian. Epict. ii. 23.

Obs. 5. When signifying *to charge strictly*, ἐπιτιμᾶν falls under a preceding rule; and in this sense it occurs with a dative in Matt. xii. 16, Mark iii. 12, viii. 30, Luke iv. 41, *et alibi*. The verb ἐπιπλήσσειν takes a dative in 1 Tim. v. 1, πρεσβυτέρῳ μὴ ἐπιπλήξῃς. So also in Xen. Œcon. xiii. 12, Herodian. iii. 3. 13, Polyb. v. 25. 3, Joseph. Ant. xii. 4. 2, 8. As in classical Greek, however, we have λοιδορεῖν with an accusative in John ix. 28, ἰλοιδόρησαν οὖν αὐτόν. Acts xxiii. 4, τὸν ἀρχιερεῖα τοῦ θιῶ λοιδορεῖς; So in Deut. xxxiii. 8, LXX; but with a *dative* in Exod. xvii. 2. With εἰς or πρὸς and an accusative, it signifies *to rail against one*, in Gen. xlix. 23, Exod. xvii. 2, Numb. xx. 3. Also ὀνειδίζειν takes an accus. in Matt. v. 11, Rom. xv. 3. In Matt. xxvi. 44, likewise, the best MSS. read ὀνειδίζον αὐτόν.²

5. There are many verbs in which a relation is more distinctly expressed; such as those which signify *to help*, and *to injure*. Among these βοηθεῖν governs a dative in Matt. xv. 25, κύριε, βοήθει μοι. So Mark ix. 22, Acts xvi. 9, Mark ix. 25. We have also in 2 Cor. viii. 10, τοῦτο γὰρ ὑμῖν συμφέρει.

Obs. 6. The verb ὠφελεῖν, however, is always construed in the New Testament

¹ See Wetstein *ad loc.*

² Reitz *ad Lucian. T. ii. p. 787.*

with an accusative. See § 40. 1, 6. So also *λυμαίνεσθαι* in Acts viii. 3, *σαῦλος δὲ ἑλυμαίνεται τὴν ἐκκλησίαν*.

Obs. 7. Adjectives also which signify any thing *useful* or *injurious*, are properly constructed with the dative; as in Phil. iii. 1, *ἐμοὶ μὲν οὐκ ὀκνηρὸν, ὑμῖν δὲ ἀσφαλές*. 2 Tim. ii. 21, *εὐχρηστον τῷ διαπότῃ*. iv. 11, *ἔστι γὰρ μοι εὐχρηστος εἰς διακονίαν*. Tit. iii. 8, *ταῦτά ἐστι τὰ καλὰ καὶ ὠφέλιμα τοῖς ἀνθρώποις*. Sometimes with a preposition; as in 2 Tim. ii. 14, *εἰς οὐδὲν χρήσιμον*. (Compare Wisd. xiii. 11.) iii. 16, *πᾶσα γραφὴ θεόπνευστος, καὶ ὠφέλιμος πρὸς διδασκαλίαν, κ. τ. λ.* A genitive is sometimes used; as in 1 Cor. vii. 35, *τοῦτο δὲ πρὸς τὸ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν συμφέρον λίγω*. Add 1 Cor. x. 33.

6. Verbs signifying *to obey*, *to disobey*, *πείθεσθαι*, *ἀπειθεῖν*, *ὑπακούειν*, take the dative, as observed above, in § 42. *Obs. 8.* So *δουλεύειν*, *to serve*; as in Matt. vi. 24, *οὐ δύνασθε Θεῷ δουλεύειν καὶ μαμμωνᾷ*. Rom. ix. 12, *ὁ μείζων δουλεύσει τῷ ἐλάσσονι*. Also *διακονεῖν* and *λειτουργεῖν*. Acts xix. 22, *δύο τῶν διακονούντων αὐτῷ*. Rom. xv. 27, *ὀφείλουσι ἐν τοῖς σαρκικοῖς λειτουργῆσαι αὐτοῖς*. We have, however, in 1 Pet. iv. 10, *εἰς ἑαυτοὺς αὐτὸ διακονοῦντες*. The verb *λατρεύειν*, likewise, which in the New Testament always denotes *religious worship*, regularly takes the dative. Thus in Matt. iv. 18, Luke iv. 8, *Κύριον τὸν Θεόν σου προσκυνήσεις, καὶ αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύσεις*. Acts vii. 42, *παρέδωκεν αὐτοὺς λατρεύειν τῇ στρατίᾳ τοῦ οὐράνου*. Rom. i. 25, *ἐλάτρευσαν τῇ κτίσει παρὰ τὸν κτίσαντα*. Add Luke i. 74, Acts vii. 7, xxiv. 14, xxvi. 7, xxvii. 23, Rom. i. 9, Phil. iii. 3, Heb. viii. 5, xiii. 10, Rev. vii. 15, xxii. 3, *et alibi*.

Obs. 8. It will be observed that, for a like reason probably, *προσκυνεῖν*, though in the example above cited and elsewhere it properly governs an *accusative* (§ 40. *Obs. 1. 2.*), is in the New Testament and the later Greek writers more commonly followed by a *dative*; as in Matt. ii. 2, 8, 11, *προσκυνῆσαι αὐτῷ*. So Matt. iv. 9, viii. 2, xiv. 33, xviii. 26, xxviii. 9, 17, John iv. 21, 23, ix. 38, Acts vii. 43, 1 Cor. xiv. 25, Heb. i. 6, Rev. iv. 10, vii. 11, and elsewhere. Compare Gen. xxiii. 7, LXX, Polyb. v. 86. 10, Ælian. H. An. x. 24, Joseph. Ant. vi. 7. 5.¹ Analogous expressions are *γονυπιτεῖν τινι* (Matt. xvii. 14.), *ὁμολογεῖν τινι* (Heb. xiii. 15). See below § 46. 2. *Obs. 3.* In Luke iv. 7, Rev. iii. 9, xv. 4, the form *προσκυνεῖν ἐνώπιόν τινος* seems to be an Hebraism, which the LXX have also retained in 2 Kings xviii. 22. We have also in Matt. xxvii. 29, *γονυπιτήσαντες ἔμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ*.

Obs. 9. With one exception, *ἀρίσκειν* governs a dative in the New Testament. Thus Matt. xiv. 6, *ἤρισε τῷ Ἠρώδῃ*, Rom. viii. 8, *οἱ ἐν σαρκὶ ὄντες Θεῷ ἀρίσσαι οὐ δύνανται*. See also Rom. xv. 1. sqq. 1 Cor. vii. 32, sqq. 2 Tim. ii. 4. We have in Acts vi. 5, *ἤρισεν ὁ λόγος ἐνώπιον παντὸς τοῦ πλήθους*. This is an Hebraism, and occurs in Gen. xxxiv. 18, xli. 37, 2 Sam. iii. 36, 1 Macc. viii. 21. Compare also 1 John iii. 22.

Obs. 10. The verb *εὐδοκεῖν* is seldom found in profane writers, and then only with a *dative*; as in Polyb. Excc. p. 1213, Diod. Sic. iv. 23. In the New Testament the more common form is *εὐδοκεῖν ἐν τινι* (Matt. iii. 17, 1 Cor. x. 5); and it occurs with a simple *accus.* in Heb. x. 6, 8. Both forms are derived from the Hebrew,

¹ Winer, § 31. 1. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 463. Kypke ad Matt. ii. 8.

and thence adopted by the LXX. See 1 Chron. xxix. 3, Ps. xliv. 3, li. 18, 19, cii. 15, cxlix. 4, Isai. lxii. 4, Mal. ii. 17.¹

7. There are various modes of rendering the *dative*, by means of which a reference of some kind or other may be expressed, after most words. Thus Acts xviii. 3, συνείχετο τῷ πνεύματι, *was earnest in his mind*. (Compare v. 25, xx. 22, Eph. v. 23.) Rom. iv. 19, μὴ ἀσθενήσας τῇ πίστει, i. e. *as to his faith*: vi. 20, ἐλεύθεροι ἦτε τῇ δικαιοσύνῃ, *free in respect of righteousness*. (See § 42. 2. 1.) 1 Cor. ix. 21, μὴ ὦν ἄνομος Θεῷ, ἀλλ' ἔννομος Χριστῷ, *being not without a law in relation to God, but under a law in obedience to Christ*. Gal. i. 22, ἡμην ἀγνωσμένον τῷ προσώπῳ ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις, *I was personally unknown to the Churches*. Phil. iii. 5, περιτομῇ ὀκταήμερος, *with respect to circumcision, circumcised on the eighth day*. Some read περιτομὴ in the nominative, but of this the tenor of the passage, in which ἐγὼ εἰμι is understood throughout, will not admit. Col. ii. 5, εἰ γὰρ καὶ τῇ σαρκὶ ἄπειμι, ἀλλὰ τῷ πνεύματι σὺν ὑμῖν εἰμί. Add Matt. xiii. 14, ἀναπληροῦνται αὐτοῖς ἡ προφητεία, *with reference to them*; where however another reading is ἐπ' αὐτοῖς. To this head belongs also Luke xx. 38, πάντες γὰρ αὐτῷ ζῶσιν, *all are still alive with reference to God*, inasmuch as he can restore the dead to life. And precisely analogous are the expressions, ἀποθανεῖν τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ, νεκρὸν εἶναι τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ (Rom. vi. 2, 10, 11.), ἀποθανεῖν τῷ νόμῳ (Rom. vii. 4, Gal. ii. 19.). Compare also 1 Pet. ii. 24. The meaning is somewhat different in Rom. xiv. 7. See Obs. 13. 1. In Luke xviii. 31, τῷ υἱῷ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, which some refer to γεγραμμένα, is more properly construed with τελεσθήσεται.

Obs. 11. It is, however, comparatively rare, that such references as the above are expressed in the New Testament by a simple dative; a preposition being more generally employed: as in Rom. iv. 20, εἰς τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐ διεκρίθη τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ. Eph. v. 32, ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω εἰς Χριστὸν, καὶ εἰς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, *with reference to Christ and the Church*. Compare Acts ii. 25, Heb. i. 7, 8. Sometimes a second dative is added; as in 2 Cor. xii. 7, ἰδόθη μοι σκόλοψ τῇ σαρκὶ, *a thorn for my flesh*. Compare Gen. xlvii. 24, LXX.²

Obs. 12. Similarly the dative is found with verbs and adjectives, where in English the preposition *for* is used. Thus in Matt. xv. 32, προσμένονσί μοι. xviii. 8, 9, καλὸν σοι ἐστὶν κ. τ. λ. xxvi. 4, καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ, εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννήθη. Acts ix. 5, xxvi. 14, σκληροὶ εὐ πρὸς κέντρα λακτίζειν. 1 Cor. xi. 6, αἰσχρὸν γυναικὶ τὸ κείρασθαι. 2 Tim. iv. 8, ἀποκτείνεται

¹ Parkhurst's Lexicon in v. Raphael. ad Matt. iii. 17.

² Winer, § 31, 3. and Obs. 4. Alt, § 29, 5. Lobeck ad Soph. Aj. 303. Bornemann ad Xen. Conviv. p. 214. Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 278.

μοι ὁ τῆς δικαιοσύνης στίφανος. It is no less usual, however, to meet with a preposition and an accusative; as in Matt. v. 13, εἰς οὐδὲν ἰσχύει. Eph. iv. 29, ἀγαθὸς πρὸς οἰκοδομήν. 2 Tim. iv. 11, ἔστι γάρ μοι εὐχρηστος εἰς διακονίαν. Sometimes the construction is with the accusative and an infinitive; as in Matt. xvii. 4, καλὸν ἔστιν ἡμᾶς ὥδε εἶναι. xix. 24, εὐκοπώτερόν ἐστι κάμηλον διὰ τρυπήματος ῥαφίδος διελθεῖν, ἢ πλούσιον κ. τ. λ. 1 Cor. xi. 13, πρέπειν ἐστὶ γυναῖκα ἀκατακάλυπτον τῷ Θεῷ προσεύχισθαι; This example, however, may be explained by the *dativus commodi* (§ 46. 5.).

Obs. 13. Certain other relations expressed by the dative are closely allied to the preceding. For example,

1. A purpose, will, opinion, or custom, *according to which* an action takes place, is put in this case. Thus Acts ii. 23, τῇ ὀρισμένῃ βουλῇ καὶ προγνώσει τοῦ Θεοῦ ἔκδοτον. v. 4, οὐχὶ μένον σοὶ ἔμινε, i. e. *at thy disposal*. xv. 1, ἐὰν μὴ περιτίμνησθαι τῷ ἔθει Μωϋσείως, οὐ δύνασθαι σωθῆναι. Rom. xiv. 4, σὺ τίς εἶ ὁ κρίνων ἀλλότριον οἰκέτην; τῷ ἰδίῳ κυρίῳ στήκει ἢ πίπτει, i. e. *according to the will or judgment of his own master*; and so in the following verses. 2 Pet. i. 21, οὐ γὰρ θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἠνέχθη ποτὶ προφητεία. Compare Tobit iii. 3, 2 Macc. vi. 1, Xen. Cyr. i. 2. 4, Sext. Emp. ii. 6, Strabon. xv. p. 715.¹ A preposition is inserted in 1 Cor. xi. 13, ἐν ὑμῖν αὐτοῖς κρίνεται. Both constructions are united in 1 Cor. xiv. 11, ἴσομαι τῷ λαλοῦντι βάρβαρος, καὶ ὁ λαλῶν ἐν ἐμοὶ βάρβαρος, i. e. *in my judgment*.²

2. In definitions of *time* and *place*, or when an action has reference to some one, with respect to some feeling or qualification; a participle expressive thereof is sometimes, but rarely, employed in the dative. The two following are examples: Luke i. 36, οὗτος μὲν ἔκτος ἐστὶν αὐτῇ τῇ καλουμένῃ στείρα. James iv. 17, εἰδότες οὖν καλὸν ποιεῖν, καὶ μὴ ποιοῦντι, ἁμαρτία αὐτῶ ἐστίν, i. e. *if one knows*, &c. Another form occurs in Acts xxiv. 11, οὐ πλείους εἰσὶ μοι ἡμέραι ἢ δεκαδύο, ἀφ' ἧς κ. τ. λ. To this head may probably be referred Matt. viii. 1, καταβάντι δὲ αὐτῷ κ. τ. λ., *when he came down*; Acts xxii. 6, ἐγένετο δὲ μοι πορευομένῳ κ. τ. λ., *as I proceeded*. Compare Matt. viii. 23, 28, ix. 27, Mark v. 2, Acts xxii. 17, *et alibi*. But see § 61. 2. Obs. 2.

3. *Substantives*, derived from *verbs* governing a *dative* are often followed by the same case: as in 2 Cor. ix. 12, ἐνχαριστίαν τῷ Θεῷ. Heb. x. 25, καθὼς ἔθος τισιν. So Plat. Legg. ii. 4, τὸ ἦθος ἡμῖν. Upon the same principle we have in Luke iv. 16, Acts xvii. 2, κατὰ τὸ εἶωθός αὐτῶ.³

8. The *direction* of an action towards an object, whether such direction be *real* or *imaginary*, is frequently expressed by the *dative*; as in Matt. viii. 28, ὑπήντησαν αὐτῷ δύο δαιμονιζόμενοι. (Compare v. 34.) xiv. 11, ἤνεγκε τῇ μητρὶ αὐτῆς. xxi. 5, ὁ βασιλεὺς σου ἔρχεταιί σοι. Acts ii. 33, τῇ δεξιᾷ οὖν τοῦ Θεοῦ ὑψωθείς. v. 4, οὐκ ἐψεύσω ἀνθρώποις, ἀλλὰ Θεῷ.

Obs. 14. It will be observed that in the preceding verse the verb *ψεύδασθαι* governs the accusative in precisely the same sense; and such is the true classical construction of the verb. It takes a dative however in Ps. xviii. 49, lviii. 36, lxxviii. 38, LXX. In Acts xxi. 16, ἄγοντες, παρ' ᾧ ξενισθῶμεν, Μνάσωνι, it is impossible to suppose with Beza and others, that the dative is put, by attraction, for the ac-

¹ Winer, § 31. 3. b. Wyttenbach ad Plat. Phæd. p. 101. D.

² Doederlein ad Soph. Œd. C. p. 529. Jacobs ad Athen. p. 183.

³ Winer, *ubi supra*; Stalbaum ad Plat. Euth. p. 101. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 451. Legg. p. 36

cusative; not to mention a similar construction in Xen. Ephes. iii. 6. ἡγόμην Ἀβροχόμεν. Epiph. Vit. p. 340. D. ἤγαγεν αὐτὸν Ἀθανασίῳ τῷ πάππῳ.

Obs. 15. The ordinary construction with εἰς or πρὸς is perhaps more frequent. Thus in Matt. ii. 11, ἐλθόντες εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν. iii. 14, σὺ ἔρχῃ πρὸς με; iv. 1, ἀνέχθη εἰς τὴν ἔρημον. vi. 26, ἰμβλίψατε εἰς τὰ πειτινά. viii. 32, ἄρῃσιν πάντα ἢ ἀγέλη εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν. xii. 18, εἰς ὃν εὐδόκησιν. xiv. 19, ἀναβλέψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν. Luke ii. 41, ἰσχυρίζονται εἰς Ἱερουσαλήμ τῇ ἑορτῇ τοῦ πάσχα. (In this example some suppose that *direction* is also indicated by the dative; but τῇ ἑορτῇ marks the time, *at* or *during the feast*.) Acts xxiii. 10, ἄγειν εἰς τὴν παρεμβολήν. 2 Cor. xiii. 7, εὐχομαι πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, Col. iii. 9, μὴ ψεύδῃσθαι εἰς ἀλλήλους. We find ψεύδῃσθαι πρὸς τινὰ in Xen. Anab. i. 3, 5.¹

Obs. 16. Hence many verbs have a like government, which are compounded with ἐπὶ and πρὸς, or even with prepositions which never govern a dative, when they express direction to an object. It is unnecessary to multiply examples, but it may be observed that some of the best MSS. read ἰατροῖς in Luke viii. 43, εἰς ἰατροὺς προσαναλίσσασα ὅλον τὸν βίον. Probably the received text may have arisen from the ordinary construction of the verb προσαναλίσκειν in profane writers. Compare Xen. Cyrop. ii. 4. 9, Ælian. V. H. xiv. 32.²

§ 46.

1. In a less obvious sense, the dative is found with verbs which signify *to meet with*. Thus in Luke viii. 19, οὐκ ἠδύναντο συντυχεῖν αὐτῷ.

Obs. 1. So also ἐντυγχάνειν τινι, which in the New Testament signifies *to make application to any one*, either by way of petition or complaint. Thus in Acts xiv. 24, περὶ οὗ πάν τὸ πλῆθος τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἐνέτυχόν μοι, κ. τ. λ., Rom. xi. 2, ἐντυγχάνει τῷ Θεῷ κατὰ τὸν Ἰσραήλ. Compare Wisd. viii. 21, xvi. 28, Polyb. iv. 76, Theophr. Char. i. 2.

2. The *dative* is also used with verbs which imply *intercourse* or *companionship*; as in Acts xxiv. 26, ὠμίλει αὐτῷ.

Obs. 2. It is this dative which follows words compounded with σὺν and ὁμοῦ. Among the numberless instances of the former composition a few will suffice. Matt. ix. 10, συνανέκειντο τῷ Ἰησοῦ. Luke xxiv. 15, συνεπορεύετο αὐτοῖς. Acts xvi. 18, τινὲς τῶν φιλοσόφων συνέβαλλον αὐτῶν. Rom. viii. 16, αὐτὸ τὸ πνεῦμα συμμέμμεται τῷ πνεύματι ἡμῶν. xv. 30, συναγωνίσασθαι μοι ἐν ταῖς περιστάσεσιν. 1 Cor. iv. 8, ἵνα καὶ ἡμεῖς ὑμῖν συμβασιλεύσωμεν. Phil. iv. 3, αἵτινες ἐν τῇ εὐαγγελίᾳ συνήθλησάν μοι.³ Add Acts x. 27, συνομιλῶν αὐτῷ. But, in a different sense, Luke xxiv. 14, αὐτοὶ ὠμίλουν πρὸς ἀλλήλους, *they conversed together*. Under this head must be classed 2 Cor. vi. 14, μὴ γίνεσθαι ἑτεροζυγοῦντες ἀπιστοῖς, which may perhaps be explained as an abbreviation of μὴ γίνεσθαι ἑτεροζυγοῦντες, τούτιστιν, ὁμοζυγοῦντες ἀπιστοῖς.⁴

Obs. 3. In the New Testament the verb ὁμολογεῖν never signifies *to assent* or *consent*, as in profane writers; but in the sense of *to affirm* or *declare*, it is followed by a dative (Matt. vii. 23, xiv. 7); and also in the sense of *to make acknowledgment* or *to give praise* (Heb. xiii. 15); in which latter acceptance the compound verb ἔξομα-

¹ Winer, § 31. 2. Alt, § 29. b. Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 553. Engelhardt ad Plat. Menex, p. 260.

² Winer, § 31. 2. and note to p. 173.

³ Alt, Gr. N. T. § 29. 2.

⁴ Winer, § 31. Obs. 5.

λογιῶσθαι is more usual; as in Matt. xi. 25, Luke x. 21, Rom. xiv. 11, xv. 19. When it signifies *to confess* or *acknowledge*, the object is put in the accusative; as in John ix. 22, Acts xxiii. 8, xxiv. 13, Rom. x. 9, 1 Tim. vi. 12, 1 John i. 9, iv. 2, 3, 2 John 7. There seems to be a more emphatic signification in the form ὁμολογεῖν ἐν ἑμοί (Matt. x. 32, Luke xii. 8), which is probably an Hebraism.¹ Compare Ps. xliv. 8, LXX. Some, indeed, suppose that nothing more is implied than if the dative were employed without the preposition; but this will scarcely be admitted, although such pleonasm frequently occur. We have an instance, with reference to this very verb; since ὁμολογεῖν στόματι and ὁμολογεῖν ἐν στόματι are equivalent expressions in Rom. x. 9, 10. Many other examples will have been already observed; to which may be added Matt. xvii. 12, ἐποίησαν ἐν αὐτῷ ὅσα ἠθέλησαν. (Compare Mark ix. 13.) Luke xxiii. 31, εἰ ἐν τῇ ὑγρῷ ξύλῳ ταῦτα ποιοῦσιν, ἐν τῇ ξηρῇ τί γίνηται. Acts xiii. 15, εἰ ἔστι λόγος ἐν ὑμῖν παρακλήσεως πρὸς τὸν λαόν, λέγειτε. 1 Cor. ii. 6, σοφίαν λαλοῦμεν ἐν τοῖς τελειοῖς. ix. 15, ἵνα οὕτω γίνηται ἐν ἑμοί. 2 Cor. iv. 3, ἐν τοῖς ἀπολλυμένοις ἔστι κεκαλυμμένον. Gal. i. 16, ἀποκαλύψαι τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ ἐν ἑμοί. 1 John iv. 9, ἐφανέρωθη ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν. Although a similar redundancy is sometimes observable in the Greek writers generally, and more particularly in those of a later date, yet it is more in keeping with the Hebrew idiom. Compare Gen. xl. 14, Dan. xi. 7, Judith vi. 2, vii. 24.²

Obs. 4. Instead of the *accusative* of the *object*, the preposition ἐν with a dative follows the verb ἐκλίγισθαι, *more Hebraico*, in Acts xv. 7, ὁ Θεὸς ἐν ἡμῖν ἐξελέξατο, i. e., ἡμᾶς, *me* (Peter). Some, indeed, would render ἐν ἡμῖν, *one among us*; and others join ἐν ἡμῖν Θεός, *our God*. These interpretations are not only very harsh, but the Hebrew form is precisely thus rendered in 1 Chron. xxviii. 4, LXX, ἐξελέξατο ἐν ἑμοί εἶναι βασιλεία. So in 1 Sam. xvi. 9, 2 Chron. vi. 5, Nehem. ix. 7.³

3. It seems to be the idea of *companionship*, which explains the use of the dative in the following instances:—

1. After the verb ἀκολουθεῖν, *to follow*; as in Matt. iv. 20, 22, 25, ἠκολούθησαν αὐτῷ. So also in Matt. viii. 19, 22, ix. 9, 19, Mark ix. 38, Luke ix. 23, John i. 38, 41, 44, and elsewhere.

Obs. 5. Hence this verb is sometimes accompanied with μετὰ and a genitive, as in Luke ix. 49, οὐκ ἀκολουθεῖ μετ' ἡμῶν. Rev. xiv. 13, τὰ δὲ ἔργα αὐτῶν ἀκολουθεῖ μετ' αὐτῶν. When *direction* only is implied, the form is rather as in Matt. x. 38, ἀκολουθεῖ ὀπίσω μου. So also in Matt. xvi. 23, ὑπάγε ὀπίσω μου. Luke ix. 23, εἴ τις θέλει ὀπίσω μου ἰλθεῖν, κ. τ. λ. In Mark viii. 34, the manuscripts vary between ἀκολουθεῖν and ἰλθεῖν.⁴

2. With verbs signifying *to converse*; as in Matt. xii. 46, ζητοῦντες αὐτῷ λαλῆσαι. Add Mark xvi. 19, John iv. 26, and compare Gen. xxix. 9, LXX. We have, in the same sense, John iv. 27, μετὰ γυναικὸς ἐλάλει, and, τί λαλεῖ μετὰ αὐτῆς. ix. 37, ὁ λαλῶν μετὰ σου. xiv. 30, λαλήσω μεθ' ὑμῶν. Compare also Matt. xvii. 3, Mark ix. 4, Luke ix. 30, xxii. 4, Acts xxv. 12. Again, Acts xvii. 2, διελέγετο αὐτοῖς. xviii. 19, διελέχθη τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις. 2 Cor.

¹ See Kuinoel *ad loc.*

² Winer, § 31. 5.

³ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 30. 1. a. See Vorstius de Hebr. N. T. p. 622.

⁴ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 29. 6.

xii. 19, πάλιν δοκεῖτε ὅτι ἐμὴν ἀπολογούμεθα. To this head must also be referred Eph. v. 19, λαλοῦντες ἑαυτοῖς ψαλμοῖς, which the English Testament wrongly translates, *speaking to yourselves*.

3. With words which signify *to contend*; as in Matt. v. 10, τῷ θέλοντί σοι κριθῆναι, *to one that would go to law with you*.

Obs. 6. In the New Testament a preposition is, with perhaps this single exception, constantly employed. Examples are, John vi. 52, ἰμάχοντο αὐτὸν πρὸς ἀλλήλους. 1 Cor. vi. 1, πρᾶγμα ἔχων πρὸς τὸν ἱγίον. 6, ἀδελφὸς μετὰ ἀδελφοῦ κρινεται. Compare Gen. xxvi. 21, Judg. xxi. 22, Job xxxi. 13, Eccles. vi. 10, Jerem. ii. 9, 30, Lam. iii. 36, Hos. ii. 2, Mic. vi. 11. Thus, also, Eph. vi. 12, οὐκ ἔστιν ἡμῖν ἡ πάλαι πρὸς αἷμα καὶ σάρκα. Rev. ii. 16, πολέμησόν μετ' αὐτῶν. xii. 7, ἐπολέμησαν κατὰ τοῦ δράκοντος. To this head may also be referred the verb διαλογίζεσθαι, *to reason or dispute*, which is followed by *ἐν* or *πρὸς*. Matt. xvi. 7, διαλογίζοντο ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. Mark ix. 33, τί ἐν ἑᾷ ᾤψα πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς διαλογίζεσθε; add Mark ii. 6, Luke iii. 15, v. 22, xii. 17, xx. 14.

Obs. 7. There are many collective nouns, such as στρατός, ἤεις, ἰσχυίς, πλῆθος, and the like, which, as indicating *companionship*, are put in the dative case, with an ellipsis of *συν*. and a similar construction seems to obtain in Col. ii. 14, ἐξαλείψας τὸ κατ' ἡμῶν χειρόγραφον τοῖς δόγμασιν. Few passages have more severely perplexed the commentators, by some of whom it is rendered, with the English Testament, *hand-writing of ordinances*, which can never be extracted from the original; by others, *the written law consisting in ordinances* (comparing Eph. ii. 15); and by others again, among whom is *Winer*, τοῖς δόγμασιν is made to depend upon ἐξαλείψας. The true meaning is, *having cancelled the bond together with its ordinances*; and this is confirmed by the reading of a few manuscripts which have *σὺν τοῖς δ*. So Clem. Rom. Rom. ii. τον νόμον συν ταῖς ἐπιτάγαις. The same ellipsis, which is also found in Hebrew, also occurs in Rev. viii. 4, ἀνίστη δὲ καπνὸς τῶν θυμιαμάτων τοῖς προσευχαῖς τῶν ἁγίων, *together with the prayers of the saints*.¹

4. Words which signify *resemblance, equality, fitness*, and the contrary, whether adjectives, verbs, or adverbs, and those also which signify *proximity*, govern a dative. Matt. vii. 21, ὁμοιώσω αὐτὸν ἀνδρί. xx. 12, ἴσους ἡμῖν αὐτοὺς ἐποίησας. Luke vii. 32, ὅμοιοι εἰσι παιδίοις. Eph. v. 3, καθὼς πρέπει ἁγίοις. Phil. ii. 27, ἡσθένησε παραπλήσιον θανάτῳ. Heb. vi. 7, γῇ τίχτεται βοτάνην εὗδετον ἐκείνοις. James i. 6, ἔοικε κλύδωνι θαλάσσης. iv. 8, ἐγγίσατε τῷ Θεῷ, καὶ ἐγγιεῖ ὑμῖν.

Obs. 8. An example of *ὁ αὐτός*, *idem*, with a dative, which includes a similar use of *εἷς*, and where the sense must be expressed by a particle of comparison, occurs in 1 Cor. xi. 5, ἡ γὰρ ἑστὶ καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ τῇ ἔξερμίνῃ, *it is one and the same thing as if she were shaven*.²

¹ Middleton (on the Gr. Art.) on Col. ii. 14. Noldius, p. 576. See also MacKnight, Rosenmüller, and other Interpreters, *ad loc*.

² Winer, § 22, 4.

Obs. 9. The exceptions to the rule with respect to the class of words denoting *similitude*, &c. are very rare in the New Testament. Once only ὅμοιος is found with a genitive in John vii. 55, ἴσομαι ὁμοιος ὑμῶν, ψεύστης. Among those, however, which denote *proximity*, ἰγγύς takes a genitive in John iii. 23, vi. 19, *et alibi*; and so πλησίον, in John iv. 5. The verb ἰγγίζειν is followed more frequently by εἰς or ἐπὶ, as in Matt. xxi. 21, ἡγγισαι εἰς Ἱερουσόλυμα. Luke x. 9, 11, ἡγγικεν ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ. Compare Luke xix. 29, xxiv. 28. It occurs also with μέχει and a genitive in Phil. ii. 30, μέχει θανάτου ἡγγισι. We have also in Luke ix. 62, εὐθιτος εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. So also in xiv. 35.

5. The *dativus commodi* will be recognised in the following passages:—Matt. iii. 16, ἀνεψύχθησαν αὐτῷ οἱ οὐρανοί, i. e. *in his behalf*, or *in honour of him*. Mark ix. 5, ποιήσωμεν σκηνὰς τρεῖς, σοὶ μίαν, καὶ Μωσεῖ μίαν, καὶ Ἡλίᾳ μίαν. Luke i. 54, μνησθῆναι ἐλέους τῷ Ἀβραάμ. (Compare Psal. xlviii. 3, LXX.) xii. 21, ὁ θησαυρίζων ἑαυτῷ. 2 Cor. v. 13, εἴτε γὰρ ἐξέστημεν, Θεῷ· εἴτε σωφρονοῦμεν, ὑμῖν. Phil. i. 27, συναθροῦντες τῇ πίστει, *in defence of the faith*. Heb. x. 34, γινώσκοντες ἔχειν ἐχυτοῖς κρείττονα ἱπαρξίν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

Obs. 10. Here also belongs μαρτυρεῖν τινι, *to give testimony in favour of any one* (Luke iv. 22, John iii. 26, Rom. x. 2. Compare Xen. Mem. i. 2. 21), and, on the other hand, the *dativus incommodi*, in Matt. xxiii. 31, μαρτυρεῖτε ἑαυτοῖς, *ye bear witness against yourselves*. Compare James v. 3. Another example is Heb. v. 6, ἀνασταυρώσας ἑαυτοὺς τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ παραδειγματίζοντας.

Obs. 11. Not unfrequently is *advantage* or *disadvantage* expressed by a preposition and its case. Thus in Luke vii. 30, οἱ νομίμοι ἐὼν βούλην τοῦ Θεοῦ ἠθέτησαν εἰς ἑαυτοὺς, i. e. *to their own detriment*. ix. 13, ἀγοράσωμεν εἰς πάντα τὸν λαὸν τοῦτον βρώματα, i. e. *for their nourishment*. Acts xxvi. 1, ἰπικριπεται σοι ὑπὲρ σεαυτοῦ λέγειν, *in your own defence*. Plal. i. 7, καθὼς ἴσθι δικαίον ἔμοι τοῦτο φρονεῖν ὑπὲρ πάντων ὑμῶν, *to your credit*. 1 Thess. i. 5, τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἡμῶν οὐκ ἐγενήθη εἰς ὑμᾶς ἐν λόγῳ μόνον, *did not benefit you*.¹

Obs. 12. A pronoun in the *dat. com.* is sometimes inserted, where it might have been omitted without injury to the sense; but instances in the New Testament are rare and doubtful. Such are Matt. xxi. 2, λύσαντι; ἀγάγετί μοι. 5, ὁ βασιλεὺς σου ἵρχεται σοι, τραῦς κ. τ. λ. Rev. ii. 16, ἐρχομαί σοι ταχὺ, καὶ πολεμήσω μετ' αὐτῶν κ. τ. λ.²

6. Instead of referring a thing to a substantive, as in the genitive of possession, the dative is sometimes employed in relation to an adjective, or to the action expressed in the verb; as in Matt. xxvii. 7, ἠγόρασαν τὸν ἀγρὸν εἰς ταφὴν τοῖς ξένοις. Luke v. 20, ἀφέωνταί σοι αἱ ἁμαρτίαι. (Compare Luke vii. 48.) So also Mark iii. 28. Again, Luke vii. 12, υἱὸς μονογένης τῇ μητρὶ. Compare Judg. xi. 34, 1 Chron. iii. 1, Tobit iii. 15, Eccles.

¹ Winer, § 31, 1. 2.

² Winer, § 22, 7. *Obs.* 4. Jacob. ad Lucian. Tox. p. 138.

iv. 11. Some add Mark ii. 18, οἱ δὲ σοὶ μαθῆται οὐ νηστεύουσι; but here σοὶ is the *nom. plur.* of the *possessive* σός.¹

Obs. 13. Probably this relation is also the basis of the construction of εἶναι, γίγναι, ὑπάρχειν, &c., with the dative. Thus Matt. xix. 27, τί ἄρα ἔσται ἡμῖν, *What shall we have, or obtain?* Luke i. 7, οὐκ ἦν αὐτοῖς τέκνον, *they had no child.* 14, ἔσται χαρά σοι καὶ ἀγαλλίασις. viii. 42, θυγάτηρ μονογένης ἦν αὐτῷ. ix. 13, οὐκ εἰσὶν ἡμῖν πλεῖον ἢ πέντε ἄρτοι καὶ δύο ἰχθύες. xiv. 10, ἔσται σοι δόξα. Rom. xii. 19, ἐμοὶ ἐκδίκησις, *scil.* ἴστι. This last example is a citation from Deut. xxxii. 35, where, be it observed, the same idiom obtains in the Hebrew.

Obs. 14. So likewise κοινός is constructed with the dative; as in Acts iv. 32, ἦν αὐτοῖς ἅπαντα κοινά. Whence the phrase in Matt. viii. 29, τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοί; Compare Luke viii. 28, John ii. 4. It occurs also in Judg. xi. 12, 2 Sam. xvi. 10, LXX.

§ 47.

The dative occupies the place of the Latin ablative in most of its applications. Thus it expresses—

1. The means *whereby*, or the instrument *wherewith*, any thing is done; as in Matt. iii. 12, τὸ δὲ ἄχυρον κατακαύσει πυρὶ ἀσβέστῳ. Mark xv. 19, ἔτυπτον αὐτοῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν καλὰ μῶ. Luke iii. 16, ἐγὼ μὲν ὕδατι βαπτίζω ὑμᾶς. John xxi. 8, 10, τῷ πλοιαρίῳ ἦλθον. (Compare Matt. xiv. 13, Acts xxviii. 11.) 19, σημαίνων ποιῶ θανάτῳ δοξάσει τὸν Θεόν. Add Acts iv. 12, Rom. vii. 25, Eph. iv. 28, v. 18, Heb. i. 3.

Obs. 1. Hence the construction of χρῆσθαι with a dative; as in 1 Cor. ix. 12, ὡς ἐχρησάμειθα τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ ταύτῃ. 2 Cor. i. 17, μήτι ἄρα τῇ ἐλαφρίᾳ ἐχρησάμην; Add Acts xxvii. 3, 17, 1 Cor. ix. 15, 2 Cor. iii. 12, 1 Tim. i. 8, v. 23. Compare Gen. xii. 16, xxvi. 29, Prov. x. 26, xxv. 13, LXX. In 1 Cor. vii. 31, οἱ χρώμενοι τὸν κόσμον ταῦτη is the reading of some manuscripts.²

Obs. 2. There is an analogous use of the dative, where a *mean* or *instrument* is not *directly* signified, in Rom. i. 20, τὰ γὰρ ἀόρατα αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ κτίσεως κόσμου τοῖς ποιήμασι νοούμενα καθορᾶται, *known from his works.* This sense is, however, more usually indicated by a preposition; as in Matt. vii. 16, 20, ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν αὐτῶν ἐπιγνώσκειτε αὐτούς. xii. 33, ἐκ τοῦ καρποῦ τὸ δένδρον γινώσκειται. Luke xii. 57, τί δὲ καὶ ἀφ' ἐαυτῶν οὐ κρίνετε τὸ δίκαιον; Indeed the *instrument* or *means* are much more rarely expressed in the New Testament by a simple dative, than by that or some other case with a preposition. Thus in Matt. ii. 16, ἐνιπαίχθη ὑπὸ τῶν μάγων. iii. 11, ἐγὼ μὲν βαπτίζω ὑμᾶς ἐν ὕδατι. iv. 1, πειρηθῆναι ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου. xii. 27, εἰ ἐγὼ ἐν Βεελζεβούλ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαιμόνια, οἱ υἱοὶ ὑμῶν ἐν τίνι ἐκβάλλουσιν; 37, ἐκ γὰρ τῶν λόγων σου δικαιωθήσῃ, καὶ ἐκ τῶν λόγων σου καταδικασθήσῃ. xxiv. 15, τὸ ῥῆθὲν διὰ Δανιὴλ τοῦ προφήτου. xxvi. 52, ἐν μαχαίρᾳ ἀπολοῦνται. Add Mark viii. 31, xvi. 11, John i. 3, xiii. 35, Acts iv. 7, xviii. 19, Rom. iii. 20, 1 Cor. v. 4, Heb. i. 1, 2, Rev. ii. 27.

¹ Winer, § 31. 6. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 431.

² Winer, § 31, 4.

2. The *manner* of an action is expressed by the dative, as in Acts ii. 6, ἤκουον εἰς ἕκαστος τῇ ἰδίᾳ διαλέκτῳ λαλούντων αὐτῶν. vii. 60, ἔκραξε φωνῇ μεγάλῃ. xiii. 1, ἐγὼ πάσῃ συνειδήσει ἀγάθῃ πεπολίτευμαι τῷ Θεῷ. 1 Cor. xi. 5, προσευχομένη ἀκατακαλύπτῳ τῇ κεφαλῇ. Col. ii. 11, ἐν ᾧ καὶ περιετμήθητε περιτομῇ ἀχειροποιήτῳ.

Obs. 3. Hence the dative is frequently used adverbially; as, for instance, in Rom. viii. 13, πνεύματι, in a spiritual manner, or spiritually; since it is evidently opposed to κατὰ σάρκα, carnally.¹ So in 1 Cor. xiv. 2, πνεύματι λαλεῖ μυστήρια. Gal. iii. 3, ἰναρξάμενοι πνεύματι, νῦν σαρκὶ ἐπιτελιῖσθε; i. e. πνευματικῶς and σαρκικῶς. Add Gal. v. 5, 25, *et alibi*. So the dative feminine of adjectives; as in Matt. xiv. 13, ἠκολούθησαν αὐτῷ πιζῇ ἀπὸ τῶν πόλεων. Acts xvi. 37, δειράντες ἡμᾶς δημοσίᾳ. xx. 20, διδάξαι ὑμᾶς δημοσίᾳ καὶ κατ' οἴκους. 1 Cor. xii. 11, διαιροῦν ἰδίᾳ ἑκάστῳ. Under each of these cases, however, a preposition is equally employed. Thus in Mark vi. 31, 32, κατ' ἰδίαν. 2 Cor. i. 12, ἐν ἀπλότῃ καὶ εὐκρινείᾳ Θεοῦ, οὐκ ἐν σοφίᾳ σαρκικῇ, ἀλλ' ἐν χάριτι Θεοῦ, ἀνιστρέφῃ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ. vii. 9, ἵνα ἐν μηδενὶ ζημιωθῇτε ἐξ ἡμῶν. Heb. xi. 37, ἐν φόβῳ μαχαίρας ἀπέθανον. Rev. ii. 22, τὰ τέκνα αὐτῆς ἀποκτινῶ ἐν θανάτῳ.

Obs. 4. To this head are also to be referred the verbs περιπατεῖν and πορεύεσθαι, which, in their figurative sense, are accompanied either by a *dat.*, or by an *adverb*, or by a *prep.* and its case, signifying the *line* or *manner of conduct*. For example, Mark vii. 5, οἱ μαθηταί σου οὐ περιπατοῦσι κατὰ τὴν παράδοσιν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων. Acts ix. 31, πορευόμενοι τῷ φόβῳ τοῦ Κυρίου. So Luke i. 6, Rom. vi. 4, xiii. 13, 2 Cor. xvi. 18, Eph. ii. 10, Col. i. 10, 1 Pet. iv. 3, 2 Pet. iii. 3. Of the same class are Rom. iv. 12, τοῖς στοιχοῦσι τοῖς ἰχνισι τῆς πίστεως τοῦ Ἀβραάμ. Phil. ii. 16, τῷ αὐτῷ στοιχεῖν κανόνι. Compare 1 Sam. xv. 20, 2 Sam. xv. 11, Prov. xxviii. 26, Tobit iv. 5, 1 Macc. vi. 23.²

Obs. 5. In Acts vii. 53, εἰς διαταγὰς may be put for ἐν διαταγαῖς, indicating the *manner* of delivery. Compare Gal. iii. 19, Heb. ii. 2. If so, it is a Hebraism; but see § 63. 4. *Obs. 10.*

Obs. 6. Frequently the dative signifies *with respect to*: as in Matt. xi. 29, ταπεινὸς τῇ καρδίᾳ, humble in respect to my heart. So in Luke i. 51, ὑπερηφάνους διανοίᾳ καρδίας αὐτῶν. Acts vii. 51, ἀπρίτμητοι τῇ καρδίᾳ καὶ τοῖς ὠσίν. Add Acts xviii. 2, 1 Cor. vii. 34, xiv. 20, 2 Cor. xi. 6, Eph. iv. 18, Phil. ii. 8, Heb. v. 11, xii. 3. In some few instances a preposition is employed; as in Luke xii. 21, εἰς Θεὸν πλουτῶν. Possibly such forms as ἀστυῖος τῷ Θεῷ (Acts vii. 20), δυνατὰ τῷ Θεῷ (2 Cor. x. 3), may belong to this head.³ See § 13. 2. *Obs. 6.*

Obs. 7. A quality *wherein* any one is *proficient* or *deficient* is commonly put in the dative; as in Luke ii. 52, προέκοπτε σοφίᾳ, καὶ ἡλικίᾳ, καὶ χάριτι παρὰ Θεῷ καὶ ἀνθρώποις. 1 Thess. iii. 12, περισσεύσαι τῇ ἀγάπῃ. Tit. ii. 2, ὑγιαίνοντες τῇ πίστει, τῇ ἀγάπῃ, τῇ ὑπομονῇ. Frequently, however, ἐν is inserted, or an accusative substituted with κατὰ expressed or understood. Luke i. 7, 18, ii. 36, προβεβηκὼς ἐν ἡμέραις. Rom. iii. 9, τί οὖν πρεχόμεθα; xv. 13, εἰς τὸ περισσεύειν ὑμᾶς ἐν τῇ ἐλπίδι. 1 Cor. xv. 41, ἀστὴρ γὰρ ἀστὴρ διαφέρει ἐν δόξῃ. Gal. i. 14, προέκοπτον ἐν τῷ Ἰουδαϊσμῷ. Phil. iv. 13, πάντα ἰσχύω. Tit. i. 13, ἵνα ὑγιαίνωσιν ἐν τῇ πίστει.

Obs. 8. The dative expresses the relation of measure or magnitude; as in Matt. xii. 12, πόσῳ οὖν διαφέρει ἄνθρωπος προβάτου.

Obs. 9. The *dat.* of the *measure*, and sometimes the *accus.*, is joined with the

¹ Middleton on the Gr. Article, note *in loco*.

² Winer, § 31, 1.

³ Winer, § 31, 3. Alt, § 29, 5.

comparative; as in Matt. vi. 30, *et sapius*, πολλῷ μᾶλλον. vii. 11, πῶς μᾶλλον. 2 Cor. viii. 22, πολὺ σπουδαιότερον. 1 Pet. i. 7, πολὺ τιμώτερον. (Griesbach reads, in one word, πολυτιμώτερον.) The comparative is also strengthened by ἔτι, as in Heb. vii. 15, περισσότερον ἔτι. Hence it has been conjectured that ἔτι μῖζον is the true reading in 1 John iii. 20; for which, however, there is no authority, and the common text is not without parallel. In Phil. i. 9, ἔτι μᾶλλον καὶ μᾶλλον has been regarded as a Hebraism; but the same phraseology is found in Xen. Cyr. iii. 2. 18, Achil. Tat. vi. 13, Diou. Hal. iv. p. 2228, 6. So *magis magisque* in Cic. Epist. ii. 18. Two comparatives are also united by ὅσῳ and τοσούτῳ. Thus in Heb. i. 4, τοσούτῳ κρείττων γινόμενος τῶν ἀγγέλων, ὅσῳ διαφορώτερον κ. τ. λ. Sometimes τοσούτῳ is omitted in the first member; as in Heb. viii. 6, διαφοροντίαις τέτινχε λειτουργίας, ὅσῳ καὶ κρείττονός ἐστι διαθήκης μεσίτης. The comparative is omitted after ὅσῳ, which will bear the sense of ὅτι, in Heb. x. 25, καὶ τοσούτῳ μᾶλλον, ὅσῳ βλέπετε ἐγγίζουσιν τὴν ἡμέραν. There is a double omission to be supplied, as in the brackets, in Mark vii. 36, ὅσον δὲ αὐτὸς αὐτοῖς (μᾶλλον) διστέλλετο, (τοσοῦτον) μᾶλλον περισσότερον ἐκήρυσσον.

3. The *dat.* expresses the *cause* or *occasion* of an action; as in Rom. xi. 20, τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ ἐξεκλάσθησαν, *by reason of unbelief*. 30, ἠλεήθητε τῇ τούτων ἀπειθείᾳ, *on account of their disobedience*. 2 Cor. i. 15, ταύτῃ τῇ πεποιθήσει ἐβουλόμην, *under this persuasion*. Heb. ii. 15, ὅσοι φόβῳ θανάτου διὰ παντὸς τοῦ ζῆν ἐνοχοὶ ἦσαν δουλείας, *through fear of death*.¹ Yet here also a preposition and its case are more commonly used in the New Testament. Thus Matt. vi. 7, δοκοῦσι γὰρ ἐν τῇ πολυλογίᾳ αὐτῶν εἰσακουθήσονται, *by virtue of their much speaking*. xiii. 21, γενομένης δὲ θλίψεως ἢ διωγμοῦ διὰ τὸν λόγον, εὐθὺς σκανδαλίζεται. xiv. 9, διὰ τοὺς ὄρκους καὶ τοὺς συνανακειμένους ἐκέλευσε δοῦναι. xix. 3, εἰ ἔξεστιν ἀνθρώπῳ ἀπολῦσαι τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ κατὰ πᾶσαν αἰτίαν; 8, Μωσῆς πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ὑμῶν ἐπέτρεψεν ὑμῖν ἀπολῦσαι τὰς γυναῖκας ὑμῶν. Add Luke xxii. 45, xxiv. 41, 2 Cor. ix. 15.

Obs. 10. To this use of the dative belongs the phrase ἀρκεῖσθαι τινι, *to be contented with any thing*. Luke iii. 14. ἀρκεῖσθε τοῖς ὀψωνίοις ὑμῶν. 1 Tim. vi. 8, ἔχετε δὲ διατροφὰς καὶ σκεπάσματα, τούτοις ἀρκεσθῆσόμεθα.

Obs. 11. In like manner the dative sometimes expresses the *cause* or *object* of any passion or emotion of the mind: as in Matt. v. 22, ὀργιζόμενος τῷ ἀδελφῷ, Rom. xii. 12, τῇ ἐλπίδι χαίροντες. 1 Pet. iv. 12, μὴ ξενίζεσθε τῇ ἐν ὑμῖν πυρώσει. The construction, however, is more frequently with ἐπὶ, or ἐν. Thus Matt. xviii. 13, χαίρει ἐπ' αὐτῷ. Mark xii. 17, ἰθαύμασαν ἐπ' αὐτῷ, 1 Cor. xv. 19, ἡλπικότις ἐν Χριστῷ. (Compare 2 Cor. i. 10.) Phil. i. 18, ἐν τούτῳ χαίρω. 20, ἐν οὐδενὶ αἰσχυνθήσομαι. So Luke i. 14, iv. 22, Rom. vi. 21, xv. 12, Rev. xii. 17. Sometimes an accusative is placed after this class of verbs. See § 40. 3. There is a peculiar construction in Rev. xiii. 4, ἰθαύμασιν ὅλη ἡ γῆ ὀπίσω τοῦ θηρίου, where the sense seems to be, *to follow with admiration*.

Obs. 12. When an affection or disposition of the mind is represented as the *motive*

¹ Winer, § 31, 36. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 392.

of an action, the dative is sometimes employed; as in 2 Cor. viii. 22, *πολλάκις σπουδαῖον ὄντα, νυνὶ δὲ πολὺ σπουδαιότερον, πεποιθήσει πολλῇ τῇ εἰς ὑμᾶς*, *from his great confidence in you*; Phil. ii. 3, *τῇ ταπεινοφροσύνῃ ἀλλήλους ἡγούμενοι ὑπερέχοντας ἑαυτῶν*, *from a sense of humility*. A preposition, however, and particularly *διὰ* with an accusative, is more frequently employed. Thus Matt. xxvii. 18, *ἦδυν γὰρ ὅτι διὰ φόβον παρίδωκαν αὐτόν*. John xix. 38, *κεκρυμμένος διὰ τὸν φόβον τῶν Ἰουδαίων*. Phil. i. 15, sqq. *τινὲς μὲν καὶ διὰ φόβον καὶ ἔριν, τινὲς δὲ καὶ δι' εὐδοκίαν, τὸν Χριστὸν κηρύσσουσιν· οἱ μὲν ἐξ ἐριθείας, οἱ δὲ ἐξ ἀγάπης*.

Obs. 13. To this head is to be referred the verb *πιστεύειν*, which in the New Testament is constructed, not only with a simple dative (Mark xvi. 13, 14, John v. 38, 46, vi. 30, x. 37, 38, Acts v. 14, 2 Tim. i. 12, &c.); but also with *ἐπὶ* and a dative (Matt. xxvii. 42, Luke xxiv. 25, Acts xiii. 12, Rom. ix. 33, x. 11, 1 Tim. i. 16, 1 Pet. ii. 6, &c.); with *ἐπὶ* and an accusative (Acts ix. 42, xi. 17, xxii. 19, Rom. iv. 5, &c.); with *εἰς* and an accusative (Matt. xviii. 6, John ii. 11, xiv. 1, 29, Acts x. 43, Rom. x. 14, Gal. ii. 16, 1 Pet. i. 8, 21, &c.); and with *ἐν* and a dative (Mark i. 15, Acts xiii. 39). Many commentators would distinguish between the import of the simple dative, and the cases governed by prepositions; attributing to the verb in the first instance the sense of *giving credit to a person or thing*; and, in the latter, of *believing in Christ as the Messiah*, including a sincere reception of the Gospel, and obedience to its doctrines. An examination of the preceding references will show that no such distinction obtains; and that the context is the only guide in which of the above acceptations the word is applied. The construction is, in fact, arbitrary; but in the New Testament and the later Greek, the use of prepositions is far more frequent in all cases where the simple dative is more commonly found in other writers.¹

Obs. 14. When the *cause* and the *means* are mentioned together, the former is put in the dative, and the latter is expressed by *διὰ* with a *genitive*. Thus in Eph. ii. 8, *τῇ χάριτί ἐστε σισωσμένοι διὰ τῆς πίστεως*.²

Obs. 15. The time *when* an action is performed is sometimes expressed by a dative; as in Matt. xvi. 21, *τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἔγερθῆναι*. Mark vi. 21, *Ἡρώδης τοῖς γενεαῖς αὐτοῦ δεῖπνον ἰποῖν*. Luke viii. 29, *πολλοῖς χρόνοις συνηρπάκει αὐτόν*. xii. 20, *ταύτῃ τῇ νυκτί*. Acts xxi. 26, *τῇ ἔχομένῃ ἡμέρᾳ*. Continuance of time is once so expressed in Acts viii. 11, *διὰ τὸ ἱκανῶ χρόνῳ ταῖς μαγείαις ἐξιστακέναι αὐτούς*.³ The place *where* any thing occurs is invariably marked by the preposition *ἐν*. Thus in John ii. 1, 11, *ἐν Κανᾷ τῆς Γαλιλαίας*. iv. 21, *οὔτε ἐν τῷ ὄρει τούτῳ, οὔτε ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις*. See also § 44. 5. *Obs.* 14.

OF THE VERB.

§ 48.—*The Passive Voice.* (BUTTM. § 134.)

1. The nature of *active* verbs has been sufficiently developed with reference to the cases which they govern; and properly the passive takes as its *subject* the immediate *object* of the active. In Greek, however, the remoter object may become the subject of the passive; and if the active governs two accusatives, or a dative of the person and an accusative of the

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 29.

² Winer, § 31, 1.

³ Winer, § 31, 3. b.

thing, the passive frequently retains the accusative of the thing, and the person becomes the subject nominative.

2. Passives are frequently constructed with a dative, instead of *ὑπὸ* and a genitive; as in Matt. v. 21, *ἐρρέθη τοῖς ἀρχαίοις*. Many indeed would render this expression, in the strict sense of the dative, as in Gal. iii. 16, *τῷ Ἀβραάμ ἐρρήθησαν αἱ ἐπαγγελίαι*. 2 Sam. v. 6, LXX, *ἐρρέθη τῷ Δαβίδ*. The generality of commentators,¹ however, prefer the other interpretation; to which there are parallel examples in the later writers; as, for instance, in Dion. Hal. ii. p. 103, *ὡς εἴρηται μοι πρότερον*. See also Lucian. Pisc. vii. 22, Strabon, xvii. 806, Procop. Hist. Ecc. 16. Again, Luke xxiii. 15, *οὐδὲν ἄξιον θανάτου ἐστὶ πεπραγμένον αὐτῷ*, which the English Testament improperly renders *done unto him*. The true syntax is supported by Xen. Hell. ii. 2. 17, *ἀναμνήσω ὑμῖν τὰ τούτῳ πεπραγμένα*. Arist. Eccl. 73, *καὶ μὴν τὰ γ' ἄλλ' ὑμῖν ὁρῶ πεπραγμένα*.² Other examples are Luke xxiv. 35, *ἐγνώσθη αὐτοῖς*. Acts vii. 12, *ἀνεγνωρίσθη Ἰωσήφ τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς αὐτοῦ*. xvi. 9, *ὄραμα διὰ τῆς νυκτὸς ὤφθη τῷ Παύλῳ*. xx. 9, *καταφερόμενος ὑπνῷ βαθεῖ*. 1 Tim. iii. 16, *ὤφθη ἀγγέλοις*. James iii. 7, *πᾶσα γὰρ φύσις θηρίων δαμάζεται καὶ δεδάμασται τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρωπίνῃ*. So also most probably v. 18, *καρπὸς τῆς δικαιοσύνης ἐν εἰρήνῃ σπείρεται τοῖς ποιοῦσιν εἰρήνην*. Add 2 Pet. iii. 14, *σπουδάσατε ἄσπιλοι καὶ ἀμώμητοι αὐτῷ εὐρεθῆναι*. Compare Dion. Hal. xi. p. 70, Diog. L. viii. 1, 5, Philostr. Her. iv. 2.³

3. Those verbs which govern a *double* accusative in the active, retain in the passive the accusative of the thing; as in Mark xvi. 5, *εἶδον νεανίσκον περιβεβλημένον στολὴν λευκὴν*. Acts xviii. 25, *οὗτος ἦν κατηχημένος τὴν ὁδὸν τοῦ κυρίου*. 2 Thess. ii. 15, *κρατεῖτε τὰς παραδόσεις, ἃς ἐδιδάχθητε*. 2 Tim. iv. 3, *κνηθόμενοι τὴν ἀκοήν*. Rev. i. 13, *περιεζωσμένον πρὸς τοῖς μαστοῖς ζώνην χρυσήν*. Here also belongs Luke xii. 47, *δαρήσεται πολλὰς, ἰ. scil. πληγὰς*. Compare Lucian. Tox. 61, Dion. H. p. 2162, 8.

Obs. 1. Nor is this construction limited to the case of two accusatives in the active; but those verbs also, which take in the active a dative of the person, and even when such dative is used for the genitive, retain in the passive an accusative of the thing; the dative of the person becoming the subject nominative. Thus Gal. ii. 7, *πιστιμῶμαι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τῆς ἀκροβυστίας*. And so in Rom. iii. 2, 1 Cor. ix. 17, 1 Thess. ii. 4, Tit. i. 3. So again, for *ἄλυσις* *περίκειται μοι*, we have in Acts xxviii. 20, *τὴν ἄλυσιν ταύτην περίκειμαι*. And in Heb. v. 2, *αὐτὸς περίκειται ἀσθίνειαν*. Other examples are Acts xxi. 3, *ἀναφανέντες τὴν Κύπρον*. 2 Cor. iii. 18, *τὴν αὐτὴν εἰκόνα μεταμορφούμεθα*. 1 Tim. vi. 5, 2 Tim. iii. 8, *διεφθαρμένοι τὸν νοῦν*. Hence too, perhaps, Col. i. 9, *ἵνα*

¹ See Kuinoël *ad loc.*

² Wetstein and Kypke *ad loc.*

³ Winer, § 31. 6.

πληρωθῆτε τὴν ἐπίγνωσιν τοῦ θιλήματος αὐτοῦ. See above § 40. 2. *Obs.* 3. Instead of the accusative in the above construction the dative is also sometimes used ; as in Acts vii. 22, ἐπαιδιύθη πάσῃ σοφίᾳ. See also § 40. 5. *Obs.* 12. We have, besides, in Luke i. 4, περὶ ᾧ κατηχήθη λόγων.¹

Obs. 2. To πιστεύειν τι simply, must be referred 2 Thess. i. 10, ἐπιστεύθη τὸ μαρτύριον ἡμῶν. 1 Tim. iii. 16, ἐπιστεύθη ἐν κόσμῳ. To the *active* construction with a *dat.* and *accus.* belong Matt. xi. 5, Luke vii. 22, πτωχοὶ εὐαγγελίζονται. Heb. xi. 2, ἐμαρτυρήθησαν οἱ πρεσβύτεροι. Also Heb. vii. 11, ὁ λαὸς γὰρ ἐπ' αὐτῇ νομοθετήτο, *the people were placed under the Law with reference to this priesthood.* The active form νομοθετεῖν τινά τι occurs in Psal. cxviii. 33, LXX ; and the regular construction of the passive in Deut. xvii. 10, ὅσα ἂν νομοθετηθῇ σοι.²

§ 49.—*The Middle Voice.* (BUTTM. § 135.)

1. By the *middle voice* the action of a verb is represented as returning upon the subject ; or, as it is grammatically termed, its usage is either directly or indirectly *reflective*. This signification, however, is variously modified.

2. In its most simple form, the subject of the action becomes also the immediate and proper object of it, so that the middle voice is precisely equivalent to the active followed by the pronouns ἐμαυτὸν, σεαυτὸν, &c.

Obs. 1. There are but few instances of this its most direct and proper application. With the exception of a few personal actions, the active is commonly used with its appropriate pronoun to indicate it. Thus in Matt. viii. 4, σεαυτὸν δειῖξον. John viii. 22, ἀποκτενίῃ ἑαυτόν. Examples, however, of the true middle sense are Matt. xxvii. 5, ἀπήγγατο, *he hanged himself.* Mark vii. 4, βαπτίσωνται. Luke xxii. 30, καθίσησθε. 1 Pet. iv. 1, ἐπλίσασθε. To this head may probably, but not necessarily, be referred Matt. viii. 30, βοσκομένη. xxvi. 46, ἐγείρεσθε. Acts xxvii. 28, κινούμεθα, and some others, which also admit of a passive signification.

Obs. 2. It often happens that the middle sense may be equally and more appropriately expressed by an *intransitive* verb ; as in Matt. v. 22, ἐργίζεσθαι, *to provoke oneself to anger*, i. e. *to be angry* : Luke v. 4, παύεσθαι, *to make oneself rest*, i. e. *to cease* : xii. 15, φυλάσσεσθαι, *to protect oneself*, i. e. *to beware* : Acts xxvi. 26, πείθεσθαι, *to persuade oneself*, i. e. *to believe* ; xxviii. 25, ἀπολύεσθαι, *to dismiss oneself*, i. e. *to depart* : Heb. xii. 25, ἀποστρέφεισθαι, *to turn oneself away*, i. e. *to reject or despise*. Add 2 Thess. iii. 6, στείλλεισθαι, *to avoid* ; 2 Cor. x. 5, ἐπαίρεισθαι, *to be arrogant* : 15, ἀυξάνεισθαι, *to increase* ; and some others. In some few cases this new sense becomes transitive. Thus in Matt. xxi. 26, φοβούμεθα τὸν ὄχλον, Mark vi. 20, ἐφοβεῖτο τὸν Ἰωάννην.

3. More frequently the action of the *verb* is reflected upon the *remoter* object, so that the *middle* is equivalent to the active in connexion with the *dative* pronoun ἑαυτῷ, and, if the verb

¹ Winer, §. 32. 5. Alt, § 30. d.

² Winer, § 40. 1. Alt, § 50. 1. Wesseling ad Diod. Sic. xix. 58.

governs an accusative, it is retained. Thus in Mark vi. 23, αἰτεῖν τι, *to ask for something*; and in v. 24, αἰτεῖσθαι τι, *to ask something for oneself*. Also in Luke x. 11, ἀπομάσσεσθαι κονιρτόν, *to wipe off the dust from ourselves*; Acts xx. 28, περιποιεῖσθαι, *to purchase for oneself*. (In 1 Tim. iii. 13, ἐξυτοῖς is redundant.) Eph. v. 16, ἐξαγοράζεσθαι, *to redeem for oneself*; 2 Thess. iii. 14, σημειοῦσθαι, *to mark for oneself*; 1 Pet. i. 9, κομίζεσθαι, *to carry off for oneself*.

Obs. 3. Here also the signification may frequently be expressed by an appropriate verb; as in Phil. i. 22, Heb. xi. 25, αἰρεῖσθαι, *to take for oneself*, i. e. *to choose*. Thus also φυλάσσεισθαι, *to observe* (Matt. xix. 20); and in another sense, *to guard against, to avoid* (2 Tim. iv. 15).

Obs. 4. Hence the middle is used when the passive object has any relation to the subject of the verb; as in Matt. vi. 17, ἄλειψαί σου τὴν κεφαλὴν. Mark vii. 3, ἵνα μὴ πύγῃ νίψωνται τὰς χεῖρας. Acts xviii. 18, κτεράμενος τὴν κεφαλὴν. Rom. ix. 17, ἵνα ἐνδείξωμαι ἐν σοὶ τὴν δύναμίν μου. In this last example, however, the pronoun is redundant, or the middle has an active sense. Compare Heb. vi. 17, and see § 22. 5. *supra*.

4. The *middle voice* also denotes an action which is done at the command or sufferance of the subject; so that the notion is expressed in English by *to cause* or *to suffer*. We have, for instance, in Luke ii. 5, ἀπογεγράφεσθαι, *to cause oneself to be enrolled*; (Compare v. i.) 1 Cor. vi. 7, ἀδικεῖσθαι, *to submit oneself to injustice*; xi. 6, κείρεσθαι, *to cause oneself to be shaven*. Perhaps also περιτέμνεσθαι, in Acts xv. 1, 24, 1 Cor. vii. 18.

Obs. 5. In this case also the middle sense may be otherwise expressed; as in Matt. v. 4, δανίζεσθαι, *to cause money to be lent to oneself*, i. e. *to borrow*; xx. 1, 7, μισθοῦσθαι, *to cause to let to oneself*, i. e. *to hire*; Luke xxiv. 21, λυτρουῖσθαι, *to cause to release*, i. e. *to redeem or ransom*.

Obs. 6. In some verbs the middle passes into a *reciprocal* sense, so as to include two or more parties; as in Luke xxii. 5, John ix. 22, συντίθισθαι, *to make a bargain together*; xii. 20, βουλευέσθαι, *to consult together*; 2 Cor. xiii. 11, παρακαλεῖσθαι, *to afford mutual consolation*; 2 Tim. ii. 24, μάχεσθαι, *to contend together*. The reciprocal sense is less distinct, but still discernible, in the verbs στρατεύεσθαι and ἀγωνίζεσθαι, in 1 Cor. ix. 7, 25.¹

Of the anomalous interchange of the *active, passive, and middle voices*, see above, § 22.

§ 50.—Of the Tenses. (BUTTM. § 137, 138.)

1. Although the import of the Tenses may occasionally have been in some small degree influenced by their native idiom, yet

¹ Winer, § 39, 2, 3, 4. Alt, § 51. 1. Kuster et Dresig. de Verb. Med.

for the most part, and indeed almost universally, the writers of the New Testament have adhered to the ordinary Greek usage. The aorist, for instance, is employed to mark past time *indefinitely*, without reference to any other action, and is accordingly the tense appropriated to history and narratives. Thus in John i. 46, ὃν ἔγραψε Μωσῆς ἐν τῷ νόμῳ, εὗρήκαμεν, the aorist ἔγραψε represents the writing of Moses as a *simple historical fact*; but the *perfect* εὗρήκαμεν not only indicates the *act of finding* as *past*, but its *consequences* as remaining,—we have found him, and still know where he is. Again, in Matt. iv. 4, γέγραπται, it has been written as a *permanent record*; Acts ix. 13, ἀκήκοα ἀπὸ πολλῶν περὶ τοῦ ἀνδρὸς τούτου, ὅσα κακὰ ἐποίησε, I have heard, and still retain the knowledge, *what evils he did*; Gal. ii. 7, πεπίστευμαι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, I have been entrusted with the ministry of the Gospel, which I still exercise.

2. The *imperfect* differs from the aorist, as denoting,

1. An action, not *transient*, but *continuing* during a *past time, when or while* something else took place; as in Mark iii. 11, τὰ πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθαρτα, ὅταν αὐτὸν ἐδέωρει, προσέπιπτεν αὐτῷ. Gal. i. 14, ἠκούσατε γὰρ τὴν ἐμὴν ἀναστροφὴν ποτὲ ἐν τῷ Ἰουδαϊσμῷ, ὅτι καθ' ὑπερβολὴν ἐδίωκόν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν κ. τ. λ., namely, *during my adherence to Judaism*. Add Matt. xiii. 25, Luke xiv. 7, xxiv. 32, John v. 16, xii. 6, *et alibi*.
2. An action *continued, or frequently repeated*; as in Matt. xiii. 34, χωρὶς παραβολῆς οὐκ ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς. Mark xiv. 12, ὅτε τὸ πάσχα ἔθυσον, *on the day when they annually slew the paschal lamb*; xv. 6, κατὰ δὲ ἑορτὴν ἀπέλυεν αὐτοῖς ἓνα δέσμιον. (In the parallel place of Matt. xxvii. 15, it is εἰώθει ἀπολύειν.) Add Acts xiii. 11, Rom. xv. 22, 1 Cor. x. 4, xiii. 11, and elsewhere.
3. An action *begun, but not completed; attempted or contemplated, but not executed*; as in Matt. iii. 14, ὁ δὲ Ἰωάννης διεκώλυεν αὐτὸν, *sought to prevent him*; Luke i. 59, ἐκάλουν αὐτὸ, *wished to name it*; v. 6, διεῤῥήγνυτο τὸ δίκτυον, *began to break*; Gal. i. 13, ἐπόρθουν αὐτήν, *endeavoured to destroy it*.

Obs. 1, The difference between the aorist and imperfect is distinctly marked in Luke viii. 23, πλείοντων δὲ αὐτῶν ἀφύπνωσι· καὶ κατίβη λαῖλαψ εἰς τὴν λίμνην, καὶ συνεπληροῦντο, καὶ ἐκινδύνευσον. Compare James ii. 22.¹

¹ Winer, § 41. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 52. Stallbaum ad Plat. Phæd. p. 29. Jacob ad Lucian. Tox. p. 53. Reisig ad Soph. Œd. Col. p. 254.

3. The *plusquam-perfectum* denotes an action which *was already completed before, or during, the performance of another past action*, to which it has reference either in itself or its consequences; as in Matt. vii. 25, τεθεμελίωτο γὰρ ἐπὶ τὴν πέτραν, *for it had been founded upon a rock before the floods came*, which it was consequently able to resist. See also Mark xv. 10, xvi. 9, Acts xiv. 23, Gal. i. 22, 1 John ii. 19.

4. Of the several forms of the future, the 3 *fut. passive*, or *paulo post futurum*, marks a *future action*, which depends, as it were, upon the passing of another action. It is thus closely allied to the *futurum exactum* of the Latins. The only place in which it occurs in the New Testament is Luke xix. 40, ἐὰν οὗτοι σιωπήσωσιν, οἱ λίθοι κεκράζονται.

5. The other futures express not simply a *future action*, but a *supposed or possible case*, or such as *might or could* happen under certain circumstances. Thus in Luke xviii. 22, πάντα ὅσα ἔχεις πώλησον, καὶ διάδος πτωχοῖς, καὶ ἔξεις θησαυρὸν ἐν οὐρανῷ. Rom. iii. 6, μὴ γένοιτο· ἐπεὶ πῶς κρινεῖ ὁ Θεὸς τὸν κόσμον; x. 14, πῶς οὖν ἐπικαλέσονται εἰς ὃν οὐκ ἐπίστευσαν; κ. τ. λ. James ii. 10, 11, ὅστις γὰρ ὅλον τὸν νόμον τηρήσει, πταίσει δὲ ἐν ἐνὶ, γέγονε πάντων ἔνοχος· εἰ δὲ οὐ μοιχεύσεις, φονεύσεις δὲ, γεγόνας παραβάτης νόμου. So when *purpose* is spoken of; as in 1 Pet. iii. 13, καὶ τίς ὁ καχώσων ὑμᾶς, ἐὰν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ μιμηταὶ γένησθε; *And who is he that would harm you, if, &c.*

Obs. 2. Hence also the *fut.* is used in questions where the *conjunctive* might be used; as in Rom. vi. 1, τί οὖν ἔροῦμεν; ἐπιμενοῦμεν τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ, ἵνα ἡ χάρις πλεονάσῃ; μὴ γένοιτο. *Are we to continue in sin? or, would you have us continue in sin?* So again in v. 15, where some manuscripts read ἁμαρτήσωμεν. Compare Matt. xviii. 21, xix. 16, Luke iii. 10, and elsewhere. See also § 54. 1. Obs. 3.

Obs. 3. The *future* is frequently used for the *imperative*; as in Matt. v. 48, ἵνα ὡς ὁ πατήρ ὑμῶν τέλει. In Hebrew the same idiom is very prevalent, and it is preserved in several citations from the Old Testament. Thus in Matt. v. 21, οὐ φονεύσεις. 27, οὐ μοιχεύσεις. 33, οὐκ ἐπιορκήσεις. Acts xxiii. 5, ἄρχοντα τοῦ λαοῦ σου οὐκ ἐρεῖς κακῶς. Rom. vii. 7, οὐκ ἐπιθυμήσεις. See also Rom. xiii. 9.

Obs. 4. Besides their proper import the tenses also frequently signify *to be wont*; as indicating a general habit, or an action continually repeated.

1. *Imperfect*: as in Luke iv. 15, ἐδίδαξεν ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς αὐτῶν, *he was in the habit of teaching*: Acts ii. 44, πάντες δὲ οἱ πιστεύοντες ἦσαν ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ, καὶ ἔχον ἅπαντα κοινὰ, κ. τ. λ.
2. *Perfect*: John xiv. 25, ταῦτα λελάληκα ὑμῖν, παρ' ὑμῖν μένων. 2 Tim. iv. 8, στίφανος, ὃν ἀποδώσει μοι ὁ Κύριος, καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ἡγαπηκόσι τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν αὐτοῦ.
3. *Aorist*: Matt. iii. 17, ὁ υἱὸς μου ὁ ἀγαπητός, ἐν ᾧ εὐδόκησα. xxiii. 2, ἐπὶ τῇ Μωσείῳ καθεύδρας ἐκάθισαν οἱ γραμματεῖς. Add Luke i. 51, John viii. 29, Ephes. v. 29, Heb. x. 5, James i. 11; 24, 1 Pet. i. 24.
4. *Future*: Luke i. 37, οὐκ ἀδυνατήσῃ παρὰ τῇ Θεῷ πᾶν ῥῆμα, where, however, the

particular reference is *future*: Rev. iv. 9, ὅταν δώσουσι τὰ ζῶα δόξαν κ. τ. λ., πιστοῦνται οἱ ἔκκοι καὶ τίσσαρις πρισβύτιροι, καὶ προσκυνήσουσι, κ. τ. λ.¹ The different tenses with this signification are frequently interchanged.

Obs. 5. There are indeed a variety of circumstances under which the different tenses are put for each other in classical Greek; and the like usage prevails in the New Testament.

Thus 1. The present is put for the aorist, when in an animated narration the past is represented as present, and in Latin the *præsens historicum* would be used. Thus in Mark v. 15, ἔρχονται πρὸς τὸν Ἰησοῦν, καὶ θιωροῦσι τὸν δαιμονιζόμενον. John i. 29, τῇ ἰπαύριον βλέπει ὁ Ἰωάννης τὸν Ἰησοῦν, καὶ λέγει. 46, εὕρισκει Φίλιππος τὸν Ναθαναὴλ, καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ. ix. 13, ἄγουσιν αὐτὸν πρὸς τοὺς Φαρισαίους, τὸν ποτὶ τυφλόν. Hence the *present* and the *aorist* are frequently united in the same sentence, as in Matt. ii. 13, ἀναχωρησάντων αὐτῶν, ἰδοὺ, ἄγγελος Κυρίου φαίνεται κατ' ὄναρ τῷ Ἰωσήφ. Mark ii. 4, ἀπιστίγησαν τὴν στίγην, ὅπου ἦν, καὶ ἐξεύξαντες χαλῶσι τὸν κράββατον. So John xi. 29, Acts x. 10, Rev. vi. 15. Add Mark iv. 38, v. 19, 38, vi. 1, 30, John i. 5, 40, 44, v. 14, xix. 9, xx. 6, xxi. 9, Rev. v. 9, viii. 11, ix. 10, xii. 2, xix. 10, *et alibi*. The *perfect* is also used with the *present* in Acts xxv. 11, εἰ μὲν γὰρ ἀδικῶ, καὶ ἄξιον θανάτου πίπραχά τι, κ. τ. λ. Rev. xix. 3, καὶ δεύτερον ἔρηκαν, Ἀλληλούϊα καὶ ὁ καπνὸς αὐτῆς ἀναβαίνει κ. τ. λ. In which cases it will be observed, however, that the use of the present is not altogether without design; being intended to mark the action, which it indicates, with greater emphasis. Here also it may be added that the present is sometimes employed in a secondary proposition, in an imperfect sense; as in Mark v. 14, ἰδοὺν, τί ἐστὶ τὸ γεγονός, *what was the matter*. John iv. 1, ἤκουσαν οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, ὅτι Ἰησοῦς πλείονας μαθητὰς ποιεῖ καὶ βαπτίζει, *was making and baptising*. Add Mark viii. 23, Luke xix. 3, John i. 19, ii. 9, vi. 64, Acts v. 13, xii. 3, xix. 34, xxviii. 1, and elsewhere. So Ælian. V. H. ii. 13, ἐζητοῦν, ὅστις ποτὶ οὗτος ὁ Σωκράτης ἐστίν.

2. To the verb ἦκω is attached the signification of the perfect, *I am come, I am here*: as in Luke xv. 27, ὁ ἀδελφός σου ἦκει. John iv. 47, ἀκούσας ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἦκει ἐκ τῆς Ἰουδαίας. The perfect, however, is used in Mark viii. 3, τινὲς αὐτῶν μακρόθεν ἦκασιν. A somewhat analogous use of the present is not unusual in the sacred writers, when that tense includes, as it were, in itself the past and the present, so as to indicate a state of uninterrupted duration. Thus in Luke i. 34, πῶς ἴσται τοῦτο, ἐπεὶ ἄνδρα οὐ γινώσκω; xv. 31, σὺ πάντοτε μετ' ἐμοῦ εἶ. John viii. 58, πρὶν Ἀβραὰμ γενέσθαι, ἐγὼ εἰμί. xv. 27, ἀπ' ἀρχῆς μετ' ἐμοῦ ἐστι. Acts xxvi. 31, οὐδὲν θανάτου ἄξιον πράσσει. 1 John iii. 8, ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ὁ διάβολος ἀμαρτάνει. So Jerem. i. 5, LXX, πρὸ τοῦ με πλάσαι σε ἐν κοιλίᾳ, ἐπίσταμαί σε.

3. Frequently the *present* is used instead of the *future*; more especially when some future event is represented in prophetic language to be as certain as if it were already present. Thus in Matt. iii. 10, πᾶν δένδρον μὴ ποιοῦν καρπὸν καλὸν ἐκκόπτεται, καὶ εἰς πῦρ βάλλεται. xxvi. 2, μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας τὸ πάσχα γίνεται, καὶ ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοται εἰς τὸ σταυρωθῆναι. John viii. 33, ἔτι μικρὸν χρόνον μεθ' ὑμῶν εἰμι, καὶ ὑπάγω πρὸς τὸν πῖμψαντά με. In Latin there is a similar usage; as in Terent. Eun. ii. 3. 46, *Cras est mihi iudicium*. Cæs. B. G. vi. 29, *sese confestim subsequi dixit*. Hence the present and the future are frequently combined; as in Mark ix. 31, ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοται εἰς χεῖρας ἀνθρώπων, καὶ ἀποκτενοῦσιν αὐτὸν, κ. τ. λ. Of the parallel places, Matt.

¹ Winer, § 41. and 56. 1, 2. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 56. 3. Hermann de emend. rat. Gr. Gr. p. 186. et ad Viger. p. 746. Poppo ad Thucyd. p. 158. Matt. Gr. Gr. § 502.

xxiv. 40, and Luke xvii. 34, the former has the verb in the present *παραλαμβάνεται*, and the latter *παραληφθήσεται* in the future. The verb *εἶμι*, *to go*, does not occur in the New Testament: but the verb *ἔρχομαι* is very constantly employed in a future acceptation; as for instance, in the title *ὁ ἐρχόμενος*, applied to Christ in Matt. xi. 3, Luke vii. 19, 20, Heb. x. 37, *et alibi*. See also Matt. xvii. 11, xxi. 5, Mark x. 30, Luke xviii. 30, John iv. 21, v. 25, xvi. 13, Acts xviii. 21, 1 Thess. i. 10, Rev. i. 8, ii. 5, 16. There are many other passages also, in which a future sense is at least included, although the commencement of the action or event may be properly indicated by the present tense. Thus in John iii. 36, *ὁ πιστεύων εἰς τὸν υἱὸν ἔχει ζωὴν αἰώνιον*, i. e., the title of the believer to eternal life co-exists with his faith; and this import of the passage is rather confirmed, than refuted, by the change of tense in the subsequent clause, *ὁ δὲ ἀπειθῶν τῇ υἱῷ οὐκ ὄψεται ζωὴν, ἀλλ' ἡ ἐργὴ τοῦ Θεοῦ μένει ἐπ' αὐτόν*. On the other hand, the *present* is strictly proper in the following examples:—John x. 32, *διὰ πᾶν ἔργον λιθάζετε με*; xiii. 6, *κύριε, ἐμὸν πόδας νίπτεις τοὺς πόδας*; 27, *ὁ ποιῶν, ποιήσων τάχιστα*. Acts iii. 6, *ὁ δὲ ἔχω, ταῦτά σοι δίδωμι*. 2 Cor. xiii. 1, *τρίτον τοῦτο ἔρχομαι*. In 1 Cor. xv. 35, *πῶς ἐγείρονται οἱ νεκροί*; the reference is not to the resurrection as a *fact*, but as a *subject of enquiry*.¹

4. An instance of the *future*, employed in the sense of the *present*, has been adduced from Rom. iii. 30, *ἐπείπερ εἴς ὁ Θεὸς, ὃς δικαιοῦσιν περιτομὴν κ. τ. λ.*, compared with v. 27, *λογιζόμεθα οὖν πίστιν δικαιοῦσθαι ἄνθρωπον*. So also in Gal. ii. 16. The full effect of justification, however, is still *future*; and it does not appear that this tense is ever used, without at least including a *future* notion. See likewise Rom. ii. 13. In 1 Cor. xv. 29, some manuscripts read *ποιοῦσιν*.²
5. The imperfect is sometimes put—1. for the *aorist*, especially when a narrative is related by an eye-witness. Thus in Acts xv. 22, *οἱ στρατηγοὶ, περιῤῥήξαντες τὰ ἱμάτια, ἐκέλευον βάβδίζειν*. Compare also Mark iv. 10 with vii. 17.—2. When there is reference to something said before, the *imperfect* ἦν is sometimes used for the present, as in John i. 15, *οὗτος ἦν, ὃν εἶπον*. So also with some verbs impersonal, as in Col. iii. 18, *αἱ γυναῖκες, ὑποτάσσεσθε τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν, ὡς ἀνῆκεν ἐν Κυρίῳ*. Some manuscripts have *καθῆκεν*, for *καθῆκει*, in Acts xxii. 22. This is different from the use of ἴδει, and some other imperfects, which, like the Latin *oportebat*, denote that something should be, or should have been, which is not: as in Matt. xxv. 27, *ἴδει σε βαλεῖν τὸ ἀργύριόν μου τοῖς τραπεζítais*. (Compare Matt. xviii. 33, Acts xxvii. 21, 2 Cor. ii. 3.) So Matt. xxvi. 9, *ἠδύνατο γὰρ τοῦτο τὸ μύρον πρᾶθῆναι πολλοῦ, καὶ δοθῆναι πτωχοῖς*. Also ὠφείλον, in 2 Cor. xii. 11, *ἐγὼ γὰρ ὠφείλον ὑφ' ὑμῶν συνίστασθαι*.³ See also § 51. 6, *Obs.* 6. And 3. Sometimes the *imperfect* has the sense of the *plusquam-perfect*; as in Acts iv. 13, *ἐπιγίνωσκον αὐτοὺς, ὅτι σὺν τῷ Ἰησοῦ ἦσαν*. This is more commonly the case after the particles *εἰ* or *ἄν*. See the examples in § 51. *Obs.* 6. *infra*; and these will also show that the usage is not confined to the verb *εἶμι*, which has no *plusquam-perfect*, as some have supposed.⁴
6. The *perfect* is used for the *present*, when an action, commenced in past time, is still continued; as in John v. 45, *ἔστιν ὁ κατηγορῶν ὑμῶν, Μωσῆς, εἰς ὃν ὑμεῖς ἠλπικατε*, *in whom ye trust*; i. e., *have placed your trust*. Again, John xx.

¹ Winer, § 41. 2. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 54. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 211, sqq.

² Winer, § 41. 6. Zeune ad Viger. p. 212, sqq.

³ Winer, § 41. 2. Stallbaum ad Plat. Symp. p. 74.

⁴ Winer, § 41. 3. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 54, b. 2, 3. Poppo ad Thucyd. p. 155. Kuinoel ad John i. 15.

29, ὅτι ἰώρακάς με, Θωμᾶ, πισπίστιukas, where the origin of present belief is indicated. Add Matt. ix. 2, Mark ii. 5, John v. 42, viii. 40, 52, ix. 37, 2 Cor. i. 10, 1 Tim. v. 5, vi. 17. As the *perfect* is properly employed to indicate the *rapid* execution of an action, so, like the *present*, it is put for the *future*, when an event is so vividly present to the mind of the writer or speaker, that he seems to regard it as already past. Thus in John iv. 38, ἄλλοι κικκοπιᾶ-κασι, καὶ ὑμεῖς εἰς τὸν κόπον αὐτῶν εἰσιληλύθατε. v. 24, ὁ τὸν λόγον μου ἀκούων ἔχει ζωὴν αἰώνιον, καὶ εἰς κρίσιν οὐκ ἔρχεται, καὶ μεταβίβηκεν ἐκ τοῦ θανάτου εἰς τὴν ζωὴν, where the certainty of the event is indicated first by the present, and then by the perfect. (Compare 1 John iii. 14.) Some refer to this head John xiv. 7, ἀπ' ἄρτι γινώσκετε αὐτὸν, καὶ ἰωράκατε αὐτὸν, but here the perfect has its proper sense, and so in Demosth. adv. Lept. p. 597, A. ὃν ἡμεῖς οὐτε γινώσκομεν, οὐτε ἰωράκαμεν. With εἰ or ἰὰν preceding, the perfect answers to the *futurum exactum* in Latin; as in Rom. xiv. 23, ὁ δὲ διεκρινόμενος, ἰὰν φάγη, κατακίκεται. Lastly, the perfect is used for the *plusquam-perfect* in Luke i. 22, ἐπίγνωσαν ὅτι ὀππασίαν ἰώρακεν. So also in John xx. 18. The infinitive and participle of the same verb in Luke xxiv. 23, John iv. 45, may serve equally for the one tense or the other. Neither from John xii. 7 can any positive conclusion be drawn.¹

7. Sometimes the *plusquam-perf.* is used for the *imperf.* or *aorist*; as in Matt. xii. 46, ἔτι δὲ αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος τοῖς ὄχλοις, ἰδοὺ, ἡ μήτηρ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτοῦ εἰστέ-κισαν ἔξω, ζητοῦντες αὐτῷ λαλῆσαι. John ii. 9, ὡς δὲ ἐγιύσατο ὁ ἀρχιτερίχλινος τὸ ὕδωρ οἶνον γεγενημένον, καὶ οὐκ ἦδεν πόθιν ἵστιν, κ. τ. λ. Perhaps also John xx. 9.

8. The *aorist* is used, 1. for the present, even where it cannot be rendered *to be wont*; as in John vii. 26, μήποτε ἀληθῶς ἔγνωσαν οἱ ἄρχοντες, ὅτι οὗτός ἐστιν ἀληθῶς ὁ Χριστός; This is particularly the case with the verb ἔγραψα, with reference to a letter then under the writer's pen; as in 1 Cor. v. 9, 11, ix. 15, Philem. 19, 21. The purport of an Epistle is also expressed by ἐπισμψα in Acts xxiii. 30, Philem. 12, and by ἐβουλήθη in 2 John 12. On the other hand, it is γράφω in 1 Cor. iv. 14, xiv. 37, 2 Cor. xiii. 10, and elsewhere; and γράφω and ἔγραψα are used indifferently in 1 John ii. 12, sqq. Thus also the Latins use *scripsi*. In the same manner as the *perfect*, so also the *aorist* is used, 2. for the *future*, to denote the rapid completion or indubitable occurrence of an action or event. Thus in John xiii. 31, νῦν ἰδοξάσθῃ ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, καὶ ὁ Θεὸς ἰδοξάσθῃ ἐν αὐτῷ, where the future δοξάσει immediately follows in the next verse. xv. 6, ἰὰν μή τις μείνη ἐν ἐμοί, ἐβλήθη ἔξω, καὶ ἐξη-ράνθῃ. The remaining verbs in the same sentence are in the present; for the same event, in respect to the Divine counsels, may be equally repre-sented as past, present, and to come; and hence in Hebrew the *præter* is commonly used in prophetic annunciations; in conformity with which the *aorist* is probably employed in Luke i. 68, 69, though it may there, and in v. 78, have its proper meaning. Compare also Jude 14, Rev. xxii. 1. In Mark iii. 21, ἐξίστη, which has been improperly rendered in a future sense, retains its usual signification; and the *conjunctive aorist* after *particles of time* is considered elsewhere (§ 55). Manuscripts vary in Rev. x. 7, between ἐτελείσθῃ and τελεισθῇ.

Obs. 6. Although the peculiar signification of the tenses is more clearly marked

¹ Winer, § 41, 4. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 55. Poppo ad Thucyd. p. 16. Viger de Idiom. pp. 213, sqq. Ast ad Plat. Pol. p. 470. Stolz on John xiv. 7.

in the indicative and the participle, still the other moods are equally used with reference to the distinctive import of each respectively. The *infinitive present*, for instance, which serves equally for the imperfect, is used to indicate an action *commenced, continued, or repeated*; as in Luke v. 7, *βυθίζεσθαι*, *to begin to sink*. Thus also the *imperative perfect* enjoins that an action is not only to be completed, but *to remain so*; as in Luke xiii. 12, *γύναι, ἀπολίσυται τῆς ἀσθενείας σου*, *be permanently and effectually cured*. Compare Mark iv. 39. At the same time these niceties are not always very strictly observed even by the best writers; and the aorist in particular is frequently found, where the perfect or imperfect should seem to be more proper. Often, indeed, it is optional, whether an action is considered with reference to its *completion, duration, or repetition*; and the tense will accordingly be selected according to the views of the writer. Thus, for instance, in Luke i. 19, *ἀπιστάω*, and in Luke iv. 43, *ἀπίσταλμαι*, may seem to indicate a precisely similar meaning; but the Evangelist in the former case viewed the commission with respect to its *delivery* only, and in the latter with respect to its *continued exercise*. In like manner, in Luke i. 25, *πειοίηκε* does not necessarily mean precisely the same thing as *ποίησε* in v. 49, though in reality either might have been substituted for the other. The writer, moreover, will frequently be found to have taken euphony for his guide, rather than the strict requisites of the language; and sometimes there is a change of signification. In the New Testament this intermingling of tenses is exceedingly common; and though a trifling shade of difference may occasionally be apparent in the sense of each, they are for the most part precisely equivalent. Examples have indeed been already given in which the distinct import is unequivocally marked, and to these numerous others might be added; such as Luke vii. 16, John xiii. 3, Heb. vii. 14, *et alia*. On the other hand, among a variety of instances it will suffice to adduce Matt. iii. 3, Mark i. 3, *ἱτοιμάσατε τὴν ὁδὸν Κυρίου εὐθείας ποιεῖτε τὰς τρίβους αὐτοῦ*. Luke i. 47, *μεγαλύνει ἡ ψυχὴ μου τὸν Κύριον, καὶ ἡγαλλίασε τὸ πνεῦμά μου ἐπὶ τῷ Θεῷ*. iv. 18, *ἔχρισέ με εὐαγγελίζεσθαι πτωχοῖς· ἀνίσταλέ με ἰάσασθαι τοὺς συνετρεμμένους τὴν καρδίαν*. John i. 15, *Ἰωάννης μαρτυρεῖ περὶ αὐτοῦ, καὶ κίεραγε*. iii. 19, *τὸ φῶς ἐλήλυθεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον, καὶ ἡγάπησαν οἱ ἄνθρωποι μᾶλλον τὸ σκότος, ἢ τὸ φῶς*. Acts xxii. 15, *ὧν ἰωράκαας καὶ ἤκουσας*. 1 John i. 1, *ὁ ἀκηκόεμεν, ὁ ἰωράκαμεν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν, ὁ ἰθιασάμεθα, καὶ αἱ χεῖρες ἡμῶν ἐψηλάφησαν*. Now although an interchange of tenses is often found in classical Greek, yet the above examples indicate a practice so arbitrary, that it should rather perhaps be referred to the Hebrew idiom, according to which certain tenses, especially the *perfect* and *future*, are promiscuously employed, and some of the above are in fact citations from the Old Testament. But of the New Testament writings, the book of the Revelation abounds in combinations of this nature, which it would be vain to account for upon any grammatical principles whatsoever. Thus we have in Rev. ii. 3, *ἰβάστας, καὶ ὑπομονὴν ἔχεις, καὶ κικροπίακας*. iii. 3, *ἔληφας καὶ ἤκουσας*. xii. 4, *οὐρὰ αὐτοῦ σύρει τὸ τρίτον τῶν ἀστέρων τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, καὶ ἔβαλεν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὴν γῆν*. It should be remembered, however, that the text of this book is in a very corrupt state, not to mention that the writer was so evidently absorbed with his subject, as to be comparatively heedless of strict grammatical rules and rhetorical niceties.¹

Obs. 7. For the reason alleged in the preceding *Obs.*, it may be difficult to affirm that the *aorist* is ever put for the *perfect*; and yet many passages have been adduced in support of the opinion. Such are, Mark xi. 17, *ὑμῖς ἱποιήσατε αὐτὸν ἐνέ-*

¹ Winer, § 41. *Obs.* Alt. Gram. N. T. § 53. Gataker de N. T. stylo; c. vi. p. 60. Glass. Phil. Sacr. cc. 43. sqq. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 33. Eichhorn's Introduction to the N. T. ii. p. 378.

λαιον ληστῶν. Luke i. 4, ἐπιυδήσαντες πολλοὶ ἐπιχείρησαν κ. τ. λ.—ἴδοξε καὶ μοι καθεζῆς σοὶ γράψαι. ii. 48, εἰπὼν, τί ποιήσας ἡμῖν οὕτως; xiv. 18, ἀγρόν ἡγόρεασα. xix. 42, νῦν δὲ ἐκρύβη ἀπὸ ὀφθαλμῶν σου. Add John xii. 49, xvii. 4, Rom. xiv. 9, Phil. iii. 12, Heb. xi. 16, Rev. ii. 8. In all these passages, the action may be referred to some point of time, in which all doubt as to its completeness was effectually removed, though its consequences may still be permanent. It is far more clear that the aorist is sometimes used for the *plusquam-perfect*; but even then a similar explanation will in some degree account for the negligence of the writer. Thus, after relatives, in Luke xix. 15, εἶπε φωνηθῆναι αὐτῷ τοὺς δούλους τούτους, οἵς ἔδωκε τὸ ἀργύριον, ἵνα γνῶ τίς τί διπραγματιώσατο. John iv. 1, ὡς οὖν ἔγνω ὁ κύριος, ὅτι ἤκουσαν οἱ Φαρίσαι, κ. τ. λ. xi. 30, οὕτω δὲ ἐληλύθει ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἰς τὴν κώμην, ἀλλ' ἦν ἐν τῇ τόπῳ, ὅπου ὑπῆντησιν αὐτῷ ἡ Μάρθα. Acts i. 2, ἐντυλόμενος τοῖς ἀποστόλοις, οὓς ἐξιλίξατο. Add Matt. xxviii. 16, Luke xxiv. 1, John ii. 22, iv. 45, xiii. 12, xix. 23, Acts ix. 35. Perhaps also Luke v. 4, xi. 1, John vii. 10, *et alibi*. Again, in narrations, where a past occurrence is introduced after the proper order of time; as in Matt. xiv. 3, ὁ γὰρ Ἡρώδης κρατήσας τὸν Ἰωάννην, ἔδωκεν αὐτόν, καὶ ἔθηκε ἐν φυλακῇ, *had bound him and thrown him into prison*. John xviii. 24, ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν ὁ Ἀννας δεδεμένον πρὸς Καϊάφαν, *had sent him*, i. e. previously to what is related in v. 14. But it should here be remarked that there are many places, in which a strict attention to the order of events would require a *plusquam-perfectum*, where the aorist is nevertheless to be rendered in its legitimate sense. Thus in Matt. xxvi. 48, ὁ παραδιδούς αὐτὸν ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς σημεῖον, the meaning is simply *he gave them a sign*, though the order of time is more accurately marked by *διδάκει* in Mark xiv. 44. Again, in Matt. xxvii. 37, καὶ ἐπέθηκεν ἐπάνω τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ τὴν αἰτίαν αὐτοῦ γεγραμμένην, the Evangelist merely records an historical fact, without studiously observing the exact period of the transaction; and in Mark iii. 16, ἐπέθηκε τῷ Σίμωνι ὄνομα Πέτρου, it would be still less philosophical to interpret Mark's general statement by a reference to the time more particularly indicated in John i. 43. Once more, the seizure of Jesus took place, according to the two first Evangelists (Matt. xxvi. 50, Mark xiv. 46), before Peter cut off the ear of Malchus; but this is no reason for changing the simple historical import of John xviii. 12, συνέλαβον τὸν Ἰησοῦν καὶ ἔδωκαν. The aorist is also employed in its proper sense, and not, as sometimes thought, in that of the *plusquam-perfectum*, in Matt. xxviii. 17, Mark xvi. 1, John iv. 44, v. 13, Acts iv. 4, vii. 5, viii. 2, xx. 12.¹

MOODS.

§ 51.—Of the Indicative.

1. The *Indicative* is used in Greek, when any thing is represented as *actually existing* or *taking place*, and not as merely *possible* or *probable*; and it is often found, both in the New Testament and other writers, where in Latin the *conjunctive* would be employed.

2. After *relatives* or *relative particles*, the *fut. indic.* occurs in subsidiary propositions, whether the preceding verb be *past* or *present*, to denote not merely what is *likely* or *desirable*, but

¹ Winer, § 41, 5. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 56. Wytttenbach ad Plut. Mor. T. i. p. 231. Zumpt's Lat. Gram. § 203. Obs. 2. Poppe ad Thucyd. i. p. 157.

what will *certainly* happen. Thus in Mark xi. 18, ἐζητούν πῶς αὐτὸν ἀπολέσουσιν. Luke xi. 6, οὐκ ἔχω, ὃ παραθήσω αὐτῷ. xii. 17, οὐκ ἔχω ποῦ συνάξω τοὺς καρπούς μου. 1 Cor. vii. 34, ἡ γαμήσασα μεριμνήσῃ τὰ τοῦ κόσμου, πῶς ἀρέσει τῷ ἀνδρί. So after *negative* propositions, with a relative; as in Phil. ii. 20, οὐδένα γὰρ ἔχω ἰσόψυχον, ὅστις γνησίως τὰ περὶ ὑμῶν μεριμνήσει.¹

3. The *sermo obliquus*, in which a person's words or sentiments are *indirectly* cited, is not common in the New Testament. There are some few instances, however, in which, with respect to positive assertions or actual events indirectly stated, the indicative is used, both in *compound* and *single* propositions. Of the former may be cited Matt. xvii. 10, τί οὖν οἱ γραμματεῖς λέγουσιν, ὅτι Ἡλίαν δεῖ ἐλθεῖν πρῶτον; Luke xviii. 9, εἶπε πρὸς τινὰς τοὺς πεποιθότας ἐφ' ἑαυτοῖς ὅτι εἰσὶ δίκαιοι. See also John xiii. 24, Acts xii. 18, where some have the *opt.* The two members are connected into one in Mark v. 29, ἔγνω τῷ σώματι ὅτι ἰάται. Luke viii. 47, δι' ἣν αἰτίαν ἤψατο αὐτοῦ ἀπήγγειλεν αὐτῷ. Acts xxii. 24, ἵνα ἐπιγνῶ δι' ἣν αἰτίαν οὕτως ἐπεφώνουν αὐτῷ. For similar constructions in the later Greek writers see Ælian. V. H. xi. 9, Diog. L. ii. 5. 15, Dion. Hal. iv. p. 2243, 7, Philostr. Her. v. 2, Pausan. vi. 9. 1.²

Obs. 1. The *opt.* in the *sermo obliquus* does not occur, except in a few various readings, in the New Testament. It should be observed also, that *direct* citations are frequently preceded by ὅτι. See § 67.

4. After *interrogatives*, whether the enquiry be *direct* or *indirect*, respecting *absolute* and *unconditional* occurrences, the *indic.* is employed; as in Matt. vi. 28, καταμάθετε τὰ κρίνα τοῦ ἀγροῦ, πῶς αὐξάνει (where the growth is actual, but the Latin would be, *quomodo crescant*). Mark viii. 23, ἐπηρώτα αὐτὸν εἴ τι βλέπει. John vii. 27, οὐδεὶς γινώσκει πόθεν ἐστίν. x. 6, οὐκ ἔγνωσαν τίνα ἦν, ἀ ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς. 1 Thess. i. 5, οἶδατε, οἳοι ἐγενήθημεν ἐν ὑμῖν. In John xi. 47, τί ποιοῦμεν; signifies, *what are we doing?* not, *what are we to do?* So in 1 Cor. x. 22, ἡ παραζηλοῦμεν τὸν Κύριον; *are we provoking?* not, *shall we provoke?* Compare also Matt. vii. 9, xii. 11, Mark xiii. 33, 35, John iii. 8, ix. 21, 25, 29, 30, Acts x. 18, xix. 2, xx. 18, 1 Cor. iii. 10, Eph. i. 18, v. 10, 15, Col. iv. 6, 1. Tim. iii. 15, *et alibi.*³ See also § 53. 4.

¹ Alt. Gram. N. T. § 57. 2.

² Winer, § 42, 5. Jacob ad Lucian. Alex. p. 64. Tox. p. 116.

³ Winer, § 42, 4. a. Alt. § 58, 1. Viger de Id. p. 505. Stallbaum ad Plat. Euthyphr. p. 46.

5. In conditional propositions the *Indicative* is used in the following cases:—

1. When the condition is *simple* and *absolute*, without any expression of uncertainty, the *Indicative* is used with *εἰ* in the first part of the proposition, followed by the indicative, or the imperative, in the conclusion: and in every tense, except the *imperfect*, according to circumstances. Thus in Matt. viii. 31, εἰ ἐκβάλλεις ἡμᾶς, ἐπίτρεψον ἡμῖν ἀπελθεῖν εἰς τὴν ἀγέλην τῶν χοίρων. xii. 26, εἰ ὁ Σατανᾶς τὸν Σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλει, ἐφ' ἑαυτὸν ἐμερίσθη. xix. 10, εἰ οὕτως ἐστὶν ἡ αἰτία τοῦ ἀνθρώπου μετὰ τῆς γυναικὸς, οὐ συμφέρει γαμῆσαι. xxvi. 33, εἰ καὶ πάντες σκανδαλισθήσονται ἐν σοὶ, ἐγὼ οὐδέποτε σκανδαλισθήσομαι. So John xi. 12, xviii. 23, Acts xvi. 15, xix. 39, Rom. iv. 2, 1 Cor. xv. 16, 2 Cor. ii. 5, v. 16, James ii. 11. Add Matt. iv. 3, 6, xi. 14, xvii. 4, xix. 17, xxvii. 42, Mark ix. 22, Luke xi. 20, John vii. 4, xiii. 32, xv. 20, xx. 15, Acts v. 39, xviii. 8, Rom. vi. 5, viii. 11, 25, xi. 17, 18, 1 Cor. vi. 2, vii. 9, 12, 15, ix. 17, 2 Cor. xiii. 5, Col. ii. 5, iii. 1, Philem. 18, 2 Pet. ii. 20, 1 John iv. 11.¹

Obs. 2. The same rule holds in many passages where *εἰ* has unnecessarily been taken in the sense of *ἵνα*. Thus, for instance, in Matt. vi. 30, εἰ δὲ τὸν χόρτον τοῦ ἀγροῦ ὁ Θεὸς οὕτως ἀμφιένυσιν, οὐ πολλῷ μᾶλλον ὑμᾶς, ὀλιγόπιστοι; John xiii. 14, εἰ οὖν ἐγὼ ἵνα ψαύμῃν τοὺς πόδας, καὶ ὑμεῖς ὀφείλτε κ. τ. λ. So Acts xi. 17, Rom. v. 15, 17, viii. 17, 1 Cor. ix. 11, Heb. ii. 2.²

2. When it is indicated that an action or event *would have* taken place under certain circumstances, which have not occurred, the *indicative* of a *past* time is used *twice*; first with *εἰ*, and in the conclusion with *ἂν*. In the first part of the proposition any past tense may be used, according to the nature of the case, with the exception of the *perfect*, but in the conclusion the *imperfect* only is employed with reference to events *relatively future*; and the *aorist*, or, more rarely, the *plusquam-perfect*, with reference to the *past*. Thus in Luke vii. 39, οὗτος, εἰ ἦν προφήτης, ἐγίνωσκεν ἂν κ. τ. λ., *were he a prophet, he would know, &c.* The *imperfect*, in the first instance correctly marks a *present* action *continued* from the past; and in the second, an action *relatively future*.

¹ Winer, § 42, 2.

² Alt. Gram. N. T. § 63, b. Note.

On the other hand, the *aorist* designates *past* time in Matt. xi. 21, εἰ ἐν Τύρῳ καὶ Σιδῶνι ἐγένοντο αἱ δυνάμεις αἱ γεγόμεναι ἐν ὑμῖν, πάλαι ἂν ἐν σάκκῳ καὶ σποδῶ μετενόησαν, *if the miracles had been done, they would have repented*. Similar examples are John viii. 42, εἰ ὁ Θεὸς πατὴρ ὑμῶν ἦν, ἠγαπᾶτε ἂν ἐμὲ, *ye would love me*; Heb. iv. 8, εἰ γὰρ αὐτοὺς Ἰησοῦς κατέπαυσεν, οὐκ ἂν περὶ ἄλλης ἐλάλει μετὰ ταῦτα ἡμέρας, *if Joshua had given them rest, then God would not speak respecting another day*; i. e. in the words just quoted from the Old Testament. Compare also Matt. xii. 7, xxiii. 30, xxiv. 43, Luke x. 13, xvii. 6, John iv. 10, v. 46, viii. 39, ix. 41, xiv. 28, xv. 19, xviii. 30, 36, Acts xviii. 14, Rom. ix. 29, 1 Cor. ii. 8, xi. 31, Gal. iii. 21, iv. 13, Hebr. viii. 7.

Obs. 3. Instead of the *indicative* with εἰ, the *participle* is used in Luke xix. 23, ἰγὼ ἰλθὼν σὺν τόκῳ ἂν ἱστέα αὐτὸ, *if I had come, I should, &c.* The *pluperfect* is employed in John xi. 21, κύριε, εἰ ἦς ὦδι, ὁ ἀδελφός μου οὐκ ἂν ἐτιθήνηκε. Compare v. 32. See also John xiv. 7, Gal. i. 10, 1 John ii. 19; and compare Diog. L. iii. 26, Æsop. F. xxxi. 1, Lucian. Fugit. 1.

Obs. 4. In the conclusion ἂν is frequently omitted, especially with ἦν, and impersonals; as in Mark xiv. 21, καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ, εἰ οὐκ ἐγινήθη. Again, with an infinitive, instead of εἰ with an indicative, in 2 Pet. ii. 21, κρεῖττον ἦν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπιγινώσκειν, κ. τ. λ. *it were better for them not to have known*; i. e. if they had not known. Compare Xen. Anab. vii. 7. 40, Mem. ii. 7. 10, Diog. L. i. 2. 17. In such cases the particle εἰ does not so much represent a *conceivable* case, as a *real* assumption, or a result which is represented as *certain*: to which head belong John ix. 33, εἰ μὴ ἦν οὗτος παρὰ Θεοῦ, οὐκ ἠδύνατο ποιεῖν οὐδὲν, *were he not from God, he were able to do nothing*. xv. 22, εἰ μὴ ἦλθον, καὶ ἰλάλησα αὐτοῖς, ἁμαρτίαν οὐκ εἶχον. xix. 11, οὐκ ἔχουσιν οὐδεμίαν κατ' ἐμοῦ, εἰ μὴ ἦν σοι δεδομένος ἄνωθεν. Acts xxvi. 32, ἀπολειψάμενος ἠδύνατο ὁ ἄνθρωπος οὗτος, εἰ μὴ ἐπικέκλητο Καίσαρα. Also, with an abbreviated construction, in Rom. vii. 7, τὴν ἁμαρτίαν οὐκ ἔγνω, εἰ μὴ διὰ νόμου· τὴν γὰρ ἐπιθυμίαν οὐκ ἔγνω, εἰ μὴ ὁ νόμος ἔλειγεν· οὐκ ἐπιθυμήσεις. In like manner, in Latin, the indicative is found after a conjunctive with *si* or *nisi*; as in Flor. Epit. iv. 1. Peractum erat bellum sine sanguine, si Pompeium opprimere potuisset.

Obs. 5. There is a very irregular usage of the *present* in the former part of a proposition in 2 Cor. xi. 4, εἰ μὲν γὰρ ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἄλλον Ἰησοῦν κηρύσσει, καλῶς ἠνέχισθι. It is found also in Diog. L. ii. 8. 4, εἰ τοῦτο φαῦλόν ἐστιν, οὐκ ἂν ἐν ταῖς τῶν Θεῶν ἱερταῖς ἐγίνετο. Perhaps the true reading, though found but in one MS., is ἀνέχισθι.¹

6. When no condition is implied, all the tenses of the *indicative*, and especially the *imperfect* and the *aorist*, are employed with ἂν, either after *relatives*, to indicate *uncertainty* and *indefiniteness*, or generally to imply that an event *might* or *would* have happened under certain circumstances. Thus in

¹ Winer, § 43, 2. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 58. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 819, sqq., et ad Eur. Hec. 1087. Poppo ad Xen. Cyr. i. 6. 10.

Mark vi. 56, ὅπου ἂν εἰσεπορεύετο εἰς κώμας, ὅσοι ἂν ἤπτοντο αὐτοῦ, ἐσώζοντο, *wherever he went, into this village or that, as many as touched him, whatever their number, were cured.* The meaning is the same, though more definitely expressed, in Matt. xiv. 36, ὅσοι ἤψαντο, ἐσώθησαν. Again in Acts iv. 35, διεδίδωτο ἐκάστῳ, καθότι ἂν τις χρεῖαν εἶχεν, *according as each might need*; whereas, without ἂν, the necessities of each must have been definitely fixed. With the *aorist*, in Heb. x. 2, οὐκ ἂν ἐπαύσαντο προσφερόμεναι, *they would not have ceased to be offered*, i. e. unless they were of no avail. See also 1 Cor. xii. 2, and compare Gen. ii. 19, Levit. v. 3, LXX, Agathocl. xxxii. 12, cxvii. 12, cclxxxvii. 13. In Mark xi. 24, the present is so used.

Obs. 6. It may here be proper to point out the different modes of expressing a wish by βουλοίμην ἂν, ἐβουλόμην αν, and ἐβουλόμην respectively. The distinction between the two former are marked by Matthiæ; but the simple imperfect implies a *conditional* wish, modified by circumstances, as in Acts xxv. 22, ἐβουλόμην καὶ αὐτὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἀκοῦσαι. A direct wish would have been expressed by θίλω or βούλωμαι (Rom. i. 13, xvi. 19, 1 Cor. xvi. 7, 1 Tim. ii. 8); and the possibility or probability of a future hearing by βουλοίμην ἂν. The imperfect expresses a decided wish with a doubt of its practicability; *I wished and still wish*, i. e. I could have wished, if possible. Precisely similar are Rom. ix. 3, ἠυχόμην γὰρ αὐτὸς ἐγὰ ἀνάθεμα εἶναι, κ. τ. λ., Gal. iv. 20, ἥθελον διὰ παρῖναι πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἄρτι, i. e. if circumstances permitted. This import of the imperfect is, in fact, closely allied with the usage noticed above, under § 50. *Obs. 5. 5.*¹

§ 52.—Of the Imperative.

1. In *prohibitions* with μὴ, the imperative of the present is commonly used, as in Mark ix. 39, μὴ κωλύετε αὐτόν. John v. 28, μὴ θαυμάζετε τοῦτο.

Obs. 1. Frequently, the *conjunctive aorist* is substituted for the imperat.: as in Mark x. 19, μὴ μοιχεύσης· μὴ φονεύσης· κ. τ. λ. Acts xviii. 9, μὴ φοβοῦ, ἀλλὰ λάλει, καὶ μὴ σιωπήσης. The difference between the two forms, if any, must be slight, as they are intermixed in the same sentence; but the former has been thought to check perseverance in an act begun or meditated, and the latter to convey a more general prohibition. The future with οὐ is sometimes put for the imperative with μὴ, as in Matt. v. 21, οὐ φονεύσεις. See above, § 50. 4. *Obs. 3.*

2. The *imperative* sometimes indicates, not so much a *command*, as a *permission*, *exhortation*, *entreaty*, *caution*, or the like. Thus in Matt. viii. 31, οἱ δὲ δαίμονες παρεκάλουν αὐτόν, λέγοντες, Ἐπίτρεψον ἡμῖν ἀπελθεῖν εἰς τὴν ἀγέλην τῶν χοίρων· καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς, Ὑπάγετε. Here ἐπίτρεψον marks a *request*, and ὑπάγετε grants it. Compare Luke viii. 32.

¹ Winer, § 42, a. 2, Alt. Gram. N. T. § 56. 2. a.

Obs. 2. The *precativ*e sense of the *imperative* will also be found in the *Lord's Prayer* (Matt. vi. 9, sqq.), and its *hortative* sense in the *sermon on the Mount*. (Matt. vi. 1, *et passim*.) It is simply *permissive* in 1 Cor. vii. 15, εἰ δὲ ὁ ἄπιστος χωρίζεται, χωρίζεσθω. xiv. 38, εἰ δὲ τις ἄγνοῖ, ἄγνοέτω. Compare 2 Sam. xviii. 23, 2 Kings ii. 7, Jerem. xxvi. 14. So, in Latin, Ter. Eun. iii. 5. 48, *Ubi nos laverimus, si vultis, lavato*. *Permission* and *caution* are united in Eph. iv. 26, ἐργίζεσθε, καὶ μὴ ἁμαρτάνετε, *you are permitted to be angry, provided it be without sin*. Sometimes a degree of *irony* or *sarcasm* seems to be implied in the permission; as in the proverbial form addressed by Christ to Judas in John xiii. 27, ὁ ποιῶς, ποίησον τάχιον. So in the address to the disciples in Matt. xxvi. 45, καθεύδετε τὸ λειπὸν, *sleep on*, i. e. if you can, in this hour of peril. Compare also 1 Cor. xi. 6. Closely allied to these examples is the sort of unwilling concession implied in Matt. xxiii. 32, καὶ ὑμεῖς πληρώσατε τὸ μέτρον τῶν πατέρων ὑμῶν, *fill ye up then, &c.*: i. e. if ye will, ye must. Compare 1 Kings xxii. 22, Prov. vi. 22. So Virg. *Æn.* iv. 381. *I, sequare Ilium, &c.*

3. Two *imperatives* are sometimes united, either with or without καὶ, so that the first expresses, as it were, *condition* or *limitation* in regard to the second: as in John vii. 52, ἐρεύνησον καὶ ἴδε, *search, and you will see*. 1 Cor. xv. 34, ἐκνήψατε δικαίως, καὶ μὴ ἁμαρτάνετε. 1 Tim. vi. 12, ἀγωνίζου τὸν καλὸν ἀγῶνα τῆς πίστεως, ἐπιλαβοῦ τῆς αἰωνίου ζωῆς. So Baruch ii. 21, LXX. κλίνατε τὸν ὦμόν, καὶ ἐργάσασθε τῷ βασιλεῖ, καὶ καθίσατε ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν. Eriphan. ii. p. 368, ἔχε τοὺς τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγους κατὰ ψυχὴν σου, καὶ χρεῖαν μὴ ἔχε Ἐπιφανίου.

Obs. 3. The same mode of writing is very common in Hebrew; and not unknown in Latin: as, for example, in the maxim, *Divide et impera*. In such cases the second imperative is, in fact, equivalent to a future: which is used with the same import in Luke x. 28, τοῦτο ποιῶ, καὶ ζήσῃ. So Lucian. D. D. ii. 2, βαῖν, καὶ ὄψαι. Somewhat analogous are the following passages; but, though the *imperative* may be rendered conditionally, the connexion between the two parts are sufficiently apparent without swerving from the original construction: John ii. 19, λύσας τὴν ναὸν τοῦτον, καὶ ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις ἐγερῶ αὐτόν. Eph. v. 14, ἔγειραι, ὁ καθεύδων, καὶ ἀνάστη ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν, καὶ ἐπιφάνῃ σοι ὁ Χριστός. James iv. 7, ἀντίστητε τῷ διαβόλῳ, καὶ φεύσκει ἀφ' ὑμῶν.

Obs. 4. The distinctive import of the tenses is for the most part observed in those of the *imperative*; the *present* denoting *continued* or *frequently repeated* action, and the *aorist* that which is *complete* or *transient*. See § 50. *Obs. 6.* Examples of the former are Matt. vi. 19, μὴ θησαυρίζετε ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. Rom. xi. 20, μὴ ὑψηλοφρόνει, ἀλλὰ φοβοῦ. Heb. xii. 14, εὐχένην διώκετε. Add Matt. ix. 2, xiv. 27, Mark viii. 15, ix. 7, xiii. 11, xiv. 38, Luke ix. 3, xxii. 40, xxiii. 23, John i. 44, vi. 27, 43, vii. 24, xxi. 16, Acts v. 20, Rom. xii. 14, 20, xiii. 3, 8, 1 Cor. vii. 3, ix. 24, x. 7, 14, 24, 25, xvi. 13, Eph. ii. 11, iv. 25, 26, vi. 4, Phil. ii. 12, iv. 3, 9, 1 Tim. iv. 11, 13, v. 7, 19, vi. 11, 2 Tim. ii. 1, iii. 14, Tit. i. 13, iii. 1, Hebr. xiii. 2, 7, 16, James i. 5, ii. 12, iii. 14, iv. 11, 1 Pet. iv. 12, 2 Pet. iii. 17. On the other hand, we have the *aorist* in Matt. viii. 8, ἀλλὰ μόνον εἰπὲς λόγῳ. Mark i. 41, λέγει αὐτῷ, Θείλω, καθεύδων θῆτι. John ii. 7, γεμίσατε τὰς ὑδρίας ὕδατος. Acts xxiii. 23, ἱτοιμάσατε στρατιώταις διακousίους. So Matt. xiv. 8, Mark i. 44, iii. 5, vi. 11, ix. 22, x. 21, xiii. 28, xiv. 15, 36, 44, xv. 30, Luke ix. 5, 13, xv. 19, xvi. 6, xviii. 3, 22, xxiii. 21, xxiv. 39, John ii. 8, iv. 10, 21, 35, vi. 10, xi. 39, 44, xiii. 29, xviii. 11, 31, xx. 27, xxi. 6, Acts i. 24,

iii. 4, v. 8, vii. 33, viii. 19, 22, ix. 11, x. 5, xii. 8, xvi. 9, xxi. 39, xxii. 13, Rom. xiii. 7, 1 Cor. vi. 20, xvi. 1, 11, Eph. vi. 13, 17, Tit. iii. 13, Philem. 17, Heb. xii. 12, 13, James ii. 5, 18, iii. 8, 9, 13, 1 Pet. iv. 1, v. 8. The distinction, however, is by no means uniformly observed; but the *aorist* is frequently used to indicate an action, which cannot be considered as terminated on the instant. Thus in Matt. x. 11, *ἐκὼ μίναται, ἕως ἂν ἐξέλθῃτε*. Mark xvi. 15, *κηρύξατε τὸ εὐαγγέλιον πάσῃ τῇ κτίσει*. John xiv. 15, *τὰς ἐντολὰς τὰς ἐμὰς τηρήσατε*. 1 John v. 21, *τεκνία, φυλάξατε ἑαυτοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων*. Compare John xv. 4, Acts xvi. 15, 1 Cor. vi. 20, 1 Tim. vi. 20, 2 Tim. i. 8, 14, ii. 3, iv. 2, Hebr. iii. 11, James v. 7, 1 Pet. i. 13, ii. 2, v. 2. Sometimes the *aorist* and *present* are united in precisely the same signification; as in Rom. vi. 13, *μηδὲ παριστάνετε τὰ μέλη ὑμῶν ὅπλα ἀδικίας τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ, ἀλλὰ παραστήσατε ἑαυτοὺς τῷ Θεῷ*. xv. 11, *αἰνῶτε τὸν Κύριον, καὶ ἐπαινίσατε αὐτόν*. Elsewhere, when united, the distinct import of these tenses is duly preserved; as in Mark ii. 9, *ἄρὸν σου τὸν κράββατον, καὶ περιπάτει*, John i. 40, *ἔρχισθε, καὶ ἴδτε*. ii. 16, *ἄρατε ταῦτα ἐντεῦθεν· μὴ ποιῆτε τὸν οἶκον τοῦ πατρὸς μου οἶκον ἐμπορίου*. So Lucian. D. M. x. 14, *καὶ σὺ ἀπόθου τὴν ἐλευθερίαν μηδαμῶς, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἔχει ταῦτα*.¹

§ 53.—*Of the Optative and Conjunctive*. (BUTTM. § 139.)

The *optative* is the mood which indicates that which passes in *thought*, and not in *reality*. In *independent propositions* it is used in the New Testament, as in other writers, without *ἂν*, to express a *wish* that any thing may take place. Thus in Acts i. 20, *τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν αὐτοῦ λάβοι ἕτερος*. (Some copies have *λαβέτω*.) viii. 20, *τὸ ἀργύριόν σου σὺν σοὶ εἴη εἰς ἀπώλειαν*. Rom. xv. 5, *ὁ δὲ Θεὸς δώῃ ὑμῖν τὸ αὐτὸ φρονεῖν*. 1 Thess. iii. 11, *ὁ Θεὸς κατευθύναι τὴν ὁδὸν ἡμῶν πρὸς ὑμᾶς* κ. τ. λ. 1 Pet. i. 2, 2 Pet. i. 2, *χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη πληθυνθείη*. Add 2 Cor. ix. 10, 2 Thess. ii. 17, iii. 5, 1 Pet. v. 10, Philem. 20. In 2 Tim. ii. 7, iv. 14, many good manuscripts have *δώσει* in the future, which is equally adapted to the sense. Of negative propositions with *μὴ*, the formula *μὴ γένοιτο*, in Luke xx. 16, Rom. vi. 1, 16, vii. 7, is an example.* So 2 Tim. iv. 16, *μὴ αὐτοῖς λογισθείη*. Compare Mark xi. 14.

Obs. 1. In classical writers the particle *εἰ* often accompanies the optative in the sense of *utinam*; instead of which, in relation to things *past*, the *aorist indicative* is sometimes used. Of this there seems to be an instance in Luke xii. 40, *πῦρ ἤλθον βαλεῖν εἰς τὴν γῆν· καὶ τί θίλω; εἰ ἤδη ἀνήφθῃ*. *Oh! that it had been already kindled!* To this head Luke xix. 42, xxii. 42, have also been referred; but the former is probably, and the latter, certainly, a case of *aposiopesis*. See § 69. III. 4.

Obs. 2. There is another mode of expressing a wish by *εἴθε ὄφελον*, with an infinitive; instead of which the later writers use *ὄφελον*, in its proper number and person indeed, but as it were *adverbially*, with the *indicative*, and the same usage is found in the New Testament. Thus in 1 Cor. iv. 8, *καὶ ὄφελόν γε ἱερασιλεύσατε*, and *truly I wish that ye did reign*. 2 Cor. xi. 1, *ὄφελον ἀνέχισθί μου*, *would that ye could bear with me*. See also Gal. v. 12, Rev. iii. 15, and compare Exod. xvi. 3, Numb. xiv. 2, xx. 3, Job xiv. 13, Ps. cxix. 5, LXX.

¹ Winer, § 44. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 59.

* Winer, § 42. a. 5. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 60.

2. It is not often that the *optative* is used with *ἄν* in the New Testament in *independent* sentences ; and then only with *interrogative* particles. When thus employed, therefore, it has reference to some supposed *contingency*, or *conjectural* circumstance, passing in the enquirer's mind ; and indicates *uncertainty* or *indecision* as to the reply. Thus in Luke i. 62, ἐνένευον τῷ πατρὶ, τὸ, τί ἄν θέλοι καλεῖσθαι αὐτόν ; *what he would wish him to be named*, if he were consulted : John xiii. 24, πυθέσθαι τίς ἄν εἴη ; *who it could be* ? Acts ii. 12, διηπόρουν, τί ἄν θέλοι τοῦτο εἶναι ; *they doubted what this could mean*, i. e., if it were explained. viii. 31, πῶς γὰρ ἄν δυνάμην, εἰ μὴ κ. τ. λ. ; xxvi. 29, εὐχαίμην ἄν τῷ Θεῷ σὲ γενέσθαι κ. τ. λ. Compare Luke vi. 11, ix. 46, Acts v. 24, x. 17, xvii. 18. The distinction between the optative and indicative is accurately marked in Acts xxi. 33, ἐπυνθάνετο, τίς ἄν εἴη, καὶ τί ἐστὶ πεποιήκως ; *who he might be, and what he had done* ?¹ So Xen. Ephes. v. 12, ἐτεθαυμάκει, τίνες τε ἦσαν, καὶ τί βούλοιντο. See also Heliod. Æthiop. i. 25. 46, ii. 15. 81, Polyæn. ix. 25.

Obs. 3. Although some hypothetical circumstance may have suggested itself to the writer's or speaker's mind, such is not necessarily the case ; and hence it arises, perhaps, that the omission of *ἄν* with the optative in interrogations, whether direct or indirect, is by no means uncommon : as in Luke i. 29, διηλογίζετο, ποταπὸς ἡ ἰσπασμὸς οὗτος. Acts xvii. 11, ἀνακρίνοντες τὰς γραφάς, εἰ ἔχει ταῦτα οὕτως. Add Luke iii. 15, viii. 9, xv. 26, xviii. 36, xxii. 23, Acts xvii. 27, xxv. 20, xxvii. 12. Compare Herod. i. 46, iii. 28.² Xen. Cyr. i. 4. 6, Anab. i. 8. 15, Diog. Laert. vii. 1. 3.

3. The *conjunctive* mood expresses the *possibility* of an action, with reference to *external* circumstances ; and thus from its very nature is more generally employed in *dependent propositions*. It is used in *exhortations* and *admonitions* ; and chiefly in the *first person plural* : as in Matt. xvii. 4, Luke ix. 33, ποιήσωμεν ὥδε τρεῖς σκηνάς. John xiv. 31, ἐγείρεσθε, ἄγωμεν ἐντεῦθεν. 1 Cor. xv. 32, φάγωμεν καὶ πίνωμεν, αὐριον γὰρ ἀποδνησκόμεν. Add Luke viii. 22, John xix. 24, Rom. iii. 8, 1 Thess. v. 6.

Obs. 4. Many good manuscripts have the *future indic.* instead of the *conjunctive* in James iv. 1, σήμερον ἢ αὐριον πορευσάμεθα κ. τ. λ. So also in P^Wl. iii. 15. A like variation occurs in 1 Cor. xiv. 15, Heb. vi. 3 ; but in these instances the *future* is preferable.

Obs. 5. All the persons of the *conjunctive* are also used with *ἵνα*, so as to mitigate the force of a *direct imperative*. Thus in Mark v. 23, τὸ θυγάτριόν μου ἰσχύει ἵνα ἐλθὼν ἐπιθῇς αὐτῇ τὰς χεῖρας, ὅπως σωθῇ. 2 Cor. viii. 7, ἵνα καὶ ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ χάριτι

¹ Winer, § 43. 4.

² Winer, § 42. 4. c.

περισυνήτι. Probably an Ellipsis of *διόμαί σου, παρακαλῶ σε*, or something similar suggested by the context, is required to complete the sense. Compare 1 Tim. i. 3. The *imperative* import of the form is clearly marked by its *interchange* with that mood in Eph. v. 33, ἵνα καθάρισται ἡ ἐκκλησία ὡς ἡ ἐκκλησία ἡ ἡμεῖς, ἵνα ἡ καθάρσις ἡμεῶν ὡς ἡ καθάρσις ἡμεῶν. Here ὡς ἡ καθάρσις may be supplied. Other examples are John i. 8, οὐκ ἦν ἡμεῖς τὸ φῶς, ἀλλ' ἵνα μαρτυρήσῃ περὶ τοῦ φωτός, i. e., *he was sent or commissioned to bear witness*. Gal. ii. 10, μόνον τῶν πτωχῶν ἵνα μνημονεύωμεν, scil. *παριελάουν ἡμᾶς*.¹ With these are not to be confounded such cases as Mark xiv. 49, John i. 19, ix. 3, xiii. 18, xv. 25, Rev. xiv. 13, *et similia*. See §. 67.

4. In questions of *indecision* or *doubt*, the conjunctive is used also without *ἂν*, and with or without an *interrogative particle*: as in Mark xii. 14, δῶμεν, ἢ μὴ δῶμεν; *are we to give, or are we not to give?* Again in Matt. xxiii. 33, πῶς φύγητε ἀπὸ τῆς κρίσεως τῆς γεέννης; *How are ye to escape?* xxvi. 54, πῶς οὐ πληρωθῶσιν αἱ γραφαί;

Obs. 6. In such questions, and in others with the idea *should*, the *future indic.* is more commonly used. Thus in Matt. xi. 15, τινὶ δὲ ὁμοιάσω τὴν γενεάν ταύτην; John vi. 5, πόθεν ἀγοράσομεν ἄρτους; Rom. vi. 2, οἵτινες ἀπειθάνομεν τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ, πῶς ἔτι ζήσομεν ἐν αὐτῇ. vii. 7, viii. 31, ix. 14, 30, τί οὖν ἐροῦμεν; 1 Cor. vi. 15, ἄρα οὖν τὰ μέλη τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ποιήσω πόρνης μέλη; xv. 29, τί ποιήσουσιν οἱ βαπτιζόμενοι ὑπὲρ τῶν νεκρῶν.

Obs. 7. The *conjunct.* is also used without a *conjunction* and without *ἂν* after *Θέλειν*. Thus in Luke ix. 54, Θέλεις εἰπῶμεν πῶς καταβῆναι; 1 Cor. iv. 21, τί θέλεις; ἐν ῥάβδῳ ἔλθω πρὸς ὑμᾶς; Similarly in Matt. vii. 4, ἄφες ἐκβάλλω τὸ κάρφος ἀπὸ τοῦ ὀφθαλμοῦ σου. Instead of the *conjunctive*, the best manuscripts have the *future* in this construction in Matt. xiii. 28, Θέλεις οὖν ἀπελθόντες συλλέξομεν αὐτά; Matt. xxvi. 17, ποῦ θέλεις ἵστασθαι φαγεῖν τὸ πάσχα. Some commentators would also restore the *future* forms in the parallel places of Mark xiv. 12, Luke xxii. 9, considering the first persons singular, being doubtful cases, to be futures also: as in Matt. xx. 32, τί θέλεις ποιήσω ὁμῶν. Compare Matt. xxvii. 17, 21, Mark x. 51, xv. 9, 12, John xviii. 39. This seems questionable. The *future* is used, however, in Exod. xxv. 40, LXX, ὅρα ποιήσεις κατὰ τὸν τύπον κ. τ. λ.²

5. In *negative* propositions the *conjunctive* is used with *οὐ μὴ* instead of the *future*; as in Matt. v. 18, ἰῶτα ἐν ἧ μία κεραία οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου. xvi. 28, οὐ μὴ γεύσωνται θανάτου. xxiv. 2, οὐ μὴ ἀφελθῇ ὧδε λίθος ἐπὶ λίθον, ὃς οὐ μὴ καταλυθῇσεται.

Obs. 8. This usage is not unfrequent with the *conj. aor. 1. active*, from which it is excluded by *Dawes'* rule. (Buttm. § 139. E. Obs. 1. note.) Thus in Luke x. 19, οὐδὲν ὑμᾶς οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσῃ. John xiii. 8, οὐ μὴ νίψῃς τοὺς πόδας μου εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. But it would scarcely be expected that the New Testament writers would strictly observe a canon, which is by no means firmly established by the usage even of the best writers.

¹ Winer, §§ 42. 4; 44. 4. Alt. Gram. N. T. §§ 59. 3; 61, 1.

² Winer et Alt, *ubi supra*: Lipsius *de usu Indic. in N. T.* § 2. Fritzsche ad Matt. pp. 467, 761. Valcknaer ad Eur. Hipp. 782.

§ 54.—*Conditional Propositions.* (BUTTM. § 139. A.)

1. When it is intended to express *possibility* with reference to some *condition* determinately announced, the *conjunctive* is employed with *ἐάν* in the first part of the proposition, and the conclusion is made with the future or some other tense of the *Indicative*, or with the imperative. Thus in Matt. v. 13, *ἐάν* τὸ ἄλγος μωρανθῇ, ἐν τίνι ἁλισθῇσεται. viii. 2, κύριε, ἐάν θέλῃς, δύνασαι με καθάρισαι. John vii. 37, ἐάν τις διψᾷ, ἐρχέσθω πρὸς με, καὶ πινέτω. ix. 31, ἐάν τις θεοσεβῇς ἢ, τούτου ἀκούει. Add Matt. iv. 9, v. 23, ix. 21, x. 13, xviii. 13, 15, 16, 17, Mark iii. 27, John vii. 17, viii. 31, xv. 6, 7, xx. 23, Rom. ii. 25, vii. 2, xiv. 23, 1 Cor. vi. 4, vii. 11, 28, 36, viii. 10, ix. 16, 2 Cor. v. 1, 1 Tim. i. 8, ii. 15, 2 Tim. ii. 5.

Obs. 1. It will be observed that the *past* tenses of the *indicative* are comparatively rare, and that these, as well as the *present*, have in fact a *future* acceptance. See below, § 56. 1. Compare also Lucian. D. M. vi. 6, Diog. L. vi. 2. 6, x. 31. 41.

2. When the *condition* and *consequence* are alike problematical, the optative is used with *εἰ* in the first clause, and with *ἂν* in the second. The New Testament affords no example of this rule, from which, however, there are deviations in the best writers, according to the particular nature of the proposition. If, in the latter part of the sentence, something is *determinately* asserted, though the former conveys only a *possible* case, the *indicative* appears in the conclusion; and thus it is in Acts xxiv. 19, οὐς δεῖ ἐπὶ σοῦ παρεῖναι, καὶ κατηγορεῖν, εἴ τι ἔχοιεν πρὸς με. Compare Acts xxvii. 12, 39, 1 Cor. xv. 37. In 1 Pet. iii. 17, the manuscripts vary between θέλει and θέλοι, of which either is equally adapted to the sense. See above, § 51. 5. 1¹

Obs. 2. Sometimes *εἰ* and *ἐάν* occur in two consecutive clauses; as in Luke xiii. 9, καὶ μὲν ποιήσῃ καρπὸν—εἰ δὲ μήγε, ἐκκόψεις αὐτήν. Acts v. 38, ἐάν ᾧ ἢ ἐξ ἀνθρώπων ἡ βουλή αὕτη, καταλυθήσεται· εἰ δὲ ἐκ Θεοῦ ἐστίν, οὐ δύνασθε κ. τ. λ. The different import of the moods is, in each case, sufficiently apparent. Compare Xen. Cyr. iv. 1. 15, Plat. Phæd. 42, Isocr. Archid. 44, Lucian. D. M. vi. 3, Dio Chrys. Or. lxix. p. 621.²

Obs. 3. Signifying *whether*, *εἰ* is used with the *indicative*, in Matt. xix. 3, λέγουσι αὐτῷ, εἰ ἔστιν ἀνθρώπων ἀπολύσαι τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ κατὰ πᾶσαν αἰτίαν. Mark iii. 2, παριτήρουν αὐτόν, εἰ τοῖς σάββασι θεραπεύσει αὐτόν. Here the *conjunctive* with *ἐάν* might

¹ Winer, § 42, 2. b. c. Alt. Gram. N. T. 67. Reitz ad Lucian. p. 591. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 831, sqq. Passov. Lex. in vv. εἰ, ἐάν.

² Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*. Jacobs ad Anthol. pp. 49. 104. Poppo ad Xen. Cyr. p. 209. Hermann ad Soph. Aj. 491. Jacob ad Lucian. Tox. p. 143.

have been expected. Add Acts xix. 2, 1 Cor. i. 16, vii. 16, 2 Cor. xiii. 5, *et alibi*. With the *optative*, in Acts xvii. 11, ἀνακρίνοντις τὰς γραφὰς, εἰ ἔχοι ταῦτα οὕτως. Compare Acts vii. 1. In this sense εἰ is not found.

Obs. 4. Although εἰ with the *conjunctive* cannot be positively traced to the Attics, it was undoubtedly joined with that mood by the Ionians and Dorians, and thence retained by the later writers. In the New Testament we have in Luke ix. 13, οὐκ εἰσὶν ἡμῖν πλεῖον ἢ πέντε ἄρτοι καὶ δύο ἰχθύες, εἰ μή τι πορευθέντες ἀγοράσωμεν. 1 Cor. xiv. 5, ἕκτος εἰ μὴ διερμηνεύῃ. Rev. xi. 5, εἴ τις αὐτοὺς θίλῃ ἀδικῆσαι, πῦρ ἐκπορεύεται κ. τ. λ. There are, however, variations of the MSS. in every instance. For a like example see Gen. xliii. 3, 4, LXX. On the other hand, we have εἰ with the *indicative*, but still with variations of the manuscripts, in 1 John v. 15, εἰ ἂν οἴδαμεν ὅτι ἀκούει ἡμῶν, κ. τ. λ. Many copies also have the *indicative* in Luke xi. 12, John viii. 36, and a few in Rom. xiv. 8, xv. 2, Gal. i. 8. The same syntax is sometimes found in Herodotus, and frequently in the later authors. Compare Exod. viii. 21, Basil. i. p. 175, Theodoret. iii. p. 267.

Of propositions beginning with a *pronoun relative*, (Buttm. § 139. B.), see § 59.

§ 55.—*Propositions beginning with Particles of time.* (BUTTM. § 139. C.)

1. In the Greek writers, ὅτε, ὁπότε, ἐπεὶ, ἐπειδὴ, ὥς, &c., are used with the *optative*, and ὅταν, ὁπότεν, ἐπὴν, ἐπειδὴν, with the *conjunctive*. Of the usage with the *optative* there is no example in the New Testament; but the former particles are continually employed with a *present*, *orist*, or *future indicative*, when an action *present*, *past*, or *future* is *definitely* and *positively* expressed. Thus in Matt. vii. 28, ὅτε συνετέλεσεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τοὺς λόγους τούτους, ἐξεπλήσσοντο οἱ ὄχλοι ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ. xviii. 32, πᾶσαν τὴν ὀφειλὴν ἐκείνην ἀφῆκά σοι, ἐπεὶ παρεκάλεσάς με. xxviii. 9, ὥς δὲ ἐπορεύοντο κ. τ. λ. Luke vi. 3, οὐδὲ τοῦτο ἀνέγνωτε, ὃ ἐποίησε Δαβὶδ, ὁπότε ἐπείνασεν αὐτός; xvii. 22, ἐλεύσονται ἡμέραι, ὅτε ἐπιθυμήσετε μίαν τῶν ἡμερῶν τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἰδεῖν. John v. 25, ἔρχεται ἥρα, καὶ νῦν ἐστίν, ὅτε οἱ νεκροὶ ἀκούονται τῆς φωνῆς τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ. ix. 4, ἔρχεται νῦν, ὅτε οὐδεὶς δύναται ἐργάζεσθαι. Acts xiii. 46, ἐπειδὴ δὲ ἀπωθεῖσθε αὐτὸν, στρεφόμεθα εἰς τὰ ἔθνη. 2 Cor. iii. 15, ἡνίκα ἀναγινώσκεται Μωσῆς, κάλυμμα ἐπὶ τὴν καρδίαν αὐτῶν κεῖται. Heb. ii. 14, ἐπεὶ οὖν τὰ παῖδιά κεκοινώκηκε κ. τ. λ. ix. 17, ἐπεὶ μή ποτε ἰσχύει, ὅτε ζῇ ὁ διαθόμενος. See also Matt. ix. 25, xi. 1, Mark ii. 25, ix. 21, xiv. 12, Luke i. 23, iv. 25, vii. 1, 12, xv. 25, John iv. 21, 23, 40, ix. 5, xvi. 25, xvii. 12, Acts xv. 24, xvi. 4, 1 Cor. xiii. 11, Heb. iv. 6.

2. The *conjunctive* is used to express an action which takes place *frequently* or *usually* during *present* or *future* time; so

that its appropriate particles may generally be rendered by *while*, *as long as*, *as often as*, &c.: as in the following passages:—Matt. v. 11, μακάριοί ἐστε, ὅταν ὀνειδίσωσιν ὑμᾶς καὶ διώξωσι. vi. 2, ὅταν οὖν ποιῇς ἐλεημοσύνην, μὴ σαλπίσῃς, *as often as*; and so in vv. 5, 6, 16. Luke xi. 21, ὅταν ὁ ἰσχυρὸς καὶ θωπευόμενος φυλάσῃ κ. τ. λ., *as long as*, &c. John viii. 44, ὅταν λαλῇ τὸ ψεῦδος, ἐκ τῶν ἰδίων λαλεῖ, *whenever*, &c. ix. 5, ὅταν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ᾖ, φῶς εἰμι τοῦ κόσμου, *whilst*, &c. 1 Cor. xi. 25, τοῦτο ποιεῖτε, ὅσκις ἂν πίνητε, εἰς τὴν ἑμὴν ἀνάμνησιν. Add Matt. xv. 2, Mark xi. 25, Luke vi. 22, xi. 34, 36, 1 Cor. iii. 4, xi. 26, Rev. xi. 6.

Obs. 1. Sometimes only a simple future is expressed; and if it be the *aorist conjunctive*, the *futurum exactum*. Thus in Matt. ii. 8, ἰπὸν δὲ εὑρητε, ἀπαγγέλατί μοι *when you shall have found him*. Mark xiii. 7, ὅταν δὲ ἀκούσητε πολέμους, τότε γὰρ ἔσται, *when you shall hear of wars*. Luke xvii. 10, ὅταν ποιήσῃτε πάντα, λέγετε, κ. τ. λ. 1 Cor. xi. 34, τὰ δὲ λοιπὰ, ὡς ἂν ἴλθω, διατάξομαι. 2 Cor. iii. 16, ἡνίκα δ' ἂν ἐπιστρέψῃ πρὸς Κόρινθους, περιαιριῖται τὸ κάλυμμα. See also Matt. ix. 5, xxi. 40, Mark iv. 15, viii. 38, xii. 23, Luke ix. 26, xi. 22, John ii. 10, iv. 25, vii. 27, viii. 28, xiii. 19, xiv. 29, xv. 26, xvi. 13, Acts xxiii. 35, Rom. xi. 27, 1 Cor. xv. 27, 28, Phil. ii. 23, 1 John ii. 28.

Obs. 2. Instead of the *conjunctive*, the *future* is used in Rev. iv. 9, καὶ ὅταν δώσω τὰ ζῶα δόξαν καὶ τιμὴν κ. τ. λ. Some manuscripts also read in Matt. x. 19, παραδόντες, and in Luke xiii. 28, ὀψοῦνται.¹

Obs. 3. The usage of ὅτι, ἵνα, &c., with a *conjunctive* is very doubtful in the best writers, though not unusual with Homer. In the New Testament we find in Luke xiii. 35, ὅτι ἵππηται. In Rom. xi. 22, the expression is elliptical. See § 69. iii. Much more unusual are ὅταν, ἵνα, with an *indicative*; but we have in Mark iii. 11, τὰ πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθαρτα, ὅταν αὐτὸν ἰδῶσι, προσέπιπτον αὐτῷ. A few manuscripts also have the *indicative* in Mark xi. 25, xiii. 4, Luke xi. 2, 21, Rom. ii. 14, 1 Cor. iii. 4. The same construction is sometimes found in the later Greek writers.²

3. Of the remaining *particles of time*, ἕως, or ἕως οὗ, ἄχρις οὗ, μέχρις οὗ, *until*, are employed with an *indicative*, *imperf.* or *aorist*, when an action is spoken of as *lasting* to a point of time *already past*. Thus in Matt. i. 25, οὐκ ἐγίνωσκεν αὐτήν, ἕως οὗ ἔτεκε τὸν υἱὸν αὐτῆς τὸν πρωτότοκον. ii. 9, ὁ ἀστὴρ προῆγεν αὐτοὺς, ἕως ἐλθὼν ἔστη ἐπάνω οὗ ἦν τὸ παιδίον. Luke xvii. 27, ἡσθιον, ἔπινον, ἐγάμου, ἐγαμίζοντο, ἄχρι ἧς ἡμέρας εἰσῆλθε Νῶε εἰς τὴν κιβωτόν. And so in Matt. xiii. 33, xxiv. 39, John ix. 18, Acts vii. 18, xxi. 26.

Obs. 4. When it signifies *whilst*, ἕως is also construed with an *indicative*; as in Matt. v. 25, ἴσθι εὐνοῶν τῷ ἀντιδίκῳ σου ταχὺ, ἕως ὅτου εἶ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ μετ' αὐτοῦ. John ix. 4, ἐργάζεσθαι, ἕως ἡμέρας ἴστιν. So Heb. iii. 13.

Obs. 5. With the *optative* these particles do not occur. With the *conjunctive*, with or without ἂν, they determine the limit of present or future actions; as in

¹ Winer, §§ 42, 3. 43, 5. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 64, 1. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 792, 915.

² Jacobs. Obs. Cr. in Anthol. p. 30. Passov. Lex. in v. ὅταν.

Matt. xii. 20, *λίον τυφόμενον οὐ σβίσει, ἕως ἂν ἐκβάλῃ εἰς νῆκος τὴν κρείσιν*. Mark xiii. 30, *οὐ μὴ παρίλθῃ ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη, μὴχρὶς οὗ πάντα ταῦτα γένηται*. xiv. 32, *καθίστατε ὧδε, ἕως προσεύξωμαι*. Luke ix. 27, *οὐ μὴ γιύσονται θανάτου, ἕως ἂν ἴδωσι τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ*. Compare Luke xii. 50, xiii. 8, xv. 4, 8, xvii. 8, xxii. 16, xxiv. 49, Rom. xi. 25, 1 Cor. xv. 25, Gal. iii. 19, Eph. iv. 13, 2 Thess. ii. 7, Heb. x. 13, James v. 7, 2 Pet. i. 19, Rev. ii. 25, xv. 8, xx. 3, 5. Instead of the conjunctive, the *future indicative* is the reading of some manuscripts in Matt. xxvi. 36, Rev. vi. 11, xvii. 17.

Obs. 6. The *pres. indic.* occurs in the formula *ἕως ἔρχομαι*, in Luke xix. 13, John xxi. 22, 23, 1 Tim. iv. 13; and both the present and future indicative with *ἕως πότε* in direct interrogations; as in Matt. xvii. 17, *ἕως πότε ἴσομαι μετ' ὑμῶν; ἕως πότε ἀνίσταμαι ὑμῶν;* John x. 24, *ἕως πότε τὴν ψυχὴν ἡμῶν αἴρεις;* Rev. vi. 10, *ἕως πότε οὐ κρίνεις καὶ ἐκδικεῖς τὸ αἷμα ἡμῶν;*

Obs. 7. With *πρὶν* the *indicative* does not occur in the New Testament; but with the *optative*, as indicating a circumstance passing in the speaker's thoughts, this particle occurs in Acts xxv. 16, *ἀπικερθῆν, ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν ἔθος Ῥωμαίοις χαρίζεσθαι τινα ἀνδραπον εἰς ἀπώλειαν, πρὶν ἢ ὁ κατηγορούμενος κατὰ πρόσωπον ἔχοι τοὺς κατηγοροῦντας, τόπον τε ἀπολογίας λάβοι περὶ τοῦ ἐγκλήματος*. Some manuscripts read *ἔχη* and *λάβῃ*, others *ἔχει*. With the *conjunctive* it is chiefly used of *future* actions or in *negative* propositions; as in Luke ii. 26, *ἦν αὐτῷ κτενηματισμένος μὴ ἰδεῖν θάνατον, πρὶν ἢ ἴδῃ τὸν Χριστὸν Κυρίου*. xxii. 34, *οὐ μὴ φωνήσῃ σήμερον ἀλίπτωρ, πρὶν ἢ τρεῖς ἀπαρνήσῃ μὴ εἰδέναι με*. In *affirmative* propositions the *infinitive* is used, as in the parallel place of Matt. xxvi. 34, *πρὶν ἀλίπτορα φωνῆσαι, τρεῖς ἀπαρνήσῃ με*. So in John iv. 49, *κατάβηθι, πρὶν ἀποθανεῖν τὸ παιδίον μου*. Compare Acts ii. 20. The *infinitive* is also used with respect to actions *really past*, where the *indicative* is more regular in the better writers; as in Matt. i. 18, *πρὶν ἢ συνελθεῖν αὐτοὺς, εὗρίθῃ ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχουσα*. Acts vii. 2, *ὁ Θεὸς ὠφθῇ τῷ Ἀβραάμ, πρὶν ἢ κατοικῆσαι αὐτὸν ἐν Χαρρὰν*. Here also belongs John viii. 58, *πρὶν Ἀβραάμ γενέσθαι, ἐγὼ εἰμι*, since the *present*, as denoting eternal existence, includes the *past*. Compare Herod. ii. 2, iv. 167, Ælian. V. H. x. 16.¹

§ 56.—Propositions expressing any aim or purpose.

(BUTTM. § 139. E.)

1. Of the *particles* which mark an *aim* or *purpose*, *ἵνα* and *ὅπως* are found with the *conjunct.* in the New Testament; and their usage will be found to conform with that of the best writers. The general rule requires a *conjunctive* after verbs of *present* or *future* time, and an *optative* after verbs of *past* time. There is no instance of the latter usage in the Greek Testament, although there are many passages, in which it would have been appropriate; as, for instance, in John iii. 16, vii. 32, Acts xvii. 15, Eph. iv. 10, Heb. xi. 35, and elsewhere; nor is it common in the LXX or the later writers, by whom indeed the *optative* was very sparingly employed. After a *present*, the *conjunctive* appears in Matt. vi. 2, *ὥσπερ οἱ ὑποκριταὶ ποιοῦσιν, ὅπως δοξασθῶσιν ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων*. Add Matt. vi. 5,

¹ Winer, §§ 42, 3; 45, 6. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 64, 2. Hermann ad Viger. p. 792. Reitz ad Lucian. iv. 501.

Mark iv. 21, Rom. xi. 25, Phil. i. 9, 1 Tim. i. 18, v. 21, 2 Tim. ii. 4, 10, Heb. ix. 15, 1 John i. 3. Here the *conjunctive* indicates an *object*, of which the attainment is assumed to be *certain*; and so also after the *future*, or an *imperative*, which, from its very nature, has a *future* reference. Thus in Matt. ii. 8, ἀπαγγείλατέ μοι, ὅπως καὶ γὰρ ἐλθὼν προσκυνήσω αὐτῷ. Mark x. 17, τί ποιήσω, ἵνα ζῶν αἰώνιον κληρονομήσω; 1 Tim. iv. 15, ἐν τούτοις ἴσθι, ἵνα σοῦ ἡ προκοπὴ φανερὰ ᾖ ἐν πᾶσιν. See also Matt. ix. 38, Mark v. 12, Luke x. 2, Acts viii. 19, 24, xxi. 24, xxiv. 26, Rom. iii. 8, 1 Tim. v. 7, 16, 20, vi. 1, James v. 16.¹

Obs. 1. The deviations from the above rule in the New Testament may be accounted for as in other writers. They are the following:—

1. When the verb, which depends upon the *conjunction*, denotes an action, which either in itself or its consequences is *continued* to the present time, the *conjunctive* is frequently used after a *past* tense. Thus in Luke i. 3, ὡς καὶ μοι γράψαι, ἵνα ἐπιγνῶς κ. τ. λ. John xv. 11, ταῦτα λελάληκα ὑμῖν, ἵνα ἡ χαρὰ ἢ ἡ ἐμὴ ἐν ὑμῖν μείνῃ. Acts ix. 17, ὁ κύριος ἀπέσταλκεν μοι, ὅπως ἀναβλέψῃς. So 1 Tim. i. 16, John iii. 5. Add Luke xvi. 26, Rom. vi. 4, 1 Tim. i. 20, Tit. i. 5, ii. 14, 1 John iii. 8, v. 13, 20; and compare Xen. Mem. i. 1. 8, Plat. Crit. p. 43. b, Ælian. V. H. xii. 3. 30.
2. The *conjunctive* is also used after *past* tenses, when the result, which it expresses, is announced by the writer or speaker as *certain* and *definite*; as in Mark vi. 41, ἰδίδου τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα παραδῶσιν αὐταῖς. Acts v. 26, ἤγγιν αὐτούς, ἵνα μὴ λιθασθῶσιν. So Mark viii. 6, xii. 2, Acts ix. 21, xxv. 26. Closely analogous is the usage in *narrations*, in which the writer transports himself, as it were, to the time when each event took place, and represents it as *present*. Hence the use of the *conjunctive* regularly in Thucydides; and so likewise in Matt. xix. 13, προσηνέχθη αὐτῷ παιδία, ἵνα τὰς χεῖρας ἐπιθῇ αὐτοῖς. Acts xxvii. 42, τῶν δὲ στρατιωτῶν βουλὴ ἰγένετο, ἵνα τοὺς δισμῶτας ἀποκτείνωσι. Compare Matt. xii. 14, John xviii. 28. Hence the *conjunct.* is also used after the *præsens historicum* in Mark xii. 13, ἀποστέλλουσι τινὰς, ἵνα αὐτὸ ἀγρεύσωσι λόγον.
3. With reference to a *prayer* or *wish*, the optative is found after a *present* in Eph. i. 16, μνησθῆναι ὑμῶν ποιοῦμενος ἐπὶ τῶν προσευχῶν μου, ἵνα ὁ Θεὸς δῶῃ ὑμῖν πᾶσαν σοφίαν. So again in Eph. iii. 16. In both places, however, many manuscripts give δῶ for δῶῃ; and as the prayer is *decisive*, not *contingent*, the former is preferable.

Obs. 2. The particle ἵνα is sometimes joined in classical Greek with an indicative of a *past* tense, to indicate that something *should have happened, which has not*; and a like usage with the *present* indicative occurs in 1 Cor. iv. 6, ἵνα μάθῃτε τὸ μὴ ἰσθῆναι ὅτι γίγνεται φρονεῖν, ἵνα μὴ εἰς ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἐνὸς φυσιοῦσθε. So again, in Gal. iv. 17, ζηλοῦσιν ὑμᾶς, οὐ καλῶς· ἀλλὰ ἐκκλεῖσαι ὑμᾶς θέλουσιν, ἵνα αὐτοὺς ζηλοῦτε. Here there is a caution against something which *may be done*. Both passages, however, are contested; and in 1 Cor. iv. 6, there are various readings φυσιοῦσθε and φυσιῶσθε, of which the former would coincide with the general rule.

Obs. 3. From the close relation between the *future* and the *conjunctive*, it might be expected that the particles of *design* would be joined with that tense. In clas-

¹ Winer, § 42, b. 1. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 62, 1. a. Hermann ad Viger. p. 850. Devar. de partic. Gr. pp. 174, 253.

sical Greek this usage is very general with *ὅπως*; and though in the New Testament it only occurs with *ἵνα*, it will be remarked that the latter particle is far more commonly employed by later writers than the former. Thus in 1 Cor. ix. 18, *τίς οὖν μοί ἐστιν ὁ μισθός; ἵνα εὐαγγελιζόμενος ἀδάπανον θήσω τὸ εὐαγγέλιον*. In John xvii. 2, Rom. v. 21, 1 Cor. xiii. 3, 1 Pet. iii. 1, Rev. xiii. 16, and elsewhere, the readings vary. A *future indicative* is united with the conjunctive in Eph. vi. 2, *τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα· ἵνα εὖ σοι γένηται, καὶ ἴσῃ μακροχρόνιος ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς*. Compare Rev. xxii. 14.¹

2. The particle *μὴ*, in conjunction with *ἵνα* and *ὅπως*, follows in the main the preceding rules. It is most rarely, therefore, found, except with a *conjunctive*; as in Matt. vi. 18, *σὺ δὲ νηστεύων ἀλειψαί σου τὴν κεφαλὴν, ὅπως μὴ φανῇς κ. τ. λ.* John xi. 50, *συμφέρει ἡμῖν, ἵνα εἷς ἄνθρωπος ἀποθάνῃ ὑπὲρ τοῦ λαοῦ, καὶ μὴ ὅλον τὸ ἔθνος ἀπόληται*. Add Matt. v. 29, 30, xxvi. 5, Luke viii. 10, xvi. 26, John iii. 16, Acts xx. 16, 1 Cor. i. 10, 29.

Obs. 4. The same observation will apply to *μὴ*, *μήπως*, *μήποτε*, *μήτις*, where *ἵνα* may be considered as understood; as in Matt. v. 25, *ἴσθι ἐννοῶν τῷ ἀντιδίκῳ, μήποτε σε παραδῶ ὁ ἀντίδικος τῷ κριτῇ*. 1 Cor. ix. 27, *ὑπωπιάζω μου τὸ σῶμα, μήπως ἀδόκιμος γίνωμαι*. See also Matt. vii. 6, xiii. 15, xv. 32, Mark xiv. 2, Luke xii. 58, 2 Cor. ii. 7, xii. 6. With the *optative* after a *present* in Acts xxvii. 42, *βουλὴ ἐγένετο, ἵνα τοὺς δισμώτας ἀποκτείνωσι, μὴ τις ἐκκολυμβήσας διάφυγοι*. Many good manuscripts, however, read *διαφύγη*. According to the best authorities, a *conjunctive* and *future* are united in Mark iv. 12, *μήποτε πιστρέψωσι, καὶ ἀφιδέσονται αὐτοῖς τὰ ἁμαρτήματα*. *Vulgo ἀφιδῇ*.

Obs. 5. After verbs denoting *fear* or *caution*, the same usage prevails. Thus in Matt. xxiv. 4, *βλέπτε, μή τις ὑμᾶς πλανήσῃ*. 2 Cor. xi. 3, *φοβοῦμαι δι, μήπως φθαρῇ τὰ νοήματα ὑμῶν*. Add Luke xxi. 8, Acts xiii. 40, xxiii. 10, xxvii. 17, 29, 1 Cor. viii. 9, x. 12, 2 Cor. xii. 20, Heb. xii. 15. These verbs are also followed by the *indicative* present, perfect, and future. For example, in Luke xi. 35, *σκοπεῖ οὖν, μὴ τὸ φῶς ἐν σοὶ σκότος ἐστίν, whether the light in you is darkness*. Gal. iv. 11, *φοβοῦμαι ὑμᾶς, μήπως ἐκῇ κικοπίακα εἰς ὑμᾶς, that I have laboured*. Col. ii. 8, *βλέπτε, μή τις ὑμᾶς ἴσται ὁ συλαγωγῶν κ. τ. λ., that no one shall hereafter spoil you*. See also Heb. iii. 12; and compare, for the *præterite*, Job i. 4, LXX, Diog. L. vi. 1. 4, Lucian. Pisc. 15, Heliod. Æth. i. 10. 3. Sometimes the verb of *fearing* is omitted, as in Matt. xxv. 9, *μήποτε οὐκ ἀρκίση ἡμῖν καὶ ὑμῖν, scil. φοβούμεθα*. Compare Rom. xi. 21, Gal. ii. 2, 1 Thess. iii. 5. In the two last passages the *subjunctive* and *indicative* are combined, with the import of each mood distinctly preserved.²

Of some other particles with these moods, see § 67.

§ 57.—Of the Infinitive. (BUTTM. § 140—142.)

1. As distinguished from the *participle*, which designates a *quality* of a person or thing *independent* of the action ex-

¹ Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 850 sqq. Schæfer ad Demosth. iv. 273. Fisch. ad Well. ii. p. 251, iii. 6. p. 286. Abresch. Misc. Obs. p. 14. Diluc. Thucyd. p. 793. Lipsius de indic. in N. T. usu, § 6.

² Winer, § 60, 2. Hermann ad Soph. Aj. 272. Bornemann ad Xen. Sympos. p. 70.

pressed by the leading verb, the *Infinitive* denotes the *object* or *completion* of some action otherwise incomplete. It is therefore used after all verbs which imply a *purpose*; as *θέλω*, *βούλομαι*, *μέλλω*, *εἶωθα*, &c. Thus in Matt. xxvii. 15, *εἰῶθει ἀπολύειν*. Mark x. 4, *ἐπέτρεψε γράψαι*. Luke i. 1, *ἐπεχείρησαν ἀνατάξασθαι διήγησιν*. John i. 44, *ἠθέλησεν ἐξελθεῖν*. Acts v. 36, *τί μέλλετε πράσσειν*; 39, *οὐ δύνασθε καταλύσαι αὐτό*. x. 48, *προσέταξεν αὐτοὺς βαπτισθῆναι*. · xxvii. 22, *παραινῶ ὑμᾶς εὐθυμεῖν*. Gal. i. 10, *ζητῶ ἀρέσκειν*. Add Matt. xv. 35, Mark viii. 6, Luke vi. 42, Acts ii. 29, ix. 26, xxvii. 43, 2 Cor. x. 2, Phil. iv. 11, 1 Thess. i. 8, v. 12, 1 Tim. i. 3, ii. 8, 2 Tim. iv. 9, Heb. ix. 5. xi. 24, James iii. 10, Jude 9, Rev. i. 12, ix. 6.

Obs. 1. Many of these verbs, instead of the simple *inf.*, take the *inf.* with the *article* in the genitive; as in Acts xxi. 12, *παρακαλοῦμεν ἡμεῖς τοῦ μὴ ἀναβαίνειν αὐτῇ*. xxiii. 20, *συνίδιντο τοῦ ἰρωτῆσαί σε*. The conjunction *ἵνα* also is often found with these verbs; as in Matt. xviii. 6, *συμφέρι αὐτῷ, ἵνα κριμασθῇ μύλος ὀνικὸς ἐπὶ τὸν τράχηλον αὐτοῦ*. xxvii. 20, *ἔπεισαν τοὺς ὄχλους, ἵνα αἰτήσωνται τὸν Βαραββᾶν*. Mark vi. 8, *παρέγγυλιν αὐτοῖς, ἵνα μὴδὲν αἴρωσιν*, John ii. 25, *οὐ χρεῖαν εἶχεν, ἵνα τις μαρτυρήσῃ*. Compare also Matt. xx. 21, xxvi. 4, Mark vii. 26, John xv. 1, 30, 1 Cor. i. 10,

Obs. 2. In some instances the *inf.* *act.* seems to be put for the *passive*; as in 1 Thess. iv. 9, *περὶ δὲ τῆς φιλαδελφίας οὐ χρεῖαν ἔχετε γράφειν ὑμῖν*. Compare chap. v. 1.¹

Obs. 3. Some verbs, of complete meaning in themselves, but not sufficiently defined to express a *purpose*, are followed by an infinitive. Such are those which signify *to give*, *to choose*, the verbs of motion, *to go*, *to send*, &c.; and other verbs and phrases which require a more exact definition. Examples are Matt. v. 32, *ποιεῖ αὐτὴν μοιχεύσθαι*. xi. 7, *τί ἐξήλθετε θιάσασθαι*; xiii. 11, *ὑμῖν δίδοται γινῶκει*. Mark iii. 14, *ἵνα ἀποστέλλῃ αὐτοὺς κηρύσσειν*. Luke xv. 15, *ἐπέμψεν αὐτὸν εἰς τοὺς ἀγροὺς αὐτοῦ βοσκεῖν χοίρους*. John xiii. 24, *νεύει οὖν τούτῳ πυθίσθαι*. Acts v. 31, *τοῦτον ὁ θεὸς ὕψωσε, δοῦναι μετάνοιαν τῷ Ἰσραήλ*. xviii. 27, *ἔγραψαν τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς ἀποδιξασθαι αὐτῇ*. 1 Cor. i. 19, *οὐ γὰρ ἀπίστειλέ με βαπτίζειν*. x. 7, *ἐκάθισεν ὁ λαὸς φαγεῖν*. Eph. i. 4, *ἐξελέξατο ἡμᾶς εἶναι ἁγίους*. Add Matt. ii. 2, xx. 28, xxvii. 34, Mark vii. 4, Luke i. 17, 19, 76, ii. 1. ix. 16, Col. i. 21, 2 Tim. i. 18, 2 Pet. iii. 42, Rev. xii. 2, xvi. 9; and compare Gen. xi. 5, xxxi. 19, xlii. 5, 47, Exod. ii. 5, 2 Chron. xxvi. 15, Ruth iii. 7, Nehem. viii. 14, LXX, Diog. L. ii. 6, 7, Lucian. Asin. 43, Necyom. 12, Apollod. i. 16, Diod. Sic. xx. 69, Plat. Phæd. p. 69. A. In these cases also *ἵνα*, *ὥστε* or *ὅτι*, is sometimes used; as in John xi. 37, *οὐκ ἠδύνατο οὗτος ποιῆσαι, ἵνα καὶ οὗτος μὴ ἀποθάνῃ*; Rom. vi. 6, *νυνὶ δὲ κατηργήθημεν ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου, ὥστε δουλεύειν, κ. τ. λ.*, 1 Cor. iv. 9, *ὁ θεὸς ἡμᾶς ἀπέδειξεν, ὡς ἐπιθανατίους, ὅτι θιατρὸν ἐγενήθημεν τῷ κόσμῳ*. See also John iv. 15, 2 Cor. iii. 7.

2. The Infinitive is put after *adjectives*; as in Matt. iii. 11, *οὐ οὐκ εἰμὶ ἱκανὸς τὰ ὑποδήματα βαστάσαι*. Luke xv. 21, *οὐκέτι εἰμὶ ἄξιος κληθῆναι υἱὸς σου*. Acts xi. 17, *δυνατὸς κωλύσαι τὸν Θεόν*. 1 Cor. vii. 39, *ἐλευθέρα ἐστὶ γαμηθῆναι*. Heb. x. 4, *ἀδύνατον ἀφαιρεῖν ἁμαρτίας*. 1 Pet. i. 5, *σωτηρίαν ἐτοίμην ἀποκαλυφθῆναι*. See

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 67, a. α.

also Mark i. 7, 1 Cor. xv. 9, 2 Tim. ii. 2, Heb. vi. 18, xi. and compare Prov. xxx. 18, Wisd. i. 16, LXX.

Obs. 4. Here also a *Conjunction* is sometimes substituted; as in John i. 27, *οὐκ εἰμι ἄξιος, ἵνα λύσω κ. τ. λ.* The *infin. act.* is used for the *pass.* in Heb. v. 11, *δυσίμνηυτος λέγειν.*¹

Obs. 5. The *infin.* also follows, without the *gen.* of the article, after substantives which produce the action of the verb; as in Luke viii. 8, *ὁ ἔχων ὅσα ἀκούειν, ἀκούτω.* Acts ix. 4, *ἔχει ἐξουσίαν δῆσαι πάντας.* See also Luke ix. 1, 1 Cor. ix. 5, Eph. iii. 8, Heb. iv. 1.

3. The *infin.* is put after *particles*; as *ὥστε*, in Matt. viii. 24, *σεισμὸς μέγας ἐγένετο, ὥστε τὸ πλοῖον καλύπτεσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν κυμάτων.* Mark iv. 32, *ποιεῖ κλάδους ὥστε δύνασθαι, κ. τ. λ.* Luke ix. 52, *εἰσῆλθον εἰς κώμην, ὥστε ἐτοιμάσαι αὐτῷ.* Acts xiv. 1, *λαλήσαι οὕτως, ὥστε πιστεῦσαι πολὺ πλῆθος.* So Matt. viii. 28, Mark i. 45, Luke xii. 1, 1 Cor. v. 1, Phil. i. 13,

Obs. 6. Once only in the New Testament the infinitive occurs with *ὥς*, except in the phrase *ὥς ἵππος εἰπεῖν* (Heb. vii. 9,); viz. in Acts xx. 24, *οὐδὲ ἔχω τὴν ψυχὴν μου τιμίαν ἑμαυτῷ, ὥς τελειῶσαι τὸν δρόμον μου μετὰ χαρᾶς.*² It is probably omitted, as occasionally in the best writers, in Col. iv. 6, *ὁ λόγος ὑμῶν πάντοτε ἐν χάριτι, ἅλατι ἡρτυμένος, εἰδέναι πῶς δεῖ ἐνὶ ἰκάσῳ ἀποκρίνισθαι.* Compare Eph. iv. 24. The particle *ὅτι* is once also followed by an *infin.* in Acts xvii. 10, *θιωρῶ ὅτι μετὰ ὕβριως καὶ πολλῆς ζημίας μίλλειν ἵσισθαι τὸν πλοῦν.* This passage, however, must be classed with the *anacolutha*. See § 69, ii.

4. With the *neuter* of the *article*, the *infin.* supplies the place of a substantive in all cases. Thus it is used,

1. As the subject in the Nominative: Rom. xiv. 21, *καλὸν τὸ μὴ φαγεῖν κρέα, κ. τ. λ.* 1 Cor. vii. 26, *καλὸν ἀνδρώπῳ τὸ οὕτως εἶναι.* Phil. i. 21, *ἐμοὶ γὰρ τὸ ζῆν, Χριστὸς καὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν, κέρδος.* So Gal. iv. 18, Phil. i. 29, *et alibi.*

Obs. 7. Frequently the article is omitted; as in Matt. xii. 10, *εἰ ἔστι τοῖς σάββασιν θιραπιεύειν;* Rom. xiii. 5, *διὸ ἀναγκὴ ῥητοράσσεσθαι.* 1 Cor. vii. 9, *κρίσσειν γὰρ ἐστι γαμήσαι, ἢ πυροῦσθαι.* Add Matt. xv. 26, xix. 10, Eph. v. 12, James i. 27. In 1 Thess. iv. 3, sqq. it is partly inserted, and partly omitted.

2. In the genitive: after *nouns*, as the latter of two substantives, and after *verbs*, *adjectives*, and *prepositions* governing a genitive; as in Matt. vi. 8, *οἶδε πρὸ τοῦ ὑμᾶς αἰτηῆσαι αὐτόν.* Luke i. 9, *ἔλαχε τοῦ θυμιάσαι.* xxii. 6, *ἐζητεῖ εὐκαιρίαν τοῦ παραδοῦναι αὐτόν.* Acts xiv. 9, *πίστιν ἔχει τοῦ σωθῆναι.* xx. 5, *γνώμη τοῦ ὑποστρέφειν.* xxiii. 15, *ἑτοιμοὶ ἐσμεν τοῦ ἀνελεῖν αὐτόν.* Rom. xv. 23, *ἐπιποδίαν τοῦ ἐλθεῖν πρὸς ὑμᾶς.* 1 Cor. ix. 6, *οὐκ ἔχομεν ἐξουσίαν τοῦ μὴ*

¹ Winer, § 45. 3. Alt, § 67. α, β, &c., Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 117.

² Alt, Gr. N. T. § 70.

ἐργάζεσθαι. 2 Cor. vii. 12, εἵνεκεν τοῦ φανερωθῆναι τὴν σπουδὴν ὑμῶν. Phil. iii. 21, κατὰ τὴν ἐνέργειαν τοῦ δύνασθαι αὐτόν. Heb. ii. 15, διὰ πάντος τοῦ ζῆν. James iv. 15, ἀντὶ τοῦ λέγειν ὑμᾶς. See also Luke i. 57, ii. 21, xxiv. 25, John i. 49, Acts xv. 23, 1 Cor. x. 13, xvi. 4, 2 Cor. viii. 11, Heb. v. 12, 1 Pet. iv. 17; and compare Gen. xix. 20, xxv. 24, xlvii. 29, Ruth ii. 10, Neh. x. 29, Ezek. xxi. 11, Judith ix. 14, 1 Macc. v. 39, LXX. Of the usage with verbs of *preventing*, see § 41, *supra*; add Acts xiv. 18, 1 Pet. iii. 10; and compare Gen. xxix. 35, 3 Esdras ii. 24, v. 69, 70, Susan. 9.

Obs. 8. The *inf.* with τοῦ is also used to indicate a *purpose* with an ellipsis, perhaps, of ἵνα or πρὶς; and sometimes the idea of *with respect to* (§ 44. 1.) will explain the usage. Thus in Mark iv. 3, ἐξῆλθιν ὁ σπείρων τοῦ σπείρειν, *in order to sow*: Luke iv. 10, τοῖς ἀγγέλοις αὐτοῦ ἐντιλιῖται πρὶς σοῦ, τοῦ διαφυλάξαι σε, *with respect to their care of thee*: xxii. 31, ἐξητήσατο ὑμᾶς τοῦ σινιάσαι ὡς τὸν σῖτον. xxiv. 29, ἐξῆλθι τοῦ μῖναι σὺν αὐτοῖς. Acts vii. 19, ἐπάκουσι τοὺς πατέρας ἡμῶν, τοῦ ποιεῖν ἔκθιστα τὰ βρῖθι αὐτῶν *in regard to the exposition*: xx. 30, λαλοῦντες δισπραμμένα, τοῦ ἀποσπᾶν τὰς μαθητάς ὀπίσω αὐτῶν. xxvii. 1, ὡς ἐκρίθη τοῦ ἀποπλεῖν, *when it was decided in respect of sailing*: Heb. x. 7, ἤκω τοῦ ποιῆσαι τὸ θέλημα σου. James v. 17, προσήξατο τοῦ μὴ βεῖξαι. See also Luke ii. 27, v. 1, ix. 51, Acts iii. 2, xv. 20, xviii. 10, xxi. 12, xxvi. 18, Rom. vi. 6, 1 Cor. vii. 37. On the other hand, where the insertion of τοῦ might be expected, as, for instance, where a *purpose* is indicated, it is frequently omitted; as in John xiv. 2, πορεύομαι ἵτοιμάσαι τόπον ὑμῖν. Eph. iii. 16, ἵνα δὴ ὑμῖν δυνάμει κραταιωθῆναι, κατοικῆσαι τὸν Χριστὸν ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὑμῶν. Occasionally two *infinitives* stand together, of which one has τοῦ, and the other is without it; as in Luke i. 72, 79. See the entire context.

Obs. 9. But although most of the numberless passages, which come under this head in the New Testament, may perhaps be satisfactorily explained on the above principles, and be assimilated with others of a like nature in profane writers, still there are many which cannot be so interpreted. Such are Acts iii. 12, ἡμῖν τί ἀτιμίζετε, ὡς ἰδίᾳ δυνάμει πεποιηκόσι τοῦ περιπατεῖν αὐτόν; Rom. i. 24, παρέδωκεν αὐτοὺς εἰς ἀκαθαρσίαν, τοῦ ἀτιμάζεσθαι τὰ σώματα αὐτῶν. In the former example some would resolve πεποιηκόσι into ποιηταῖς οὖσι; but it is better to take τοῦ περιπατεῖν as a simple infinitive; and in the latter the infinitive must be rendered, as in many places, by *so as*; *in order that*. Compare Luke xxi. 22, Rom. viii. 12, xi. 8, 1 Cor. x. 13. The fact is, that the use of τοῦ with the infinitive is extremely lax in the New Testament: and even much more so than in the later Greek writers, who are less observant of its strict import than their predecessors. See Isocr. Ægin. p. 932, Strabon. xv. 717, Heliod. Æth. ii. 8. 88, Dion. H. iv. 2109, Arrian. Alex. ii. 21. In the LXX the practice is equally vague; so that a like uncertainty, in the construction of the Hebrew infinitive with ל, may have had some influence in producing it. For examples of regular usage in the LXX, see Gen. i. 14, iii. 6, viii. 12, xxv. 16, xxxviii. 9, xliii. 17, Judges v. 16, ix. 15, 52, x. 1, xi. 12, xv. 12, xvi. 5, xix. 3, 8, 15, xx. 4, Ruth i. 1, 7, ii. 9, 15, iv. 10, 1 Sam. ii. 28, ix. 13, 14, xv. 27, 1 Kings i. 35, xiii. 17, Nehem. i. 6, Joel iii. 12, Judith xv. 8, 1 Macc. iii. 20, 31, 39, 52, v. 2, 9, 20, 48, vi. 15, 26, ix. 69. Of irregular usage, see Josh. xxii. 26, Ruth i. 16, 1 Kings viii. 18, xiii. 16, xvi. 19, Joel ii. 21, Judith xiii. 12, 20, 1 Macc. vi. 27, 59. It

may also be well to compare Gen. xxiv. 21, xxvii. 1, xxxi. 20, xxxiv. 17, xxxvi. 7, xxxvii. 18, xxxix 10, Exod. ii. 18, vii. 14, viii. 29, ix. 17, xiv. 5, Josh. xxiii. 13, Judg. ii. 17, 21, 22, viii. 1, ix. 24, 37, xii. 6, xvi. 6, xviii. 9, xxi. 3, 7, Ruth i. 12, 18, iii. 3, iv. 4, 7, 15, 1 Sam. vii. 8, xii. 23, xiv. 34, xv. 26, 2 Sam. iii. 10, 1 Kings ii. 3, iii. 11, xii. 24, Ps. xxvi. 13, Judith ii. 13, v. 4, vii. 13, 3 Esdr. i. 33, iv. 41, v. 67. We have only to add that in Luke xvi. 1, Acts x. 25, the best MSS. omit the article; and in Rev. xii. 7, τοῦ πολεμῆσαι has been properly corrected into ἐπολέμησαν.

3. In the *dative* the *infinitive* denotes *cause* in 2 Cor. ii. 13, οὐκ ἔσχηκα ἄνεσιν τῷ πνεύματί μου, τῷ μὴ εὑρεῖν με Τίτον, *because I did not find Titus*. Compare Lucian Abdic. 5, Agath. v. 16, Diog. L. x. 17, Joseph. Ant. iv. 10. 1. Like the genitive it implies *purpose* in 1 Thess. iii. 3, παρακαλέσαι ὑμᾶς, τῷ μηδένα σαίνεσθαι ἐν ταῖς θλίψεσι. A few MSS. have τοῦ, and others τό. Compare, however, Achil. Tat. ii. 163. With a preposition, it occurs in Matt. xiii. 25, ἐν τῷ καθεύδειν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους, *while men slept*: Luke i. 22, ἐθαύμαζον ἐν τῷ χρονίζειν αὐτὸν, *because he tarried*: Acts iii. 26, εὐλογοῦντα ὑμᾶς ἐν τῷ ἀποστρέφειν ἕκαστον ἀπὸ τῶν πονηριῶν ὑμῶν, *by your conversion*. See also Matt. xiii. 4, Luke i. 8, v. 1, ix. 36, xi. 37, xiv. 1, Acts viii. 6, Gal. iv. 18, *et alibi*.
4. In the *accusative*, as the object of a verb, the *infin.* with the *article* is used in Luke vii. 21, τυφλοῖς πολλοῖς ἐχαρίσατο τὸ βλέπειν. 1 Cor. xiv. 39, ζηλοῦτε τὸ προφητεῦειν, καὶ τὸ λαλεῖν γλώσσαις μὴ κωλύετε. Phil. ii. 6, οὐχ ἄρπαγμὸν ἡγήσατο τὸ εἶναι ἴσα Θεῷ. Add Acts iv. 18, Rom. xiv. 13, 2 Cor. ii. 1, viii. 10. With prepositions, in Matt. vi. 1, πρὸς τὸ θεαθῆναι αὐτοῖς. xiii. 5, διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν βάθος γῆς. John ii. 24, διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν γινώσκειν πάντας. 1 Cor. xi. 25, μετὰ τὸ δειπνῆσαι. 2 Cor. vii. 3, εἰς τὸ συναποθανεῖν καὶ συζῆν. See also Matt. v. 28, xxvi. 32, Mark i. 14, v. 4, Luke xii. 5, Acts viii. 11, xii. 20, xviii. 2, xxvii. 9, 1 Cor. x. 6, 2 Cor. iii. 13, viii. 6, Phil. i. 7, 10, 1 Thess. ii. 9.

Obs. 10. A verbal noun with εἰς or πρὸς is frequently used by St. Paul instead of this Infinitive. Thus in 2 Cor. iv. 6, πρὸς φωτισμὸν τῆς γνώσεως. Eph. iv. 12, πρὸς τὸν καταρτισμὸν τῶν ἁγίων, εἰς ἔργον διακονίας, κ. τ. λ. Heb. xi. 11, Σάρρα δύναμιν εἰς καταβολὴν σπέρματος ἔλαβε.¹

¹ Winer, § 45, 4. 5. 6. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 69. Georg. Vind. p. 325. Valcknaer ad Eur. Hipp. 48. Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 56. Schæfer ad Demosth. ii. 16, sqq. et v. 378.

§ 58.

1. The infinitive is used to designate the object after verbs which signify *to say, to affirm, to deny, to hope, to believe, to think, to mean, to seem, &c.*, which in Latin also are followed by an infinitive. Thus in Luke vi. 34, παρ' ὧν ἐλπίζετε ἀπολάβειν. xxiv. 23, λέγουσαι καὶ ὀπτασίαν ἀγγέλων ἐωρακέναι. Acts iii. 13, κρίναντος ἐκείνου ἀπολύειν. xv. 11, πιστεύομεν σωθῆναι. Heb. xi. 25, ἐλόμενος συγκακουχεῖσθαι τῷ λαῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ. See also Luke xxiii. 8, Rom. xv. 24, 1 Cor. xvi. 7, 2 Cor. v. 11, Phil. ii. 19, 23, 1 John ii. 6. So after κινδυνεύειν, and verbs of *fearing*; as in Matt. ii. 22, ἐφοβήθη ἐκεῖ ἀπελθεῖν. Acts xix. 27, τοῦτο κινδυνεύει ἡμῖν τὸ μέρος εἰς ἀπελεγμὸν ἐλθεῖν. Compare Luke ix. 45, Acts xix. 40. Of the more usual construction of verbs of *fearing*, see § 56. 2. *Obs.* 5.

2. If the second verb has a subject of its own, this is either put in the accusative, or the clause is formed by the conjunction ὅτι. Thus with an accusative in Acts xvi. 15, κεκρίκατέ με πιστὴν τῷ Κυρίῳ εἶναι. Rom. xv. 8, λέγω δὲ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν διάκονον γεγενῆσθαι τῆς περιτομῆς. 1 Cor. vii. 26, νομίζω οὖν τοῦτο καλὸν ὑπάρχειν. Add Luke ii. 44, Acts vii. 25, xiv. 19, xxi. 4, 21, Phil. iii. 8. With ὅτι, in Matt. ix. 18, λέγων, ὅτι ἡ θυγάτηρ μου ἄρτι ἐτελεύτησεν. Luke xxiv. 21, ἡμεῖς δὲ ἠλπίζομεν ὅτι αὐτός ἐστιν κ. τ. λ. Acts ix. 26, μὴ πιστεύοντες ὅτι ἐστὶ μαθητής. Add Mark vi. 14, Acts xxiv. 26, Rom. vi. 8, 1 John v. 2.

Obs. 1. After verbs which contain a negation the particle μὴ is frequently added to this infinitive; as in Luke xx. 27, οἱ ἀντιλέγοντες ἀνάστασιν μὴ εἶναι. xxii. 34, τῆς ἀπαρνήσεως μὴ εἶδέναι με.¹

3. If the *subject* of the *infin.* is the same with the *subject* of the preceding *finite verb*, it is usually omitted with the *infinitive*; and being understood to be in the *nominative*, the adjectives and participles dependent upon it are put in that case. Thus in Rom. i. 22, φάσκοντες εἶναι σοφοί. xv. 24, ἐλπίζω διαπορευόμενος θεᾶσασθαι ὑμᾶς. 2 Cor. x. 2, δέομαι τὸ μὴ παρὼν θάρρησαι. 2 Pet. iii. 14, σπουδάσατε ἄσπιλοι καὶ ἀμώμητοι εὐρεθῆναι.

Obs. 2. For the sake of emphasis, the subject is sometimes repeated in the accusative; as in Phil. iii. 13, ἐγὼ ἑμαυτὸν οὐ λογίζομαι κατειληφέναι. So in Xen. Cyr. v. 1. 20, νομίζοιμι γὰρ ἑμαυτὸν ἰοικέναι κ. τ. λ. Compare Xen. Anab. vii. 1. 30, Mem. ii. 6. 35, Diod. Sic. i. 50, Anacr. Od. xlv. 8, Philostr. Apoll. i. 12.

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 67. b. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 753.

4. On the other hand, if the subject is the same with the object of the preceding clause, all defining adjectives, &c., should be in the case of the words to which they refer.

Obs. 3. Still, especially where emphasis is intended, the accusative is often found with the infinitive. Thus in Matt. xviii. 8, καλὸν σοί ἐστιν εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν ζωὴν χωλὸν ἢ κυλλὸν κ. τ. λ. Acts xxv. 27, ἄλογον γάρ μοι δοκεῖ, πέμποντα δέσμιον μὴ καὶ τὰς κατ' αὐτοῦ αἰτίας σημᾶναι.

5. Again, if the *Infin.* has a different subject from that in the preceding clause, it is put, together with its definitions, regularly in the *accusative*. To the instances which have been already given may be added Luke xxiv. 23, οἱ λέγουσιν αὐτὸν ζῆν. Acts ii. 24, οὐκ ἦν δυνατὸν κρατεῖσθαι αὐτὸν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ. Add Acts xxvi. 26, 1 Cor. vii. 10, 2 Pet. i. 15.

Obs. 4. If the leading verb govern any other case than the accusative, the usual construction is not necessarily preserved. For instance, the accusative does not accompany the infinitive in 2 Pet. ii. 21, κρεῖττον ἦν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπιγνωκῆναι τὴν ὁδὸν τῆς δικαιοσύνης, ἢ ἐπιγνοῦσιν ἐπιστρέψαι κ. τ. λ. Here αὐτοὺς and ἐπιγνοῦντας would be regular. Lastly, συμβαίνει and other impersonals are often found with an accusative and infinitive in classical writers; and so we have in Acts xxi. 35, συνέβη βαστάζεσθαι αὐτόν. Thus ἰγίειτο in its impersonal sense, *it happened, it came to pass*, is very frequently so constructed, especially in the Acts. See Mark ii. 23, Acts iv. 5, ix. 3, 32, 37, 43, xi. 26, xiv. 1, xv. 16, xix. 1, xxi. 1, 5, xxii. 6, 17, xxvii. 44, xxviii. 8, 17, *et alibi*. This usage, which has been regarded as a Hebraism, is also common in the LXX and Josephus. Compare Gen. xlii. 38, 2 Macc. iii. 2, iv. 30, Joseph. Ant. vii. 14. 7, and elsewhere; and also, among the Greeks, Diod. Sic. i. 50, iii. 22. 39, Theogn. v. 639.¹

6. The subject is sometimes wanting in dependent propositions, and construed, by *attraction*, in another case with the verb of the preceding proposition. This especially, though not exclusively, happens with verbs of *knowing, seeing, &c.*, followed by ἵνα, ὅτι, πῶς, πόθεν, τις, &c. Thus Matt. xxv. 24, ἔγνων σε, ὅτι σκληρὸς εἶ ἄνθρωπος. Mark i. 24, Luke iv. 34, οἶδά σε, τίς εἶ. John v. 42, ἀλλ' ἔγνωκα ὑμᾶς, ὅτι τὴν ἀγάπην τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐκ ἔχετε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. 1 Cor. xvi. 15, οἴδατε τὴν οἰκίαν Στεφανᾶ, ὅτι ἐστὶν κ. τ. λ. See also Mark xi. 32, Luke xiii. 27, xix. 3, John iv. 35, vii. 27, viii. 54, ix. 19, xi. 31, Acts iii. 10, Rev. xvii. 8. The same idiom is also common in Latin. Thus Ter. Eun. v. 8. 5, *Scin' me, in quibus sim gaudiis?* Adelph. v. 4. 20, *Illum optant, ut vivat.*²

Obs. 5. In some cases the place of the transposed subject is supplied by a pronoun

¹ Winer, § 45, 1. 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 68. Poppo ad Xen. Cyr. 1. 4. 4. Stallbaum ad Plat. Symp. 3.

² Kuster ad Arist. Plut. 55. Valcknaer ad Eur. Phœn. p. 355.

in the second clause ; as in Acts ix. 20, *ἐκήρυξε τὸν Ἰησοῦν, ὅτι οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ*. If the verb in the first member be in the passive voice, the nominative case is retained. Thus 1 Cor. xv. 12, *Χριστὸς κηρύσσεται, ὅτι ἐκ νεκρῶν ἐγήγερται*. The case is somewhat different, when the latter clause contains an explanation, as it were, of what is implied in the former. So 2 Cor. xiii. 5, *ἣ οὐκ ἐπιγινώσκειτε ἑαυτοὺς, ὅτι Χριστὸς ἐν ὑμῖν ἐστιν* ; 2 Thess. ii. 4, *ἀποδείκνυντα ἑαυτὸν, ὅτι ἐστὶ Θεός*.¹

Obs. 6. There are a few passages of the New Testament in which the *Infra.* is understood to be put for the *Imperative*. The older Grammarians in such cases supply *διῦ* or *μείμνησο*. Sometimes the imperative and infinitive are combined, and as the usage is by no means uncommon, especially in the Greek poets, there seems to be no valid reason for assigning other interpretations, which are equally harsh and unnecessary. Thus in Luke ix. 3, *μηδὲν αἵρετε εἰς τὴν ὁδὸν, μήτι ἀνὰ δύο χίτους ἔχετε*. (Some would supply *ᾧ*.) Rom. xii. 15, *χαίρειν μετὰ χαιρόντων, καὶ κλάειν μετὰ κλαιόντων*. Here also several imperatives precede and follow, and the clause is supposed to be a proverb quoted *ad litteram*. Again, Phil. iii. 16, *τῷ αὐτῷ στοιχοῦν κατὰ τὸν κανόνα*, where it is proposed to refer *στοιχοῦν* to *φρονῶμεν* in the preceding verse. The case is clearly different in such passages as Matt. v. 39, *λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ἀντιστῆναι τῷ πονηρῷ*. In Rev. x. 9, many manuscripts read *δοῦναι* for *δοῦναι*. On the other hand, *παρενέγκειν* in Luke xxii. 42, which some take in a *precativē* sense, depends upon *βούλει*, and the conclusion is *καλῶς ἔχει* understood. Such passages as 2 Cor. ix. 10, 1 Thess. iii. 11, 12, 2 Thess. ii. 17, iii. 5, 1 Pet. v. 10, are nothing to the purpose ; for the verbs are all optatives. See § 53. 1.²

Obs. 7. Some *finite* verbs, as *φιλεῖν, ἐθίλειν, προστιθέναι, &c.*, when followed by an *infinitive*, may sometimes, but not always, be rendered by an *adverb*. Thus in Luke xx. 11, 12, *προσέειπε πένψαι*, which is in the parallel places of Matt. xxi. 36, Mark xii. 4, *πάλιν ἑπιμψι*. The same idea is expressed by the participle in Luke xix. 11, *προσθεὶς ἑπὶ*. So Gen. xxxviii. 5, LXX, *προσθεῖσα ἔτι ἔτικεν υἱόν*. Again in Matt. vi. 5, *φιλοῦσι προσεύχασθαι*. John viii. 44, *τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν θέλειται πᾶν*. See also Matt. xxiii. 6, 7, Mark xii. 38, Luke xx. 46, John vi. 21, Acts xii. 3 ; and compare Gen. iv. 2, LXX, Ælian V. H. xiv. 37. Perhaps also Mark xiv. 8, *ἐλάβε μυρίσαι μου τὸ σῶμα, she has anointed by anticipation*. To the same head, but less appropriately, have been referred 1 Thess. ii. 2, *ἐπαρρησιασάμεθα ἐν τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν λαλῆσαι, we have been emboldened to speak, not we spoke boldly*. Tit. iii. 12, *σπεύδσον ἐλθεῖν, hasten to come, not come quickly*. Nor is it quite clear that *φιλεῖν* in Matt. vi. 5, is adequately rendered by the adverb *gladly*.³

Obs. 8. It is by no means necessary that the tense of the *Infinitive* should correspond with that of the principal verb ; but the usual distinction prevails in this, as in the other moods. In expressing an action *frequently repeated*, or *continued* in itself or its consequences to the present time, the *present* of the *Infinitive* is employed, whatever be the tense or import of the preceding verb ; whereas in the narration of *past* events, in speaking of what is *transient* or *momentary*, or of *future* actions which are considered as *certainly impending*, the *aorist* is used. Examples of the *present* are Matt. vi. 24, *οὐ δύνασθαι Θεῷ δουλεύειν καὶ μαμμωνᾷ*. John vii. 17, *εἰάν τις θέλῃ τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ ποιεῖν*. ix. 4, *ἐμεῖ δεῖ ἐργάζεσθαι, ἕως ἡμέρας ἐστίν*. See also Mark ii. 19, iv. 32, Luke xvi. 13, *et alibi*. With reference to *past* actions, the *aorist* occurs in Mark ii. 4, *μὴ δυνάμενοι προσεγγίσει αὐτῷ διὰ τὸν ὄχλον, ἀπιστίγασαν τὴν στιγμήν*. v. 3, *οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο αὐτὸν δεῖσαι*. So Luke xviii. 13, xxiv. 46, John vi. 21, 1 Thess. ii. 18, and

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 86. 1. Notes 1. 2.

² Winer, § 47, 7. Alt, § 71. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 58. Bos, Ellips. p. 597. Hermann ad Viger. p. 745. Kuinoel on Luke xxii. 42. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 522.

³ Winer, § 58, 4. Wetstein on Matt. vi. 5. Kuinoel on John vi. 21. Passov. Lex. in vv. *φιλεῖν* and *ἐθίλειν*.

elsewhere. Of *transient* events in Matt. xix. 3, εἰ ἔξειστιν ἀνδρῶν ἀπολῦσαι τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ, with reference to *the act of divorce*. Mark xiv. 7, ὅταν θείληται, δύνασθαι αὐτοὺς εὖ ποιῆσαι. Add Mark ii. 27, xiv. 31, John iii. 4, ix. 27, xi. 37, xii. 21, Acts iv. 16, 2 Cor. x. 12, Eph. iii. 18, 1 Thess. ii. 8, Rev. ii. 21. Of *future* actions, chiefly after verbs of *commanding, thinking, hoping*, and the like, in Matt. xii. 38, θείλομεν ἀπὸ σοῦ σημεῖον ἰδεῖν. Mark xiv. 11, ἐπηγγείλαντο αὐτῷ ἀργύριον δοῦναι. Acts x. 48, προσέταξεν αὐτοὺς βαπτισθῆναι. So Luke vi. 34, Acts ii. 30, iii. 18, vii. 5, Rom. xv. 24, 1 Cor. xvi. 7, Phil. ii. 19, 1 Tim. iii. 14. Hence the *aorist* after ἵτοιμος in Acts xxi. 13, 2 Cor. x. 6, xii. 14, 1 Pet. i. 5, iv. 5. Compare Dion. Hal. viii. 17, Joseph. Ant. vi. 9. 2, xii. 4. 2. These niceties, however, are by no means universally observed. Thus the *present* indicates a *transitory* act, Matt. iii. 23, πῶς δύναται Σατανᾶς Σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλειν; See also John xvi. 19, 1 Cor. vii. 36, Phil. i. 17. On the other hand, the *aorist* denotes a *permanent* act in Luke xix. 5, σήμερον ἐν τῷ οἴκῳ σοῦ δεῖ με μείναι. Compare Matt. v. 14, Luke xiv. 28, xvii. 25, xx. 22, John v. 44. At the same time be it observed, that in all these passages the action may have been referred in the writer's mind to some particular point, with reference to which it may be considered as complete. Both the *pres.* and *aor.* are sometimes combined; as in Matt. v. 13, εἰς οὐδὲν ἰσχύει ἔτι, εἰ μὴ βληθῆναι ἔξω, καὶ καταπαυῖσθαι. And here at least the two senses are distinctly preserved. The *future infin.* has its proper import in Heb. iii. 18, τίσι δὲ ὤμοσε μὴ ἐσιλεύσεσθαι; Also the *perfect* in Acts xvi. 27, νομίζων ἐκπιφυγῆναι τοὺς δισμῖους, *that they had escaped effectually and permanently*. See also Acts xxvi. 32, xxvii. 9, 13, Rom. xv. 8, 2 Pet. ii. 21.¹

§ 59.—Construction with the Pronoun Relative. (BUTTM. § 143.)

1. Before proceeding to the *participle*, it is right to advert to the syntax of the *Relative*, of which the construction with the *part.* is but an abbreviation; and it may be observed that the *Attraction*, by which a relative is placed in the case of its *antecedent* instead of that required by the *verb* following, may be said to be the usual construction of the New Testament. Thus Matt. xviii. 19, περὶ πάντος πράγματος, οὗ ἐὰν αἰτήσωνται. Luke ii. 20, ἐπὶ πᾶσιν, οἷς ἤκουσαν καὶ εἶδον. John ii. 22, ἐπίστευσαν τῷ λόγῳ, ᾧ εἶπεν. Tit. iii. 6, πνεύματος ἁγίου, οὗ ἐξέχεεν. James ii. 5, κληρονόμους τῆς βασιλείας, ἧς ἐπηγγείλατο. Add Mark xiv. 72, Luke v. 9, John xv. 20, xxi. 10, Acts ii. 22, iii. 21, 25, vii. 17, 45, x. 39, xvii. 31, xxii. 10, Eph. i. 8, James ii. 5, 1 Pet. iv. 11, Jude 15, Rev. xviii. 6.

Obs. 1. The usage is more rare in Matthew and Mark, and there are also other exceptions; as in Heb. viii. 2, τῆς σκηνῆς τῆς ἀληθινῆς, ἣν ἔπηξεν ὁ κύριος. Various readings also occur in Mark xiii. 19, John iv. 5, xvii. 11, Acts vii. 17, Tit. iii. 5. The syntax is peculiarly remarkable, where a verb of cognate signification with the preceding noun follows; as in 2 Cor. i. 4, διὰ τῆς παρακλήσεως, ἧς παρακαλούμεθα. Eph. ii. 5, ἀγάπην, ἣν ἠγάπησεν ἡμεῖς. iv. 1, τῆς κλήσεως, ἧς ἐκλήθητε.

¹ Winer, § 45, 8. Alt, § 72. Lobeck ad Phryn., pp. 745, sqq.

Obs. 2. If the *antecedent* be a *demonstrative* pronoun, it is generally omitted, and the relative takes its case; as in Mark xv. 12, τί οὖν θίλεις ποιῆσαι ὃν λέγει βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων; Luke ix. 36, οὐδὲν ἀπήγγυλας οὐδὲν, ὃν ἰωρᾶκασεν. John vi. 29, ἡ πιστιύσῃτις εἰς ὃν ἀπίστῳλιν ἐκῆνος. Rom. vi. 21, ἐφ' ᾧς νῦν ἐπαισχύνομθα. Add Luke v. 25, John xvii. 9, Acts viii. 24, xxi. 24, xxvi. 16, Rom. xiv. 22, xv. 18, 1 Cor. v. 1, x. 29, 2 Cor. ii. 3, v. 10, xii. 17, Eph. iii. 20, Heb. v. 8. Sometimes, but rarely, the demonstrative pronoun is simply omitted; as in John xiii. 29, ἀγόμενοι εἰς χεῖρας Ἰακώβου. So Xen. Cyr. vi. 2. 1, ἀπήγγυλας ὃν ἰδίου. Compare also Col. ii. 10. Both constructions are found in Rom. x. 14, πῶς οὖν ἐπικαλίσσονται εἰς ὃν οὐκ ἐπίστανται; πῶς δὲ πιστεύουσιν οὗ οὐκ ἤκουσαν; A like omission occurs also in the case of relative adverbs. Thus in Matt. xxv. 24, συνάγουσιν ἱθὺς οὐ δισκέρπιας, for ἐκῆθεν ὅπου. Mark v. 40, εἰσπορεύεται ὅπου ἦν τὸ παιδίον. So John xi. 32, x. 19.¹

2. On the other hand, the *relative* being put in the case required by the *verb*, the *substantive* is put in the same case, either *before* or *after* it. Thus, *before* it, in Matt. xxi. 42, Luke xx. 17, 1 Pet. ii. 7, λίθον, ὃν ἀπεδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας. Luke xii. 48, πάντι δὲ, ᾧ ἐδόθη πάλιν, πολὺ ζητηθήσεται παρ' αὐτοῦ. 1 Cor. x. 16, τὸν ἄρτον, ὃν κλῶμεν, οὐχὶ κοινωνία τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐστίν; So Hippocr. Morb. iv. 11, τὰς πηγὰς, ἃς ὠνόμασα, αὗται τῷ σώματι κ. τ. λ. Terent. Eun. iv. 3. 11, *Eunuchum, quem dedisti nobis, quas turbas dedit?*

Obs. 3. Here also should probably be referred Luke i. 72, μνησθῆναι διαθήκης ἁγίας αὐτοῦ, ὅρκον ὃν ᾤμοσε κ. τ. λ., unless κατὰ be understood before ὅρκον.²

3. It is generally, when the clause with the relative precedes, containing the principal thought, that the antecedent is put in the same case *after* it. Thus Mark vi. 16, ὃν ἐγὼ ἀπεκεφάλισα Ἰωάννην, οὗτος ἔστιν. Rom. vi. 17, ὑπηκούσατε εἰς ὃν παρεδοθήτε τύπον διδασχῆς. Philem. 10, παρακαλῶ σε περὶ τοῦ ἐμῷ τέκνου, ὃν ἐγέννησα ἐν τοῖς δέσμοις μου, Ὀνήσιμον. So, in Latin, Cic. Tusc. i. 18. 41, *Quam quisque novit artem, in hac se exer- ceat.*

Obs. 4. Some place here Acts xxi. 16; but see above, § 45. 8. There are some examples, in which the *relative* precedes, where the case remains the same as it would have been according to the regular grammatical construction. Thus in Matt. vii. 2, ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε, ἀντιμετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν. xxiv. 44, ἡ ᾧρα οὐ δοκῶτι, ἡ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἔρχεται.

Obs. 5. Clauses, which should be connected by means of a *relative*, are sometimes blended, by its omission, into an independent proposition. Thus in 1 John iii. 11, ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους· οὐ καθὼς Κάϊν ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ ἦν, i. e. καθὼς Κάϊν, ὃς ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ

Winer, § 23. 2, and 24. 1. Alt, § 41. 3, and 42. 1. Hermann ad Viger. p. 891.

² Winer, § 24, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. 2. §§ 30, 3. 42, 2. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 22. Kuinoel ad Luc. i. 72.

ἔν, ἱποίησι. So, in Latin, Virg. *Æn.* i. 18, *Urbs antiqua fuit; Tyrii tenuère coloni.* And v. 534, *Est locus; Hesperiam Graii cognomine dicunt.* Somewhat similar is Rev. i. 5, τῷ ἀγαπήσαντι ἡμᾶς, καὶ λούσαντι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτίων ἡμῶν ἐν τῷ αἵματι αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἱποίησιν ἡμᾶς βασιλεῖς, αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. More properly, however, this is an example of *anacoluthon*. See § 69. ii. 4.¹

4. When another noun is added by way of explanation, the *relative* sometimes agrees with that which *precedes*; as in 1 Cor. iv. 17, Τιμόθεον, ὃς ἐστὶ τέκνον μου ἀγαπητόν. Eph. i. 22, τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ἥτις ἐστὶ τὸ σῶμα αὐτοῦ. Col. i. 24, τοῦ σώματος αὐτοῦ, ὃ ἐστὶν ἡ ἐκκλησία. iii. 14, τὴν ἀγάπην, ἥτις ἐστὶ σύνδεσμος τῆς τελειότητος. (Some manuscripts here read ὃς, and others ὅ.) More generally, however, the concord is with the *subsequent* noun; as in Mark xv. 16, τῆς αὐλῆς, ὃ ἐστὶ πραιτώριον. Eph. iii. 13, ἐν ταῖς θλίψεσί μου ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν, ἥτις ἐστὶ δόξα ὑμῶν. Add Gal. iii. 16, Eph. i. 14, vi. 17, Col. i. 27, 1 Tim. iii. 15. So also in Phil. i. 28, where ἥτις refers to the *constancy* of the Philippians, referred to in the preceding context.

Obs. 6. Sometimes also the *neuter pronoun* ὃ is used with reference neither to the *antecedent* nor *subsequent* noun, but to the word ῥῆμα understood; as in Mark xv. 22, φέρουσιν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ Γολγοθᾶ τόπον, ὃ ἐστὶ μεθιερμηνεύμενον, Κρανίου τόπος. So John i. 39, 42, 43, Heb. vii. 3.² Frequently also the *oblique cases* are used with prepositions in the place of adverbs or conjunctions; the noun, which would have been attracted into the case of the relative, being omitted. Thus we have in Matt. i. 25, ἕως οὗ, *scil.* χρόνου, *until*. Luke i. 20, *et passim*, ἀνθ' ὧν, *because*. vii. 45, ἀφ' ἧς, *scil.* ὥρας, *since*. xii. 1, ἐν οἷς, *scil.* χρόνοις, *meanwhile*; *et alia hujusmodi*.³

Obs. 7. St. Paul frequently connects two or more sentences together by means of *relatives*, both when they refer to *different* antecedents, and when the *same* subject is continued throughout. As instances, in which *different* subjects are thus connected, see Eph. iii. 11, 12, Col. i. 4, 29. An accumulation of relatives, belonging to the *same* subject, is found in Eph. i. 3-14, ii. 21, 22, Col. i. 13-15. Compare also 1 Pet. i. 3-12.⁴

Obs. 8. There is a transposition of the relative in Acts i. 2, ἐντυλάμενος τοῖς ἀποστόλοις διὰ πνεύματος ἁγίου, οὗς ἐξελέξατο. This structure was evidently designed to mark the connexion of διὰ πνεύματος ἁγίου with ἐντυλάμενος, not with ἐξελέξατο. No such transposition, as some have supposed, exists in John ix. 40, Acts iii. 24.⁵

Obs. 9. With reference to *definite* persons or things, the *relative* is followed by an *indicative*; as in 1 Thess. i. 9, αὐτοὶ γὰρ περὶ ἡμῶν ἀπαγγέλλουσιν, ὅποιαν εἴσοδον ἔχουσιν πρὸς ὑμᾶς. See also above, § 51, 4. If the person or thing be *indefinite*, the *opt.* or *conj.* may be employed; the former without ἄν, in speaking of *past* time, and the latter with ἄν, when something is affirmed of *present* or *future* time. The New Testament usage fails with respect to the *optative*; nor is the rule strictly observed

¹ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 42, 5.

² Winer, § 24, 5, *Obs.* 1. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 42, 3. Hermann ad Vig. p. 708. Herndorf ad Plat. Phædr. p. 279.

³ Winer, § 24, 3, *Obs.* 3. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 42, 4, 7.

⁴ Winer, § 24, 3, *Obs.* 2. Alt, § 42, 6.

⁵ Alt, Gram. N. T. § 42, 8. See also Kuinoel on Acts i. 2.

with respect to the *conjunctive*, more particularly with respect to the omission or insertion of the particle *ἄν*. Examples are, Matt. viii. 20, οὐχ ἔχει ποῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν κλίνῃ. x. 11, εἰς ἣν δ' ἄν πόλιν εἰσέλθῃτε, κ. τ. λ. xxi. 22, πάντα, ὅσα ἄν αἰτήσῃτε ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ πιστεύοντες, λήψετε. Mark xiv. 9, ὅπου ἄν κηρυχθῇ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τούτου, κ. τ. λ. Acts ii. 39, ὅσους ἄν προσκαλίσσεται Κύριος. viii. 19, ὃ ἂν ἐπιθῶ τὰς χεῖρας. Compare Matt. vi. 25, x. 19, Mark vi. 36, ix. 18, Luke xii. 11, Rom. viii. 26, x. 13, xvi. 2, James iv. 4. After a *præterite*, but still in a *future* sense, in Acts iv. 21, ἀπίλυσαν αὐτοὺς, μηδὲν εὐρίσκοντες, τὸ, πῶς κολάσωνται αὐτούς. See also Mark iii. 6, Luke xix. 48.¹ That the *future* is here also used for the *conjunctive*, see above, § 51. 2.

§ 60.—Construction with the Participle. (BUTTM. § 144.)

1. The *participle* indicates a state of *being*, and its case is determined by its relation to the *agent* or *object* of the verb. If the *agent* of the verb is the subject of the *part.*, the latter is of course in the *Nom.* case; as in Acts xvi. 34, ἀναγαγὼν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ, παρέθηκε τραπέζαν. But if it refers to the *object* of the verb, the *part.* agrees with it in gender, number, and case. Although the usage of the *part.* would in general give a sense altogether distinct from that of the *infinitive*, still after many verbs, of which the object might be designated by an *inf.*, and which in Latin take the accusative with the *inf.*, a *part.* is used.

2. With reference to a subject preceding, a *participle* may exhibit a variety of subsisting relations, which may generally be expressed by *conjunctions*. For example,

1. As a *definition of time*, it may be rendered by *when*, *while*, &c. Thus in Acts v. 4, οὐχὶ μένον, σοὶ ἔμενε; *while it remained*, &c. 1 Thess. iii. 1, διὸ, μηκέτι στέγοντες, εὐδοκήσαμεν καταλειφθῆναι ἐν Ἀθήναις μόνοι, *when I could no longer control my anxiety*. So again in v. 5.

Obs. 1. Very frequently a *finite* verb is used in such cases instead of a *part.*, and connected with the principal action by *καί*. So Matt. xvii. 20, ἰρεῖτε τῷ ὄρει τούτῳ, Μετάβηθι ἐντεῦθεν ἐκεῖ καὶ μεταβήσεται. xviii. 21, ποσάκις ἁμαρτήσῃ εἰς ἐμὲ ὁ ἀδελφός μου, καὶ ἀφῆσω αὐτῷ; For λεγόντων ὑμῶν, and ἁμαρτήσαντι ἀδελφῷ.

2. In assigning a *cause*, it may be resolved into *since*, *because*, with a *finite* verb. Thus in Acts iv. 21, οἱ δὲ προσαπειλησάμενοι ἀπέλυσαν αὐτοὺς, μηδὲν εὐρίσκοντες τὸ, πῶς κολάσωνται αὐτούς, *when they had threatened*, and, *because they found nothing*; Col. i. 3, εὐχαριστοῦμεν

¹ Winer, § 42, 4. Alt, § 65. Hermann ad Viger. pp. 901, sqq.

τῷ Θεῷ, ἀκούσαντες τὴν πίστιν ὑμῶν, *because we have heard, &c.*

3. In *restrictions*, for *although*: as in John xii. 37, τοσαῦτα δὲ αὐτοῦ σημεῖα πέποιηκότος ἔμπροσθεν αὐτῶν, οὐκ ἐπίστευον εἰς αὐτόν, *although he had done, &c.* 1 Cor. ix. 19, ἐλεύθερος ὢν ἐκ πάντων, πᾶσιν ἑμαυτὸν ἐδούλωσα. Add John xxi. 11, 1 Tim. i. 7, Philem. 8, James iii. 4, 1 Pet. ii. 19; and compare Lucian. D. M. xxvi. 1, Philost. Apoll. ii. 25.

Obs. 2. In this case, the participle is sometimes accompanied by καὶ or καίπερ. Thus in Luke xviii. 7, ὁ δὲ Θεὸς οὐ μὴ ποιήσει ἐκδίκησιν τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν αὐτοῦ, καὶ μακροθυμῶν ἐπ' αὐτοῖς; *though he linger*: Heb. v. 8, καίπερ ὢν υἱὸς, ἤμαθεν ἀφ' ὧν ἔπαθε τὴν ὑπακοήν. So Rom. vii. 3, Phil. iii. 4, Heb. vii. 5, 2 Pet. i. 12; *et alibi*. Compare Diod. Sic. iii. 7, xvii. 39.

4. In expressing a condition, *if*: as in 1 Tim. iii. 10, διακονεῖτωσαν, ἀνέγκλητοι ὄντες, *provided they are blameless*: vi. 8, ἔχοντες διατροφὰς καὶ σκεπάσματα, τούτοις ἀρκεσθήσομεθα. So also 1 Tim. iv. 4, 2 Pet. i. 4, 8, *et alibi*.¹

5. In expressing a *mean*; as in Rom. vii. 8, ἀφορμὴν λαβοῦσα ἡ ἁμαρτία διὰ τῆς ἐντολῆς, κατειργάσατο ἐν ἐμοὶ πᾶσαν ἐπιθυμίαν. So *again* in v. 8.

3. A *future* participle is used after verbs of *motion* to express the object of the verb; as in Acts viii. 27, ὃς ἐληλύθει προσκυνήσων εἰς Ἱερουσαλήμ.

Obs. 3. If the action of the participle and the verb are contemporary, the *present* participle is used. Thus in Acts xv. 27, ἀπιστάλαμεν Ἰούδαν καὶ Σίλαν ἀπαγγέλλοντας τὰ αὐτά. (A single MS. has ἀπαγγιλοῦντας.) Rom. xv. 25, νυνὶ δὲ πορεύομαι εἰς Ἱερουσαλήμ, διακονῶν τοῖς ἁγίοις.

Obs. 4. Instead of the *part.*, καὶ and a finite verb is often used; as in John i. 47, ἔρχου καὶ ἴδε. xiv. 3, ἔρχομαι, καὶ παραλήψομαι ὑμᾶς εἰς ἑμαυτόν.

Obs. 5. When a matter is represented merely as the *opinion* or *assertion* of the person making the allegation, the *participle* is frequently preceded by the particle ὡς. Thus in Luke xvi. 1, οὗτος διεβλήθη αὐτῷ, ὡς διασκορπίζων τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὐτοῦ. xxiii. 14, προσηνέγκατέ μοι τὸν ἄνθρωπον τοῦτον, ὡς ἀποστρέφοντα τὸν λαόν. Also when a motive is alleged for any thing done with reference to another; as in 1 Pet. ii. 13, ὑποτάγητε βασιλεῖ, ὡς ὑπάρχοντι ἡγεμόσιν ὡς δι' αὐτοῦ τιμωμένοις κ. τ. λ. Sometimes the participle ὢν is omitted; as in Acts xvii. 22, διωιδαιμονιστίρους ὑμᾶς θεωρῶ, *scil.* ὄντας, 1 Pet. ii. 12, καταλαλοῦσιν ὑμῶν ὡς κακοποιῶν, *scil.* ὄντων. Examples of this usage are not very frequent in the New Testament.

4. Some verbs govern a *part.* either in the *nom.* or some

¹ Winer, § 46, 9. Alt, § 73, 7. Schæfer. Melet. crit. . 57.

case, which is to be expressed by the conjunction *that*, or by *to, for, of, &c.* Such are,

1. Verbs of sense; *to hear, to see, &c.* Thus in Matt. viii. 14, εἶδε τὴν πενθερὰν αὐτοῦ βεβλημένην καὶ πυρέσσουσαν. Mark xvi. 5, εἶδον νεανίσκον καθήμενον. Luke iv. 23, ὅσα ἠκούσαμεν γενόμενα. So Acts vii. 12, Rev. v. 11; and with the genitive in Acts ii. 11, ἀκούομεν λαλούντων αὐτῶν. Sometimes ἀκούειν is followed by ὅτι, as in Matt. iv. 12, ἀκούσας ὅτι Ἰωάννης παρεδόθη. See also Gal. i. 18, *et sæpius*.
2. Verbs signifying *to know*: Luke viii. 46, ἐγὼ γὰρ ἔγνω δύναμιν ἐξελθοῦσαν ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. Acts xxiv. 10, ἐκ πολλῶν ἐτόνῃ ὄντα σε κριτὴν τῷ ἔθνει τούτῳ ἐπιστάμενος. Also with ὅτι, as in Mark ii. 8, ἐπιγνούς ὅτι οὕτως διαλογίζονται. Heb. xii. 17, ἴστε γὰρ ὅτι ἀπεδοκιμάσθη.

Obs. 6. The verb *μανθάνειν* has been supposed to be thus constructed in 1 Tim. v. 13, ἀμα δι καὶ ἀργαὶ μανθάνουσι περιερχόμεναι τὰς οἰκίας, *being idle they learn to go about from house to house*. But, in this construction, *μανθάνειν* always signifies *to perceive*; as in Herod. i. 3, Lucian. D. D. xvi. 2. When it signifies *to learn*, it is followed by an *infinitive*, as in v. 4, of this same chapter. Hence the meaning is, *going about from house to house they learn to be idle*; εἶναι being understood: and this seems to accord most fitly with the ensuing clause. So Xen. Anab. iii. 2. 25, μάθωμεν ἀργαὶ ζῆν.

3. Verbs also which signify *to observe, to find, &c.* are, in like manner, constructed with a *participle*. Thus in Matt. i. 18, εὗρέθη ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχουσα. Mark vii. 30, εὗρε τὸ δαιμόνιον ἐξεληλυθός. Compare Luke. xvii. 18, John xi. 17.

Obs. 7. Verbs which signify *to remember*, take ὅτι or ὥς. So Matt. v. 23, ἵνα μνησθῇς ὅτι ὁ ἀδελφός σου ἔχει τὶ κατὰ σοῦ. Luke xxiv. 6, μνήσθητε, ὥς ἐλάβησιν ὑμῖν.

Obs. 8. After the above verbs, instead of the participle, the infinitive is sometimes found; as in Luke iv. 41, ἤδισαν τὸν Χριστὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι. 1 Cor. xi. 18, ἀκούω ἵτι σχίσματα ἐν ὑμῖν ὑπάρχειν. Heb. xi. 3, νοοῦμεν κατηρτίσθαι τοὺς αἰῶνας ῥήματι Θεοῦ.

4. Many *neuter* verbs also, signifying *to persevere, to desist, &c.*, are constructed with a *participle*. Thus in Matt. xi. 1, ἐτέλεσεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς διατάσων τοῖς δώδεκα. Luke vii. 45, οὐ διέλιπε καταφιλοῦσά μου τοὺς πόδας. Acts v. 42, οὐκ ἐπαύοντο διδάσκοντες. xii. 16, ἐπέμενε κρούων. 2 Thess. iii. 13, μὴ ἐκκακήσητε καλοποιοῦντες. Add Acts vi. 13, xxi. 32; and compare Rev. iv. 8.

Obs. 9. The part. ὦν is omitted after an adjective in Acts xxvii. 33, ἄσιτοι (ὄντι) διατελιῖτε, μηδὲν προσλαβόμενοι.

Obs. 10. The verb ἀρχισθαι, which in the Greek writers often takes the participle, is always in the New Testament followed by the *infinitive*.

Obs. 11. In many cases the governing verb may be expressed by an adverb in English; as in Matt. xvii. 25, προέφθασεν αὐτὸν λέγων, *first addressed him*: Heb. xiii. 2, ἔλαθόν τινες ξενίσαντες ἀγγέλους, *have entertained angels unawares*.

Obs. 12. To this class belongs καλῶς ποιεῖν, which is followed by a participle in Acts x. 33, σὺ καλῶς ἐποίησας παραγινόμενος, *you have done well to come*. Compare Phil. iv. 14, 2 Pet. i. 19, 3 John 6. Also many verbs which express an emotion of the mind; as *joy, fear, gratitude, &c.* Thus in Acts xvi. 34, ἠγαλλιάσατο πανοικὶ πιστιευκῶς τῷ Θεῷ. 1 Cor. xiv. 18, εὐχαριστῶ τῷ Θεῷ μου, γλώσσῃς λαλῶν. 2 Pet. ii. 10, δόξας οὐ τρέμουσι βλασφημοῦντες. Elsewhere with ὅτι, as in Luke x. 20, μὴ χαίριτε, ὅτι τὰ πνεύματα ὑμῶν ὑποτάσσονται.¹

5. Various circumstances, either *preparatory, accessory, or collateral* to the principal action, may be expressed by a participle; and in the New Testament, the following observations may deserve attention.

Obs. 13. Several *participles* are frequently used in one proposition, without the intervention of a *copula*; as in Matt. xxviii. 2, ἀγγιλος καταβὰς ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, προσελθὼν ἀπικύλισε τὸν λίθον. Luke ix. 16, λαβὼν δὲ τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους καὶ τοὺς δύο ἰχθύας, ἀναβλίσψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν, εὐλόγησεν αὐτούς. Add Mark i. 41, viii. 6, Luke v. 12, 19, xvi. 23, xxiii. 48, Acts v. 5, xxi. 2, xxv. 6. Compare Xen. Ephes. iii. 5, Plat. Rep. ii. p. 366. A, Gorg. p. 471. B, Strab. iii. 165, Polyæn. v. 33. 4, Lucian. Asin. 18, Alex. 19, Alciph. iii. 43. Sometimes one or more *participles* are *before* the leading verb, and others *after it*; as in Mark vi. 2, πολλοὶ ἀκούοντες ἐξεπλήσσοντο, λέγοντες, κ. τ. λ. Luke iv. 35, ῥίψαν αὐτὸν τὸ δαιμόνιον εἰς τὸ μίσην ἐξῆλθεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ, μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτόν. Add Luke x. 30, Acts xiv. 19, Heb. xii. 1, 2; and compare Lucian. Philops. 24, Peregr. 25. It should seem that the omission or insertion of the *copula* indicates respectively a somewhat closer or less immediate connexion with the action of the *finite verb*. See Mark v. 25—27.²

Obs. 14. A sentence is frequently carried forward by means of *participles*; more especially when the idea expressed by the *participles* is collateral with that expressed by the *verb*. At the same time, though *finite verbs* might have been employed throughout, the *participles* will generally support their appropriate character, or the places admit of another explanation. Thus in Rom. v. 10, πολλῶ μᾶλλον καταλλαγίνετε σωθήσομεθα· οὐ μόνον δὲ, ἀλλὰ καὶ καυχώμενοι κ. τ. λ. Here καυχώμενοι may either be connected with καταλλαγίνετε, or the auxiliary ἴσμεν supplied (*Obs. 16*). So 2 Cor. vii. 5, οὐδεμίαν ἰσχυκιν ἄνισιν ἡ σὰρξ ἡμῶν, ἀλλ' ἐν παντὶ θλιβόμενοι. Eph. v. 18, πληροῦσθε ἐν πνεύματι, λαλοῦντες ἑαυτοῖς κ. τ. λ. Here this and the succeeding *participles* depend upon πληροῦσθε. 2 Pet. ii. 1, ψευδοδιδάσκαλοι, οἵτινες παρεισάξουσιν αἰρέσεις ἀπωλείας, καὶ τὸν ἀγορεύσαντα αὐτοὺς διαπότῃν ἀρνούμενοι, ἐπάγοντες ἑαυτοῖς ταχινὴν ἀπώλειαν. St. Paul indeed constantly arranges *participle* after *participle* in this manner; for instances of which, see 2 Cor. iv. 7, 10, Eph. v. 19, 22, 1 Thess. ii. 14, 16, 2 Tim. i. 9, 10, Tit. ii. 12, 13. With respect to other passages, which have

¹ Winer, § 46, 1. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 73, 1. Glass. Phil. Sacr. p. 358. Hermann ad Viger. p. 771.

² Winer, § 46, 3. Heindorf ad Plat. Protag. p. 562. Stallbaum ad Plat. Euthyphr. p. 27. Apol. p. 46. Bornemann ad Xen. Anab. iii. 1. 13. Boissonade ad Aristæn. p. 257. Jacob ad Lucian Toxar. p. 43. Hermann ad Soph. Œd. C. p. 43.

been referred to this head, Mark xii. 5, seems to be *elliptical*; 2 Cor. v. 6, is an *anacoluthon*, in 2 Cor. iv. 13, ἔχοντες depends upon πιστεύοντες, from which it is separated by a parenthesis; 2 Cor. v. 12 is a case in point: in 2 Cor. viii. 3, it is not necessary to supply ἦσαν, but the construction is αἰθαλίνοι ἱεροὺς ἰδουκαί; in 2 Cor. viii. 20, σπυλλομένοις refers to συντρέψαν; in Heb. vi. 8, ἐκφράσσα is not put for ἐκφράξω, but ἐστὶ must be supplied with ἀδοκίμος καὶ κατάρσας ἰγγύς; and in 2 Pet. iii. 5, συνεστῶσα is an epithet of γῆ.¹

Obs. 15. Frequently the verb and the participle might be interchanged without affecting the sense. Thus in Acts x. 33, καλῶς ἰσχυσας παραγινόμενος might have been περιγίνου καλῶς ποιῶν. In like manner the Apostle might have written in 1 Tim. i. 12, πιστοὶ με ἠγασάμενος, ἔθιστα εἰς διακονίαν.

Obs. 16. Participles, for the most part of the *present* tense, are frequently joined with a *verb substantive*, and employed as *finite* verbs. It may be that an idea of *continuance* is thus conveyed; though in all probability the idiom is nothing more than a simple circumlocution. Thus in Mark i. 4, γίνεται Ἰωάννης βαπτίζων. xii. 25, οἱ ἀστέρες τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἰσίσαι ἐκπίπτοντες, followed in the next clause by the *finite* verb καλυφθήσονται. xv. 43, αὐτὸς ἦν προσδεχόμενος τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. Luke i. 21, ὃς ἔλας προσδοκῶν τὸν Ζαχαρίαν. iv. 31, ἦν διδάσκων αὐτούς. xxiv. 32, οὐχὶ ἡ καρδία ἡμῶν πειρομένη ἦν ἐν ἡμῖν; Acts viii. 23, ἦν τε ὑποστρέφων, καὶ καθήμενος ἐπὶ τοῦ ὄρματος αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκηλύσσει. Add Matt. vii. 29, xix. 22, Mark ii. 18, ix. 4, x. 22, xiv. 34. Luke i. 20, v. 19. Sometimes the *participle* is used alone, with the auxiliary verb understood; as in Acts xxi. 5, ἰρόντες γὰρ τὸν ἄνδρα τοῦτον, σελ. ἰσμέν. Rom. ix. 28, λόγοι γὰρ συντελῶν καὶ συντέμνων, σελ. ἰστί. 1 Pet. ii. 18, οἱ οἰκίται, ὑποτασσόμενοι εἰς, δισπότης, σελ. ἰστί. 2 Pet. i. 17, λαβὼν γὰρ παρὰ Θεοῦ τμήν, σελ. ἦν. To this head, however, are not to be referred a variety of passages, in which the *verb substantive* is to be taken independently; such as Mark v. 5, ἐν ταῖς μνήμασιν ἦν, προΐσκει, καὶ κατακόσταν ἱερὸν λίθους. Luke ii. 8, ποιμίνης ἦσαν ἐν τῇ χώρα σὴ αὐτῇ, ἀγρυπνοῦντες, καὶ φυλάσσοντες κ. τ. λ. vii. 8, ἐγὼ ἄνθρωπος εἰμι ὑπὸ ἰουδαίων τασσόμενος. See also Mark x. 32, xiv. 4, 49, James i. 17; and compare Jerem. ii. 6, v. 5, 11. Neither is it necessary to supply the *verb substantive* in *proverbs*, *maxims*, and *citations*; as in 1 Cor. iii. 19, Heb. i. 7, 2 Pet. ii. 22. In Gal. iii. 5, τοῦτο ποιεῖ, not ἐστὶ, must be supplied.²

Obs. 17. The verb ἔχω forms a circumlocution by means of the participle in Luke xiv. 19, ἔρωτῶ σι, ἔχει με παρετημένον. But the expression is usually regarded as a *Latinism*. Thus Mart. Epigr. ii. 50, *Excusatum habeo me, rogo*.

Obs. 18. Sometimes a *participle* stands in connexion with a *finite* tense of the same verb, probably with a view to emphasis: as in Matt. xiii. 11, βλέπετε, βλέψιτε, καὶ οὐ μὴ ἴδῃτε. Acts vii. 34, Ἰδὼν ἰδὼν. Heb. vi. 14, ἡ μὲν εὐλογῶν εὐλογῆσαι, καὶ πληθύνων πληθύνῃ σι. A like usage is found in the best Greek writers. See also Arrian. Ind. iv. 15, Lucian. D. M. iv. 3, xxviii. 1. Since, however, the above passages are exclusively Old Testament citations (Gen. xxii. 16, Exod. iii. 7, Isa. vi. 9), and the construction corresponds with the Hebrew infinitive absolute, it may probably be more accurately referred to that source. The LXX abounds with similar examples. See Gen. xviii. 18, xxvii. 28, xxxvii. 8, 10, xliii. 6, Judg. i. 27, iv. 9, vii. 19, xi. 25, xv. 16, Ruth ii. 16, 1 Sam. xiv. 28, 1 Macc. v. 40, *et alibi*.³

Obs. 19. It has already been seen that *participles*, when they have the *article*,

¹ Winer, § 46, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 73, 6. Hermann ad Viger. p. 776. Bornemann ad Xen. Conviv. p. 146. Doederlin. ad Soph. Œd. C. p. 593.

² Winer, § 46, 8. Alt, § 73, 2. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 597. Boissanade ad Philostr. 660. et ad Nicet. p. 81.

³ Winer, § 46, 7. Alt, § 73, 3. Georg. Vind. 196. Lobeck ad Soph. Aj. p. 379.

are equivalent to *substantives* (§ 28. 4); and in this case it is to be observed that, like *substantives*, they may have a *gen.* dependent upon them: as in 1 Cor. vii. 35, τοῦτο δὲ πρὸς τὸ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν σύμφερον λέγω. So Heb. xii. 10. In this acceptation they are also followed by the cases which their verbs govern. Thus in Gal. i. 23, ὁ διώκων ἡμᾶς ποτε, *our former persecutor*. Compare Luke viii. 3, xxi. 4, John i. 33, Acts ix. 21, &c.¹

Obs. 20. When not employed as a substantive, the participle with the article is to be rendered by *is qui*; or, in English, *one who, those who*. Thus in Matt. xiv. 21, οἱ ἐσθίωντες, *those who had eaten*: James v. 11, μακαρίζομεν τοὺς ὑπομένοντας, *those who endure*: Rev. xv. 2, ἰδὼν τοὺς νικῶντας ἐκ τοῦ θηρίου, *those who had prevailed over the beast*.

Obs. 21. It will be remarked that, in the above examples, *participles* of the *present* tense are employed, for the most part, in a *præterite* signification; and it has been affirmed by many grammarians, that, in the New Testament and the LXX, the *present participle* is used indiscriminately, according to the Hebrew idiom, to express either a *past, present, or future* action. To a certain extent, this is unquestionably true; but the assertion is still to be received with considerable limitation. Frequently indeed the *present* is used in the sense of the *imperfect*, and connected with a *past* tense; but it is chiefly in *narrations*, and when something is represented to have taken place *cotemporaneously* with the action indicated by the principal verb. Thus in Acts vii. 26, ὥφθη αὐτοῖς μαχομένοις. xxv. 2, παρικόλουν αὐτὸν, αἰτούμενοι χάριν κατ' αὐτοῦ, &c. &c. Heb. xi. 22, Ἰωσήφ τελευτῶν ἐμνημόνευσε. 1 Pet. i. 10, περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας ἐξεζήτησαν καὶ ἐξηρῶνυσαν προφῆται, ἐρευνῶντες, &c. &c. Rev. xv. 1, ἰδὼν ἁγγέλους ἰστὰ ἔχοντας πλῆγας ἰστὰ. Add Matt. xiv. 21, Luke v. 18, Acts xviii. 15, xxi. 16, Heb. xi. 21, 22, *et alibi*. The *participle ὢν*, since *εἰμί* has no *perfect participle*, is particularly common in a *past* sense. So Luke xxiv. 44, John i. 18, 49, v. 13, ix. 25, xi. 31, xxi. 11, Acts vii. 2, xi. 1, xviii. 24, 2 Cor. viii. 9. For the *future* the *present* is used, when a *future* event is, from its *certainly* or *proximity*, mentally regarded as *present*, or when that which is newly commenced is to be continued. Such a case is Matt. xxvi. 28, τοῦτο τὸ αἷμά μου, τὸ περὶ πολλῶν ἐκχυνόμενον, unless perhaps the allusion is to the *symbols* of bread and wine then actually present before them. Compare Luke xxii. 19, 1 Cor. xi. 24. A *future* sense is, however, distinctly marked in Acts xxi. 3, κατήχθημεν εἰς Τύρον· ἐκίσει γὰρ ἦν τὸ πλοῖον ἀποφορτίζομεν τὸν γόμον. 2 Pet. iii. 11, τούτων οὖν πάντων λυομένων. In 2 Pet. ii. 4, the MSS. vary between *τηρουμένους* and *τετηρημένους*. The *present participle* is employed in its proper acceptation in Rom. iv. 4, Gal. vi. 13, Eph. iv. 28, James iii. 6, v. 11, *et alibi*.

Obs. 22. Between the *aorist* and *perfect* there is the usual distinction, that the former denotes an act *complete* but *transient*; and the latter a *permanent result*. The difference is marked in Acts ix. 21, οὐχ οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ πορθέσας ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμ τοὺς ἐπικαλουμένους τὸ ὄνομα τοῦτο, καὶ ἄρτι εἰς τοῦτο ἐληλύθει, ἵνα διδιδόμενος αὐτοὺς ἀγάγῃ ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς; Compare also John xix. 35, Acts xxii. 3, Rom. viii. 11, xvi. 22, Heb. ii. 9, 1 Pet. i. 23, ii. 4, Rev. ix. 1. It is generally supposed to be in conformity with the Hebrew idiom that the *part. perf. pass.* is used in the sense of the Latin future in *dus*; as in Gal. ii. 11, ὅτι κατιγνωσμένος ἦν, *because he was to be blamed, i. e. worthy of blame*. Compare Rev. xxi. 8. Similar instances, however, have been adduced from the later Greek writers.²

¹ Winer, § 46, 6. Alt, § 73, 4. a. Schæfer ad Greg. Cor. p. 139.

² Winer, § 46, 5. Alt, Grani. N. T. § 73, 4. 5. Elsner ad Gal. ii. 11.

§ 61.—*Casus Absoluti*. (BUTTM. § 145.)

1. If instead of depending upon the principal verb, the *participle* has a subject of its own, it is properly put with this subject *absolutely* in the genitive; being chiefly used to indicate a *time*, or assign a *cause*. Thus in Matt. ii. 1, τοῦ δὲ Ἰησοῦ γεννηθέντος, ἰδοὺ, μάγοι ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν παρεγένοντο κ. τ. λ., *when Jesus was born*, &c. Acts xxiv. 10, ἀπεκρίθη δὲ ὁ Παῦλος, νεύσαντος αὐτῷ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος λέγειν. There are, however, many instances in the New Testament where the *genitive absolute* is used, when the subject is the same with that of the principal proposition; as in Mark x. 17, ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ εἰς ὁδόν, προσεδραμὼν εἰς ἐπηρώτα αὐτόν. So Mark xi. 27, Luke xvii. 12, xviii. 40, xxii. 10, 53, xxiv. 5, Acts xxi. 17. For examples of either usage in the LXX. and later Greek writers, see Gen. xlv. 4, Exod. iv. 21, xiv. 18, Polyb. iv. 49. 1, Plutarch ii. p. 845, Heliod. Æth. ii. 30, 113.¹

2. Instead of the *gen.* is frequently used,

1. The *nominative absolute*, which stands without a *finite verb*, and the sentence passes into another construction, of a different form from that which it had been the writer's first intention to adopt. Matt. xii. 36, πᾶν ῥῆμα ἄργον, ὃ ἐὰν λαλήλωσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι, ἀποδώσουσι περὶ αὐτοῦ. Luke xiii. 4, ἐκεῖνοι, ἐφ' οὓς ἔπεσεν ὁ πύργος, δοκεῖτε ὅτι οὗτοι κ. τ. λ.; John vii. 38, ὁ πιστεύων εἰς ἐμὲ, ποταμοὶ ῥέουσιν κ. τ. λ.² Acts vii. 40, ὁ γὰρ Μωϋσῆς οὗτος, οὐκ οἶδαμεν, τί γέγονεν αὐτῷ. Add Matt. x. 32, Mark ix. 20, Luke xii. 10, Acts xx. 3, Rom. viii. 3, Gal. i. 20, Rev. ii. 26, iii. 12, 21, *et alibi*; and compare Dio Chrysost. ix. 124, Philostr. V. Apoll. vii. 16.³

Obs. 1. The *nom.* is used absolutely in an exclamation in Rom. vii. 24, *καλαί-πωρος ἐγὼ ἄνθρωπος!* To this head Winer refers Mark xii. 40, Luke xii. 20, Phil. iii. 19. The first and last of those passages, however, are cases of *anacoluthon* (§ 69. ii.); and in Luke xii. 20, the *nom.* is put for the *voc.* Some MSS. indeed read *ἄφρον.*

2. The *dative absolute*, as in Matt. viii. 1, καταβάντι δὲ αὐτῷ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρους, ἠκολούθησαν αὐτῷ ὄχλοι πολλοί. So in vv. 5, 23, ix. 27, xxi. 23.

¹ Winer, § 30, 8. *Obs.* Poppo ad Thucyd. p. 119. Schæfer ad Apoll. Rhod. ii. p. 171.

² Some would repeat *πινίτω* from the last sentence, as the verb to which ὁ πιστεύων is referable; but this impedes the sense. See Lampe and Kuinoel *ad loc.*

³ Winer, § 28, 3.

Obs. 2. It has been urged, however, and with some appearance of reason, that these are not to be taken as *cases absolute*, but that the second pronoun is *redundant*, as in Matt. iv. 16, John xv. 2, *et alibi*. So also in Xen. Cyr. i. 3. 15, *πυράσσομαι τῷ παππᾷ, ἀγαθῶν ἱππίων κράτιστος ὢν ἱππιὺς, συμμαχιῶν αὐτῷ*.¹ See § 45. 7. *Obs. 13. 2.*

3. The *accusative absolute*; as in Acts xxvi. 2, *ἡγημαὶ ἑμαυτὸν μακαρίον, μέλλων ἀπολογεῖσθαι ἐπὶ σοῦ σήμερον· μάλιστα γνώστην ὄντα σε πάντων κατὰ Ἰουδαίους ἔθῶν τε καὶ ζητημάτων, because you are well informed, &c.*

Obs. 3. To this head has also been referred Luke xxiv. 46, *οὕτως ἴδι παθεῖν τὸν Χριστὸν, καὶ κηρυχθῆναι ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι αὐτοῦ μετάνοιαν καὶ ἄφεισιν ἁμαρτιῶν εἰς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, ἀρχάμενον ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλήμ*. But *ἀρχάμενον* should rather be taken as an *impersonal participle*, applied in the nominative absolute, like *παρίχον, δέον, ἰζόν, παρὸν, &c.* It may then be rendered, *a beginning being made, or so as to begin*; and the very same expression is used in the same manner in Herod. iii. 91. Compare also Joseph. B. J. i. 11. 2, and 24. 7. Some have also explained Eph. i. 18, as an *accusative absolute*, but it is an *apposition*; or *ἵνα δόξη* is to be repeated from the preceding verse.²

§ 62.—Of the Particles. (BUTTM. § 146.)

1. The Particles are *Conjunctions, Adverbs, and Prepositions*. With respect to the first it may be observed, that, as the same thought may frequently be differently expressed, it is advisable to be cautious in assigning to one conjunction the sense of another, without a due consideration of the manner in which the sentence is expressed. The alleged interchange of these parts of speech with each other will thus frequently appear to be without foundation; and their usage in the New Testament be found to depend, with very few exceptions, upon strict grammatical principles. From the variety of modes by which the thoughts of the mind, expressed in words and sentences, may be connected or separated, the conjunctions admit of various combinations, in which their appropriate meaning is nevertheless sufficiently discernible. The most remarkable usages will be seen in § 67.

2. It is unnecessary to adduce examples of each individual *adverb* employed in the New Testament. Their use and their meaning, except in some of the more remote significations, are the same as in classical Greek; nor is the *neuter* of the *adjective*,

¹ Winer, § 31, 6. *Obs. 3.* Alt, § 29. 7. Kuinoel ad Matt. viii. 1.

² Winer, § 32, 7. Alt, § 30. 4. Hermann ad Viger. p. 341. Raphel. and Kuinoel on Luke xxiv. 46.

which the later writers so frequently employ in an *adverbial* sense, particularly conspicuous. *Adverbs*, formed from *adjectives* by means of the termination *ως*, prevail to a much greater extent, as they do also in the LXX and the later writers generally. It may also be remarked, with respect to the particle *ἐν*, that the peculiar niceties of its construction are only to be found in the more perfect specimens of the language; and its use throughout the New Testament is exceedingly limited. In treating of the moods, its import and application have been abundantly illustrated. Certain idioms, which have an *adverbial* signification, have also been considered in their proper places: such as those effected by adjectives expressive of time (§ 25, *Obs.* 14.); by *φθάνω*, *λατύνω*, &c. (§ 60, *Obs.* 11.); and by *finite* verbs followed by an infinitive (§ 58, *Obs.* 7.). See also § 63. 3. *Obs.* 6. A few additional observations remain to be made.

3. The following *adverbial prepositions* govern a *gen.* in the New Testament.—*ἄνευ*, *without*, 1 Pet. iii. 10.—*ἄχρι* and *μέχρι*, of *place* and *time*, as *far as*, *until*; Matt. xiii. 30, Acts xi. 5, Rom. v. 13, xv. 19. Hence the Elliptical phrase *ἄχρις οὗ*, *until*, *whilst*, in Mark xiii. 30, Acts vii. 18, xxvii. 33, Gal. iii. 19, Heb. iii. 13.—*ἐγγύς*, *near*, John iii. 23, vi. 19, Heb. vi. 8, viii. 13.—*ἔμπροσθεν*, *before*, with reference to *place*, in Matt. v. 24; *in the presence of*, Matt. vi. 1. See also Matt. xxiii. 13, xxvii. 11, Luke xiv. 2, Acts xviii. 17. It denotes *precedence*, either of *time* or *dignity*, probably the former, in John i. 16, 27, 30, *ἔμπροσθεν μου γέγονεν*.¹—*ἐναντί*, *ἐναντίον*, *ἐνώπιον*, *before*, *in the presence of*, Mark ii. 12, Luke i. 8, vii. 7, xx. 26, Acts vii. 10, viii. 32, 1 Cor. i. 29.—*ἐνεκα* or *ἐνεκεν*, *on account of*, Luke iv. 18, Acts xxv. 31, Rom. viii. 36. In the same sense, *χαριν* is sometimes used; as in Gal. iii. 19.—*ἐπάνω*, *above*; of *place*, *price*, and *dignity*, Matt. xxi. 7, Mark xiv. 6, Luke xix. 17, 18.—*ἕως*, *as far as*, of *place*, Matt. xxiv. 21, 31, xxvi. 58, Acts xi. 22, xvii. 15, 23; and *until*, of *time*, Matt. ii. 15, xxvi. 27, xxvii. 45, 61. Hence the phrase *ἕως οὗ*, *scil.* *χρόνου*, in Matt. i. 25, and elsewhere.—*ὀπίσθεν*, *behind*, Matt. xv. 23, Luke xxiii. 26.—*ὀπίσω*, *behind*, *after*, of *place*, in Matt. iv. 10, 19, x. 38, Luke xxi. 8, Acts v. 37, Rev. i. 10; *after*, of *time*, in Matt. iii. 11, John i. 15, 27, 30. Compare Nehem. xiii. 19, Dan. ii. 19,

¹ See Lampe, Tittman, Kinnock, and other Interp. *ad loc.*

LXX.—πλησίον, *near*, John iv. 5. So in Deut. xi. 30, Josh. xv. 46, xix. 45, LXX.

Obs. 1. With reference to *place*, the adverb ἔως is seldom used except by the later writers. The LXX usually add a *prep.*; as in Gen. xxxviii. 1. ἔως πρὸς ἄνδραπὸν τῆς. Levit. xxiii. 14, ἔως εἰς τὴν ἡμέραν. So in Luke xxiv. 50, ἔως εἰς Βηθανίαν. Compare 1 Macc. ii. 58, Polyb. ii. 52. 7, Diod. Sic. i. 27. Sometimes, however, in the LXX, it governs a *gen.*; as in Isai. xxxviii. 1, ἔως θανάτου. So in Exod. xvi. 28, Numb. xiv. 11, 2 Sam. vii. 18, and elsewhere.¹

4. Besides *adverbs* which govern a *genitive* there are two, ἅμα and παραπλησίον, which govern a *dative*. Matt. xiii. 29, ἅμα αὐτοῖς. Phil. ii. 27, παραπλησίον θανάτῳ.

Obs. 2. The former of these is joined with the *preposition* σὺν in 1 Thess. iv. 17, v. 10. Elsewhere it is a simple adverb; as in Acts xxiv. 26, xxvii. 40, Rom. iii. 12, Col. iv. 3, 1 Tim. v. 13, Philem. 22.

5. The adverbs of place ἐκεῖ, ποῦ, ὅπου, which properly indicate *rest*, are not unfrequently joined in the New Testament with *verbs* of *motion*; as in Matt. ii. 22, ἐφοβήθη ἐκεῖ ἀπελθεῖν, for ἐκεῖσε. John iii. 8, ποῦ ὑπάγει, for ποῖ, which does not occur in the New Testament. Again in John viii. 21, ὅπου ἐγὼ ὑπάγω. xxi. 18, οἶσε σε ὅπου οὐ θέλεις, where ἐκεῖσε is understood; and so in Matt. xxv. 24. See above § 59. 1. *Obs. 2.* Add Matt. xvii. 20, Luke xii. 18, xxi. 2, John vii. 3, viii. 14, xviii. 3, Rom. xv. 24, Heb. vi. 20.

Obs. 3. In John xi. 34, ποῦ τεθείκατε αὐτὸν, the adverb bears its proper import. On the other hand ἐκῆ is once used in the place of ἐκεῖ in Acts xxii. 5, ἄξων καὶ τοὺς ἐκῆσι ὄντας. So in Hippocrates: οἱ ἐκῆσι οἰκίοντες.²

Obs. 4. As *adjectives* are sometimes used for *adverbs*, so it has been supposed, on the other hand, that *adverbs* are put for *adjectives*; as in Matt. i. 18, τοῦ δὲ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἡ γέννησις οὕτως ἦν. xix. 10, εἰ οὕτως ἐστὶν ἡ αἰτία. And so in Matt. xxiv. 39, Rom. iv. 18, 1 Pet. ii. 15. In these passages, however, οὕτως ἐστὶ is merely a phrase of equal import with οὕτως ἔχει, which occurs in Acts vii. 1, xii. 15, *et alibi*. Yet more unreasonable is it to render μᾶλλον as an adjective, *greater*, instead of construing it with the verb, in Matt. xxvii. 24, μᾶλλον θόρυβος γίνεται. See also Acts xxii. 2, Phil. i. 12.³

§ 63.—Of the Prepositions. (BUTTM. § 147.)

1. A *Preposition* is a particle which is intended to designate the relations existing between one thing and another, or rather to represent the relative situation and condition of things, which the different cases are of themselves incompetent to express.

¹ Passov. Lex. in v.

² Winer, § 58, 7. Alt, 82. 7. Lobeck ad Phryn. pp. 43, 127. Hermann ad Viger. p. 790. Stallbaum ad Plat. Euthyphr. pp. 95, sqq.

³ Winer, § 58, 2. Alt, § 82, 9. Ast ad Plat. p. 371. Reitz ad Lucian. T. vii. p. 137. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 426.

The many important relations, which each case is adapted to indicate, have been already pointed out; and it has been seen that many or most of them, by the later writers more particularly, are often more distinctly marked through the medium of a *preposition*. Such *preposition* must, in the very nature of things, have an obvious analogy with the *fundamental* import of the *case* which it governs; and nothing is more unphilosophical than the notion that *prepositions* and *cases* may be combined with each other *ad libitum*. Now it seems that the *original* idea involved in every *preposition* is that of *place*, and that they severally indicate either a state of *rest* or a state of *motion*. Referred to the same basis, the cases used to express motion *to* or *from* a place are the *accusative* and the *genitive* respectively; whilst that which is *fixed* and *stationary* belongs to the *dative*; and it is according as the signification of each *preposition* is more extended and varied, that they are constructed, some with *one* case only, others with *two*, and others with all the *three*. Hence, though one *preposition* and its case may sometimes occur where another might have been expected, it will generally be found to be an anomaly in appearance rather than reality. An instance in point is Luke xi. 13, ὁ πατήρ ὁ ἐξ οὐρανοῦ δώσει πνεῦμα ἅγιον τοῖς αἰτοῦσιν αὐτοῦ. The parallel place has ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς (Matt. vii. 11); but in writing ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, the mind of St. Luke connected the expression more immediately with δώσει.

Obs. 1. To trace out the various senses of the *prepositions* is the business of the Lexicographer, but a few examples from the New Testament must be given in illustration of their construction, as connected with the fundamental import of each. It will be of course unnecessary to reproduce those usages, so frequent in the sacred writings, by which verbs, which in the earlier Greek authors govern the simple case, are followed by a *preposition*. It was natural that foreigners should endeavour to express any particular related with the greatest perspicuity; and the manner in which they have done so by the constant employment of *prepositions*, has been abundantly exemplified in the remarks upon the several cases.

2. Of those *prepositions*, which govern only *one* case, ἀντὶ, ἀπὸ, ἐκ, πρὸ, take the *genitive*.¹

Obs. 2. Ἀντὶ, *in return for, instead of*, denotes the *exchange* of one object for another, and therefore, as involving the idea of *removal from a place*, takes a *genitive*, expressive of *succession, price, retribution, &c.* Matt. ii. 22, Ἀρχιῆς βασιλὴν ἀντὶ Ἡρώδου. v. 38, ἐφθαλμὸν ἀντὶ ἐφθαλμοῦ, καὶ ὄδον ἀντὶ ὁδοῦ. xxi. 24, ἵνα οὐ ψυχὴ αὐτοῦ λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν. Rom. xii. 17, μηδὲν κακὸν ἀντὶ κακοῦ ποιεῖν.

¹ Winer, § 51. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 77. Wahl and Passov. Lex. in vv. ἀντὶ, ἀπὸ, &c.

Heb. xii. 16, ἀντὶ βρώσιος μῆς ἀπὸδοτε τὰ πρωτοτόκια αὐτοῦ. So Matt. xvii. 27, Mark x. 45, Luke xi. 11, 1 Cor. xi. 15, 1 Thess. v. 15, Heb. xii. 2, James iv. 15, 1 Pet. iii. 9. With this notion of *exchange* are connected the forms ἀνθ' ὧν, *because, wherefore*, in Luke i. 20, xii. 3, Acts xii. 23, and elsewhere; and ἀντὶ τούτου, *therefore*, in Eph. v. 31. There is considerable doubt as to the import of the expression χάριν ἀντὶ χάριτος in John i. 16. Some would render it *grace added in the place of grace* already given; i. e. an uninterrupted supply of grace; but perhaps the best interpretation is that which repeats αὐτοῦ after χάριτος, so that the sense will be, *We Christians have received a needful supply of grace instead of, and answerable to, the full measure of the grace of Christ.*¹

Obs. 3. Ἀπὸ, *from*, denoting the *separation* of one object from another with which it was *externally* connected; as in Matt. xxvii. 2, ἀπικύλισι τὸν λίθον ἀπὸ τῆς θύρας. It indicates therefore *departure* from a *person, place, or vicinity*; as in Matt. iii. 16, ἀνίβη ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος. vii. 23, ἀποχωρεῖτε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. viii. 1, καταβάντι ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρους. xiv. 29, καταβὰς ἀπὸ τοῦ πλοίου, i. e. *from ship-board*. Acts xv. 38, ἀποστάντα ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἀπὸ Παμφυλίας, which would be incorrectly rendered, *departed from them* in *Pamphylia*; since not only a separation from *them*, but a departure from *Pamphylia* is also intended. Also *distance* from a place; as in John i. 18, ἰγγὺς τῶν Ἱεροσολυμῶν, ὡς ἀπὸ σταδίων δικάπιντι. *Freedom* from, or *deprivation* of, an object is also indicated; as in Matt. i. 21, σώσει τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν. Luke v. 34, ἴσθι ὑγιῆς ἀπὸ τῆς μάστιγός σου. Connected with these *local* significations are such expressions as the following:—Mark vii. 4, ἀπὸ ἀγορᾶς, *after market*. Acts xvi. 33, ἔλουσιν ἀπὸ τῶν πληγῶν. Rom. xv. 15, ἀπὸ μέρους, *in part, partly*. Transferred to the sense of *time*, it refers to a period, *since* which any thing has happened; as in Matt. ii. 16, Luke ii. 36, John xi. 53, Acts x. 30, Rom. i. 20. Hence the phrases ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, *originally*, in Matt. xix. 4; ἀφ' οὗ, *scil. χρόνου*, ἀφ' ἧς, *scil. ἡμέρας*, in Luke xxiii. 25, Acts xx. 18, xxiv. 11, 2 Pet. iii. 4, *et alibi*. In a *general* acceptation it denotes *origin, source, cause, means, &c.* Matt. iii. 4, ἵνδυμα ἀπὸ τριχῶν καμήλου. vii. 16, ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν αὐτῶν ἐπιγινώσκει αὐτούς. xiv. 26, ἀπὸ τοῦ φόβου ἔκραξαν. xvi. 21, πολλὰ παθὺν ἀπὸ τῶν περισβυτίων. Luke xxi. 30, ἀφ' ἑαυτῶν γινώσκετε. Acts x. 17, ἀπισταλμένοι ἀπὸ τοῦ Κορινθίου. xi. 19, διασπαρίντες ἀπὸ τῆς θλίψεως, *in consequence of the calamity*. xvii. 2, διελίγεται αὐταῖς ἀπὸ τῶν γραφῶν. See also Matt. xi. 19, xii. 38, Rom. i. 7, xiii. 1, 1 Cor. i. 3, 30, iv. 5, 2 Cor. i. 2, Phil. i. 28, James i. 17, Rev. xii. 6; and compare Gen. xxvi. 7, Judith ii. 20, LXX, Plat. Phæd. p. 83. B, Lucian. D. D. vi. 5. Analogous to this is the use of ἀπὸ in designating the inhabitants or natives of a place, or the members of a party; as in Matt. ii. 1, μάγοι ἀπ' ἀνατολῶν, *Eastern magi*. xxi. 11, ὁ προφήτης ὁ ἀπὸ Ναζαρέτ. Acts xvii. 13, οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Θισσαλονίκης Ἰουδαῖοι. Add Matt. xv. 1, xxvii. 57, Mark xv. 43, Luke xxiii. 51, John i. 45, xi. 1, xxi. 2, Heb. xiii. 24; and compare Polyb. v. 70. 8, Plut. Brut. § 2. Somewhat similar is 2 Tim. i. 3, χάριν ἔχω τῷ Θεῷ, ᾧ λατρεύω ἀπὸ προγόνων, *the God of my forefathers*. Compare Polyb. v. 55. 9.

Obs. 4. Ἐκ, or ἐξ, *from or out of*, differs from ἀπὸ in referring to such objects as proceed from the *interior* of another object; as in Matt. viii. 28, ἐκ τῶν μνημείων ἐξερχόμενοι. It also denotes removal *from any intimate connexion*; as in Rom. vii. 24, τίς με ῥύσεται ἐκ τοῦ σώματος τοῦ θανάτου τούτου. Less correctly, but not unfrequently, it is scarcely distinguishable from ἀπὸ, and the two are occasionally indeed employed indifferently. Compare Matt. iii. 16, xiv. 29, with Acts viii. 39, xxvii. 29. The forms ἐκ περισσοῦ, *abundantly* (Mark vi. 51), ἐκ δευτέρου, *secondly* (Matt. xxvi. 42), and ἐκ μέτρου, *moderately* (John iii. 34), are cognate with ἀπὸ μέρους. It will not therefore be expected that any line can be drawn between the two prepositions in

¹ See Campbell and Kuinoel *ad loc.*

their secondary import. Thus with reference to *time*, *ἐκ* signifies *after*, *since*, *just after*. Matt. xix. 20, *ἐκ νιότητός μου*. Acts ix. 33, *ἐκ τῶν ὀπτά*. So also the phrases *ἐκ ἀρχῆς*, *ἐκ τοῦ δίσπνου*, *ἐκ τούτου*, *ἐκ οὗ*, in John vi. 64, 66, xiii. 4, *et alibi*. In a general sense, it denotes *origin*, whether natural or spiritual, *cause*, *material*, *means*, &c. Matt. iii. 9, *ἐκ τῶν λίθων τούτων ἰγυῖραι τίνα*. Mark xii. 30, *ἀγαπήσεις Κύριον τὸν Θεὸν σου ἐκ ὅλης τῆς καρδίας σου*. John ii. 15, *πάντας φραγέλλων ἐκ σχηνίων*. So John viii. 44, Acts xix. 25, Rom. ii. 29, 1 Cor. ix. 14, 2 Cor. ii. 2. Add Matt. i. 3, 5, 6, xii. 33, xiii. 47, xxvii. 7, 29, Luke xii. 15, xvi. 9, John vii. 22, Acts xxviii. 3, Rom. i. 4, vi. 17, xiv. 23, 2 Cor. ix. 2, Gal. vi. 8, Eph. ii. 8, v. 30, vi. 6, 1 Thess. ii. 3, 1 Tim. i. 5, 1 John ii. 16, iii. 8, 10, Rev. viii. 11. Somewhat peculiar is Rev. xv. 2, *καθ' ἐκ τινος*, with which compare the Latin, *victoriam ferre ex aliquo*, Liv. viii. 8. It denotes also connexion with a sect or party; as Acts x. 45, *οἱ ἐκ περιτομῆς πρὸς τὸν Θεόν*. xv. 23, *ἀδελφοὶ τοῖς ἐκ Ἰσραὴλ*. Rom. iv. 14, *οἱ ἐκ νόμου*. Tit. ii. 8, *ὁ ἐκ ἰσχυρίας, καὶ γνώμης*. The significations of *ad*, *in*, *cum*, which have been assigned to it, are entirely inadmissible. In Matt. xx. 21, *ἐκ δεξιῶν* is *e dextra*, not *ad dextram*; for in a designation of relative place the mind passes *from* one object to another. So in 2 Cor. ii. 4, *ἐκ πολλῆς θλίψεως ἔγραψα*, the import is, that the Apostle wrote to them *out of* his state of distress, though undoubtedly he was *in* that state; and in 1 Tim. i. 5, *ἀγάπη ἐκ καθαρᾶς καρδίας* is *love proceeding from a pure heart*, not *love together with purity of heart*.¹

Obs. 5. *Πρὸ* signifies *before*, with reference to *place*; and thence denotes *priority of time*, and, in general, *superiority* and *preference*. Of *place*, in Matt. xi. 10, *ἐπεστέλλω τὸν ἄγγελόν μου πρὸ προσώπου μου*. Acts v. 23, *εὗρομεν φυλακὰς ἱσταντάς πρὸ τῶν θυρῶν*. Add Mark i. 2, Luke i. 78, ix. 52, x. i, Acts xii. 6, 14, xiv. 13; and compare Heliod. Æth. i. 11. 30. Of *time*, in John xvii. 24, *πρὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου*. Acts v. 36, *πρὸ γὰρ τούτων τῶν ἡμερῶν ἀνίστη Θιουδᾶς*. Add Matt. v. 12, viii. 29, John x. 8. Of *superiority*, in James v. 12, *πρὸ πάντων δι, μὴ ὀμνύετε*. See also 1 Pet. iv. 8; and compare Herodian. v. 4. 21. Sometimes there is a trajection in the use of this preposition; as in John xii. 1, *πρὸ ἑξ ἡμερῶν τοῦ πάσχα*, *six days before the passover*.² 2 Cor. xii. 2, *πρὸ ἑτῶν δεκατισσάρων*, *fourteen years ago*. So in Amos i. 1, LXX, *πρὸ δύο ἑτῶν τοῦ σεισμοῦ*. Joseph. Ant. xv. 1. 4, *πρὸ ἡμέρας μιᾶς τῆς ἱερτῆς*. See also Amos iv. 7, 2 Macc. xv. 36, Joseph. c. Apion, ii. 2.

3. The prepositions ἐν and σὺν govern the dative only.³

Obs. 6. *Ἐν*, *in*, denotes the place *in*, *upon*, *at*, or *near* which an object *remains*, and is therefore joined with the case of *rest*, the *dative*; as in Matt. iv. 16, *ὁ λαὸς ὁ καθήμενος ἐν σκότει*. ix. 35, *διδάσκων ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς*. xiii. 4, *κατοικοῦντας ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμ*. John iv. 20, *ἐν τούτῳ τῷ ὄρει προσικύνησαν*. Heb. i. 3, *ἐκάθισεν ἐν δεξιά*. Rev. iii. 21, *καθίσαι ἐν τῷ θρόνῳ*. See also Matt. i. 18, xii. 40, xvi. 27, Mark xii. 38, Luke vii. 52, John x. 23, xi. 20, Acts vii. 44, Rom. viii. 34, Heb. viii. 5, x. 12, Rev. iii. 4, 5, xi. 12. Hence, with reference to *persons*, it signifies *among*; as in Luke xvi. 15, *τὸ ἐν ἀνθρώποις ὑψηλόν*. Acts ii. 29, *τὸ μνημα αὐτοῦ ἵστιν ἐν ἡμῖν*. xxv. 6, *διατρίψας ἐν αὐτοῖς*. From this primary sense the following analogies are readily deducible:—(1) *Business in which one is employed*; as in Rom. i. 9, *ὃ λατρεύω ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ*. 1 Tim. iv. 15, *ἐν τούτοις ἴσθι*. (2) *Society to which one belongs*, or *matters in which one has a share*; as in Matt. xxiii. 30, *κοινωνοὶ ἐν τῷ αἵματι τῶν προφητῶν*. Acts viii. 21, *οὐκ ἵστί σοι μέρος ἐν τῷ λόγῳ τούτῳ*. (3) *Agency or ministry*, and also an *instrument*, in cases of intimate connexion between the act and the agency; as in Matt.

¹ See Schleusner and Wahl in v.

² Wetstein, Kypke, and Kuinoel ad l. c.

³ Winer, § 52, a. b. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 78. Poppo ad Xen. Cyrop. p. 195. Heindorf ad Plat. Cratyl. p. 71.

v. 13, *ἐν τίνι ἀλισθῆσθαι*, *wherewith shall it be salted*, i. e. how shall the savour be again fixed in it. vii. 2, *ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ μετρεῖται*, *with what measure*, within which the substance to be measured is contained, *ye mete*. ix. 34, *ἐν τῷ ἄρχοντι τῶν δαιμονίων ἐκβάλλει τὰ δαιμόνια*, *by the prince of the devils abiding in him*. Add Matt. vii. 6, Luke xxii. 49, James iii. 9, 1 Pet. ii. 16, Rev. vi. 8, xiv. 15, xvii. 16; and compare Gen. xli. 36, xlviii. 22, Exod. xiv. 21, xvi. 3, xvii. 5, 13, xix. 13, Josh. x. 35, Judg. iv. 16, vi. 34, xv. 13, 15, xvi. 7, xx. 16, 48, 1 Kings xii. 18, Ezr. i. 50, Nehem. i. 10, 3 Esdr. i. 38, Judith ii. 17, 19, v. 9, vi. 4, vii. 27, 1 Macc. iv. 15, v. 44, vi. 31, LXX, Aristot. Probl. xxx. 5, Hippocr. Aph. ii. 36. (4) State or condition of the mind, *innate* qualities or endowments, and other cognate ideas; as in Matt. xvi. 27, *ἔρχεσθαι ἐν τῇ δόξῃ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ*. Luke i. 17, *προελεύσεται ἐν πνεύματι καὶ δυνάμει Ἡλίου*. 1 Cor. ii. 4, *ὁ λόγος μου οὐκ (ἦν) ἐν πειθοῖς ἀνθρωπίνης σοφίας λόγοις, ἀλλ' ἐν ἀποδείξει πνεύματος καὶ δυνάμεως*. Eph. iv. 15, *ἀληθεύοντες ἐν ἀγάπῃ*. Add Matt. vi. 7, xvii. 21, xxii. 37, John xiii. 35, xvii. 10, Acts iv. 9, 10, xi. 14, xvii. 28, 31, Rom. v. 9, 1 Cor. vi. 2, xiv. 6, 21, Gal. iii. 12, Eph. iv. 14, vi. 10, Heb. i. 2, xiii. 9, James i. 25, *et alibi*. Some have supposed this signification to have been derived from that of the Hebrew prefix *ב*, which is constantly so employed; but the same usage is

found in the best Greek writers.¹ Hence it is that a noun in the dative with *ἐν* frequently supplies the place of an adjective; as in Luke iv. 32, *ἐν ἰξουσίᾳ ἦν ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ*. 2 Cor. xii. 2, *οἶδα ἄνθρωπον ἐν Χριστῷ*, *a Christian*. So in Gal. i. 22, Eph. ii. 21, 22, iii. 21, 1 Tim. ii. 7, 2 Tim. i. 13, Tit. iii. 5, 2 Pet. ii. 13. Sometimes the same mode of expression is to be taken adverbially; as in Matt. xxii. 16, *ἐν ἀληθείᾳ*, *truly, sincerely*. Mark xiv. 1, *ἐν δόλῳ*, *craftily*. Col. iv. 5, *ἐν σοφίᾳ*, *wisely*. Add John vii. 4, Acts xvii. 31, xxvi. 7, Eph. vi. 24, Heb. ix. 19, James i. 21, Rev. xviii. 1. Compare Judith i. 11, Ecclus. xviii. 9. An adverb is interchanged with this form in John vii. 10, *οὐ φανερῶς, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐν κρυπτῷ*. With reference to *time*, *ἐν* indicates the period *in, at, during, or within* which anything is done; as in Matt. ii. 1, *ἐν ἡμέραις Ἡρώδου τοῦ βασιλέως*. Mark xv. 29, *ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις οἰκοδομῶν*. John v. 7, *ἐν ᾧ (scil. χρόνῳ) ἔρχομαι*, *while I am coming*. 1 Cor. xv. 51, *ἀλλαγησόμεθα ἐν ἀτόμῳ, ἐν ῥιπῇ ὀφθαλμοῦ, ἐν τῇ ἰσχύϊ σάλπιγγι*, *in an instant, at the last trump*. Add Matt. iii. 1, xii. 2, Mark x. 37, xiii. 24, Luke xii. 1, xxii. 28, John ii. 19, 20, vii. 11, xxiii. 23, Acts viii. 33, xvii. 31, 1 John i. 28, Rev. xv. 1, xviii. 10; and compare Dan. xi. 20, Isai. xvi. 14, Diod. Sic. xx. 85, Ælian. V. H. i. 6.

Obs. 7. The primary import of *ἐν* and *ἐν* is so opposite, that the use of the former instead of the latter, as advocated by many commentators,² seems to be very doubtful; and indeed it will be found that the verbs implying *motion*, with which *ἐν* is sometimes found, generally involve the idea of *rest* also.³ Thus in Matt. xiv. 3, *ἔδωκεν αὐτὸν, καὶ ἔθηκε ἐν φυλακῇ*, *cast him into prison*, and retained him there: and a similar reason will obtain in Matt. ix. 31, Mark i. 16, Luke i. 17, vii. 17, xxiii. 42, John v. 4, Rom. i. 23, 2 Cor. xiv. 11, Rev. i. 9, xi. 11, and elsewhere. In many passages, which have been referred hither, the preposition is employed in its strictly appropriate sense; as in Mark v. 30, *ἰσιστραφεὶς ἐν τῷ ὄχλῳ*, *turning round among the multitude*. Compare Matt. iii. 9, x. 16, Acts xx. 19, Rom. xi. 17, 1 Thess. v. 12, *et alibi*. Many other passages also, which have been rendered without a due regard to the proper force of this preposition, may be easily ex-

¹ Gesen. Lex. and Noldii Concord. in v. Passov. Lex. in v. *ἐν*. Poppo ad Thucyd. i. 178.

² Glass. Phil. Sacr. p. 451. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 18. Schleusner and Bretschneider in v. Kuinoel and Rosenmuller *passim*.

³ Winer and Alt, *ubi supra*: Schulthess in the *New Theological Annals*, for March, 1827, p. 226. Beyer *de præpp. ἐν* and *ἐν* in *N. T. permutatione*.

plained upon similar principles. Some of these have been classed under their respective heads, to which may be added Luke ii. 27, ἦλθεν ἐν τῷ πνεύματι, not *he came by the spirit*, but *in the spirit*, i. e. in a state of inspiration, &c. So in Luke iv. 1, *et passim*. Again, John iv. 37, ἐν τούτῳ, *in this instance*: Acts viii. 33, ἐν τῇ ταπυνώσει αὐτοῦ ἡ κρίσις αὐτοῦ ἦρθην, *during the time of his humiliation*: Rom. ii. 20, τὴν μέρφωσιν τῆς γνώσεως καὶ τῆς ἀληθείας ἐν τῷ νόμῳ, *the system of true knowledge laid down in the Law*. 1 Cor. iv. 6, ἵνα ἐν ἡμῖν μάθῃτε, *that ye may learn in us*, i. e. by the example exhibited in our conduct. Here also may be mentioned the phrase γίνεσθαι ἐν ἑαυτῷ, *to be in one's right mind*, as distinguished from ἐλθεῖν εἰς ἑαυτὸν, *to come to one's senses*. Compare Luke xv. 17, Acts xii. 11. In 1 Cor. iv. 21, Heb. ix. 25, ἐν seems to have nearly the import of σὺν. Compare Xen. Cyrop. ii. 3. 14.¹

Obs. 8. Σὺν, *with, together with*, indicates *union, companionship*; as in Matt. xiv. 27, ἰκομισάμεν ἃν τὸ ἑμὸν σὺν τόκῳ, Mark viii. 34, προσκαλισάμενος τὸν ὄχλον σὺν ταῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, Luke xxiv. 21, σὺν πᾶσι ταυτοῖς, *besides all these things*. Acts v. 17, οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ, *his attendants, or colleagues*; xii. 9, οἱ σὺν ἡμοῖς ὄντες, *my companions*. Sometimes the idea of *assistance* is included; as in Acts xiv. 4, οἱ μὲν ἦσαν σὺν ταῖς Ἰουδαίσις οἱ δὲ σὺν τοῖς ἀποστόλοις, 1 Cor. v. 4, σὺν τῇ δυνάμει τοῦ Κυρίου. xv. 10, σὺν ἡμῖν δὲ, ἀλλὰ ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡ σὺν ἡμοῖς. In Luke i. 56, σὺν αὐτῇ means *at her house*; and is equivalent to the French, *chez elle*.

4. With the accusative alone, εἰς, and, in the New Testament, ἀνά, are used.²

Obs. 9. Εἰς, *to, into*, indicates *motion to an object*; and in this its primary *local* sense it occurs in Matt. ii. 11, ἐλθόντες εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν. iii. 10, εἰς πῦρ βάλλεσθαι, Luke viii. 8, ἔπισεν εἰς τὴν γῆν. Acts iv. 3, ἦθιντο εἰς τήρησιν. And so in Matt. ii. 13, 14, 20, 21, 22, iv. 1, 5, 8, *et alibi*. This idea of *direction to an object* is clearly preserved in the use of the preposition after verbs of *speaking*, and whenever the *aim* or *purport* of an action is intended. Thus in Matt. xviii. 15, ἵνα ἀμαρτήσῃ εἰς σὲ ὁ ἀδελφός σου. xxvi. 10, ἔργον καλὸν ἐργάσατο εἰς ἡμῖν. Mark iii. 29, ὃς δ' ἂν βλασφημήσῃ εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον. Luke xxii. 65, καὶ ἔτιρα πολλὰ βλασφημοῦντες ἔλεγον εἰς αὐτόν. John v. 45, εἰς ὃν ὑμεῖς ἠλπίζατε. 2 Cor. ii. 4, τὴν ἀγάπην ἣν ἔχω εἰς ὑμᾶς. Gal. iii. 27, εἰς Χριστὸν ἐβαπτίσθητε. Add Matt. xviii. 6, Luke xii. 10, xv. 18, 21, Acts vi. 11, i. 27, v. 8, 1 Cor. viii. 11, xvi. 1, 1 Pet. iv. 9; and compare Herodian. vi. 7, 11, vii. 10, Polyb. x. 3. 17. Hence it may frequently be rendered *in respect to*; as in Acts ii. 26, Δαβὶδ γὰρ λέγει εἰς αὐτόν. xxv. 20, ἀπορούμενος εἰς τὴν περὶ τούτου ζήτησιν. Rom. iv. 20, εἰς τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐ διεκρίθη τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ. Add Matt. vi. 34, Luke vii. 30, xii. 21, 2 Cor. ix. 13, Eph. v. 32, Heb. vii. 14; and compare 2 Sam. xi. 4, LXX. Diod. Sic xi. 50. Pausan. vi. 2, 4, x. 24. *Motion* is also clearly indicated in the following senses: Matt. xiii. 30, δέσσετε αὐτὰ εἰς δίσκας, *into bundles*: xxvii. 30, ἱμπτύσαντες εἰς αὐτόν, *upon him*: Mark xv. 38, ἐσχίσθη εἰς δύο, *into two parts*; Luke x. 36, ἐμπίσοντες εἰς τοὺς λῆστας, *amongst thieves*: John xi. 32, ἔπισεν εἰς τοὺς πόδας, *at his feet*, but with a motion forwards. The *design* intended, and the *event* produced, are also expressed by this preposition; as in Matt. xii. 41, μετινόησαν εἰς τὸ κήρυγμα Ἰωάν. xxvii. 7, ἠγόρασαν τὸν ἀγρὸν εἰς ταφὴν τοῖς ξεναῖς. Mark. i. 4, κηρύσσειν βάπτισμα μετανόας εἰς ἄφεσιν ἁμαρτιῶν. With reference *to time*, εἰς denotes of course a *future* period, *until*; as in Matt. x. 22, xxiv. 13, ὁ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος. xxi. 19, εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα.

¹ Hermann ad Viger. p. 858. Krebs. Obs. p. 26.

² Winer, § 53, a. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 79. Hermann ad Soph. Aj. p. 80. Gataker de N. T. Stylo, p. 180. Wahl de part. εἰ et præp. εἰς ap. N. T. script. usu et potestate, p. 59. Passov. Lex. in vv. εἰς and ἀνά.

for ever: Luke i. 50, εἰς γενιὰς γενιῶν. Acts iv. 3, εἰς τὴν αὔριον. It is used with a genitive, *subaud.* οἶκον or δώματα, in Acts ii. 27, 31. See § 44, 6. *Obs.* 19. Also with the name of a person, whose *house* is intended, in Acts xvi. 40, εἰσῆλθον εἰς τὴν Λυδίας, *into Lydia's house*. So, in Latin, Ter. Eun. iii. 5. 64, *Eamus ad me*.

Obs. 10. It is not that εἰς is used for ἐν, but the idea of *rest* and *motion* is combined, when εἰς is constructed with verbs which convey the former meaning; as in Matt. ii. 23, κατέκτισεν εἰς πόλιν, where many MSS. insert, and it should seem correctly, ἰλθὼν, as in Matt. iv. 13. Compare also John xx. 19, 26. More direct examples, in which, however, the idea of *previous motion* is included, are Mark ii. 1, εἰς αἰὼν ἔστι, where εἰσῆλθον εἰς Καπερναοὺμ immediately precedes. xiii. 3, καθεμίνου εἰς τὸ ὄρος. Acts ii. 31, οὐ κατελείφθη ἡ ψυχὴ αὐτοῦ εἰς ᾄδου. xviii. 21, διῷμι πάντως τὴν ἰερτὴν τὴν ἐρχομένην ποιῆσαι εἰς Ἱερουσόλυμα. xxi. 13, ἀποθανεῖν εἰς Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἰτοίμως ἔχω. See also Mark v. 14, Luke i. 20, xi. 7, John ix. 7, xx. 7, Acts vii. 4, viii. 23, 40, xix. 22; and compare Orph. Argon. 599. Ælian. V. H. vii. 12. Other passages, which have been referred to this head, do not belong to it; as Mark i. 9, ἑβαπτίσθη εἰς τὸν Ἰορδάνην, *he was baptized by immersion into the Jordan*. v. 34, ὑπαγε εἰς εἰρήνην, *ad salutem*: and so in Luke vii. 50, *et alibi passim*. Compare 1 Kings xx. 13, 2 Kings xv. 9, LXX. In John i. 18, ὁ ὢν εἰς τὸν κόλπον, is probably a Hebraism; and the expression in Acts vii. 53, εἰς διαταγὰς ἀγγέλων is clearly parallel with Gal. iii. 19, διαταγίττα δι' ἀγγέλων, but upon what grammatical principle, it is difficult to determine. Compare also Heb. ii. 2; and see § 47, 2. *Obs.* 5.

Obs. 11. Ἀνὰ, *in, through*, is sometimes joined with a dative in other writers, but with an accusative only in the New Testament. Thus in Matt. xiii. 25, ἔσπειρε ζιζάνια ἀνὰ μέσον τοῦ σίτου, *in the midst of, i. e. amongst, the wheat*: 1 Cor. xiv. 27, ἀνὰ μέρος, *in turn*. See also Mark vii. 31, 1 Cor. vi. 5, Rev. vii. 17. With a numeral expressed or understood, it implies *distribution*; as in Matt. xx. 9, 10, ἔλαβον ἀνὰ δηνάριον, *a penny each*: Luke ix. 3, ἀνὰ δύο χιτῶνας ἔχουν, *two coats apiece*. Compare Mark vi. 40, Luke ix. 14, x. 1. It is used adverbially without a case in Rev. xxi. 21, ἀνὰ εἷς ἕκαστος, *each one severally*. These are the only forms in which the preposition appears.

§ 64.

1. The Prepositions governing two cases are διὰ, κατὰ, ὑπὲρ, and, in the New Testament, μετὰ, περὶ, and ὑπό. They govern the *genitive* and the *accusative*.

Obs. 1. Διὰ, *through*, takes (1.) the *genitive*, inasmuch as, in a *local* sense, the idea of *passing through* includes that of *proceeding from*, and *passing out*. Mark xi. 16, οὐκ ἤφειεν ἵνα τις διενέγκῃ σκιῶς διὰ τοῦ ἱεροῦ. 1 Cor. iii. 15, αὐτὸς δὲ σωθήσεται, οὕτως δὲ ὡς διὰ πυρός. Heb. ix. 11, διὰ τῆς μεζέονος σκηνῆς εἰσῆλθον εἰς τὰ ἅγια. Hence, with reference to *time*, it denotes a period *throughout*, or *after* which an event took place; as in Luke v. 5, δι' ὅλης τῆς νυκτὸς κοπιάσαντες, οὐδὲν ἰλάβομεν. Gal. ii. 1, ἔπειτα, διὰ διακτισσάρων ἱτῶν, πάλιν ἀνέβην εἰς Ἱερουσόλυμα. See also Matt. xxvi. 61, Mark ii. 1, Acts i. 3, xxiv. 17, Heb. ii. 15. In a general sense, it denotes any *cause* whatsoever, whether *principal*, *ministerial*, or *instrumental*, through the *medium* of which an action *passes* to its accomplishment. Thus in Matt. i. 22, τὸ ῥηθὲν ὑπὸ τοῦ Κυρίου διὰ τοῦ προφήτου. John i. 3, πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἰγένετο. Acts iii. 16, ἡ πίστις ἡ δι' αὐτοῦ. 1 Cor. iii. 5, διάκονοι, δι' ὧν ἐπιστεύσατε. xvi. 3, δι' ἐπιστολῶν τούτους πέμψω, *by means of letters of recommendation, not with letters*: 2 Pet. i. 3, τοῦ καλίσαντος ἡμᾶς διὰ δόξης καὶ ἀρετῆς, *by his glorious goodness*. This last passage is rendered by Schleusner *qui vos ad religionem Christianam adduxit eo consilio, ut consequamini felicitatem*;

which cannot be correct, since the genitive never denotes a *final* cause.¹ For other examples see Mark vi. 2, xvi. 20, Luke i. 70, John i. 17, Acts iv. 16, v. 12, viii. 13, xv. 23, xviii. 9, xix. 26, xxi. 19, Rom. i. 5, iii. 20, iv. 13, v. 1, 2, 11, xi. 35, 1 Cor. i. 9, vi. 14, Gal. i. 1, Heb. ii. 10. Sometimes a *genitive* with *διὰ* is used *adverbially*; as in Heb. xii. 1, δι' ὑπομονῆς, *patiently*. Compare Luke viii. 4, Acts xv. 27, Rom. viii. 25, Heb. xiii. 22, 1 Pet. v. 12. (2.) With an *accusative*, *διὰ* denotes the *impulsive* or the *final* cause; and signifies *on account of*, *because of*; as in Matt. xxvii. 18, διὰ φθόνον παρίδωκαν αὐτόν. Mark ii. 27, τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἱγίηται, ὡς ἰ ἄνθρωπος διὰ τὸ σάββατον. Compare, for the *impulsive cause*, Mark ii. 4, John xi. 42, xii. 9, 30, Rom. iii. 25, iv. 23, 24, xi. 28, xiii. 5, 1 Cor. xi. 23, Heb. ii. 9. In some cases the *cause* and the *means* are so closely allied, that *διὰ* may be rendered *by means of*; as in 1 Cor. vii. 5, ἵνα μὴ πιράζῃ ὑμᾶς ὁ Σατανᾶς διὰ τὴν ἀκρασίαν ὑμῶν. Compare Xen. Mem. iii. 3. 15, Æschin. Dial. Socr. i. 2, Diog. L. vii. 1. 12, Longi Past. ii. p. 62.²

Obs. 2. Κατὰ, *down*, or *down upon*, signifies *descent from a higher place*; and therefore takes (1.) a *genitive*; as in Matt. viii. 32, ἔρμησι πᾶσα ἡ ἀγίλη τῶν χοίρων κατὰ τὸ κρημνοῦ εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν. Mark xiv. 3, κατίχην αὐτοῦ κατὰ τῆς κεφαλῆς, *down upon his head*; the flask being held over it. Compare 1 Cor. xi. 4. By an easy transition it indicates *hostility*; as in John xviii. 29, τίνα κατηγορίαν φέρετε κατὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον τούτου; *what accusation do ye bring down upon him*; i. e., against him? See also Matt. v. 11, 23, x. 35, xii. 14, 30, Mark ix. 40, John xix. 11, Acts xix. 16, xxv. 3, Jude 15; and compare Numb. xii. 1, xxi. 5, Job iv. 18, xxxi. 36, Wied. iv. 16, 2 Macc. ii. 27, LXX, Polyb. ix. 3. 10, Ælian. V. H. ii. 6, x. 6. Hence, perhaps, its use in *adjurations*; as in Matt. xxvi. 63, ἐπεκρίζω σε κατὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Compare 1 Cor. xv. 15, Heb. vi. 13. So likewise in 2 Chron. xxxvi. 13, Jerem. xlix. 13, Judith i. 12, LXX. Another sense is that of *diffusion*; as in Luke iv. 14, ὅπου ἐξῆλθε καθ' ὅλης τῆς περιχώρης, *throughout the whole district*. Add Luke xxiii. 5, Acts ix. 31. (2.) Since the notion *throughout* may be referred, not only to the point *from* which an object proceeds, but to that also *to* which it tends, this *local* sense belongs to κατὰ with an *accusative*; as in Luke viii. 39, καὶ ὅλην τὴν πόλιν κηρύσσων. Acts v. 15, κατὰ τὰς πλατείας ἐκφέρειν τοὺς ἀσθενεῖς, *along the streets*. So Luke ix. 6, x. 4, Acts viii. 1, 3, xi. 1. Nearly equivalent is the sense in Luke x. 33, ὁδεύων ἦλθε κατ' αὐτόν, *came to him*. Compare Acts xvi. 7. With reference to *time* it denotes the period *through* which an action passes; as in Matt. i. 19, κατ' ὄναρ, *during a dream*. So Gen. xx. 6, xxi. 11, LXX, Herodian. ii. 7. 6, Alciph. iii. 59, Ælian. V. H. i. 13. Again in Heb. iii. 8, κατὰ τὴν ἡμέραν τοῦ πειρασμοῦ. It denotes *at*, *on*, or *about*; as in Matt. xxvii. 15, καὶ ἱερτὴν, *at the feast*; Acts xiii. 27, κατὰ πᾶν σάββατον, *on every Sabbath*. Rom. ix. 9, κατὰ τὸν καιρὸν τούτου ἐλεύσομαι, *at or about this time*. Hence the formula κατὰ καιρὸν, *at a proper or seasonable time, in due time*, in Rom. v. 6, and elsewhere. From these significations the transition is easy to those of *correspondence*, *conformity*, *similarity*, and other cognate senses. Thus in Matt. xvi. 27, ἀποδώσει ἑκάστῳ κατὰ τὴν πράξιν αὐτοῦ. Luke i. 9, κατὰ τὸ ἔθος τῆς ἰσρατιῆς. ii. 22, κατὰ τὸν νόμον Μωσέως. John ii. 6, κατὰ τὸν καθαρισμόν τῶν Ἰουδαίων. Rom. iii. 5, κατὰ ἄνθρωπον λέγω. Gal. iv. 28, κατὰ Ἰσαάκ. Compare Job i. 8, ix. 32, xii. 3, xlii. 15, Eccles. x. 2, xxxvi. 23; and Lucian. Pisc. 6. 12, Plat. Apol. 1, Arrian. Exp. iii. 27. To these may be added Matt. xix. 3, κατὰ πᾶσαν αἰτίαν, *for every reason*; Rom. viii. 27, κατὰ Θεὸν, *according to God's will or appointment*. Phil. iv. 11, οὐ καὶ ὑστέρησιν λέγω, *with respect to want*, i. e., as if I were in want. See also Matt.

¹ See Vitringa in Diss. iii. Lib. i. c. 7. p. 224. Suicer. Thes. i. p. 706. Pott. and Wolf ad l. c.

² Winer, §§ 51. i. 53, c. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 80, l. Brunck ad Arist. Thesm. 414. Wytttenbach ad Plat. Op. Mor. ii. p. 2.

ii. 16, ix. 29, xxiii. 3, Luke i. 18, ii. 29, xxiii. 56, Acts iii. 17, xviii. 14, xxvi. 5, Rom. viii. 1, ix. 5, xi. 28, xv. 5, 1 Cor. iii. 3, 2 Cor. vii. 9, 10, Gal. i. 11, iii. 15, Eph. iv. 24, 1 Tim. v. 21, 2 Tim. i. 1, 9, Tit. iii. 5, 1 Pet. i. 15, iv. 14. Thus it is that *κατά* with an accusative frequently supplies the place of an *adjective* or *adverb*; as in Acts xviii. 15, νόμου τοῦ κατ' ὑμᾶς, *your law*; Rom. vii. 13, κατ' ὑπερβολὴν ἁμαρτωλὸς, *exceedingly sinful*; xi. 21, τῶν κατὰ φύσιν κλάδων, *the natural branches*. Compare Luke x. 31, Acts xiv. 20, xxv. 23, xxvii. 2, Rom. i. 15, *et alibi*. Lastly, with reference to *time* and *place*, and also with *numerals*, *κατά* implies *distribution*; as in Luke ii. 41, κατ' ἔτος, *yearly, from year to year*; viii. 1, 4, κατὰ πόλιν, *from city to city*; John xxi. 25, κατ' ἓν, *singly, one by one*. See also Matt. xxiv. 7, xxvi. 55, Luke xi. 3, xiii. 8, 22, Acts xv. 21, xx. 20, xxi. 19, xxii. 19, 1 Cor. xiv. 27, 31, Eph. v. 33, Tit. i. 5, Heb. ix. 5, 25; and compare 1 Sam. vii. 16, 2 Chron. ix. 24, Zech. xiv. 16, LXX.¹

Obs. 3. Ὑπὲρ, *above, over*, does not occur in the New Testament in its primitive *local* sense; from which it is readily applied, (1.) with a *genitive*, to what is done *instead of*, *in behalf of*, *in defence of*, *on account of*, any object. Thus in Mark ix. 40, ὃς γὰρ οὐκ ἔστι κατ' ὑμῶν, ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἔστιν. John xviii. 14, συμφέρι ἵνα ἄνθρωπον ἀπολίσθαι ὑπὲρ τοῦ λαοῦ. Acts v. 41, χαίροντες, ὅτι ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ κατηξέωθησαν ἀτιμασθῆναι. Rom. v. 6, Χριστὸς ὑπὲρ ἁσιβῶν ἀπέθανε. 2 Cor. v. 20, ὑπὲρ Χριστοῦ πρεσβυόμιν. Add Matt. v. 44, Luke ix. 50, xxii. 19, 20, John xi. 4, 50, Acts ix. 16, xxvi. 1, Rom. v. 7, 8, viii. 31, xiv. 15, xv. 8, 9, 1 Cor. xv. 3, 2 Cor. i. 6, v. 14, 15, 1 Thess. v. 10, 1 Tim. ii. 1, 6, Tit. ii. 14, Philem. 13, Heb. v. 1, 3, vii. 27, 1 Pet. ii. 21, 1 John iii. 16. It indicates a *motive* in Phil. ii. 13, ὑπὲρ τῆς εὐδοκίας. Sometimes also it may be rendered *concerning*; as in Rom. ix. 27, Ἡσαΐας κρᾶζει ὑπὲρ τοῦ Ἰσραήλ. 2 Cor. i. 8, οὐ θίλομεν ὑμᾶς ἀγνοεῖν ὑπὲρ τῆς θλίψεως ἡμῶν. See also 2 Cor. viii. 23, 2 Thess. ii. 1; and compare 2 Sam. xviii. 5, Tobit vi. 15, LXX. In the same sense the Latin *super* is used in Virg. *Æn.* i. 754, *Multa super Priamo rogans*. (2.) With an accusative, *ὑπὲρ* denotes the place of dignity to which any one is raised; as in Matt. x. 24, οὐκ ἔστι μαθητὴς ὑπὲρ τὸν διδάσκαλον. Compare Eph. i. 22, Phil. ii. 9, Philem. 16. Closely analogous is its *comparative* import: as in Matt. x. 37, ὁ φιλῶν πατέρα ἢ μητέρα ὑπὲρ ἐμὲ, οὐκ ἔστί μου ἄξιος. Acts xxvi. 13, ὑπὲρ τὴν λαμπρότητα τοῦ ἡλίου περιλάμψαν με φῶς. So in 1 Cor. iv. 6, Gal. i. 14, Eph. iii. 20. Hence the use of this preposition with comparative adjectives; of which see § 43. 3. There is an apparent confusion of ideas in 2 Cor. xii. 13, τί γὰρ ἔστιν, ὃ ἡττήθητε ὑπὲρ τὰς λοιπὰς ἐκκλησίας. The *direction* of the action must clearly be considered as inverted; and thus, though the expression is certainly extraordinary, it may be accounted for. Two manuscripts read *παρά*.² Of *ὑπὲρ*, used *adverbially*, see § 65. *Obs. 5.*

2. In the New Testament *μετὰ*, *περὶ*, and *ὑπὸ* are also found with *two* cases only, though in other writers they take *three* cases after them.

Obs. 4. Μετὰ, *with*, denotes *society, companionship*; but, whereas σὺν with a *dative* indicates that which is, as it were, united with another object, μετὰ with (1.) a *genitive*, denotes a somewhat looser connexion of various descriptions. Thus in Matt. viii. 11, ἀνακληθήσονται μετ' Ἀβραάμ. xii. 3, αὐτὸς καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ, *his companions*; xiii. 20, μετὰ χαρᾶς λαμβάνων αὐτόν. Luke xx. 28, οἱ διαμνημονεύοντες μετ' ἐμοῦ. xxiv. 5, τί ζητεῖτε τὸν ζῶντα μετὰ τῶν νεκρῶν; Acts v. 26, ἤγαγον αὐτοὺς, οὐ μετὰ βίας. xvii. 11,

¹ Winer, § 51, k. 53, d. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 80, 2. Raphelius ad Rom. xv. 5. Wetstein and Kypke on Gal. iv. 28. Blomfield's *Æsch. Theb.* 421.

² Winer, § 51, l. 53, e. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 80, 3. Raphelius ad Rom. viii. 31. Wetstein ad 2 Thess. ii. 1.

ἰστέοντο τὸν λόγον μετὰ πάσης προθυμίας. 1 Cor. vi. 6, ἀδελφοὶ μετὰ ἀδελφῶν κρινοί. xvi. 11, ἐκδίδωμαι γὰρ αὐτὸν μετὰ τῶν ἀδελφῶν. Rev. ii. 16, πολεμήσω μετ' αὐτῶν. vi. 8, ἀπελευθύνω μετ' αὐτοῦ, in his train. In the expression ἵνα μετὰ τινος, to be of the same party with any one, is included the notion of support, assistance (Matt. i. 23, iii. 30, xxviii. 20, and elsewhere); and, on the other hand, of opposition, in Matt. xii. 41, ἄνθρωποι Νινυῖται ἀναστήσονται ἐν τῇ κρίσει μετὰ τῆς γενιᾶς ταύτης, καὶ κατακρινθήσονται αὐτήν. Although there is a marked difference in the import of σὺν and μετὰ, it is never less certain that they are frequently interchanged. See § 65. Obs. 4. (1.) An accusative with μετὰ indicates a situation behind an object, as in Heb. ix. 3, μετὰ τὸ δεύτερον κατασπίτασμα, behind the second veil. With this single exception, this construction in the New Testament always indicates time, in the sense of after, as in Matt. i. 12, μετὰ τὴν μετακίσειν Βαβυλῶνι, after the removal to Babylon. xii. 1, μετ' ἡμῶν ἔξ. John xiii. 7, μετὰ ταῦτα, after these things, i. e. after what I am now doing. See also Matt. xxiv. 29, xxv. 19, Mark viii. 31.¹

Obs. 5. Περὶ, about, in a local sense, in which it is not found in the New Testament, with (1.) a genitive, conveys the idea of surrounding an object; and thence, in a general sense, it signifies concerning, with respect to. Thus in Matt. ii. 8, ἐπεὶ βῶς ἐξιδάσκει περὶ τοῦ παιδίου. vi. 28, περὶ ἐνδύματος τί μεριμνᾷτε. ix. 36, ἐπελάττειτε περὶ αὐτῶν. xx. 24, ἡγανάκτευσαν περὶ τῶν δύο ἀδελφῶν. Add Mark v. 16, John vi. 17, 1 Cor. vii. 37. Hence 3 John 2, περὶ πάντων, in all respects. Here also belongs the phrase, τὰ περὶ τινος, scil. πράγματα, in Luke xxiv. 19, Acts i. 3, Eph. vi. 24, αὐτοῖς. Closely allied, though not exactly parallel, are the places in which περὶ is rendered because of. For example, Luke xix. 37, αἰνεῖν τὸν Θεὸν περὶ πάντων ἐν ᾧ δυνάμεται. John x. 33, περὶ πολλῶν ἔργων οὐ ληθάζομιν σε. It signifies for the sake of in Matt. xxvi. 28, τὸ αἷμά μου τὸ περὶ πολλῶν ἐκχυόμενον. Compare Mark xiv. 24, 1 John iv. 10. (2.) With an accusative, περὶ indicates the place which any thing surrounds; as in Matt. iii. 4, ὡχρὶ ζώνης δερματίνης περὶ τὴν ὀσφίν αὐτοῦ. Mark iii. 8, ἡ περὶ Τύραν, scil. κατοικοῦντις. In a temporal sense, it signifies about; as in Acts x. 9, περὶ ἑξῆς ἡμέτης, about the sixth hour. So Matt. xx. 3, 5, 6, 9, Mark vi. 48, Acts xiii. 6. Hence, generally, about, with respect to; as in 1 Tim. i. 19, περὶ τὴν πίστιν ἠνέργησαν. Compare Mark iv. 19, Luke x. 40, 41, 1 Tim. vi. 4, 21, 2 Tim. iii. 8, Tit. ii. 7.

Obs. 6. Ὑπὲρ, properly under, has a local reference, with (1.) a genitive, to that which proceeds from beneath an object; but in the New Testament it is used only in its applied sense to express the efficient or instrumental cause, by which any thing is effected; and, for the most part, after verbs passive, or neutrals in a passive sense. Thus in Matt. i. 22, τὸ ῥηθὲν ὑπὸ τοῦ Κυρίου. ii. 16, ὑπαίχθη ὑπὸ τῶν μάγων. i. i. 6, ἰσοσταζίζοντο ὑπ' αὐτοῦ. Add Matt. iv. 1, viii. 24, xvi. 12, Rom. xiii. 1, 2 Pet. ii. 7. Compare Lucian M. Peregrin. 19, Philostr. V. Apoll. i. 28, Polyæn. v. 2. 15. A local sense might perhaps be given, though it is not necessary, in 2 Pet. i. 17, φωνῆς ἐκ Θεοῦ αὐτῶν τοιαύτη ὑπὸ τῆς μεγαλοπρεποῦς δόξης. (2.) Local direction towards the under part of an object is properly indicated by ὑπὸ with an accusative; as in Matt. v. 15, λυγρὸν τιθέντες ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον. viii. 8, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἱκανὸς ἵνα μου ὑπὸ τὴν στήθην ὑπάλθαι. Less correctly, and but rarely in good writers, it marks a place of rest; as in Mark iv. 32, ὑπὸ τὴν σκιάν αὐτοῦ κατασκηνῶν. John i. 49, ὄντα ὑπὸ τὴν σκῆν ἰδόν. Jude 6, ἐν τῷ ζοφῶν τιθήνηται. Compare Lucian D. D. viii. 2, Æsop. Fab. xxxvi. 3. By an easy transition, it denotes subjection; as in Matt. viii. 9, ἀνθρώπος εἰμὶ ὑπὸ ἰσχύος, ἔχω ὑπ' ἑμαυτὸν στρατιώταις. Rom. iii. 9, ὑπ' ἀμαρτίαν εἶναι. vi. 14, οὐ γὰρ ἐστὶ ὅτι καταλάττω ὑπὸ χάριτος. See also Luke vii. 8, R. m. vii. 14, 1 Cor. ix. 20, Gal. iii. 10, 2 Cor. ii. 2, 1 Tim. vi. 1. It is once used of time, signifying about, in Acts v. 21, ὑπὸ τοῦ ἡμετέρου Θεοῦ, about daybreak. Compare Jon. iv. 11, LXX, Ælian, V. H. xiv. 27. So, in Latin, Liv. xxvii. 15, Sub lucis ortum.²

¹ Winer, § 51, h. and 53, f. Alt, § 81, 2. Kuinoel on Matt. xiii. 41. Fritzsche on Matt. i. 12, and xii. 41. ² Winer, § 51, b. and 53, k. Alt, § 51, 6. Passov. Lex. lat.

§ 65.

1. Of the other prepositions which govern *three* cases, ἀμφὶ is not used by the New Testament writers. It therefore remains to consider ἐπὶ, παρὰ, and πρὸς.

Obs. 1. Ἐπὶ, signifying primarily *upon*, answers with (1) a *genitive* to the question *where*? It may be also rendered *at* or *near*. Thus in Matt. iv. 6, ἐπὶ χειρῶν ἁετοῦσί σοι. xxi. 19, ἰδὼν συκὴν μίαν ἐπὶ τῆς ὁδοῦ. xxvi. 12, βαλοῦσα τὸ μύρον ἐπὶ τοῦ σώματος. xxvii. 19, καθεμίνου αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τοῦ βήματος. In Mark x. 26, Luke x. 37, ἐπὶ τοῦ βύτου should be rendered, *in the place or section, which treats of the burning bush*. This was the usual mode of Rabbinical citation, of which there are other examples in Mark ii. 26, Rom. xi. 2. With reference to *time*, it indicates an epoch *at* or *near* which an event took place; as in Matt. i. 11, ἐπὶ τῆς μετάνειας Βαβυλωνῶτος, *about the time of the Babylonian captivity*. Luke iv. 27, ἐπὶ Ἑλισαίου, *in the time of Eliseus*. See also Acts xi. 28, Heb. i. 2; and compare 3 Esdr. ii. 16, Artian. Exp. iii. 73, Allian. V. H. xiii. 17. Hence the following applied senses are easily deducible:—Matt. ii. 22, βασιλεῖν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίας, *reigns over Judaea*. Matt. xviii. 16, ἐπὶ στόματος δύο μαρτύρων, *upon the testimony*. Joh. vi. 2, τὰ σημεῖα, ἃ ἰσχύει ἐπὶ τῶν ἀσθενῶν, *miracles which he performed upon the sick*. Acts vi. 3, οὗς καταστήσομεν ἐπὶ τῆς χρείας ταύτης, *over this business*. viii. 27, ὃς ἦν ἐπὶ τῆς γάλλης, *over the treasure, i. e. a treasurer*. (Compare Polyb. v. 72. 8, Diod. Sic. xiii. 47, Herod. an. ii. 25.) Rom. i. 10, ἐπὶ τῶν προσευχῶν μου δέχομαι, *in my prayers*. 1 Cor. vi. 1, κρίνεσθαι ἐπὶ τῶν ἁθύνων, *before heathen judges*. 2 Cor. vii. 14, ἡ καύχησις ἡμῶν ἢ ἐπὶ Τίτῳ, *my boasting over or concerning Titus*. Rev. xi. 6, ἔξουσίαν ἔχουσιν ἐπὶ τῶν ὕδατων, *over the waves*. See also Matt. xxviii. 14, Mark xiii. 9, Acts xii. 20, xxiii. 30, xxiv. 19, xxv. 9, 26, xxvi. 2, 2 Cor. xiii. 1, Gal. iii. 16, Eph. iv. 6, 1 Tim. v. 19, vi. 13, Rev. ix. 11. Sometimes there is an *adverbial* sense; as in Mark xii. 32, Acts x. 34, ἐκ ἀληθείας, *in truth, truly*. (2) The place *upon* which any thing *rests* is designated by ἐπὶ with a *dative*; as in Matt. xiv. 8, δός μοι ἄδει ἐπὶ πύλας τῆς κρητῆς Ἰωάννου. xxiv. 33, ἐγγύς ἐστιν ἐπὶ θύραις, *close at the door*. Mark vi. 39, ἀνακλίνει ἐπὶ τῷ χώρῳ. It includes the idea of *hostility* in Luke xi. 52, ἵστανται στροῖς ἐπὶ θυρί, καὶ δύο ἐπὶ τριῖ. *Accumulation* is sometimes signified; as in Matt. xxv. 20, ἄλλα πέντε τάλαντα κειρῶντα ἐπ' αὐτοῖς. Add Luke iii. 20, xv. 26, Eph. vi. 16, Phil. ii. 27, Col. iii. 13, Heb. viii. 1; and compare Xen. Cyr. iv. 5. 38, Lucian, D. D. i. 3. In a general sense, it indicates the *ground* or *foundation*, or the *object* and *purport*, of an action; as in Matt. xix. 9, ὅτι ἂν ἀπολύσῃ τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ, ἢ μὴ ἐπὶ πορνείᾳ. xxiv. 5, πολλοὶ ἰλιύσονται ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου. xxvi. 50, ἐφ' ᾧ πάρε; *for what purpose are you come?* Mark vi. 52, οὐ γὰρ συνῆκαν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἄρτοις, *in consequence of the miracle of the loaves*. Acts ii. 38, βαπτισθήτω ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. xiv. 3, περρησιαζομένοι ἐπὶ τῷ κυρίῳ τῷ μαρτυροῦντι, *from confidence in the Lord*. This is particularly the case after verbs of *rejoicing*, *grieving*, and others denoting any *mental emotion*; as in Matt. xviii. 13, χαίρει ἐπὶ αὐτῷ. Mark iii. 5, συλλυπούμενος ἐπὶ τῇ πενίᾳ καρδίας αὐτῶν. See also § 47. 3. *Obs.* 11. It is also used to express a *condition* or *stipulation*; as in 1 Cor. ix. 10, ἐκ' ἰλπίδος ἐφίλει ὁ ἀρετῶν ἀποστῆναι, *under the hope of a harvest*. Compare Diod. Sic. ii. 25, Lucian, D. D. i. 4, Polyb. i. 59. 7. In definitions of *time* it indicates a *continued* or *repeated* act; as in John iv. 27, ἐπὶ τούτῳ, *in the mean time*. 2 Cor. iii. 14, ἐπὶ τῇ ἀναγνώσει τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης, *during or at the reading*. Phil. i. 3, ἐπὶ πάσῃ τῇ μνησίᾳ ὑμῶν, *at every remembrance, i. e. whenever I remember you*. Sometimes it must be rendered *after*, as in Acts xi. 19, ἐπὶ θανάτῳ, *after the death of Stephen*. Heb. ix. 17

διαθήκη γὰρ ἐπὶ νεκροῖς συμβαίνει, *after men are dead*. Compare Xen. Hell. iv. 4. 4. Adrian. V. II. iv. 5. (3) With an *accusative*, ἐπὶ denotes *motion* or *local direction* *upwards* or *towards* an object; as in Matt. ix. 18, ἐπὶθες τὴν χεῖρά σου ἐπ' αὐτόν. xiv. 1, ἀνυψήσονται ἐπὶ τοὺς χεῖρας. Luke iv. 25, ἐγένετο λιμὸς μέγας ἐπὶ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν. Even with verbs of *rest*, the idea of *motion* is frequently included; as in John i. 32, καταβῶντες ἱμῶν ἐπ' αὐτόν. Combining a notion of *hostility*, it should be rendered *against* as in Matt. x. 21, ἐναντιοῦνται τίνας ἐπὶ γυνῆς. Compare Luke xii. 53. Hence, generally, it marks the *end* or *object*, *towards* which any *action* or *feeling* is directed. Thus in Matt. iii. 7, ἐρχομένους ἐπὶ τὸ βάπτισμα αὐτοῦ, *in order to receive* a baptism. xiv. 14, ἐσπλαγχνίσθη ἐπ' αὐτοὺς, *he had compassion upon them*. Mark ix. 13, γίγνεται ἐπὶ τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, *with reference to the Son of Man*. That, too, over which power is exercised, is marked by ἐπὶ with an *accusative*; as in Matt. xxv. 21, ἐδίδου ἡς πεισμός. Luke xii. 14, τίς με πατίσσει διακονῆν ἢ μεριστῆν ἐφ' ἑμᾶς: 2 Thess. ii. 4, ὑπερκαυρόμενος ἐπὶ πάντα λογόμενος θεὸν ἢ εἰσάσμα. Compare Exod. ii. 19, LXX. Plat. Tim. p. 336, Diod. Sic. i. 91. Of *time* it marks the space over which an event extends itself. Thus in Luke iv. 25, ἐκλήισθη ὁ οὐρανὸς ἐπ' ἑπτα τριὰ καὶ ῥηταί. So in Luke xviii. 4, Acts xiii. 31, xx. 11, xxviii. 6, 1 Cor. vii. 39, Heb. xi. 30. Compare Polyb. i. 39. 12, iv. 63. 8. The forms ἐπὶ τρις, *thrice*, in Acts x. 16, and ἐπὶ πολὺ, *for a long while*, in Acts xxviii. 6, are analogous. Sometimes, more definitively, as in Mark xv. 1, ἐπὶ τὸ πρωῒ, *in the morning*. Acts iv. 5, ἐπὶ τῇ αὔρῃ, *on the morrow*.¹

Obs. 2. Παρά, *of* or *from*, (1) when construed with a *genitive*, has a local reference to the *vicinity* from which an object comes; as in Mark xiv. 43, παραγόμενος Ἰουδας παρὰ τῶν ἀρχιερέων. Compare Mark xii. 2, Luke viii. 49. Hence it denotes the *origin* or *source* of any thing; as in John i. 6, ἄνθρωπος ἀπεσταλμένος παρὰ θεοῦ. Acts xx. 1. 30, τί κατηγγερεύσας παρὰ τῶν Ἰουδαίων. So Matt. xxi. 42, Luke ii. 1, Rom. xi. 27, Acts vii. 16. 2 Tim. i. 18. More particularly it denotes the *source* from which information is derived, and is therefore employed after verbs of *inquiring*, *asking*, *telling*, &c. Thus in Matt. ii. 4, ἐπευθάνοντες παρ' αὐτῶν. Mark viii. 11, ζητοῦντες παρ' αὐτοῦ σημεῖον. Phil. iv. 18, διδάμνομεν παρ' Ἐπαφροδίτου τὰ παρ' ὑμῶν. See § 41. 6. This last passage affords an example of another cognate sense, in which the preposition indicates that which is *connected* with, or *concerns* any one. Hence the above formula τὰ παρὰ τινος, the *business* or *property* of a person; and, in the masculine, οἱ παρὰ τινος, one's *connections* or *kinsmen*, in Mark iii. 21. It will be observed that in the New Testament, as well as in other prose writings, παρα is usually prefixed to the names of animated existences. (2.) With a *dative*, παρα denotes *absolute proximity*, and is to be rendered *with*, *at*, or *near*. Thus in Matt. xxii. 25, ἦσαν παρ' ἡμῖν ἑπτὰ ἀδελφοί, *living with us*, or, *in our neighbourhood*. John xix. 25, ἐστήκεισαν παρὰ τῷ σταυρῷ. Acts ix. 43, μένων παρὰ τινὶ Σίμωνι. 1 Cor. iv. 2, σιδῶ παρ' ἑαυτῶν, *at home*. Compare Lucian, D. D. xxvi. 3. Frequently it is applied in a *tropical* sense; as in Matt. x. 16, παρὰ ἀνθρώποις τοῦτο ἔδυναται ἔσθαι. παρα δὲ θεῷ πάντα δυνατὰ ἴσθαι. Luke i. 30, ὑβρις χάριν παρὰ τῷ θεῷ. So in Luke ii. 52, Rom. ii. 11, *et alibi*. In similar expressions it may sometimes be rendered *before*, i. e. *in the presence of*, or *in the judgment of*; as in Rom. xi. 25, παρ' ἑαυτοῖς ἡμεῖς. 1 Cor. iii. 19, ἡ σοφία τοῦ κόσμου τούτου, μωρία παρὰ τῷ θεῷ ἴσθαι. See also Luke i. 37, 1 Cor. vii. 24, 2 Pet. ii. 11, iud. 8. (3.) Before an *accusative*, παρα indicates *motion by the side*, *along*, or *in the vicinity* of a place; as in Matt. iv. 19, ἐπὶ παρα τὴν θάλασσαν. Luke viii. 41, πρὸς παρα τοὺς ποταμούς. It is also used after verbs of *rest*, an idea of *motion* being in some sort included; as in Matt. xiii. 1, ἐξ ἁλὸς ἐκάθηντο παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν. See also Matt. xiii. 4, xv. 30, xviii. 29, Mark ii. 13, iv.

¹ Winer, §§ 51, g. 52, c. 53, l. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 81, l. Wetstein and Ky, loc. on Acts xii. 20. Wahl, Lex. in v. ἐπὶ.

1, Luke v. 1, 2, viii. 5, Acts iv. 35, v. 2, 10. From the notion of *passing by* or *along*, the *prep.* has certain derived senses. It is used, for instance, when one thing is *preferred to*, or *surpasses*, another; as in Luke xiii. 2, 4, ἐμαρτωλοὶ παρὰ πάντας. Rom. i. 25, ἐλάτρευται τῇ κτίσει παρὰ τὸν κτίσαντα. So Rom. xii. 3, xiv. 5, Heb. i. 9. Hence its use after comparatives; as in Luke iii. 13, μᾶλλον πλὴν παρὰ τὸ διατιταγμένον ὑμῖν πράσσει. Add Heb. i. 4, ii. 7, iii. 3, xii. 24; and see § 43. 3. It also signifies *beside* or *except*; as in 1 Cor. iii. 11, θεμέλιον γὰρ ἄλλον οὐδεὶς δύναται θῆναι παρὰ τὸν κείμενον. 2 Cor. xi. 24, τισσαράκοντα παρὰ μίαν, thirty-nine. Likewise *transgression*; as in Acts xviii. 13, παρὰ τὸν νόμον, *contrary to the law*. Compare Rom. i. 26, iv. 18, xi. 24, xvi. 17, Gal. i. 8, Heb. xi. 11. In 1 Cor. xii. 16, 17, παρὰ τοῦτο signifies *therefore*, i. e. *by the title of this circumstance*, or *along with this circumstance*. Compare Plutarch. V. Cutil. 28.¹

Obs. 3. Πρὸς, *to*, *unto*, indicates that which proceeds *from* one place *to* another; and hence with (1.) a *genitive*, it frequently denotes that which is of *advantage to any one*; as, for instance, in the phrase πρὸς τινος εἶναι, *to be of advantage to any one*. See Herod. i. 75, Thucyd. iii. 18, iv. 220. It occurs with this case once only throughout the New Testament, in Acts xxvii. 34, τοῦτο γὰρ πρὸς τῆς ἐμπίστεως σωτηρίας ὑπάρχει. (2.) With a *dative* it signifies *at* or *near*; as in John xviii. 16, εἰσῆλθον πρὸς τῇ θύρᾳ. xx. 12, θιγοῦ δύο ἀγγέλους, ἵνα πρὸς τῇ κεφαλῇ, καὶ ἵνα πρὸς τοῖς ποσίν. Rev. i. 13, περιζωσμένον πρὸς τοῖς μακαρίαις ζώων χερσίν. Compare Xen. Cyr. ii. 4. 17, Polyb. i. 50. 1. It follows a verb of *motion* in Luke xix. 37, ἰγγιζόντες δὲ αὐτῷ ἤδη πρὸς τῇ καταβάσει τοῦ ὄρους. Perhaps it should be rendered, *As he drew near the city, being at the foot of the mount*. Another reading is τὴν καταβασιν. (3.) The primary import of πρὸς appears in its construction with an *accusative*; as in Matt. iii. 5, ἐξοπορεύετο πρὸς αὐτόν. John xx. 10, ἀπῆλθον πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς, *to their own homes*. 1 Thess. ii. 6, ἰλθόντες πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἀφ' ἑμῶν. In its various secondary applications this *directional* meaning is easily apparent, as when it follows verbs of *speaking*, *praying*, *promising*, *consenting*, *contending*, &c. Thus in Matt. iii. 15, εἶπε πρὸς αὐτόν. Mark iv. 41, ἱλαγον πρὸς ἀλλήλους. viii. 16, διελαγίζοντο πρὸς ἀλλήλους. Luke i. 73, ἄμωσι πρὸς Ἀβραάμ τὸν πατέρα ἡμῶν. xviii. 7, βιάντων πρὸς αὐτόν. John v. 45, κατηγοροῦσιν ὑμῶν πρὸς τὸν πατέρα. Acts viii. 21, διέσθης πρὸς τὸν κύριον. xii. 21, ἐπημύνην πρὸς αὐτούς. xiii. 22, ταῦτα ἐμφανίσας πρὸς με. It also designates the *end* or *object* towards which an action is directed; as in Acts iii. 10, ὁ πρὸς τὴν ἰλημοσύνην καθήμενος. 1 Cor. x. 11, ἐγγράφη πρὸς νοθεσίαν ἡμῶν. That which is of *concern* or *importance* to any one is so indicated; as in the expression, τί πρὸς ἡμᾶς; *what is that to us?* See Matt. xxvii. 4, John xxi. 22, 23; and compare Polyb. v. 36. 8, Diod. Sic. i. 72. Hence such *periphrases* as those in Luke xix. 32, τὰ πρὸς εἰρήνην, *things which tend to peace*, i. e. *peace itself*. Acts xviii. 10, τὰ πρὸς τὴν χρείαν, *necessaries*. After *substantives* and *adjectives* it is constantly used in its appropriate signification; as in Luke xxiii. 12, ἐν ἰχθῶσιν ὄντες πρὸς ἑαυτούς. John iv. 35, λιπαρὸς πρὸς θρισμόν. xi. 4, ἀσθίνια πρὸς θάνατον. Add Acts ix. 2, xiii. 31, xvii. 15, xxiv. 16, Rom. iv. 2, v. 1, 1 Cor. vi. 1, 2 Cor. vii. 4. In some of these places the preposition may be rendered *in respect to*; and it has a comparative import in Rom. viii. 18, οὐκ ἄξια τὰ παθήματα τοῦ νῦν καιροῦ πρὸς τὴν μέλλουσαν δοξάν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι εἰς ἡμᾶς. Compare Xen. Anab. iv. 5. 21, vii. 7. 24, Mem. i. 2. 52, Plat. Hipp. M. 2. It also sometimes implies a *motive*, as in Matt. xix. 8, πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ὑμῶν, *with reference to*, or *because of*, *your hardness of heart*. In definitions of *time* it signifies *towards*, as in Luke xxiv. 29, πρὸς ἰσπίραν ἰστί. A period of short duration is indicated by the phrase πρὸς καιρὸν, or πρὸς ὥραν, which occurs in Luke vii. 13, John v. 13, Gal. ii. 5, *et alibi*. There are occasional instances in which πρὸς is found with an *accu-*

¹ Winer, § 51. b. 52, d. 53, g. Alt, § 81, 3. Heindorf ad Plat. Phad. p. 216. Schæfer ad Dion. Hal. p. 117.

active after verbs implying *rest*; but the idea of motion is generally, though not always, included; as in Matt. iii. 10, ἥδε δὲ καὶ ἡ ἀβύσσος πρὸς τὴν ῥιζάν των δένδρων κίεται. Compare Matt. xiii. 56, xxvi. 18, 55, Mark iv. 1, ix. 10, Luke xxi. 56, Acts v. 11, 1 Cor. xvi. 6, 7, 10, and elsewhere. So Diod. Sic. i. 77, Diog. L. i. 37.¹

Obs. 4. Although several of the *prepositions*, in their primary significations, express ideas not very distinct from each other; still the difference is sufficiently perceptible to render the investigation of their various relations a desirable pursuit. Thus the four *prepositions*, which more directly express the general idea of motion *from* a place, ἀπὸ, ἐκ, ἀφ' ἧς, and ὑπὸ, and which are consequently constructed with a *genitive*, exhibit that idea in different points of connexion. It has been seen that ἀπὸ should mark the separation of one object from another *upon* which it lay, or *with* which it was in contact; whereas ἐκ denotes egress from *within*, ἀφ' ἧς removal from a *near proximity*, and ὑπὸ erection from *beneath*. A nearer or *less intimate* union has also been shown to call for the use of μετὰ and σὺν respectively. It is not to be imagined however that these niceties were always accurately observed, and, from the peculiar position and character of the New Testament writers, it might be expected that they would not only multiply the use of *prepositions* with a view to ensure perspicuity of expression, but employ them without any strict regard to their more intricate shades of meaning, more especially the derived ones. The minute distinction between πρὸς and εἰς is constantly overlooked by the best writers; and they are actually interchanged in Philem. 4, ἀκούων σου τὴν ἀγάπην καὶ τὴν πίστιν, ἣν ἔχουσ πρὸς τοῖς κύριον Ἰησοῦν, καὶ εἰς πατέρα καὶ ἀγίους. See also 1 Thess. ii. 6; and compare Pausan. vii. 6. 1, Arrian. Alex. i. 18, Diod. Sic. v. 30. Little, therefore, will it excite surprise, that different *prepositions* are employed by different writers in the same sense. Thus ἐπὶ τὰ ἔρη in Matt. xxiv. 16, is parallel with εἰς τὰ ἔρη in Mark xiii. 14; and αἷμα πρὸς πολλὰ ἔτη νόμιμον in Matt. xxvi. 28, with τὸ ποτήριον τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἐκχυρόμενον. Sometimes again, the same *preposition* is employed, but with a different case. Thus in Matt. xxiv. 2, αὐτὸ μὴ ἀφ' ἧς ὁδοὶ λίθου ἐπὶ λίθου, which is in Mark xiii. 2, ἐπὶ λίθου. See also Rev. xiv. 9; and compare Gen. xlix. 26, Exod. viii. 3, xii. 7, LXX, Diog. L. ii. 8. 4. Nor, indeed, is it always material which case is employed. In the above example, for instance, both ἐπὶ λίθου and ἐπὶ λίθου are equally correct; but the idea, which should properly be presented to the mind by the former is that of one stone *lying at rest upon* another, whereas the latter suggests the notion of one stone *placed upon* another.²

Obs. 5. The *adverbial* use of *prepositions* in the New Testament is very rare. It has already been seen that ἀνὰ is once so used; besides which another example occurs in 2 Cor. xi. 23, διὰκονοῖ Χριστοῦ τίς; ὡς ἐγώ. To complete the sense, however, διακόνους may be considered as understood. Here also it may be remarked that *prepositions* are often used before *adverbs* as if they were *nouns*, or combined with them into one word, so as to regulate or qualify their import. Thus we have in Matt. iv. 17, ἀπὸ τότε. v. 32, παραπορεύς. xxiii. 39, ἀπ' ἄρτι. Acts x. 16, ἐκ τῆς xxviii. 23, ἀπὸ πρώτ. Rom. vi. 10, ἐφ' ἑαυτῶν. 2 Cor. viii. 10, ἀπὸ πλείους. xi. 5, ὡς λίαν. 2 Pet. ii. 3, ὑπερβαλόν. So in 1 Sam. xii. 20, LXX, ἀπὸ δεισθῆν. See also Matt. vi. 21, xxvi. 64, John i. 52, Acts xxvi. 29, 2 Cor. ix. 2, xii. 11, 2 Pet. iii. 5. Of the same nature are ὡς ἄρτι in Matt. xi. 12, and ἄμα πρῶτ in Matt. xx. 1. Such expressions, however, are rarely met with, except in the later Greek. An *adverbial* import is also frequently annexed to a *preposition* with its case. Several examples have been already given in the preceding sections; to which may be added Matt.

¹ Winer, § 51, f. 52, e. 53, h. Alt, § 81. 5. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 10. Wetstein on Acts xxvii. 34. Passov. Lex. in v.

² Winer, § 54. 1, 2, 3.

xxvi. 42, 44, ἐν διατίρῳ, ἐν στίχῳ. Acts xix. 20, κατὰ κράτος. Rom. vii. 13, κατὰ ὑπερβολήν. 2 Cor. vii. 13, ἐξ ἰσότητος. Eph. iii. 20, ὑπὲρ ἐκ περισσοῦ (which also comes under the preceding examples.) 1 Thess. iii. 5, εἰς κινόν. Heb. vii. 12, ἐξ ἀνάγκης.¹

Obs. 6. In composition with verbs, prepositions are always used *adverbially*, so as to qualify in some sort the meaning of the simple verb, by the addition of some circumstances of *time, place, order, intensity*, or otherwise. These various relations and modifications are, or ought to be, explained in the Lexicon. With respect to the government of compound verbs, it is to be observed that they are frequently followed by the case required by the preposition with which they are compounded. Thus a *genitive* is put after verbs compounded with ἀπὸ and ἐκ. Matt. x. 14, ἐξερχόμενοι τῆς οἰκίας. Luke xii. 12, ἐπολύλυσαι τῆς ἀσθενείας σου. After verbs compounded with ἐπὶ, πρὸς, and σὺν, a *dative* is put; as in Matt. xix. 5, προσκολληθήσεται τῇ γυναικί. Mark xiv. 31, συναποθανεῖν σοι. Luke i. 35, ἐπισκιάσει σοι. xv. 2, συνεσθίει αὐτοῖς. Those compounded with περί take an *accusative*: as in Matt. iv. 23, περιῆγεν ὅλην τὴν Γαλιλαίαν. Luke ii. 9, περιέλαμψεν αὐτούς. Sometimes the preposition is repeated before the governed noun, particularly ἀπὸ, εἰς, ἐκ, ἐπὶ, and πρὸς. Matt. vii. 23, ἀποχαρῶντε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. viii. 5, εἰσιελθόντες εἰς Καπριμαούμ. xxvi. 39, ἵπτεται ἐπὶ πρὸςωπον. Mark x. 7, προσκολληθήσεται πρὸς τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ. xiv. 43, παραγίνεται παρὰ τῶν ἀρχιερέων. Luke i. 76, προπορεύσῃ πρὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ. vi. 1, διαπορευομένη διὰ τῶν ἐπορίμων, Col. ii. 13, συνεζωσκήσας σὺν αὐτῇ. Instead of repeating the same preposition, another of similar import is often employed; as in Matt. vii. 4, ἄφες ἐκβάλω τὸ κάρφος ἀπὸ τοῦ ὀφθαλμοῦ. xiv. 19, ἀναβλήψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν. xvi. 3, μετ' αὐτοῦ συλλαλοῦντες. Mark iii. 13, ἀναβαίνει εἰς τὰ ὄρη. xv. 46, προσκύνει λίθον ἐπὶ τὴν θύραν. See also Luke vi. 34, xix. 4, John xv. 26, Acts xvii. 23, 1 Cor. xvi. 7, 2 Cor. viii. 18, Phil. i. 24, 1 Tim. i. 3, 1 Pet. ii. 11. It will be readily observable, however, that these different constructions are not always equivalent. Some of them may indeed be regarded as fixed idioms; as, for instance, that of ἐκπίπτει with a simple genitive, and of εἰς after verbs compounded with that preposition. The single exception in Acts xvii. 2, is peculiar. It sometimes even happens that a construction opposite to that indicated by the verb may be necessary; either *with* or *without* a preposition. Thus in Mark iii. 16, ἀνέβη ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος. Luke x. 11, τὸν πονηρὸν ἀπομαρτυροῦμαι ὑμῖν. Acts xiii. 4, ἀπίστυσαν εἰς τὴν Κύπρον. See also Luke ix. 54, John vi. 31, Acts xiv. 26, xx. 15, xxvi. 1, Rom. vi. 2, 10, Gal. ii. 19. In such cases the direct object of the verb is wanting; but it is sometimes expressed; as in Luke ii. 4, ἀνέβη ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλιλαίας εἰς τὴν Ἰουδαίαν. Sometimes the import of the preposition is sunk, and the compound governs the case of the simple verb; as in 2 Cor. xi. 33, ἐξίβυγον τὰς χεῖρας αὐτοῦ. Compare Luke ix. 34, Acts xvi. 4.²

Obs. 7. A preposition is sometimes separated from its case; but chiefly by the particle δι. Thus in Matt. iii. 1, ἐν δὲ ταῖς ἡμέραις ἰακίαις, Luke i. 24, μετὰ δὲ ταύτας τὰς ἡμέρας.

Obs. 8. It is usual to repeat the preposition before two or more nouns in the same case, when a distinct idea is expressed by each; as in Luke xxiv. 27, ἀρχόμενος ἀπὸ Μωσίου καὶ ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν προφητῶν. It is the same where four terms are united in two bands; as in Luke xiii. 29, ἔξουσιν ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν καὶ δυσμῶν, καὶ ἀπὸ βορρᾶ καὶ νότου. More particularly when καὶ is repeated with each noun, or when τε καὶ couples them; as in Acts xxvi. 29, καὶ ἐν ἐλέγῳ καὶ ἐν πολλῷ. Compare Aristot. Eth. Nicom. iv. 1, vii. 4, Diod. Sic. xix. 86, xx. 13, Pausan. iv. 8. 2. Also

¹ Winer, § 54. Obs. 1, 2 and § 55. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 53, 8. Lobeck ad Phryn. pp. 45. sqq. Starz. de Dial. Maced. et Alexandr. pp. 200 s. 1.

² Winer, § 56. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 75. Tittmann de vi Præp. p. in verb. comp. in N. T. and Van Voerst de usu verb. cum præp. comp. in N. T. p. 154. Branck. ad Aristot. Nub. 587.

when connected by the *disjunctive* particles *ἢ* or *ἢ* *ἢ* *ἢ*. Acts viii. 34, *περὶ ἰανῶ, καὶ περὶ ἰτιροῦ τινός*; Rom. iv. 10, *πῶς οὖν ἐλογίσθη; ἐν περιτομῇ ὄντι, ἢ ἐν ἀκροβυστίᾳ; οὐκ ἐν περιτομῇ, ἀλλ' ἐν ἀκροβυστίᾳ*. See also 1 Cor. xiv. 6, 2 Cor. ix. 7, Eph. vi. 12, 1 Thess. i. 5, 8; and compare Pausan. vii. 10. 1, Alciph. i. 31. At the same time the rule is not strictly followed; but, where the objects are perfectly distinct, the preposition is not uniformly repeated. Thus in Luke xxi. 26, *ἀποψυχόντων ἀνθρώπων ἀπὸ φόβου καὶ προσδοκίας τῶν ἐπιερχομένων τῇ οἰκουμένῃ*. John iv. 23, *ἐν πνεύματι καὶ ἀληθείᾳ*. Acts xxvi. 18, *ἰσχυρίσθαι ἀπὸ σκότους εἰς φῶς, καὶ τῆς ἐξουσίας τοῦ Σατανᾶ ἐπὶ τὸν Θεόν*. See also Acts vii. 38; and compare Aristot. Eth. Nic. vii. 11. 1, x. 9. 1, Diod. Sic. v. 31, Diog. L. proœm. 6, Strabon. xvi. 778. D, Chrysost. xiii. p. 277. It is also to be observed that the *preposition* is seldom repeated before a *relative*, which is in the same case with its *antecedent*. Thus in Luke i. 25, *ἐν ἡμέραις, αἷς ἰσχυρίσθαι καὶ τ. λ.* So Acts xiii. 2, 39. Compare Xen. Anab. v. 7. 17, Conv. iv. 1, Plat. Legg. ii. 5, x. 15, xii. 7, Phæd. 21, Pausan. ix. 39. 4, Dim. Hal. i. 69. There are a few cases where the *preposition* is repeated; as in John iv. 53, *ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ, ἐν ᾗ εἶπεν*. Acts vii. 4, *εἰς τὴν γῆν ταύτην, εἰς ἣν ὑμεῖς νῦν κατοικεῖτε*. So Demosth. adv. Timoth. p. 705, B, *ἐν ταῖς χρόνις, ἐν οἷς γίγνεται καὶ τ. λ.* See also Aristot. H. An. v. 30, Diog. L. viii. 2. 11. In the Greek classics the *preposition* is seldom repeated in comparisons with *ὡς* or *ὡςπερ*, but in the New Testament always; as in Acts xi. 15, *ἰσχυρίσθαι τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον ἐπ' αὐτοὺς, ὡςπερ καὶ ἐφ' ἡμᾶς ἐν ἀρχῇ*. So in Rom. v. 19, 2 Cor. viii. 7, Gal. iii. 16, Philem. 14, Heb. iv. 10. The case is somewhat different in Phil. ii. 22, *ὡς πατρὶ τίκων, σὺν ἡμῶν ἰδούλυσιν*.¹

Obs. 9. It frequently happens that the same *preposition* is employed with a different case, and in a different sense, in the same sentence; as in Heb. ii. 10, *ἐν τῷ τὰ πάντα, καὶ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, ὡςπερ ἐκ τῆς οὐχίας, καὶ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, ὡςπερ ἐκ τῆς οὐχίας, καὶ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, ὡςπερ ἐκ τῆς οὐχίας*. Of a like nature is Heb. xi. 29, *διέβησαν τὴν ἰσχυρίαν θάλασσαν, ὡς διὰ ξηρᾶς*. On the other hand, a different *preposition* accompanies the same noun in order to express a different relation; as in Rom. iii. 22, *δικαιοσύνη Θεοῦ διὰ πίστεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰς πάντας καὶ ἐπὶ πάντας τοὺς πιστεύοντας*. xi. 36, *ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἰς αὐτὴν τὰ πάντα*. Gal. i. 1, *ἀπόστολος οὐκ ἀπ' ἀνθρώπων, οὐδὲ δι' ἀνθρώπου*. See also 1 Cor. viii. 6, xii. 8, 2 Cor. iii. 11, Eph. iv. 6, Col. i. 16, 2 Pet. iii. 5. The same mode of expression is also found in classical Greek; particularly in the later writers. Thus in Heliod. ii. 25, *πρὸ πάντων καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν*. Philostr. V. Apoll. iii. 25, *τοὺς ἐπὶ θαλάττῃ τε καὶ ἐν θαλάττῃ*. Acta Ignat. δι' οὗ καὶ μεθ' οὗ τῷ πατρὶ ἡ δόξα.²

§ 66.—Of the Negative Particles. (BUTTM. § 148.)

1. Of the two simple *negative particles*, *οὐ* and *μὴ*, the former conveys a *direct* and *absolute* denial; the latter that which is merely *mental* or *conditional*. Accordingly *οὐ* is used:—

1. With single verbs, substantives, or adjectives, which, with the negative, form only one idea, and that very frequently directly opposite to the import of the word itself. Thus in Matt. xxiv. 22, *οὐ πᾶσα σὰρξ, no flesh*;

¹ Winer, § 54, 7. Stallbaum ad Plat. Sympos. p. 104, ad Gorg. pp. 38. 112. 247. Ast ad Plat. Legg. ii. 5. Schæfer ad Dion. de Comp. v. p. 325, Melet. p. 124. Herm. ad Vig. p. 854.

² Winer, § 54. 1, 6.

Luke xv. 13, μετ' οὐ πολλὰς ἡμέρας, *after a few days*; xvi. 9, οὐκ εὐθέως, *at a distant period*; Acts xvii. 4, 12, οὐκ ὀλίγοι, *many*; xix. 35, οὐ γινώσκει, *is ignorant*; xx. 12, οὐ μετρίως, *exceedingly*; Rom. i. 13, οὐ θέλω, *I am unwilling*. See also Gal. iv. 27, Eph. v. 4, Heb. xi. 35, 1 Pet. i. 8, *et alibi*. Here also belongs the citation from Deut. xxxii. 21, in Rom. x. 19, ἐγὼ παραζηλώσω ὑμᾶς ἐπ' οὐκ ἔσθαι. Compare Rom. ix. 25, 1 Pet. ii. 10.

2. In propositions, where any thing is *directly* denied; as in Matt. v. 16, οὐκ ἤλθον καταλύσαι. xiii. 28, θέλεις οὖν ἀπελθόντες συλλέξωμεν αὐτά; ὁ δὲ ἔφη, Οὐ. xxi. 27, εἶπον, οὐκ οἶδαμεν. John i. 21, ἠρώτησαν αὐτὸν, Ἰλίας εἶ σύ; καὶ λέγει, Οὐκ εἰμί. Ὁ προφήτης εἶ σύ; καὶ ἀπεκρίθη, Οὐ. This is the case, where the negation is positive, even in conditional sentences; as in 1 Cor. ii. 8, εἰ γὰρ ἔγνωσαν, οὐκ ἂν τὸν κύριον τῆς δόξης ἐσταύρωσαν.

3. In the *sermo obliquus*, and when ὅτι is used with a finite verb, as after verbs implying *knowledge, belief, &c.*, οὐ is still used, where the statement involves a direct negation; as in Matt. xvi. 11, πῶς οὐ νοεῖτε, ὅτι οὐ περὶ ἄρτου εἶπον ὑμῖν; Luke viii. 47, ἰδοῦσα δὲ ἡ γυνὴ ὅτι οὐκ ἔλαθε. John iv. 17, καλῶς εἶπας, ὅτι ἄνδρα οὐκ ἔχω. ix. 31, οἶδαμεν ὅτι ἁμαρτωλῶν ὁ Θεὸς οὐκ ἀκούει. Acts xxvi. 26, λανθάνειν γὰρ αὐτόν τι τούτων οὐ πείθομαι οὐδέν. The usage, however, in these cases is somewhat arbitrary; since the proposition may generally be treated as a mental conception. Thus in Acts xv. 21, ἐπιβοῶντες μὴ δεῖν ζῆν αὐτὸν μηκέτι.

2. On the other hand, μὴ is used in all *independent* sentences, containing a *wish, prohibition, petition, or the like*, with an *imperative, conjunctive, or optative*. Thus in Matt. i. 20, μὴ φοβηθῇς. v. 17, μὴ νομίσητε ὅτι ἤλθον καταλύσαι τὸν νόμον. vi. 19, μὴ θησαυρίζετε ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. Mark xi. 14, μηκέτι ἐκ σοῦ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα μηδεὶς καρπὸν φέροι. Luke xx. 16, μὴ γένοιτο. Acts i. 20, μὴ ἔστω ὁ κατοικῶν ἐν αὐτῇ. Rom. xiv. 16, μὴ βλασφημείσω οὖν ὑμᾶν τὸ ἀγαθόν. Sometimes the verb is not expressed, as in John xiii. 9, Κύριε, μὴ τοὺς πόδας μου μόνον, *scil.* νύφη. Compare Eph. v. 15, Col. iii. 2, James i. 22, *et alibi*. It is not used in prohibitions with a *future indicative* in the New Testament.

Obs. 1. The distinction between οὐ and μὴ, and the conditional import of the latter, will readily appear from the following examples: Mark xii. 14, ἔστι κἄν τις

Καίσαρι δύναι, ἢ οὐ; δῶκεν, ἢ μὴ δῶκεν; where the first clause puts the question of tribute in a *prosecutive*, and the latter in a *speculative* form. John iii. 18, οὐ πιστεύουσιν εἰς αὐτὸν οὐ κρίνεται ὁ δὲ μὴ πιστεύων ἤδη κίκεται, ὅτι μὴ πιστεύουσιν κ. τ. λ. Here οὐ κρίνεται simply denies the believer's liability to condemnation; whereas ὁ μὴ πιστεύων indicates a *supposed*, not a *definite*, individual, and μὴ πιστεύουσιν refers to the assumed cause of his condemnation. At the same time οὐ πιστεύουσιν would have been equally correct; since, admitting the *supposed* fact to be true, the cause might be positively stated, and so it is in 1 John v. 10, ὁ μὴ πιστεύων τῷ Θεῷ, ὃς ἔστι πιστός, αὐτὸν, ὅτι οὐ πιστεύουσιν κ. τ. λ. The two particles are frequently thus used in the later writers, and not always with the distinction accurately marked. See Lucian. Tyran. 15, D. M. xvi. 2, Adv. indoct. 5, Strabo iii. 138, xv. 712, Plutarch. Apophth. p. 183, Sext. Empir. Hypotyp. iii. 1, 2, Adv. Math. i. 3, 68, ii. 60, Homer. Orat. xxiii. 18, Agath. ii. 23, Joseph. Ant. xvi. 9. 3.

3. Since a conception of the mind is implied in the use of the particle *μή*, it is properly found in the following constructions:¹—

- a. After the causal particles *ἵνα*, *ὅπως*, &c. Matt. vi. 18, ὅπως μὴ φανῇς κ. τ. λ. Acts xx. 16, ὅπως μὴ γένηται αὐτῷ χειροτριβήσαι. Rom. vii. 25, ἵνα μὴ ᾗτε περὶ ἑαυτοῖς φρονημοί. xv. 20, ἵνα μὴ ἐπ' ἀλλότριον θ=μέλιον οἰκοδομῶ. 2 Cor. iii. 5, ὥστε μὴ δύνασθαι κ. τ. λ. See also Luke viii. 10, 1 Cor. i. 17, ii. 5, iv. 6, 2 Cor. ii. 3, 5, 11, iv. 7, *et alibi*. Of *μή*, after verbs of *fearing*, see § 56. 2. *Obs.* 5.
- b. As a simple *interrogative* particle, where a *negative* reply is anticipated; as in Matt. vii. 9, μή λίσσον ἐπιδώσει αὐτῷ; Luke xvii. 9, μή χάριν ἔχει τῷ δούλῳ ἐκείνῳ; αὐτοῦ δοκῶ. See also Matt. ix. 15, Mark ii. 19, iv. 21, John iii. 4, iv. 12, 33, vii. 35, Acts x. 47, Rom. iii. 3, 5, xi. 1. Where an affirmative reply is expected, *οὐ* or *οὐκ* is used; as in Matt. vii. 22, οὐ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι προσεφητεύσαμεν; Add Matt. v. 26, xiii. 27, Luke xii. 6, James ii. 5. Sometimes *οὐ* is found, where *μή* might perhaps be expected; as in Acts xxi. 38. So also in Luke xvii. 18, which should doubtless be read interrogatively. Both particles have their appropriate import in Luke vi. 39, μήτι δύναται τυφλὸς τυφλὸν ὁδηγεῖν; οὐχὶ ἀμφοτέροι εἰς βόθυνον πεσοῦνται. By *οὐ μή* the *negative* is strengthened, and involves in fact an *energetic affirmative*; as in Luke xviii. 7, ὁ δὲ Θεὸς οὐ μή ποιήσῃ τὴν ἐκδίκησιν τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν αὐτοῦ; John xviii. 11, τὸ ποτήριον, ὃ δέδωκέ μοι ὁ πατήρ, οὐ μή πίω αὐτό; Compare Matt. xxvi. 29. When *μή* οὐ

¹ Winer, §§ 59, 1—5, 61, 3. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 83, 1. 84, 2. Anton. Progr. de discrim. partit. οὐ et μή. Schäfer. Melet. Cr. pp. 71. 91. Stahlbaum ad Plat. Phaed. pp. 43. 144. Hermann. ad Soph. Œd. T. 558. Aj. 76. Schäfer ad Demosth. in div. loc. Fritzsche ad Matt. xxvi. 42. Passov. Lex. in vv. οὐ et μή.

are used, the former alone is interrogative, and the latter belongs to the verb; as in Rom. x. 18, 19, *μη̃ οὐκ ἤκουσαν*; *μη̃ οὐκ ἔγνω Ἰσραὴλ*; Add 1 Cor. ix. 4, 5, xi. 22; and compare Judg. xiv. 3, Jerem. viii. 4, LXX, Ignat. Ep. ad Trall. 5.

- c. After the conditional particles *εἰ*, *ἐάν*, whence *εἰ μὴ*, *except*. Thus in Matt. v. 20, *ἐάν μὴ περισσεύσῃ ἡ δικαιοσύνη ὑμῶν κ. τ. λ.* Mark vi. 5, *εἰ μὴ ὀλίγοις ἄρβύστοις ἐπιθεῖς τὰς χεῖρας*. Luke ix. 13, *οὐκ εἰσὶν ἡμῖν πλεῖον ἢ πέντε ἄρτοι καὶ δύο ἰχθύες, εἰ μήτι πορευθέντες ἀγοράσωμεν*. John xv. 24, *εἰ τὰ ἔργα μὴ ἐποίησα*. Compare Mark xii. 19, John xv. 4, 2 Cor. xiii. 5, Gal. i. 7, James ii. 17. Here also belongs the elliptical phrase *εἰ δὲ μήγε*. Matt. ix. 17, *οὐδὲ βάλλουσιν οἶνον νέον εἰς ἀσκούς παλαιούς· εἰ δὲ μήγε, κ. τ. λ.* Add Matt. vi. 1, Luke x. 6, xiii. 9, xiv. 32, John xiv. 11, Rev. ii. 5. It is not, however, to be denied that *οὐ* is very frequently found after *εἰ*. But it will be seen that, in such cases, the two particles have no connexion, and *οὐ* either coalesces with the verb so as to form a single and opposite idea, or conveys a *direct* and *absolute* negation to the entire period. Instances of the former alternative are Matt. xxvi. 24, *εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννήθῃ, if he were unborn*; 42, *εἰ οὐ δύναται, if it is impossible*; John v. 47, *εἰ οὐ πιστεύετε, if ye disbelieve*. When it combines with the whole clause, it is not a *condition* which is represented by *εἰ*, but a positive denial or exception indicated by *οὐ*. Thus in Luke xi. 8, *εἰ καὶ οὐ δώσει αὐτῷ ἀνάστα, though he will not rise up to give him*; 1 Cor. ix. 2, *εἰ ἄλλοις οὐκ εἰμὶ ἀπόστολος, ἀλλά γε ὑμῖν εἰμι*. To one or other of the above cases may also be referred Luke xii. 26, xiv. 26, xvi. 11, 12, 31, xviii. 4, John i. 25, x. 37, 1 Cor. xi. 6, xv. 13, sqq. 29, 32, xvi. 22, Rev. xx. 15. Compare Diog. L. i. 8. 5, ii. 5. 16, Sext. Empir. adv. Math. xii. 5, Æsop. F. vii. 4, Aristid. Orat. i. 56.

- d. After relatives used in a *conditional* or *indefinite* sense, and with the *article*, when, with its *adjective* or *participle*, it may be resolved by a relative. Thus in Matt. x. 28, *μη̃ φοβηθῆτε ἀπὸ τῶν τὴν ψυχὴν μὴ δυναμένων ἀποκτεῖναι*. xi. 6, *μακρότις ἐστίν, ὅς ἐάν μὴ σκανδαλισθῇ ἐν ἐμοί*. xii. 30, *ὁ μὴ συνάγων μετ' ἐμοῦ, σκορπίζει*. Mark vi. 11,

ἔσοι ἂν μὴ δέξωνται ἡμᾶς. κ. τ. λ. John v. 23, ὁ μὴ τιμᾷ τὸν υἱόν, οὐ τιμᾷ τὸν πατέρα. Col. ii. 18, ἃ μὴ ἔδρακον ἡμετέροις. Tit. i. 11, διδάσκοντες ἃ μὴ δεῖ. So with the *participle* only; as in Matt. ix. 36, πρὸς αὐτὸν μὴ ἔχοντα πικρὰ. Compare Matt. iii. 10, xiii. 19, xviii. 13, xxii. 24, xxi. 29, Mark xi. 23, Luke viii. 18, ix. 5, x. 10, John xii. 48, xv. 2, Acts iii. 23, Rom. xiv. 3, 1 Cor. vii. 29, Col. i. 23, 2 Thess. i. 8, 2 Pet. i. 9, Rev. iii. 15. It frequently happens, however, that, to maintain a *negative* assertion with greater assurance, οὐ is employed in a relative sentence. Thus in Matt. x. 26, οὐδὲν γὰρ ἐστὶ κεκρυμμένον, ὃ οὐκ ἀποκαλυφθήσεται· καὶ κρυπτόν, ὃ οὐ γνωσθήσεται. See also Luke xxi. 6, Acts xix. 35, 1 Cor. iv. 7, Heb. xii. 7. So Lucian, Sacrif. 1, οὐκ οἶδα, εἴ τις οὕτω κατηφὴς ἐστὶ, ὅστις οὐ γελάσεται.

- e. With *participles* in a *conditional* sense; as in Luke xi. 21, μὴ εἰρίσκον, *if he finds none*; John vii. 15, πῶς οὕτως γράμματα οἶδε, μὴ μεμαθηκώς; *though he has never learnt*; (So Philostr. Apoll. iii. 23, γράφει μὴ μαθήσας γράμματα.) 1 Cor. x. 33, κἀγὼ πάντα πᾶσιν ἀρέσκω, μὴ ζητῶν τὸ ἑαυτοῦ συμφέρον, *while I seek not*. Compare Luke xii. 47, John vii. 49, Rom. viii. 4, x. 20, 1 Cor. iv. 18, vii. 37, ix. 21, 2 Cor. iv. 18, Phil. iii. 9. On the other hand, οὐ with *participles* denies *simply* and *unconditionally*, whether they depend upon the preceding verb, or are used *absolutely*. Thus in Acts vii. 5, οὐκ ὄντος αὐτῷ τέκνου. 1 Cor. iv. 14, οὐκ ἐντρέπων ὑμᾶς γράφω ταῦτα. Add Gal. iv. 27, Phil. iii. 3, Col. ii. 19, Heb. xi. 35, 1 Pet. ii. 10; and compare Strab. xvii. pp. 796. 822, Diod. Sic. xix. 97, Philostr. Apoll. vii. 32, Ælian V. H. x. 11, Lucian. Philos. 5, M. Peregr. 34.

- f. With an *infinitive*, when dependent on another verb, or employed *substantively* with or without the *article*. Thus in Matt. v. 34, ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ὀμῶσαι ὅλως. xiii. 5, διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν βάθος γῆς. xxii. 23, οἱ λέγοντες μὴ εἶναι ἀνάστασιν. Acts iv. 20, οὐ δυνάμεθα γὰρ ἡμεῖς, ἃ εἶδομεν καὶ ἠκούσαμεν, μὴ λαλεῖν. Rom. xi. 8, ὁφθαλμοῖς τοῦ μὴ βλέπειν, καὶ ὅτι τοῦ μὴ ἀκούειν. xiv. 21, καλὸν τὸ μὴ φαγεῖν κρέα, *that is, it is well if one never eats meat*. So Matt. ii. 12, Luke xx. 27, Act. iv. 17, 18, v. 28, xiii. 31, xxvii. 21, Rom. vii. 3, xi. 10, xiii. 3, xiv. 13, xv. 1,

1 Cor. v. 9, vii. 1, ix. 18, 2 Cor. ii. 1, 1 Thess. ii. 9
2 Thess. ii. 2, iii. 8, James iv. 2.

Obs. 2. It is perhaps more difficult to explain the occasional use of *μὴ* for *οὐ*, than that of *οὐ* for *μή*. In a few passages the latter occurs where the negative is so plainly *direct*, that the former would rather be expected: as in Acts ix. 9, *ἦν ἡμέρας τρεῖς μὴ βλέπων*. Rom. i. 18, *ποιεῖν τὰ μὴ καθήκοντα*. (Compare Eph. v. 3.) 1 Tim. v. 13, *τὰ μὴ δεόντα*. Probably the continual occurrence of this *negative*, especially with *participles*, may have caused some little negligence with respect to it; not to mention that in antitheses, and with a view to peculiar emphasis, it is constantly employed to convey an *absolute* denial. Thus in 1 Cor. i. 28, *ἐξελέξατο ὁ Θεὸς τὰ μὴ ὄντα, ἵνα τὰ ὄντα καταργήσῃ*. 2 Cor. iii. 14, *τὸ αὐτὸ κάλυμμα μένει, μὴ ἀνακαλυπτόμενον*. iv. 18, *μὴ σκοποῦντων ἡμῶν τὰ βλεπόμενα, ἀλλὰ τὰ μὴ βλεπόμενα*. vi. 9, *ὡς παιδιζόμενοι, καὶ μὴ θανατούμενοι*. (Compare ch. iv. 8, 9.) An emphasis seems to lie in the turn of expression in 2 Cor. v. 21, *τὸν γὰρ μὴ γνόντα ἁμαρτίαν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἁμαρτίαν ἐποίησιν*, *who cannot be supposed to have known sin*; for *τὸν οὐ γνόντα* would imply nothing more than *τὸν ἀγνόοντα*. Compare Rom. iv. 19. Both negatives are united in 1 Pet. i. 8, *ὅν οὐκ εἶδότες ἀγαπᾶτε· εἰς ὃν, ἀρετὴ μὴ ὁρῶντες, ἀλλὰ πιστεύοντες, ἀγαλλιάσθε*. For this change in the expression there is no apparent cause; but it has an exact parallel in Lucian. adv. indoct. 5. *κυβερνᾶν οὐκ εἰδὼς καὶ ἰσχυῖν, μὴ μεμαθηκώς*.

Obs. 3. Two negatives sometimes destroy each other; as in Acts iv. 20, *οὐ δυνάμιθα γὰρ ἡμεῖς, ἀ εἶδαμεν καὶ ἠκούσαμεν, μὴ λαλεῖν*, *we are not able not to declare*, i. e. *we must declare*. Here the negatives belong to different verbs; and it happens much more frequently, that two negatives, joined to the same verb, render the negative stronger. Thus in Mark v. 37, *οὐκ ἀφῆκεν οὐδὲνα αὐτῷ συναπολουθῆσαι*. John xv. 5, *χωρὶς ἐμοῦ οὐ δύνασθε ποιῆν οὐδέν*. See also Mark i. 43, xv. 4, Luke iv. 2, xx. 40, John vi. 63, Acts viii. 39, xxv. 24, Rom. xiii. 8, 1 Cor. vi. 10, viii. 2, 2 Cor. xi. 8. The expression is sometimes yet further strengthened by an accumulation of negatives; as in Luke xxiii. 53, *οὐ οὐκ ἦν οὐδέπω οὐδὲς κείμενος*.¹ Of the construction of *οὐ μὴ*, see above § 53, 5.

§ 67.—Of some other particles. (BUTTM. § 149.)

Ὡς, *as*, *like*, is a particle of *resemblance*, answering to *οὕτως*, *so*; for which, however, it is never substituted, as some have supposed. The sense must be thus filled up in Mark xiii. 34, (*οὕτως ἐστὶν ὁ καιρὸς*), *ὡς ἄνθρωπος κ. τ. λ.* In Heb. iii. 11, iv. 3, it is *wherefore*; and this meaning it bears in Arrian. Exped. ii. 16. 5, v. 15. 5. After verbs of *saying* and *knowing*, it is the same with *ὅτι*, *that*; as in Luke viii. 47, *ἀπήγγειλεν αὐτῷ, ὡς ἰάθη παραχρῆμα*. Acts x. 28, *ὁμοῖς ἐπίστασθε ὡς ἀδέμιτόν ἐστι κ. τ. λ.* With superlatives it expresses *intensity*, as in Acts xvii. 15, *ὡς τάχιστα*, *as quickly as possible*; and with adjectives, *admiration*; as in Rom. x. 15, *ὡς ὠραῖοι οἱ πόδες τῶν εὐαγγελιζομένων εἰρήνην*.

¹ Winer, § 59, 8. Alt, § 83, 3. Ast ad Plat. Polit. p. 541. Hermann, ad Viger. p. 542.

Add Rom. xi. 33, 1 Thess. ii. 10; and compare Cebet Tab. iv. 6. With *numerals* it signifies *about*; as in Mark v. 13, ὡς διαχίλιοι, *about or nearly two thousand*. See also Mark viii. 9, John i. 40, vi. 19, xxi. 8, Acts i. 15, v. 7, xiii. 18, 20; and compare Ruth i. 4, 1 Sam. xi. 1, LXX, Polyb. i. 19. 5.

*Ὅπως is much less frequently employed in the New Testament, as well as in the later Greek writers, than in those of the earlier and purer ages. Its uses are precisely similar to those of ἵνα, and, like that particle, it sometimes indicates the *event*; as in Matt. ii. 23, xiii. 35, *et alibi*. Some refer also Acts xiii. 19 to this head. As an adverb, *how*, it occurs in Luke xxiv. 20. The adverbial sense, though possible, is not necessary in Matt. xxii. 15, xxvi. 59, Mark iii. 6.

*ἵνα, in *order that*, properly indicates *purpose*, as in Matt. xix. 13, John xvi. 1, Eph. v. 26, 27, *et alibi*. Its use, however, in the New Testament is very extensive; and, as in the later writers generally, it is frequently used after verbs of *saying*, *commanding*, &c., and other verbs and adjectives, which are more properly followed by ὅτι. Thus in Matt. iv. 3, εἰπὲ ἵνα οἱ λίθοι οὗτοι ἄρτοι γένωνται. v. 29, 30, συμφέρει γάρ σοι ἵνα ἀπολήται κ. τ. λ. vii. 12, πάντα οὖν ὅσα ἂν θέλητε ἵνα ποιῶσιν ὑμῖν κ. τ. λ. viii. 8, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἰκανὸς ἵνα μου ὑπὸ τὴν στέγην εἰσέλθῃς. Luke i. 43, πόθεν μοι τοῦτο, ἵνα ἔλθῃ ἡ μήτηρ τοῦ κυρίου μου πρὸς με. See also Matt. xii. 16, xiv. 36, xvi. 20, xviii. 6, 14, Mark ix. 12, Luke vii. 6, John ii. 25, vi. 62, xv. 16. Hence it is sometimes simply *exegetical*; as in John xvii. 3, αὕτη δὲ ἐστὶν ἡ αἰώνιος ζωὴ, ἥα γινώσκωσι σέ. There are also many passages, in which ἵνα denotes *event*, *result*, *consequence*; as in Matt. i. 22, and elsewhere, when a prophecy is mentioned. See also Luke xi. 50, John ix. 2, 3, 39, Rom. v. 20, xi. 31, 1 Cor. xi. 15, 1 Pet. v. 6, 1 John ii. 19, *et alibi*. This import of ἵνα has, it is true, been strongly contested; but the arguments against it are by no means convincing; for, although it was certainly designed, for example, that a prophecy should be fulfilled, (and hence, indeed, the connexion between the two meanings,) it can scarcely be said that the prediction was made simply *in order that* it might be accomplished; and the same remark may be applied to the other passages

above cited.¹ As a *particle of time*, ἵνα occurs in John xii. 23, xiii. 1, and elsewhere; and the elliptical form ἵνα τι in Matt. ix. 4, xxvii. 46, Luke xiii. 7, Acts iv. 25, 1 Cor. x. 29. See § 68.

ὥστε, *so that*, with *infin.* chiefly. See § 57. 3.

ὅτι, *that*, is properly used after verbs of *saying*, *knowing*, and such others as take the accusative with the *infinitive* in Latin. See Matt. ii. 16, v. 5, 1 Cor. v. 6, Heb. viii. 9, 10, *et passim*. An ellipsis of some such verb as λέγω, οἶδα, will accordingly explain what is called the relative use of ὅτι, and most of those passages where it has been rendered *so that*, *when*, *although*, &c. See Matt. v. 45, vi. 5, 13, xi. 29, Luke xi. 48, xii. 24, xxiii. 40, John vii. 35, Acts i. 17, x. 14, Rom. ix. 20, xiv. 11, 1 Cor. xi. 15, 1 John iii. 20. Another sense assigned to this particle is *because*, but it here depends upon διὰ τοῦτο expressed or understood, and is therefore still *declarative*. Compare Matt. xiii. 13, xxiii. 13, John viii. 43, 44, 47, 1 John iii. 14, 20. Hence also in *interrogations*, τί is sometimes expressed, and at others understood. Compare Mark ix. 11, 28, John xiv. 22, Acts v. 4, 9. In Luke vii. 47, ὅτι ἠγάπησε πολὺ indicates the *sign*, not the *cause* of the woman's forgiveness. The greatness of her love evinced her sense of the great mercy she had received. Lastly, ὅτι is frequently used in quoting the words of another, even when the *sermo obliquus* is not employed; as in Matt. ii. 23, τὸ ρηθὲν διὰ τῶν προφητῶν, "Ὅτι Ναζωραῖος κληθήσεται. John i. 20, ὡμολόγησεν, "Ὅτι οὐκ εἰμὶ ἐγὼ ὁ Χριστός. So also in Matt. xxvi. 72, 74, xxvii. 43, 47, Mark i. 15, vi. 35, xii. 6, Luke xvii. 10, John i. 32, iv. 17, 39, Acts v. 23, 25, James i. 13. Compare Epict. Ench. 14.²

εἰ, *if*. See §§ 51 and 56. Both in the classics and in the New Testament it may frequently be rendered *although*; as in 2 Cor. xiii. 4, καὶ γὰρ εἰ ἐσταυρώθη ἐξ ἀσθενείας, ἀλλὰ ζῇ ἐκ δυνάμεως Θεοῦ. More frequently, however, we find εἰ καί, *though*, *even though*; as in Matt. xxvi. 33, εἰ καὶ πάντες σκανδαλισθήσονται ἐν σοί, ἐγὼ οὐδέποτε σκανδαλισθήσομαι. See

¹ Winer, § 57, 6. Fritzsche ad Matth. Excurs. i. Lucke's Comment. on John, ii. 144. Th. Luck on John xv. 16, Rom. v. 20. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 85, 4. Hermann, ad V. ger. p. 852.

² Winer, § 57, 4. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 85, 7. Kuinoel ad Luc. vii. 47, Acts i. 17. Passov, Lex. in v. ὅτι. Wahl in v. ὅτι.

also Luke xi. 8, xvii. 2, xviii. 4, Rom. xi. 17, 1 Cor. ix. 2. Sometimes it indicates the *event*, and may be rendered *that* or *whether*; as in Mark xv. 44, ἐθαύμασαν εἰ ἤδη τέθνηκε. John ix. 25, εἰ ἁμαρτωλὸς ἐστίν, οὐκ οἶδα. Also, as an interrogative particle it denotes *whether*. Thus in Matt. xii. 10, ἐπηρώτησαν αὐτὸν λέγοντες, Εἰ ἔξεστι τοῖς σάββασι θεραπεύειν; Luke xiii. 23, εἰ ὀλίγοι οἱ σωζόμενοι; Add Matt. xxvii. 49, Mark iii. 2, viii. 23, Luke vi. 7, xxii. 49, xxiii. 6, Acts i. 6, vii. 1, x. 18, xvii. 11, xix. 2, xxi. 37, xxii. 25, 1 Cor. i. 16, vii. 16; and compare Gen. xvii. 17, xliii. 6, 1 Kings xiii. 14, 2 Kings xx. 20, Ruth i. 19, Job v. 5, LXX. This use of εἰ in direct questions is not found in the earlier Greek writers.¹

Obs. In *oaths* and solemn assertions, the particle εἰ has sometimes the force of a *negative*; as in Mark viii. 12, ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν, εἰ δοθήσεται τῇ γενεᾷ ταύτῃ σημεῖον. (Compare Matt. xii. 39, xvi. 4, Luke xi. 29.) Heb. iii. 11, iv. 3, ὥς ἄμωσα ἐν τῇ ἐργῇ μου, εἰ εἰσιλεύσονται εἰς τὴν κατὰπαυσίν μου. This is an *Hebraism*, and occurs Deut. i. 35, 1 Sam. iii. 17, 2 Sam. iii. 35, Ps. lxxxviii. 35, xciv. 11, cxxxii. 44. The form is in fact elliptical, and is given in full in Exod. xiv. 16, ζῶ ἰγὰρ, εἰ οὐκ ἔστιν ἡ βοήθεια σου. Very similar is Aristoph. Equit. 2, ἰὰν μὴ σ' ἐκφύγω, οὐδέποτε βήσομαι. So in Latin, Cic. Epist. Fam. ix. 15. 7, *moriar, si habeo*. On the other hand, ἰὰν μὴ is sometimes used in the LXX as an *affirmative*; but it is very injudicious to explain such passages as Mark iv. 22, x. 30, 2 Thesa. ii. 3, by this idiom. The latter involve an ellipsis, which is readily supplied from the context; and in the former, the *relative* is followed by ἰὰν according to common usage.²

ἐπεὶ, ἐπειδὴ. See § 55. 1.

ἐὰν, ἤν, ὅταν, ὁπότε, ἐπειδάν. See § 55. 2. and § 56.

ἢ, or, and, after a comparative, *than*, requires no illustration.

It is never used for καὶ, as some have thought it to be; though, in the very nature of things, the employment of either particle, in a variety of passages, may be indifferent, and therefore equivalent. See Luke xx. 2 (compare Matt. xxi. 23), Acts i. 7, Eph. v. 3, *et alibi*. In 1 Cor. xi. 27, καὶ is a various reading: and other instances in which the particles have been interchanged by the copyists, are John viii. 14, 1 Cor. xiii. 1. Sometimes the two particles ἢ καὶ, or *even*, are united; as in Luke xviii. 11, Rom. ii. 15, 2 Cor. i. 13. In a double question, ἢ introduces the second member, either with or without an interrogative

¹ Winer, § 61, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 84. Bornemann. ad Xen. Apol. Socr. 5. p. 39. Wahl *de εἰ et εἰς in N. T. usu*.

² Winer, § 59, 8. *Obs.* Alt, Gram. N. T. § 83, 6. Bos Ellips. Gr. p. 803. Wahl Lex. in v. ἰάν.

particle in the preceding clause. Thus in Luke xx. 4, τὸ βάπτισμα Ἰωάννου ἐξ οὐρανοῦ ἦν, ἢ ἐξ ἀνθρώπων; 1 Cor. i. 13, μὴ Παῦλος ἐσταυρώθη ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν, ἢ εἰς τὸ ὄνομα Παύλου ἐβαπτίσθητε; See also Mark iv. 30, Luke xiv. 31, xv. 8, xx. 2, Rom. ii. 4, 1 Cor. ix. 5, Gal. i. 10, James iii. 12. Where there is only a simple question, the former member may be considered as suppressed; as in Matt. xx. 15, ἢ οὐκ ἔξεστί μοι ποιῆσαι ὃ θέλω ἐν τοῖς ἐμοῖς; So in Matt. vii. 9, xii. 29, Rom. vii. 1, xi. 2, 1 Cor. x. 22, xi. 14, 2 Cor. xiii. 5. Once only ἢ is repeated, namely, in 1 Cor. xiv. 36, ἢ ἀφ' ὑμῶν ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐξηλθεν, ἢ εἰς ὑμᾶς μόνους κατήνητησεν; Of ἢτοι, with ἢ following, there is an example in Rom. vi. 16.¹

Καί, *and*, has the same uses in the New Testament which obtain in other writers. Thus it is used, though its *conjunctive* force is still apparent, as a *particle of time*:—Mark xv. 25, ἦν δὲ ὥρα τρίτη, καὶ ἐσταύρωσαν αὐτόν. Add Matt. xxvi. 2, 45, Luke v. 17, xix. 43, xxiii. 44, Acts v. 7. So Plat. Symp. p. 220. C. ἤδη ἦν μεσημβρία, καὶ ἄνθρωποι ἡσθάνοντο. In *comparative* sentences:—Acts vii. 51, ὡς οἱ πατέρες ὑμῶν, καὶ ὑμεῖς, i. e. οὕτω καὶ ὑμεῖς ἐποιήσατε. See also Matt. vi. 10, John vi. 57, xx. 21, and elsewhere; and so Thucyd. viii. 1, ὡς ἔδοξεν αὐτοῖς, καὶ ἐποιοῦν ταῦτα. In questions, where it marks a strong emphasis:—Mark x. 26, καὶ τίς δύναται σωθῆναι; 2 Cor. ii. 2, καὶ τίς ἐστιν ὁ εὐφραίνων με; Also before imperatives; as in Luke xii. 29, καὶ ὑμεῖς μὴ ζητεῖτε τί φάγητε, κ. τ. λ. It is frequently explanatory, and may be rendered *even, namely*; as in the expressions, Θεὸς καὶ πατήρ, Θεὸς καὶ σωτήρ. See above, § 29. Thus also Matt. xiii. 41, συλλέξουσιν πάντα τὰ σκάνδαλα καὶ τοὺς ποιοῦντας τὴν ἀνομίαν. John x. 12, ὁ μισθωτὸς, καὶ οὐκ ὢν ποιμήν. In such explanations, however, καὶ often adds something stronger to what precedes; as in 1 Cor. ii. 2, οὐ γὰρ ἔκρινα τοῦ εἰδέναι τί ἐν ὑμῖν, εἰ μὴ Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, καὶ τοῦτον ἐσταυρωμένον. It has, moreover, the sense of *also, likewise*; as in Mark xii. 22, ἐσχατὴ πάντων ἀπέθανε καὶ ἡ γυνή. Luke xii. 35, ἐκεῖ καὶ ἡ καρδία ὑμῶν ἔσται. But, besides these ordinary usages of καί, there are others, which, though not perhaps wholly unexampled in pure

¹ Winer, § 57, 3. Alt, *ubi supra*. Passov. Lex. in voc. ἢ.

Greek, seem rather to have originated with the antithetic import of the Hebrew וְ . Thus it frequently signifies *but*, *and yet*; as in Matt. vi. 26, $\tauὰ πετεινὰ οὐ σπεύρουσιν, οὐδὲ θερίζουσιν, καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ἡμῶν τρέφει αὐτά.$ xi. 17, $ἠελήσαμεν ἡμῶν, καὶ οὐκ ὤρχήσασθε· ἐθρηνήσμεν ἡμῶν, καὶ οὐκ ἐκόψασθε.$ Add Matt. i. 25, vii. 26, x. 29, 39, xii. 5, 35, 39, 43, John iii. 14, 32, viii. 49, ix. 30, xx. 29. On the other hand, it may sometimes be rendered *nor*; as in Matt. x. 26, John xii. 40, Rom. ii. 27, 2 Cor. xii. 21, *et alibi*. Its frequent use after ἐγένετο , *it came to pass*, is also a Hebraism. See Matt. ix. 10, Luke v. 17, vi. 1, viii. 1, Acts v. 7; and compare Deut. ii. 16, 17, Josh. xvii. 13, Judg. xiii. 20, 1 Sam. xiii. 22.

With respect to the repetition of the *copula*, the double καὶ is found in Luke xxii. 33, $\text{Κύριε, μετὰ σοῦ ἑτοιμός εἰμι καὶ εἰς φυλακὴν καὶ εἰς θάνατον πορεύεσθαι.}$ So in John ix. 37, Acts xxvi. 29, Rom. xi. 33, *et alibi*. Instead of which, τε is followed by καὶ , in Luke ii. 16, Acts xx. 21, *et scriptum*. In Acts xxvi. 16, τε is doubled. Sometimes also, καὶ is combined with other particles; but it is only necessary to notice καὶ δὲ , *and besides*, which frequently occurs in the New Testament with the intervention of one or more words between them, as in other writers. Thus in John vi. 51, $\text{ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ ἄρτος ὁ ζῶν· ἐάν τις φάγῃ ἐκ τούτου τοῦ ἄρτου, ζήσεται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα· καὶ ὁ ἄρτος δὲ, ὃν ἐγὼ δώσω, ὃ σὰρξ ἐστίν.}$ See also John xv. 27, Acts iii. 24, 2 Pet. i. 5, 1 John i. 3. In some of these places little or nothing seems to be added to the import of καὶ alone.¹

It is by no means easy to ascertain the precise difference which exists between the import and application of the two particles καὶ and τε . In general the former seems to connect words or sentences, and nothing more; whereas the latter indicates some additional idea, *besides* that of mere conjunction. See Acts xxi. 28, xxii. 8, 28, *et alibi*. This distinction, however, is not based on very satisfactory evidence.

Obs. One of two verbs, which are connected by the copula καὶ , may frequently be expressed adverbially. Thus in Luke vi. 48, $\text{ἰσχυεὶ καὶ ἰσχύει,}$ for βελτίως ἰσχυεὶ.

¹ Winer, § 57, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 85, 5. Passow, Schleusner, and Bretschneider in v. Gesen. in γ. Pott ad 2 Pet. i. 5.

John viii. 59, ἐκρύβη καὶ ἤλθεν ἐν τοῦ ἱεροῦ, *he withdrew secretly*. Rom. x. 20, ἀπο-
τελμᾷ καὶ λίγει, *preuks out boldly*. Col. ii. 5, χαίρων καὶ βλίστων, *joyfully beholding*.
Two citations from the Old Testament probably belong here: one from Amos ix.
11, in Acts xv. 16, μετὰ ταῦτα ἀναστρέψω καὶ ἀνικοδομήσω τὴν σκηνὴν Δαβὶδ τὴν σιτα-
κῶν, *I will again build up; and the other from Ps. cxiii. 9, in 2 Cor. ix. 9, ἐκέρ-
πισεν, (καὶ) ἔδωκεν τοῖς πίνουσιν, he hath given abundantly*. Indeed the usage, though
unquestionably found in Greek writers, is probably to be referred in the New Tes-
tament to the Hebrew, whence it has frequently passed into the LXX. Thus in
Judg. xiii. 10, ἐτάχυνεν καὶ ἔδραμε. See also 1 Sam. xvii. 48, xxv. 42, Ps. cvi. 13,
Jerem. xii. 15, Dan. x. 18. Elsewhere, however, the Hebrew idiom is rendered by
an adverb; as in Gen. xxvi. 18, καὶ πάλιν ἔρριξε. Compare Gen. xxx. 31, Job xix. 3,
Ps. xxxiii. 3, Hos. i. 6. The rule does not hold in Matt. xviii. 3, ἵνα μὴ στραφῇτε,
καὶ γίνεσθαι ὡς τὰ παῖδια.¹

Δὲ is an *adversative* particle, though far less strongly disjunc-
tive than ἀλλὰ, and frequently serving merely as a con-
necting *copula*. See Matt. i. 18, v. 31, xxv. 19, 38, Mark
i. 6, Luke xxiii. 2, Rom. vi. 18, 1 Cor. xv. 1. Hence with
καὶ, after an interval of one or more words, it may be ren-
dered *also*; as in John viii. 17, xv. 27, Acts iii. 24, v. 32,
2 Pet. i. 5. In *pursuing, resuming, illustrating, or modi-
fying* a discourse, δὲ is employed; as in Mark xv. 25,
John vi. 10, 1 Cor. xv. 56, 2 Cor. x. 2, Gal. ii. 4, Heb.
vii. 4, and *elsewhere*; though in the latter case μάλλον δὲ
is more usual; as in Matt. xxv. 9. *Particular* illustra-
tions of a *general* proposition are also introduced by this
particle; as in Matt. xxiii. 5. Its *disjunctive* import is
marked when opposed to μὲν, and in such passages as
Matt. v. 32, xxiii. 11, Acts xi. 17, xii. 9, 1 Cor. vii. 2,
2 Cor. vi. 14, *et sapius*. There is no necessity to affix an
illative force to the particle in Luke vii. 6, xiii. 7, Acts vi.
2, Rom. viii. 8, xii. 6, 1 Cor. viii. 9, xi. 28, Eph. ii. 4,
1 John iv. 18, and *elsewhere*; nor a *causal* import in Mark
xvi. 8, Luke iv. 38, 1 Cor. iv. 7, x. 11, 2 Cor. i. 21, x. 13,
1 Thess. ii. 16, 1 Tim. iii. 5, and similar passages.²

Μὲν is commonly followed by δέ, not only when an *opposition*,
but when a *mutual relation* between two propositions is
indicated; as in Matt. iii. 11, ix. 37, xiii. 2, Acts xxv. 11,
et sapius. Frequently, however, there is no correspond-
ing δέ. Thus in Acts i. 1, τὸν μὲν πρῶτον λόγον κ. τ. λ.;
and this, it may be remarked, is the usual mode in which

¹ Winer, § 58, 4. 5. Alt, § 82, 2. 3. Kuinoel on Luke vi. 48. Glass. Phil.
Sacr. p. 272, sqq. Vorstius de Hebraism. p. 590. Leusden, p. 115.

² Winer, *ubi supra*.

authors refer to what they have previously written. See the commencement of each successive book in Xenophon's *Anabasis*. Again, in Acts iii. 21, ὃν (Χριστὸν) δεῖ οὐρανὸν μὲν δέξασθαι ἄχρι χρόνων ἀποκαταστάσεως πάντων. Here an antithesis, *but afterwards, &c.*, may be suppressed; and a sentence with δὲ may generally in such case be supplied by the mind. Compare Acts xix. 4, xxvi. 4, Rom. i. 8, iii. 2, vii. 12, 1 Cor. xi. 18, 2 Cor. xii. 12, Col. ii. 23, Heb. vi. 16, vii. 18. Instead of δὲ, an equivalent particle is sometimes used after μέν. Thus καὶ, in Luke viii. 5, sqq.; τε, in Acts xiii. 4; ἔπειτα, in James iii. 17. It has been thought that μέντοι and δὲ are opposed to each other in James ii. 8, 9. This is very questionable; since μέντοι is elsewhere an adversative particle; as in John iv. 27, vii. 13, xii. 42, xx. 5, xxi. 4, *et alibi*. The particle μὲν cannot stand at the beginning of a period; but the compound μενοῦνγε is so placed in Luke xi. 28, Rom. ix. 20, x. 18.¹

οὔτε and μήτε, οὐδὲ and μηδὲ. The appropriate use of these compound particles depends upon the respective nature of δὲ and τε. Hence οὔτε and μήτε may be considered merely as *connecting negative particles*, employed in couplets; but οὐδὲ and μηδὲ strengthen the *negation*, so that clause rises above clause, or word above word, at each successive repetition of the particle. If used alone, οὐδὲ or μηδὲ must be rendered *not even, not so much as*. Thus in Matt. v. 29, λέγω δὲ ὑμῖν, ὅτι οὐδὲ Σολομὼν ἐν πάσῃ τῇ δόξῃ αὐτοῦ περιεβάλετο ὡς ἐν τούτων. In such cases, indeed, a preceding οὐ or μὴ is necessarily implied. Repeated negatives, therefore, are thus regularly arranged:—

οὔτε—οὔτε, μήτε—μήτε. Matt. vi. 20, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρῶσις ἀφανίζει. xi. 18, ἦλθε γὰρ Ἰωάννης μήτε ἐσθίει μήτε πίνων. See also Luke xiv. 35, John v. 37, viii. 19, ix. 3, Acts xv. 10, xxiii. 12, xxiv. 12, xxv. 8, xxvii. 20, Rom. viii. 38, 39, 1 Cor. xi. 11, 1 Thess. ii. 5, Rev. ix. 20. Sometimes οὐ or μὴ precedes, so as to indicate an entire negation, which is subsequently divided into portions; as in Matt. v. 34, μὴ ὁμόσαι ὅλως, μήτε ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, μήτε ἐν τῇ γῇ, κ. τ. λ. xii. 32,

¹ Winer, § 64, 2. e. Heindorf ad Plat. Phæd. p. 133. Ast ad Legg. p. 230.

οὐκ ἀφεθήσεται αὐτῷ, οὔτε ἐν τούτῳ τῷ αἰῶνι, οὔτε ἐν τῷ μέλλοντι. So in Luke ix. 3, 1 Tim. i. 7, James v. 12. Occasionally also οὔτε or μήτε is referred to a simple οὐ or μὴ, which has the import of οὔτε or μήτε; as in John i. 25, εἰ σὺ οὐκ εἶ ὁ Χριστὸς, οὔτε Ἡλίας, οὔτε ὁ προφήτης. So in Eph. iv. 27, Rev. v. 4, vii. 1, ix. 20, 21, xx. 4.

οὐ—οὐδὲ, μὴ—μηδὲ. Matt. vi. 26, οὐ σπεύρουσιν, οὐδὲ θερίζουσιν, οὐδὲ συνάγουσιν εἰς ἀποθήκας. x. 9, μὴ κτήσῃσθε χρυσὸν, μηδὲ ἄργυρον, μηδὲ χαλκὸν, κ. τ. λ. So Matt. v. 15, vi. 25, 28, vii. 6, 18, x. 14, xii. 19, xxiii. 9, Mark xiii. 15, 32, xiv. 68, Luke vi. 44, xiv. 12, xvii. 23, John i. 13, iv. 15, xiii. 16, xiv. 17, Acts iv. 18, ix. 9, Rom. ii. 28, vi. 12, ix. 11, xiv. 21, 2 Cor. iv. 2, Col. ii. 21, 1 Tim. i. 4. Sometimes there is no incipient οὐ or μὴ, as in Mark viii. 26, μηδὲ εἰς τὴν κώμην εἰσελθῆς, μηδὲ εἴπῃς τινὶ ἐν τῇ κώμῃ. There are a few instances in which οὔτε or μήτε follows οὐδὲ and μηδὲ. Thus in Acts xxiii. 8, Σαδδουκαῖοι λέγουσι μὴ εἶναι ἀνάστασιν, μηδὲ ἄγγελον μήτε πνεῦμα. In such cases it should seem that there are two references; that of μηδὲ to μὴ, and that of μήτε to the second μὴ comprised in μηδὲ: and the explanation is confirmed by the fact that, in the present instance, ἀμφοτέρω in the next clause evidently indicates only two articles of belief, namely, a resurrection, and the existence of immaterial spirits, which are subdivided into *angels* and *spirits*. Compare Gal. i. 12, 1 Thess. ii. 3. Some passages also occur with οὔτε or μήτε, where οὐδὲ or μηδὲ would rather be expected; as in Mark iii. 20, ὥστε μὴ εὐνασθαι αὐτοὺς μήτε ἄρτον φαγεῖν. v. 3, καὶ οὔτε ἀλύσεις οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο αὐτὸν δεῖσαι. Luke xii. 26, εἰ οὖν οὔτε ἐλάχιστον δύνασθαι, κ. τ. λ. In 1 Cor. iii. 2, some manuscripts read οὐδὲ, and the correctness of the text may probably be questioned in the generality of such cases. Sometimes, however, it seems to be immaterial whether οὐδὲ or οὔτε, μηδὲ or μήτε were employed. Thus in Matt. xxiv. 20, προσεύχεσθε δὲ ἵνα μὴ γένηται ἡ φυγὴ ὑμῶν χειμῶνος, μηδὲ ἐν σαββάτῳ. See also Matt. xxii. 29, xxv. 13, 2 Pet. i. 8, 1 John iii. 18; and compare Matt. x. 9 with Luke ix. 3.

Instead of a repetition of οὕτε, the second member of the sentence has sometimes an *affirmative copula*, as in John iv. 11, οὔτε ἄντλημα ἔχεις, καὶ τὸ φρέαρ ἐστὶ βαθύ. 3 John 10, οὕτε αὐτὸς ἐπιδέχεται τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς, καὶ τοὺς βουλομένους κωλύει. Compare Aristot. Rhet. ii. 16, Lucian. D. M. xiv. 1, Philost. V. Apoll. ii. 24. This copula is sometimes to be understood *negatively*, as in James iii. 14, μὴ κατακυχᾶσθε καὶ ψεύδεσθε. See also Matt. xiii. 15, Mark iv. 12, John xii. 40, Acts xxviii. 27, 2 Cor. xii. 21, Gal. iii. 28; and compare Diod. Sic. ii. 48, Sext. Emp. adv. Math. ii. 20.¹

Ἀλλὰ is used simply as a *disjunctive particle*, implying *contradistinction* or *opposition*; and hence it is used in a series of questions involving distinct or opposite ideas; as in Matt. xi. 7, τί ἐξήλθετε εἰς τὴν ἔρημον θεάσασθαι; κάλαμον ὑπὸ ἀνέμου σαλευόμενον; ἀλλὰ τί ἐξήλθετε ἰδεῖν; ἄνθρωποι τι μαλακοῖς ἱματίοις ἡμφιεσμένοι; ἀλλὰ τί ἐξήλθετε ἰδεῖν; προφήτην; καὶ λέγω ὑμῖν, καὶ περισσότερον προφήτου. Compare Luke xvii. 7, 8, Heb. iii. 16. Hence also its use in introducing an objection, or a series of objections; as in Rom. x. 16, sqq., 1 Cor. xv. 35. Compare Xen. Cyrop. i. 3. 11, Mem. i. 2. 9. It is found in the conclusion, after conditional particles, to mark an *opposition*, or *superaddition* to the subject of a former clause; as in Rom. vi. 5, εἰ γὰρ σύμφυτοι γεγόναμεν τῷ ὁμοιώματι τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως ἐσόμεθα, *surely also, on the other hand, we shall be, &c.* See also 1 Cor. iv. 15, 2 Cor. iv. 16, xi. 6, Col. ii. 5; and compare Lucian. Pisc. 24, Ælian. H. An. xi. 31. Sometimes the condition is wanting, as in Mark xiv. 36, παρένεγκε τὸ ποτήριον ἀπ' ἐμοῦ τοῦτο· ἀλλ' οὐ τί ἐγὼ θέλω, ἀλλὰ τί σύ. *Let this cup pass from me, if it be possible; yet not as I will, &c.* Certain other particles are often joined with ἀλλὰ, as γε, *at least*, μενοῦν γε, *nevertheless*. See Luke xxiv. 21, 1 Cor. ix. 2, Phil. iii. 8, *et alibi*. In *exhortations* and *entreaties*, ἀλλὰ is used with an imperative, though the thought to which ἀλλὰ is opposed may not be expressed. Thus in Acts x. 20, ἀλλ' ἀνάστα κατὰ βουλήν. Add Matt. ix. 18, Mark ix. 22, xvi. 7, Acts xxvi. 16; and compare Xen. Cyr. i. 5. 13, ii. 2. 4, v. 5. 24, Ar-

¹ Winer, § 52, 6. A't, Gram. N. T. § 83, 5. Engelhardt ad Plat. Lach. pp. 64. 69. Stallbaum ad Phileb. p. 31. Grotaker in Advers. Misc. ii. 2, p. 268.

rian. Alex. v. 26. Preceded by a negative, it may sometimes be rendered *except*; as in Matt. xx. 23, οὐκ ἔστιν ἐμὸν δοῦναι, ἀλλ' οἷς ἡτοίμασται, *except to those*. So in Herod. i. 193, χρέωνται δὲ οὐδὲν ἐλαίῳ, ἀλλ' ἐκ τῶν σπασάμων ποιεῦντες. Compare Mark ix. 8 with Matt. xvii. 8. At the same time, ἀλλά is not convertible with εἰ μὴ, but some word must be supplied or repeated; and so δοθήσεται will complete the sense in Matt. l. c. Nor indeed is ἀλλά ever put for other particles, as γὰρ, δὲ, οὖν, &c.; but in all the passages which have been adduced in support of such an alleged interchange, its adversative import is clearly apparent; as, for instance, in Rom. v. 14, 15, vii. 7, 1 Cor. ii. 9, xv. 10, 2 Cor. viii. 7, Eph. v. 24, *et alibi*. Sometimes οὐχί is omitted in the reply to a negative question before ἀλλά. Thus in John viii. 48, μή τις ἐκ τῶν ἀρχόντων ἐπίστευσεν εἰς αὐτόν; ἀλλ' ὁ ὄχλος οὗτος κ. τ. λ. So in 1 Cor. x. 20. In connexion, ἀλλ' ἢ signify *but rather*, *but only*; as in Luke xii. 51, δοκεῖτε ὅτι εἰρήνην παρεγενόμην δοῦναι ἐν τῇ γῇ; οὐχί, λέγω ὑμῖν, ἀλλ' ἢ διαμερισμόν. See also 1 Cor. iii. 5, 2 Cor. i. 13. Where the opposition between the clauses of a sentence is sufficiently apparent, ἀλλά is sometimes left out; as in John iv. 22, ὑμεῖς προσκυνεῖτε ὃ οὐκ οἶδατε· ἡμεῖς προσκυνοῦμεν ὃ οἶδαμεν. So in John ii. 10, Heb. iv. 15.* See also § 69. v. 2. 2.

Obs. It has been laid down as a rule by some commentators, that in many sentences, which contain a negative followed by ἀλλά, the denial is rather comparative than absolute; but it must always be borne in mind that, in all such cases, a negative clause is employed with a view to make the opposed affirmation more emphatically prominent. Thus in Matt. x. 20, οὐ γὰρ ὑμεῖς ἐστέ οἱ λαλοῦντες, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα, the sense is scarcely expressed by saying, *it is not so much you who speak, as the Holy Ghost*; since the reference is not to the *act of speaking*, but to the *inspired matter* of the Apostle's speech. Had the import of the words been simply comparative, the meaning would have been qualified by μᾶλλον in the negative, or by μᾶλλον in the affirmative clause. Compare Matt. xxi. 21, xxvii. 24, John v. 18, Acts xix. 26, Eph. iv. 23, Phil. ii. 12, *et sæpius*. Again, in Acts v. 4, οὐκ ἐψεύσατο ἀνδράποισι, ἀλλὰ θεῷ, the sin against man shrinks into nothing when compared with its magnitude in relation to God. So in the cognate form in Matt. ix. 13, ἔλεον θίλιν καὶ οὐ θυσίαν, though unquestionably comparative, the sentiment of mercy is represented as, in a manner, superseding the efficacy of sacrifice. Other examples of a like nature are, Mark ix. 37, John vi. 27, vii. 16, xii. 44, 1 Cor. i. 17, vii. 10, x. 24, xiv. 22, xv. 10, Eph. vi. 12, 1 Thess. iv. 8.²

¹ Winer, § 57, 4. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 85, 1.² Bos Edips. p. 752. Schweighæus. ad Arrian. Epict. p. 839. Passov. Lex. in v. ἀλλά.

² Winer, § 59, 7. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 83, 2. Glass. Phil. Sacr. T. I. p. 418. Bos Edips. in v. μόνον. Kuinoel ad Matt. x. 20, John vi. 27.

Γὰρ, *for*, is a *causal* particle; but the proposition of which it assigns the cause is sometimes omitted; as, for instance, in questions, which nevertheless *imply* a reason for something previously understood or expressed. Thus in Matt. xxvii. 23, τί γὰρ κακὸν ἐποίησεν; as if he had said, *Your demand for his crucifixion is unjust; for what evil hath he done?* See also Matt. ix. 5, Mark xv. 14, John vi. 41, Acts xix. 35; and compare Arist. Acharn. 594, Diog. L. vi. 1. Also in answers, whether positive or negative; as in John ix. 30, ἐν γὰρ τούτῳ δαιμαστόν ἐστιν, κ. τ. λ., where the speaker, in his earnestness, has omitted some such clause as, *I heed not your cavils, for the wonder is, &c.* Acts xvi. 37, καὶ νῦν λαθρα ἡμᾶς ἐκβάλλουσιν; οὐ γάρ' ἄλλα ἐλθόντες αὐτοὶ ἡμᾶς ἐξαγέτωσαν. Compare 1 Cor. ix. 9, 10, 1 Thess. ii. 20, James iv. 14. The particle is frequently used to introduce a causal parenthesis; as in Mark v. 42, 1 Cor. xv. 5, Eph. vi. 1, *et alibi*. Nor, in this case, does it always refer to what immediately precedes, but to something more remote, and even at a considerable distance. See Mark xi. 13, xii. 12, xvi. 4, and in St. Paul's Epistles *passim*. Hence it is frequently employed to mark the *connexion* or *continuation* of a discourse; as in Matt. i. 18, Luke ix. 44, 2 Cor. ix. 1, and *elsewhere*. From the frequent omission of a clause, to which γὰρ more immediately refers, it has been supposed to acquire a variety of meanings, which do not correctly belong to it. Thus it has been rendered *but*, in 2 Cor. xii. 19, τὰ δὲ πάντα ὑπὲρ τῆς ἡμῶν οἰκοδομῆς (λαλᾷ). φοβοῦμαι γὰρ κ. τ. λ. The sense may be thus supplied:—*I speak with a view to your edification; and I have reason to do so: for I fear, &c.* Nor in Luke xii. 58, is it *now, consequently*; but the precept is given as a reason why they should seek reconciliation with God, even as they would guard against the vengeance of a human adversary. If it be translated *although* in John iv. 44, it is with reference to some cause, which, though not immediately apparent, was doubtless passing in the writer's mind; and so in all cases it is necessary, and generally easy, to affix a causal import to this conjunction.¹

¹ Winer, § 57, 4. 6.

Οὖν, *therefore*, is an inferential particle; as in Matt. vii. 11, x. 16, 26, xvii. 10, xxvi. 51, xxvii. 22. It is, however, frequently used for the mere purpose of *transition* from one subject, or part of a subject, to another; or of *resuming* an argument which has been interrupted by a parenthesis or digression. See Mark iii. 31, Luke xxii. 36, John xviii. 19, xix. 24, 1 Cor. viii. 4, xi. 18, xiv. 23, Eph. iv. 1. Some would render it *but*, in Matt. xii. 12, Acts ii. 30, viii. 4, xxvi. 22, Rom. xi. 19, and *elsewhere*; and *for*, in Matt. x. 32, 1 Cor. iii. 5, vii. 26, xi. 20. There is no reason in any instance to depart from the ordinary acceptance of the word.¹

περίν. See § 55. Obs. 7.

Ἄρα is an inferential particle, signifying *therefore, consequently*; and it properly stands after one or more words in the sentence; as in Rom. viii. 1, οὐδὲν ἄρα νῦν κατάκριμα κ. τ. λ. 1 Cor. v. 10, ἐπεὶ ὀφείλετε ἄρα ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου ἐξελθεῖν. In the New Testament, however, it is more commonly at the beginning of a sentence, and is frequently joined with οὖν or γε, producing an emphatic asseveration, founded on an inference. Thus in Matt. vii. 20, ἄραγε ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν αὐτῶν ἐπιγνώσεσθε αὐτούς. Rom. vii. 25, ἄρα οὖν αὐτὸς ἐγὼ κ. τ. λ. viii. 12, ἄρα οὖν ὀφείλεται ἐσμέν κ. τ. λ. 2 Cor. v. 15, ἄρα οἱ πάντες ἀπέθανον. See also Matt. xvii. 26, Acts xi. 18, Rom. v. 18, vii. 3, Eph. ii. 19, 2 Thess. ii. 15, Heb. iv. 9. It is found also frequently in the conclusion of *conditional* propositions; as in Matt. xii. 28, εἰ δὲ ἐγὼ ἐν πνεύματι Θεοῦ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαιμόνια, ἄρα ἔφθασεν ἐρ' ὑμᾶς ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ. So in Luke xi. 20, 1 Cor. xv. 14, Gal. ii. 21, iii. 29, v. 11, Heb. xii. 8. After εἰ it may be rendered *if perhaps*; as in Mark xi. 13, ἤλθεν, εἰ ἄρα εὐρήσει τί ἐν αὐτῇ. Acts viii. 22, δεήσῃ τοῦ Θεοῦ, εἰ ἄρα ἀφεθήσεται σοι ἡ ἐπίνοια τῆς καρδίας σου. xvii. 27, ζητεῖν τὸν Θεόν, εἰ ἄρα γε ψηλαφήσειαν αὐτόν. Compare Numb. xxii. 6, 11, LXX. As an interrogative particle, ἄρα (with a circumflex) occurs singly, and with the same combinations. Thus in Matt. xviii. 1, τίς ἄρα μέζων ἐστίν; Luke xviii. 8, πλὴν ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐλθὼν ἄρα εὐρήσει τὴν πίστιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς; Acts vii. 1, εἰ ἄρα ταῦτα οὕτως ἔχει; viii. 30, ἄρά γε γινώσκεις

¹ Winer, *ubi supra*.

ἀ ἀναγινώσκεις; Gal. ii. 17, εἰ δὲ εὐρέθημεν ἁμαρτωλοὶ, ἄρα Χριστὸς ἁμαρτίας διάκονος; And with a negative in Acts xxi. 38, οὐκ ἄρα σὺ εἶ ὁ Αἰγύπτιος κ. τ. λ.;¹

πόθεν, πότε, πότερον, ποῦ, πῶς. These interrogative particles, of which the appropriate use is confined to *direct* questions, are equally employed in *indirect* questions in the New Testament. Thus in Matt. ii. 4, ἐπυνθάνετο παρ' αὐτῶν, ποῦ ὁ Χριστὸς γεννᾶται. xxiv. 3, εἰπὲ ἡμῖν, πότε ταῦτα ἔσται; Mark xi. 18, ἐζήτουν πῶς αὐτὸν ἀπολέσουσιν. John vii. 27, τοῦτον οἶδαμεν, πόθεν ἐστίν· ὁ δὲ Χριστὸς, ὅταν ἔρχηται, οὐδεὶς γινώσκει πόθεν ἐστίν. Acts xv. 36, ἐπισκεψάμεθα τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς, πῶς ἔχουσι. As an emphatic *negative*, πόθεν occurs in Mark viii. 4, xii. 37. So πῶς, in Matt. xii. 29, 34, John ix. 16, Rom. iii. 6, vi. 2, x. 14, *et alibi*. Once only, and in an indirect question, πότερον occurs; viz. in John vii. 17, γινώσεται περὶ τῆς διδαχῆς, πότερον ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστίν, ἢ ἐγὼ ἀπ' ἑμαυτοῦ λαλῶ; Of the relative particles, ὁπόθεν does not occur in the New Testament; ὁπότε is found once in Luke vi. 3; ὅπως also once, as an interrogative, in Luke xxiv. 20; and ὅπου in John viii. 21, and *elsewhere*. The interrogative particle sometimes stands at the end of the sentence, or before the principal word in the question. Thus in Luke xvii. 17, οἱ δὲ ἐννέα ποῦ; 1 Pet. iv. 18, ὁ ἀσεβὴς καὶ ἁμαρτωλὸς ποῦ φανεῖται;²

§ 68.—*Of some particular Locutions.* (BUTTM. § 150.)

Many of those idiomatic forms of speech which occur in other writers are not found, and are scarcely to be looked for, in those of the New Testament; but these last have nevertheless some forms peculiar to themselves. Of the one kind or the other the following may be noticed:—

οἷός εἰμι or οἷός τ' εἰμι. This phrase is properly τοιοῦτός εἰμι. It is very questionable, whether instead of an infinitive, ὅτι and a verb may follow; though some have so understood Rom. ix. 6, οὐχ οἷον δὲ ὅτι ἐκπέπτωκεν ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ. The passage should probably be rendered, *Not as though the word of God, &c.*³

¹ Winer, § 57, 4. 61, 2. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 84, 1. Stallbaum ad Plat. Euthyphr. p. 32. Passov. Lex. in v.

² Alt, Gram. N. T. § 84, 6.

³ See Rosenmuller ad loc. cit.

τί, ἵνα τί, &c. The neuter τί is frequently used adverbially for διὰ τί; *why, wherefore?* Thus in Matt. vi. 28, περὶ ἐνδύματα τί μεριμνᾶτε; viii. 26, τί δειλοί ἐστε, ὀλιγόπιστοι; Add Matt. xi. 7, xix. 17, xx. 6, and *elsewhere*. In the same sense ἵνα τί is also used, as in Matt. ix. 4, ἵνα τί ὑμεῖς ἐνδυμεῖσθε πονηρά; The expression is elliptical for ἵνα τί γένοιτο, *that what may be done, i. e. for what purpose?* It is also written in one word, ἵνατί. Compare Matt. xxvii. 46, Luke xiii. 7, Acts iv. 25, 1 Cor. x. 29. The LXX also employ the term, which is likewise found in the Greek writers, especially those of later date. See Gen. x. 6, xii. 19, Exod. v. 4, Job iii. 12, Jerem. xiv. 9, Arist. Nub. 190, Eccles. 718, Plat. Apol. 14, Arrian. Epict. i. 24, Joseph. B. J. vi. 24.

There are other combinations in which τί is found; as τί γάρ; *what then?* in Rom. iii. 3, *et alibi*; τί οὖν, in Rom. iii. 9, vi. 15, *et alibi*; and the elliptical expression τί ὅτι (i. e. τί γέγονεν ὅτι; *What is it that? How happens it that?*) in Mark ii. 16, Luke ii. 49, Acts v. 4, 9. See also Gen. xi. 7, 1 Sam. xx. 2, 2 Sam. xvii. 11, LXX.

As a predicate, with ἐστὶ following, τί is sometimes accompanied by the substantive in the neuter plural; as in Luke xv. 26, ἐπυνθάνετο τί εἴη ταῦτα; John vi. 9, ταῦτα τί ἐστὶν εἰς τοσοῦτους; Acts xvii. 20, τί ἂν θέλοι ταῦτα εἶναι.

εἷς καὶ εἷς, ἀνὰ εἷς ἕκαστος. These are two forms by which distribution is marked in the New Testament, which can be reduced to no rule. One of these, εἷς καὶ εἷς, which is clearly a solœcism for εἷς καὶ εἷς ἓνα, *one by one*, occurs in Mark xiv. 19, John viii. 9. We have also ὁ καὶ εἷς in Rom. xii. 5. It may possibly have arisen out of the Greek phrase ἐν καὶ ἐν, which occurs, though with various readings, in Rev. iv. 8. The other form, ἀνὰ εἷς ἕκαστος, occurs in Rev. xxi. 21.¹

δύο, δύο. By an Hebraism, a numeral is doubled to express *distribution*; as in Mark vi. 7, ἤρξατο αὐτοῖς ἀποστέλλειν δύο δύο, *to send them two and two together, i. e. in pairs*. This was expressed in Greek by the preposition ἀνὰ, and so we find it in Luke x. 1, ἀπέστειλεν αὐτοὺς ἀνὰ δύο. See also § 63. Obs. 11. This Hebrew mode of reduplication

¹ Winer, § 38, 3. Alt, § 46, 1. Interpp. ad Lucian. Solœc 9. Pασον. Lex. in v. ὁ.

is not, however, confined to numerals, but is adopted with nouns generally. Thus in Mark vi. 39, ἐπετάξεν αὐτοῖς ἀνακλῖναι πάντας συμπόσια συμπόσια, *by companies*. So Exod. viii. 14, LXX. συνήγαγον αὐτοὺς θημωνίας θημωνίας. Both the Hebrew and Greek forms are united in Mark vi. 40, ἀνέπεσον πρᾶσαι πρᾶσαι, ἀνὰ ἑκατὸν καὶ ἀνὰ πεντήκοντα, *in rows by hundreds and by fifties*. The same is also expressed by an accusative, with κατὰ understood, in Luke ix. 14, κατακλίνεται αὐτοὺς κλισίας ἀνὰ πεντήκοντα. A copula is inserted between the repeated nouns in 2 Cor. iv. 16, ἡμέρᾳ καὶ ἡμέρᾳ, *day by day*.

ἐπάνω. *Excess* is marked by the adverb ἐπάνω prefixed to a numeral, which it does not govern in the *genitive* according to the regular syntax, but which is put in the case required by the verb. Thus in Mark xiv. 5, ἡδύνατο γὰρ τοῦτο πράξῃναι ἐπάνω τριακοσίων δηναρῶν (where the *genitive* is governed by πράξῃναι). 1 Cor. xv. 6, ὥφθη ἐπάνω πεντακοσίοις ἀδελφοῖς. In the LXX ἐπάνω always follows the numeral, to which it is united by the copula καὶ, in exact conformity with the Hebrew. See Exod. xxx. 14, xxxviii. 26, Levit. xxvii. 7. The New Testament usage is rather built upon that of the Greeks, who occasionally omit ἡ, in joining ἑλαττον or πλέον with a numeral. Compare Thucyd. vi. 95, Pausan. viii. 21. 1.¹

τὸ ἴσα εἶναι. Instead of the neuter singular, the neuter plural seems to be used (which is not unusual, when there is no immediate subject of reference) in Phil. ii. 6, οὐχ ἄρπαγμόν ἡγήσατο τὸ εἶναι ἴσα Θεῷ. The expression, however, is peculiar, bearing some resemblance to the adverbial usage of the neuter plural in Hom. Il. E. 71, Od. A. 431, O. 519. See also Thucyd. iii. 14, Soph. Œd. T. 1182, Ælian. V. H. viii. 38, Philostr. V. Apoll. viii. 26. It is, however, distinct.²

ἄγε. The verb ἄγε is found in the singular with the vocative, or rather the nominative for the vocative, in the plural, in James iv. 13, ἄγε νῦν, οἱ λέγοντες. v. 1, ἄγε νῦν, οἱ πλουτοῦν. It will be observed, however, that ἄγε is here used as a kind of interjection; so that nothing perhaps can be inferred from the usage, which prevails also in the best

¹ Winer, § 39, 3. Alt, § 46, 2. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 411.

² Winer, § 27, 3. Alt, § 30, 1. Note.

Greek writers, and equally before nouns in the singular and the plural. See Hom. Il. A. 302, Z. 376, Xen. Cyrop. iv. 2. 47, v. 3. 4, Dion. Hal. vii. p. 456, Aristid. T. I. p. 415. So also the Latins use *age*.

ὄνομα ἔστι, ὀνόματι. It may be observed of ὄνομα ἔστι, that it is joined not only with the dative, but with the genitive of the person or thing, the name itself being put in the nominative. The following are examples of both forms:—Luke i. 5, τὸ ὄνομα αὐτῆς (ῆν) Ἑλισαβέτ. 26, ἡ ὄνομα (ῆν) Ναζαρέτ. 27, ἀνδρὶ, ᾧ ὄνομα Ἰωσήφ· καὶ τὸ ὄνομα τῆς παρ-θένου, Μαριάμ. In like manner the name follows καλεῖσθαι or λέγεσθαι in the nominative; as in Matt. x. 1, Σίμαν ὁ λεγόμενος Πέτρος. Luke ix. 10, πόλεως καλουμένης Βηθσαϊδά. Evidently ὄρος is to be repeated in Luke xix. 29, εἰς τὸ ὄρος τὸ καλούμενον Ἐλαιῶν. So also in Acts i. 12. Even where the accusative would properly have been employed, the nominative is sometimes found. Thus John xiii. 13, φωνεῖτέ με, ὁ διδάσκαλος. Similar examples occur in the LXX and the ecclesiastical writers; as 1 Sam. ix. 9, τὴν προφήτην ἐκάλει ὁ λαὸς ἔμπροσθεν ἡ βλέπων. Theodoret. iii. 241, τὴν θεὸς προσηγορέαν. Add iv. 454. 1304. There is also, it may be remarked, another mode, in which persons are indicated by name, where the name is put in apposition with the preceding noun, and ὀνόματι is added in the dative. Luke i. 5, ἱερεὺς τις ὀνόματι Ζαχαρίας. Acts xxi. 10, προφήτης ὀνόματι Ἀγabus. Compare Acts ix. 11, 12, xviii. 2, xix. 24, xxvii. 1, xxviii. 7.¹

μέλλω. A future is frequently made up of μέλλω and an infinitive of the present, aorist, or future, corresponding with the Latin *futurus sum*, and to be expressed in English by *about to do, intending, is to be, &c.* Thus in Matt. ii. 13, μέλλει ζητεῖν τὸ παιδίον, *is about to seek, or intends to seek*; xi. 14, αὐτός ἐστιν Ἡλίας ὁ μέλλων ἔρχεσθαι, *who was to come*; Luke vii. 2, ἡμέλλε τελευτᾶν, *was about to die, i. e. was at the point of death*; Acts xi. 28, λίμον μέγαν μέλλειν ἔσεσθαι, *simply that there would be*. Add Matt. xvi. 27, Luke xix. 11, xxiv. 21, John iv. 47, vi. 15, Acts iii. 3, xvi. 27, xxi. 27, Gal. iii. 23, Rev. i. 16, ii. 10, iii. 2, 10, 16, *et alibi*.²

¹ Winer, § 29, 2. Lobeck ad Phryn. p. 517.

² Winer, § 45, 8. Alt, § 72, 2.

οἱ περὶ τινα. This remarkable expression demands attention. In Mark iv. 10, οἱ περὶ αὐτὸν is simply *his companions*. Generally the person named is included; and so in Acts xiii. 13, xxi. 8, οἱ περὶ τὸν Παῦλον, *Paul and his companions*. Compare Ezek. xxxviii. 6, xxxix. 4, LXX. But sometimes the form is even so employed as to mean the principal person *exclusively*; and thus it occurs in John xi. 19, τὰς περὶ Μάρθαν καὶ Μαρίας, where *Martha and Mary* only are intended. (In some manuscripts the words τὰς περὶ are omitted.) Compare Æsch. Dial. Socr. xii. 20.¹

§ 69.—*Some peculiar Constructions.* (BUTTM. § 151.)

I. *Attraction.*

1. This is a mode of construction, by which the parts of a proposition, which are *logically* distinct, are grammatically united. The two principal forms of this syntax have been already considered. See §§ 58. 6, and 59. 1. To this head may also be referred the combination of two distinct questions into one proposition, as in Mark xv. 24, βάλλοντες κληῖρον ἐπ' αὐτῶν τίς τί ἄρῃ. Compare Luke xix. 15. Somewhat of the same nature is Rom. iii. 7, τί ἔτι καὶ γὰρ ὡς ἁμαρτωλὸς κρίνομαι; καὶ μὴ (καθὼς βλασφημούμεθα, καὶ καθὼς φασί τινες ἡμᾶς λέγειν), ὅτι ποιήσωμεν τὰ κακὰ, ἵνα ἔλθῃ τὰ ἀγαθὰ; the question being combined with the parenthesis.

2. It is also by *attraction* that two dependent clauses are thrown together, instead of being kept distinct; as in Acts xi. 17, ἐγὼ δὲ τίς ἡμῖν δυνατός κωλύσαι τὸν Θεόν; for ὥστε με εἶ, καὶ δυνατόν. In Latin writers combinations of this nature are not unusual. Thus in Cic. Orat. pro Rosc. Am. 49, *Quid censet hunc ipsum Roscium quo studio esse?* See also Cic. N. D. i. 27.²

II. *Anacoluthon.*

1. It frequently happens that the construction, with which a proposition begins is abandoned; and, either for the sake of *perspicuity*, *emphasis*, or *elegance*, the sentence proceeds in a different manner from that in which it set out. Writings

¹ Winer, § 53. Wetstein on John xi. 19.

² Winer, in Append. § 63. Alt, § 86, 4. Hermann. ad Viger. p. 745. Erfordt ad Soph. Ant. 732.

of deep thought and profound argument, such as the Pauline Epistles, abound with such irregularities. They are also found, however, in other parts of the New Testament; and, though in many cases they may be attributable to the inadvertence of a writer carried away by the engrossing interest of his subject, they frequently impart not only grace, but strength and vigour to the language, and were doubtless intended to fix the attention of the reader.

2. Sometimes in the New Testament an accusative stands alone at the beginning of a sentence, in such a manner that the writer seems, after a parenthesis, to have quitted the construction with which he had begun, and from negligence or forgetfulness to have slipped into another. These are not accusatives absolute, but are to be rendered by *quod attinet ad*. Thus in Luke xxi. 6, ταῦτα, ἃ θεωρεῖτε, ἐλεύσονται ἡμέραι κ. τ. λ. Acts x. 36, τὸν λόγον, ὃν ἀπέστειλε τοῖς υἱοῖς Ἰσραὴλ, ἡμεῖς οἶδατε τὸ ῥῆμα κ. τ. λ. Perhaps, however, τὸν λόγον may depend upon οἶδατε, and ῥῆμα be taken in apposition with λόγον, as Ἰησοῦν, in the next verse, is again in explanatory apposition with both. A more apposite example is Rom. viii. 3, τὸ γὰρ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου, ἐν ᾧ ἡσθένει διὰ τῆς σαρκὸς, ὁ Θεὸς κατέκρινε τὴν ἁμαρτίαν ἐν τῇ σαρκί.¹

Obs. 1. The neuter pronoun *id* is also sometimes put *absolutely* at the beginning of a sentence, probably with the preposition *κατὰ* understood, in the sense of *quod attinet ad*. Thus in Rom. vi. 10, *id* γὰρ ἀπὸ θανάτου, τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ ἀπὸ θανάτου ἐφάπαξ· *id* δὲ ζῆ, ζῆ τῷ Θεῷ. Gal. ii. 20, *id* δὲ νῦν ζῶ ἐν σαρκί, ἐν πίστι ζῶ. In like manner the Latins use *quod*.

3. When the leading proposition has been interrupted by a parenthesis, and the subject is resumed at the end of the digression, there is frequently no grammatical connexion between the first and last parts of the discourse. Thus in Gal. ii. 6, ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν δοκούντων εἶναί τι, (ὅποιοι ποτε ἦσαν κ. τ. λ.), ἡμοῖ γὰρ οἱ δοκῶντες οὐδὲν προσανέθεντο. Here, instead of completing the construction with the passive verb *προσανετέθη*, it is thrown into an active form after the parenthesis.

Obs. 2. It may here be necessary to observe that great caution is necessary in ascertaining the limits, and even the reality of parentheses in the New Testament. Editors have frequently marked them, where they do not exist; and there is so great difference of opinion with respect to their commencement and termination in many passages, that *Tittmann* has rejected the signs, by which they are distinguished, from his edition. At the same time it is often, if not always, essential

¹ Winer, § 32, 7. Hermann, ad Viger. p. 341.

to an author's perspicuity, that, where real parentheses occur, they should be accurately defined; more especially as, in the writings of St. Paul, they are not only very numerous, but sometimes long and intricate. Now parentheses are, for the most part, of two kinds, and exist either when the words of the writer are inserted between those of a speech which he recites (Matt. i. 21, 23, Luke xxiii. 51), or when a proposition is interrupted by the introduction of explanatory matter (Rom. vii. 1, 1 Cor. vii. 10, *et alibi*). Sometimes, however, it is immaterial whether a clause be regarded as parenthetical, or as a continuation of the period. See, for instance, Mark xv. 42, John iv. 9, ix. 7, xix. 23, Rom. iv. 11, 1 Cor. xvi. 5, 2 Cor. v. 7. When a parenthesis is short, it is inserted between two clauses grammatically connected, either with or without a connecting particle, such as *δὲ*, *τε*, *γὰρ*, *ἀλλὰ*, *καί*. Thus in Matt. ix. 6, *ἵνα δὲ εἰδῇτε κ. τ. λ. (τότε λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ), Ἐγερθεὶς ἄρῃ σου τὴν κλίνην.* Mark vii. 26, *ἐλθοῦσα προσέειπεν πρὸς τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ (ἦν δὲ ἡ γυνὴ Ἑλληνίς.)* John i. 39, *οἱ δὲ ὑπὸν αὐτῷ, Ῥαββί (ὃ λέγεται ἑρμηνευόμενον, Διδάσκαλε), ποῦ μένεις;* So Acts i. 15, Rom. vii. 1, 1 Cor. viii. 3, Eph. ii. 5, Col. iv. 10. See also Mark xv. 42, Luke xxiii. 51, John xix. 31, Acts xii. 3, xiii. 8, Rom. i. 20, 1 Cor. xv. 52, 2 Cor. vi. 2, x. 10, xi. 21, 23, xii. 2, Gal. ii. 8, Eph. v. 9, 1 Tim. ii. 7, Heb. vii. 11, 19, 20, ix. 26, x. 7, 23, xiii. 17, Rev. ii. 9. Of Luke ix. 28, see § 37. *Obs.* 20. Sometimes a parenthesis of this kind is of considerable length, as in Rom. i. 2—6; and within this parenthesis itself it will be seen that shorter ones are inserted after *υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ* and *κυρίου ἡμῶν*. More usually, however, after a parenthesis of more than ordinary dimensions, the conclusion of the interrupted clause is repeated, with or without variation. Thus in John vi. 24, *ὁ ὄχλος ἰδὼν ὅτι πλοῖάριον ἄλλο οὐκ ἦν ἐκεῖ, (ἄλλα δὲ ἦλθεν πλοῖάριον κ. τ. λ.), ὅτι οὖν εἶδεν ὁ ὄχλος κ. τ. λ.* 1 Cor. viii. 1, *περὶ δὲ τῶν εἰδωλοθύτων οἴδαμεν, (ὅτι πάντες κ. τ. λ.), περὶ τῆς βρώσεως τῶν εἰδωλοθύτων οἴδαμεν ὅτι κ. τ. λ.* 1 John i. 1, *ὃ ἀκηκόαμεν, ὃ ἰωράκαμεν περὶ τοῦ Λόγου τῆς ζωῆς, (καὶ ἡ ζωὴ κ. τ. λ.), ὃ ἰωράκαμεν, καὶ ἀκηκόαμεν, ἀπαγγέλλομεν ὑμῖν.* In Ephes. iii. 1, the sentence is interrupted by a long parenthesis of twelve verses, and resumed in v. 14. Compare also Rom. v. 12—18, 2 Cor. v. 6—8. When the construction is varied without a repetition of so much of what has gone before, as to make the resumed clause complete in itself, it is then a proper *Anacoluthon*.¹

4. *Anacolutha* frequently occur without a parenthesis, the incipient construction being entirely relinquished, and the sentence proceeding in another form; as in Mark vi. 11, *ὅσοι ἂν μὴ δέξωνται ὑμᾶς, ἐκπορεύομενοι ἐκεῖθεν ἐκτινάξατε τὸν χοῦν εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς.* Acts xxiii. 30, *μηνυθείσης δέ μοι τῆς ἐπιβουλῆς εἰς τὸν ἄνδρα μέλλειν ἔσεσθαι, for μελλούσης.* Rom. ii. 7, *τοῖς μὲν ζωὴν αἰώνιον (ἀποδώσει)· τοῖς δὲ θυμὸς καὶ ὀργή, scil. ἀποδοθήσεται.* 2 Cor. viii. 23, *εἴτε ὑπὲρ Τίτου (λέγει τις), εἴτε ἀδελφοὶ ἡμῶν (ὀνομάζονται).* So again, where the true reading *εἰ δὲ σὺ* seems to have been altered into *ἴδε, σὺ* by some copyist, to whom the anacoluthon was unintelligible, in Rom. ii. 17, *εἰ δὲ σὺ Ἰουδαῖος ἐπονομάζῃ, κ. τ. λ.—ὁ οὖν διδάσκων ἕτερον, σεαυτὸν οὐ διδάσκεις.* See also § 59. 3. *Obs.* 5. Such constructions are particularly frequent with participles, which appear in a case different from

¹ Winer, Append. § 64. I. Alt, Gram. N. T. § 87. *Tracts de parenthesi*, by Wölle, Hirt, Spitzner, and Lindner.

that which the syntax requires; as in Mark xii. 38, βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῶν γραμματέων τῶν θελούντων ἐν στολαῖς περιπατεῖν· οἱ κατεσθιόντες τὰς οἰκίας τῶν χηρῶν, κ. τ. λ. Acts xv. 22, τότε ἔδοξε τοῖς ἀποστόλοις πέμψαι ἄνδρας, γράψαντες διὰ χειρὸς αὐτῶν ταδε. (Compare Thucyd. iii. 36, Xen. Cyrop. i. 4. 26, Lys. in Eratosth. 7.) Eph. iv. 1, παρακαλῶ οὖν ὑμᾶς ἀξίως περιπατῆσαι, ἀνεχόμενοι ἀλλήλων ἐν ἀγάπῃ, σπουδάζοντες κ. τ. λ. See also 2 Cor. ix. 10, 11, 12, 13, Col. i. 10, iii. 16, *et alibi*. Probably also in Col. ii. 2, συμβιβασθέντες is the true reading. There is a doubt respecting 2 Cor. i. 7. Sometimes also a construction, beginning with a participle, passes into another with a finite verb; as in Eph. i. 20, ἐγείρας αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ ἐκάθισεν ἐν δεξιᾷ αὐτοῦ. Col. i. 26, τὸ μυστήριον τὸ ἀποκεκρυμμένον ἀπὸ τῶν αἰώνων, νυνὶ δὲ ἐφανερώθη. Add John v. 41, Col. i. 5, ii. 14, Heb. viii. 10, 2 John 2; and compare Xen. Cyr. ii. 3. 17, v. 4. 29, viii. 2. 21, Pausan. iv. 13. 6.¹

Obs. 3. The construction is sometimes altogether broken off; as in Mark xi. 31, ἰσχυρίζοντο πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς, λέγοντες, Ἐὰν εἴπωμεν, Ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, ἱερεῖ, Διατί οὖν οὐκ ἐπιστεύσατε αὐτῷ; Ἀλλ' ἂν εἴπωμεν, Ἐξ ἀνθρώπων—ἰφοβοῦντο τὸν λαόν.

5. Another species of irregularity in construction consists in a sudden transition from the *indirect* to the *direct* method of speech; as in Luke v. 14, παρήγγειλεν αὐτῷ μηδενὶ εἰπεῖν· ἀλλ' ἀπελθὼν δεῖξον σεαυτὸν τῷ ἱερεῖ. By some grammarians the variation in the form of address is accounted for by an ellipsis of the verb ἔφη. On the other hand, the *direct* form sometimes passes into the *indirect*; as in John xiii. 29, ἔδόκουν, ὅτι λέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς, Ἀγορασον ἃν χρεῖαν ἔχομεν εἰς τὴν ἑορτήν· ἢ τοῖς πτωχοῖς ἵνα τὶ δῶ. Acts xxiii. 23, εἶπεν, Ἐτοιμάσθε στρατώτας διακοσίους, κτήνη τε παραστήσαι. In some cases an intermixture of the *sermo directus et obliquus* is found; as in Acts i. 4, παρήγγειλεν αὐτοῖς περιμένειν τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ πατρὸς, ἣν ἀκούσατέ μου. See also Acts xiv. 22, xvii. 3, xxiii. 22. So in 1 Macc. xvi. 21, ἀπήγγειλεν Ἰωάννῃ, ὅτι ἀπώλετο ὁ πατήρ αὐτοῦ, καὶ ὅτι ἀπέσταλκε καὶ σε ἀποκτεῖναι. Compare also Gen. xii. 13, 19, LXX.

Obs. 4. Closely analogous is the change which sometimes occurs of the subject or person of the verb, as in 1 Cor. vii. 13, γυνή, ἥτις ἔχει ἄνδρα ἄπιστον, καὶ αὐτὸς συνιουκεῖ σκεῖν μετ' αὐτοῦ, μὴ ἀφύτων αὐτόν. Frequently also a change of number takes place; as in Gal. vi. 1, ὑμεῖς οἱ πνευματικοὶ καταρτίζετε τὸν τοιοῦτον, σκαπὼν σιαντὸν, μὴ καὶ σὺ περιπατῇς. Here the transition makes a general caution more closely applicable to each individual. Other instances of change from singular to plural, and *vice versa*, are Rom. xii. 16, 20, 1 Cor. iv. 6, 7, Gal. iv. 6, 7, James ii. 16.

¹ Winer, § 64, II. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 83, Richter *de Anacoluthis*. Hermann. ad Viger. p. 894, sqq. Poppo ad Thucyd. i. p. 360.

6. Two equivalent constructions are frequently united in the same proposition. Thus in Mark vi 7, *πρήγγειλεν αὐτοῖς, ἵνα μηδὲν αἵρωσιν εἰς ὁδόν, ἀλλ' ὑποδεχόμενοι σανδάλια (εἶναι), καὶ μὴ ἐνδύσασθαι δύο χιτῶνας*. Another reading is *ἐνδύσθησθε*, which would effect a triple variation of expression; of which the two first forms are *oblique*, and the last *direct*. Again, in Mark xii. 38, *τῶν θελόντων ἐν στολαῖς περιπατεῖν, καὶ ἀσπασμοὺς ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς*. Rom. xii. 4, *παρακαλῶ οὖν ὑμᾶς παραστήσαι τὰ σάμματα ὑμῶν θυσίαν ζῶσαν, καὶ μὴ συσχηματίζεσθε τῷ αἰῶνι τούτῳ, ἀλλὰ μεταμορφοῦσθε κ. τ. λ.* 1 Cor. xiv. 5, *θεῶλω δὲ πάντας ὑμᾶς λαλεῖν γλώσσαις, μᾶλλον δὲ, ἵνα προφητεύητε*. Add Rom. xii. 14, sqq., 2 Cor. vi. 9, Eph. v. 27, 33, Phil. ii. 22; and compare also Gen. xxxi. 33, xxxv. 3, Josh. xxiii. 16, Judg. xvi. 24, Nehem. x. 30, 3 Esdr. iv. 48, viii. 22, 80, Judith xv. 4, LXX, Thucyd. viii. 78, Xen. Mem. ii. 7. 8, Pausan. i. 19. 5, v. 1. 2, viii. 22, x. 1, Heliod. Æth. i. 6.¹

7. This is also perhaps the place to mention that change of construction, which is called *Hypallage*, when an *adjectivæ* or other word, which *logically* belongs to one connexion, is *grammatically* united with another. Thus in 2 Cor. iii. 7, *ἡ δικαιοσύνη τοῦ θανάτου ἐν γράμμασιν, ἐντετυπωμένη ἐν λίθοις*, where in fact the *letters*, not the *ministry*, were *engraven on stones*. Again, 2 Cor. v. 1, *ἡ ἐπιγείος ἡμῶν οἰκία τοῦ σκήνους*, for *τοῦ ἐπιγείου*. 2 Tim. ii. 6, *τὸν κοπιῶντα γεωργὸν δεῖ πρῶτον τῶν καρπῶν μεταλαμβάνειν, οὐ τὸν τῶν καρπῶν μεταλαμβάνειν θελόντα γεωργὸν δεῖ πρῶτον κοπιᾶν*.²

Obs. 5. Here also may be mentioned the figure called *Antiptosis*, whereby two cases in *regimen* are mutually interchanged; as in Heb. ix. 2. *ἡ προέδρασις τῶν ἁγίων*, for *οἱ ἅγιοι τῆς προέδρασις*. Some improperly refer νόμος δικαιοσύνης, in Rom. ix. 31, to this head.³

III. Ellipsis.

1. Properly speaking, *Ellipsis* is the omission, not of a word contained in, or suggested by, the preceding context, but of some word or phrase spontaneously supplied by the mind, either from the fact of its customary omission in particular instances, or from the obvious demands of the sense.

¹ Winer, Append. § 64. III. Alt. Gram. N. T. §§ 89, 90. Hermann. ad Viger. pp. 207. 218. 546. Rappellus and Kyrie on Acts i. 4. Wolf ad Demosth. Lept. p. 365. Daker ad Thucyd. iv. 37. Ast ad Plat. Legg. p. 160. Heindorf ad Plat. Protag. p. 510.

² Winer, Append. § 65. 4. 7. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 92, 1. Lobeck ad Soph. Aj. 7. Hermann. ad Viger. p. 891.

³ Hermann ad Viger. p. 890. Blomfield ad Æsch. Agam. 118. 1360. Tholuck on Rom. ix. 31.

Obs. 1. Many abbreviated forms may be regarded as mere idioms, in which the words *ἡμέρα*, *χειρ*, *υἱός*, *γυνή*, &c., are at once supplied without hesitation. They occur at every step; as in Matt. i. 6, ἡ τοῦ Οὐρίου, *scil.* γυνή. iv. 21, ὁ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου, *scil.* υἱός. vi. 34, ἡ αὐρίου, *scil.* ἡμέρα. x. 42, ψυχροῦ, *scil.* ὕδατος. xxiii. 15, τὴν ξηρὰν, *scil.* γῆν. John iv. 31, τῷ μεταξὺ, *scil.* χρόνῳ. xx. 12, ἐν λευκοῖς, *scil.* ἱματίοις. Acts ii. 33, τῇ δεξιᾷ, *scil.* χειρὶ. xvi. 11, τῇ ἐπιούσῃ, *scil.* ἡμέρᾳ. In like manner the word omitted is easily found in Luke iii. 5, ἔσται τὰ σκολιὰ εἰς εὐθεΐαν, *scil.* ὁδόν. xiv. 18, ἀπὸ μῶν, *scil.* φωνῆς. 2 Cor. viii. 15, ὁ τὸ πολὺ, ὁ τὸ ὀλίγον, *scil.* ἔχων. James iii. 11, μήτι ἡ πηγὴ ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ὁπῆς βρῦει τὸ γλυκὺ καὶ τὸ πικρὸν; *scil.* ὕδωρ.

Obs. 2. In less obvious instances the word omitted must be obtained from the sense; and there are ellipses of the *verb*, the *subject*, and the *object*, but not of the predicate, which requires from its very nature to be accurately defined. Examples of such ellipses will be found in § 37. 7, 8, 9; to which may be added such verbs as *τελευτᾶν* and *διάγειν* (Matt. ii. 19, Tit. iii. 3), *προσέχειν* (Matt. vi. 1), *κρούειν* and *ἀνοίγειν* (Matt. vii. 7, xxv. 11), *συλλαμβάνειν* (Luke i. 24), *προσφέρειν* (Luke v. 14), *συμβάλλειν* (Acts iv. 15), *στρωννύειν* (Acts ix. 34), *et alia*, with which the accusatives of the object, *βίον*, *νοῦν*, *θύραν*, *υἱόν*, *θυσίαν*, *λόγους*, *κλίνην*, &c., are sometimes found, and with which the notion of these nouns is so intimately combined, that their absence can scarcely be considered as elliptical. With respect to the predicate also, although a complete ellipsis is impossible, a partial one may obtain; as, for instance, in Luke xii. 47, ἐκεῖνος ὁ δοῦλος δαρήσεται πολλὰς, *scil.* πληγὰς. See also 2 Cor. xi. 24; and compare Xen. Anab. v. 8. 12, Ælian. V. H. x. 21, Liban. iv. p. 862.

Obs. 3. From the fact that, in the later writers, *prepositions* are far more largely introduced after *verbs*, which are commonly followed by a simple case, Grammarians have supposed an ellipsis; as, for instance, of *ἀντὶ* with a *genitive* after verbs of *buying* and *selling*. The simple *genitive* has already the signification, which the addition of the preposition may render more prominent, but which it does not communicate. Various forms with the article also, as *τά κατ' ἐμὲ*, *τὸ ἴσωθιν*, and the like; and *participles* and *adjectives* which stand in the place of *substantives*, might probably be rendered more explicit by the addition of a noun; but they are still only *abbreviated* expressions, not *elliptical*. So with respect to conjunctions, such expressions as *τί θέλειτε ποιῆσω ὑμῖν*; (Matt. xx. 32) are explained by an omission of *ἵνα*; and *ἤ*, in the sense of *rather than*, by *μᾶλλον* understood; as in Luke xv. 7, xviii. 14, 1 Cor. xiv. 19, Gal. i. 10. The omission, however, if real, is rather to be considered as a *grammatical* idiom than a figure.¹

2. Besides the *Ellipsis* properly so called, there are various concise modes of expression, which are closely allied to it. Thus a word or words, employed only *once*, must often be taken *twice*. There is a striking instance, in which the words to be repeated are inserted between brackets, in Rom. ii. 28, οὐ γὰρ ὁ ἐν τῷ φανερῷ (Ἰουδαῖος), Ἰουδαῖός ἐστιν, οὐδὲ ἡ ἐν τῷ φανερῷ (περιτομὴ), περιτομή (ἐστιν). ἀλλ' ὁ ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ Ἰουδαῖος (Ἰουδαῖός ἐστι), καὶ (ἡ περιτομὴ ἐστὶ) πèριτομή καρδίας κ. τ. λ. So again the sense must be thus supplied in Rom. v. 16, καὶ οὐκ ὥς δι' ἐνὸς ἁμαρτήσαντός (ἐστιν ὁ θάνατος, οὕτω δι' ἐνὸς δικαιοῦντος) τὸ δῶρημα· τὸ μὲν γὰρ κρίμα ἐξ ἐνὸς (παραπτώματος) εἰς κατάκριμα

¹ Winer, Append. § 66. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 93. Hermann. ad Viger. pp. 869, sqq. Bauer Philol. Thucyd. Paul. pp. 162, sqq. L. Bos. de Ellips. *passim*. Interpp. ad N. T. in ll. cc.

κ. τ. λ. Also in v. 18, τὸ κρίμα and τὸ χάρισμα must be supplied after παραπτώματος and δικαιοσύματος respectively. See also Rom. xiii. 7. Of a similar nature are the abbreviated expressions noticed above in § 13, 2.

Obs. 4. A verb, or part of a clause, is frequently to be supplied from the preceding or subsequent context, because, though omitted, it was obviously present to the mind of the writer. Thus in Mark xiv. 29, καὶ ἡ πάντες σκανδαλισθήσονται, ἀλλ' ἐγὼ οὐκ ἔσχω πτεῖν. σκανδαλισθήσομαι. Luke vii. 42, τίς οὖν πάντων πλεον αὐτοῦ ἀγαπήσει, ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ ὁ Σίμων ἔειπεν, Ὑπολαμβάνω ὅτι (scil. αὐτοῦ) σκληρὸν ἀγαπήσει οὗτος), ὃ ὅτε πλεον ἔχει σατο. See also John xv. 4, Rom. ix. 31, xi. 18, 1 Cor. xi. 1, 2 Cor. iii. 13, Acts Mark xi. 5, Rom. v. 3, 11, vii. 23, ix. 10, 1 Cor. vii. 3, 4, xiv. 27, xv. 27, 2 Cor. i. 6, ii. 10, v. 13, vii. 11, viii. 19, Eph. iv. 29, v. 24, Phil. iii. 13, 2 Tim. i. 5, 1 Pet. v. 11, Rev. xix. 10, xii. 9. Sometimes there is no omission, where it might be expected; as in John xv. 16, οὐχ ἡμεῖς μὲν ἐξελεξαμεθα, ἀλλ' ἐγὼ ἐξελεξάμην ἡμᾶς.

Obs. 5. It may also be observed here, that the verbs *to say* are often omitted before ὡς, ὅτι, &c. Thus in Acts xiv. 22, ἰτιστηρίζοντες τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν μαθητῶν παρακαλοῦντες ἡμῖν τῇ πίστει, καὶ (scil. εἰς) λίγοντες ὅτι διὰ πολλῶν θλίψεων ἐκ κ. τ. λ. Comp. are 2 Cor. i. 24, vii. 12, Phil. iv. 17, 2 Thess. iii. 9. The same also occurs in other cases, where the sense is sufficiently implied in what precedes; as in John xiii. 18, ἐγὼ οἶδα ὅς ἐξελεξάμεν, ἀλλ' ἵνα ἡ γραφὴ πληρωθῇ, αὐτοῦ οὕτως ἐποίησα. See also Mark xiv. 49, xv. 8, John i. 8, ix. 3, xv. 25.

3. Sometimes the sense requires that a word or words should be supplied, which are directly the reverse of those in a preceding clause. Thus in 1 Cor. vii. 19, ἡ περιτομὴ οὐδὲν ἔστι, καὶ ἡ ἀκροβυστία οὐδὲν ἔστιν, ἀλλὰ τήρησις ἐντολῶν Θεοῦ, scil. ἔστι τ. xiv. 34, οὐ γὰρ ἐπιτέτραπται αὐταῖς λαλεῖν, ἀλλ' ὑποτάσσασθαι, scil. κελεύονται. 1 Tim. iv. 3, κωλυόντων γαμεῖν, ἀπέχεσθαι βρωμάτων (scil. κελευόντων). In Acts xxvii. 43 a similar form is complete. It does not seem that James i. 9, 10, belongs here.

Obs. 6. The same verb is even employed in two different acceptations; as in Luke xix. 43, ἰδαφιοῦσι σε καὶ τὰ τέκνα σου ἐν σοι, where ἰδαφίζειν signifies both *to level with the ground*, and *to dash against the ground*. In this last sense it occurs in Ps. cxxxviii. 9, Hos. x. 14, LXX.

Obs. 7. Somewhat analogous to this is the figure called *Zeugma*, by which a verb is grammatically connected with two substantives, but in sense only with one of them; as in Luke i. 64, ἀνέψυχθαι δὲ τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ παραχρῆμα καὶ ἡ γλῶσσα αὐτοῦ, where ἀνέψυχθαι can be strictly applied only to στόμα, and ἔλυσθαι, or some like word, must be supplied with γλῶσσα. So again in Luke xxiv. 27, ἀρξάμενος ἀπὸ Μωσέως καὶ ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν προφητῶν, scil. προβιβάζων. 1 Cor. iii. 2, γάλα ἡμᾶς ἰσότησα, καὶ οὐ βρώμα, scil. ἐψώμισα.

Obs. 8. To this head also belongs the *constructio prægnans*, when a verb derives an additional force from a preposition, with which it is improperly constructed. Thus in Luke iv. 38, ἀναστὰς ἐκ τῆς συναγωγῆς, arising and departing from the synagogue. Acts xxi. 24, ἵνα διασώσῃσι πρὸς Φήλικα, to conduct him in safety. 2 Tim. ii. 26, ἀνάνηψαν ἐκ τῆς τοῦ διαβόλου παγίδος, they should recover from their stupification, and be delivered from the snare of the Devil. See also Acts xx. 30, Gal. v. 4, 2 Tim. iv. 18, 1 Pet. iii. 20; and compare Xen. Anab. 3. 11, Polyb. vi. 53. 5.¹

¹ Winer, Append. § 66, 1. 7. Alt. Gram. N. T. § 47, 4. Hermann. ad Viger. p.

4. Under the head of *Ellipsis* should perhaps be classed the suppression of the whole or part of a sentence, which the emotion, or energy, or studied conciseness of a writer may lead him to omit. This is called *Aposiopesis*; and the import of a clause thus suppressed, which in conversation is collected from the tone, manner, or gesture of the speaker, is indicated in writing by the tenor of the discourse. Thus in Luke xix. 42, εἰ ἔγνων καὶ σὺ τὰ πρὸς εἰρήνην σου· νῦν δὲ ἐκρίβην ἀπὸ ὀφθαλμῶν σου. xxii. 42, εἰ βούλει παρενεγκεῖν τὸ ποτήριον τοῦτο· πλήν μὴ κ. τ. λ. There is another example, according to those manuscripts which omit the words μὴ θεμαχῶμεν, in Acts xxiii. 9.

Obs. 9. In conditional sentences, after the formula εἰ δὲ μήγε, the alternative is generally suppressed; as in Matt. vi. 1, προσέχετε τὴν δικαιοσύνην ὑμῶν μὴ ποιῆν ἵνα προσθῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, πρὸς τὸ διαθῆναι αὐτοῖς· εἰ δὲ μήγε, scil. προσέχετε κ. τ. λ.), μισθὸν οὐκ ἔχετε. So in Matt. ix. 17, Mark ii. 21, 22, Luke x. 6, Rev. ii. 5, and elsewhere. There is a double aposiopesis in Luke xiii. 9, καὶ μὴν παύσῃ παρσύν·—εἰ δὲ μήγε,—εἰς τὸ μᾶλλον ἐκπέσει αὐτήν. In the first clause καλῶς ἔχει may be supplied, and in the last the alternative is suppressed.

IV. *Pleonasm.*

1. The opposite of *Ellipsis* is *Pleonasm*, or the insertion of a word which is not absolutely necessary to the sense, and therefore *redundant*. Its object seems to have been to define more closely the proper meaning of a word, which had departed in any degree from its original import; but, at the same time, without increasing its force. A good example of this is Tit. i. 12, ἴδιος αὐτῶν προφήτης.

Obs. 1. Hence the use of ὡς with verbs of *assimilating*, *reputing*, and the like; as in Matt. xiv. 5, ὡς προφήτην ἔχον αὐτόν. Luke xv. 19, ποιήσω με ὡς ἵνα τῶν μισθίων σου. 1 Cor. iv. 1, ἡμᾶς λογίζεσθω ὡς ὑπηρέτας. Hence also the addition of the negative particle after verbs of *denying* and *preventing*; the formulæ εἰς ἕκαστος, εἰς τις, &c.; and the *preposition* repeated after compound verbs. See § 15, 4; 58, 2. *Obs.* 3; and 65. *Obs.* 6.

2. The next degree of *pleonasm* is the use of two equivalent terms, with a view perhaps of giving energy to the style, but still altogether or nearly synonymous; in which case the redundancy may consist either in a simple word, or in one of the elements of a compound one. Thus in Matt. v. 20, εἰς μὴ περιστάσει ἢ δικαιοσύνη ὑμῶν πλεῖον τῶν γερμματέων. x. 38, ἀκολουθεῖς ὀπίσω μου. xlvii. 42, πάλιν ἐκ δευτέρου. 58, ἀπὸ μακρόθεν.

569. Porro ad Thucyd. i. pp. 282, 292. Stallium ad Plat. Apol. p. 78. Symp. p. 80. Euthyphr. p. 60. Kiancel on Luke i. 64, Acts xxiii. 24. Pott on James i. 9.

xxvii. 51, ἀπὸ ἄνωθεν. Luke xiv. 10, προσανάβηθι ἀνώτερον. xix. 4, προδραμὼν ἔμπροσθεν. John ix. 34, ἐξέβαλον αὐτὸν ἔξω. xi. 7, ἔπειτα μετὰ τοῦτο. Acts xiii. 24, πρὸ προσώπου τῆς εἰσόδου αὐτοῦ. (An Hebraism. Compare Gen. xxv. 18, Numb. xix. 4, LXX) xviii. 21, πάλιν ἀνακάμψω. 1 Cor. xiv. 5, ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ. 2 Cor. iv. 19, ὥς ὅτι. Gal. iv. 9, πάλιν ἄνωθεν. 2 Tim. iv. 9, σπούδασον ἐλθεῖν ταχέως. Heb. vi. 6, πάλιν ἀνακαινίζειν. Rev. ix. 7, τὰ ὁμοιώματα τῶν ἀκρίδων ὅμοια ἵπποις.

Obs. 2. It is usual also to represent the verbs ἀρχισθαι, δεκεῖν, σολμαῖν, ἐπιχειρεῖν, θίλειν, and some others, as frequently redundant; though perhaps they generally give some accession to the verb with which they are connected. Examples are, Matt. iii. 9, μὴ δόξετε λίγειν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. Luke i. 1, πολλοὶ ἐπιχείρησαν ἀνατάξασθαι διήγησιν. John v. 35, ἠθελήσατε ἀγαλλιασθῆναι πρὸς ἄραν ἐν τῇ φωτὶ αὐτοῦ. xiii. 5, ἤρξατο νίπτειν τοὺς πόδας τῶν μαθητῶν. xxi. 12, οὐδεὶς ἐτόλμα ἐξιτάσαι αὐτόν. Compare Matt. xx. 25 with Mark x. 42. See also Luke xxii. 24, John vii. 17, Acts xi. 15, Rom. v. 7, 1 Cor. iii. 18, vii. 40, x. 12, xi. 16, xiv. 37, 2 Tim. iii. 12, Heb. iv. 1, xiii. 18.

Obs. 3. Frequently verbs take an accusative of the cognate noun, as in 2 Cor. viii. 24, τὴν ἰνδιξιν τῆς ἀγάπης ὑμῶν εἰς αὐτοὺς ἰνδιξασθε. See above, § 40. 4. If, however, any additional idea is conveyed by the noun, the usage cannot be termed strictly pleonastic; and the same remark applies to a large class of compounds: such as in Matt. v. 35, ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν. Luke xxii. 11, τῇ οἰκοδοσπότῃ τῆς οἰκίας. Compare Hom. P. 247, T. 235.

Obs. 4. The frequent redundancy of the copula καὶ in the second member of a proposition seems to have arisen from a confusion of two constructions. Thus in Luke ii. 21, ὅτε ἐπλήσθησαν ἡμέραι ὀκτώ, καὶ ἐκλήθη κ. τ. λ., the two forms ἐπλήσθησαν καὶ ἐκλήθη and ὅτε ἐπλήσθησαν ἐκλήθη appear to be intermixed. Of the pleonastic use of the relative pronoun see § 34. 2.

3. From *Pleonasm*, properly so called, are to be separated the following cases:—

1. Words repeated for the sake of *emphasis*, or in expressions of vehement emotion; as in Matt. xxv. 11, κύριε, κύριε, ἄνοιξον ἡμῖν. 1 Cor. vi. 11, ἀλλὰ ἀπελούσασθε, ἀλλὰ ἡγιασθήτε, ἀλλὰ ἐδικαιώθητε. xiv. 26, ὅταν συνέρχησθε, ἕκαστος ὑμῶν ψαλμὸν ἔχει, διδαχὴν ἔχει, γλῶσσαν ἔχει, ἀποκάλυψιν ἔχει, ἐρμηνείαν ἔχει. See also Matt. vii. 21, John xix. 10, Acts ix. 4, xxvi. 14, Phil. i. 9, iii. 2, Col. i. 28.

Obs. 5. Of a similar character is the accumulation of synonymes which are intended to add force and even variety to the sentiment. Such are Mark xii. 30, ἀγαπήσεις Κύριον τὸν Θεόν σου ἐξ ὅλης τῆς καρδίας σου, καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς ψυχῆς σου, καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς διανοίας σου, καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς ἰσχύος σου. Rom. ii. 4, ἡ τοῦ πλούτου τῆς χρηστότητος αὐτοῦ, καὶ τῆς ἀνοχῆς, καὶ τῆς μακροθυμίας καταφρονεῖς; Eph. i. 21, ὑπεράνω πάσης ἀρχῆς καὶ ἐξουσίας καὶ δυνάμεως καὶ κυριότητος. Phil. iv. 9, ἀ καὶ ἐμάθετε, καὶ παραλάβετε, καὶ ἠκούσατε καὶ εἴδετε ἐν ἐμοί. Col. iii. 16, ψαλμοῖς καὶ ὕμνοις καὶ ᾠδαῖς πνευματικαῖς ᾄδοντες. Add Acts ii. 23, Rom. ii. 8, 10, 19, ix. 33, x. 15, 1 Cor. xiv. 21, Gal. i. 12, v. 20, Eph. v. 19, Phil. i. 2, 16, Col. i. 16, 1 Tim. iii. 15, 2 Tim. iii. 14, Tit. i. 4, 1 Pet. iii. 11. Two or more emblems of equivalent import are in like manner em-

ployed for the purpose of illustration in figurative discourse; as in Rom. xi. 6, εἰ δὲ ἡ ἀπαρχὴ ἁγία, καὶ τὸ φύραμα· καὶ εἰ ἡ ῥίζα ἁγία, καὶ οἱ κλάδοι. This frequent use of a continuous series of expressions entirely or nearly synonymous is very characteristic of the Hebrews, and thence doubtless its prevalence in the New Testament, though it is not without example in the Greek writers. Perhaps a redundancy may sometimes be attributed to the writer's inattention to the mere elegancies of style; as in Rev. xiii. 2, στόμα αὐτοῦ ὡς στόμα λέοντος. Compare Rev. ix. 2, xiv. 2. There is a parallel example in Athen. v. 21, ἐλούετο ἐν τοῖς βαλανείοις, ὅτε δημοτῶν ἦν τὰ βαλανῖα πεπληρωμένα.

2. The expression of a sentiment both in an affirmative and a negative form; as in John i. 20, ὡμολόγησε, καὶ οὐκ ἠρνήσατο. Acts xviii. 9, λάλει, καὶ μὴ σιωπήσης. Rom. ix. 1, ἀληθείαν λέγω, οὐ ψεύδομαι. Compare Luke i. 20, John i. 3, Acts xiii. 11, Rom. ii. 8, Eph. v. 15, Col. i. 23, 1 John ii. 27; and see above, § 25. *Obs.* 12. Entirely distinct from this usage are such passages as Rom. xi. 20, μὴ ὑψηλοφρόνει, ἀλλὰ φοβοῦ. 1 Pet. iii. 11, ἐκκλινάτω ἀπὸ κακοῦ, καὶ ποιησάτω ἀγαθόν.¹

3. *Periphrasis*, and circumstantiality of expression; as when a particular instrument is designated, or a preliminary action introduced. Thus in Matt. v. 2, καὶ, ἀνοίξας τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ, ἐδίδασκεν αὐτούς. xxvi. 51, ἐκτείνας τὴν χεῖρα, ἀπέσπασε τὴν μάχαιραν αὐτοῦ. Acts i. 16, ἦν προεῖπε διὰ στόματος Δαβίδ. xi. 30, ἀποστείλαντες διὰ χειρὸς Βαρνάβα. Acts xv. 3, λαβὼν περιέτεμεν αὐτόν. 1 Cor. vi. 15, ἄρας οὖν τὰ μέλη τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ποιήσω πόρνῃς μέλη; Add Matt. ii. 23, ix. 9, xvii. 8, Luke xv. 18, 20, Acts ii. 14, iii. 18, 21, iv. 25, xiv. 3, xv. 7, 23, *et alibi*. In such periphrastic forms, however, there is sometimes a marked and even powerful emphasis; as in Luke ii. 30, εἶδον οἱ ὀφθαλμοί μου τὸ σωτήριόν σου. Compare 1 John i. 1.

Obs. 6. Circumlocutions occur in the New Testament with the following substantives:—

ἔργον. Eph. iv. 12, ἔργον διακονίας, for διακονία. In 1 Thess. i. 3, ἔργον πίστεως, and κόπος ἀγάπης are not pleonastic expressions, but strongly emphatic.

καιρός. 1 Thess. ii. 17, πρὸς καιρὸν ἔγραψα. So in Hor. Sat. i. 1. 9, *Horæ momento*.

κεφαλὴ. Acts xviii. 6, τὸ αἷμα ὑμῶν ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν ὑμῶν. Perhaps, however, the word cannot be considered as altogether pleonastic, since the consequences of

¹ Winer, Append. § 67. Alt. Gram. N. T. §§ 95, 96. Tittmann. de Synonym. N. T. and Weiske and Maius de Pleonasm. *passim*. Hermann. ad Viger. pp. 885. sqq. Glass. Phil. Sacr. i. p. 641, sqq. Bauer Philol. Thuc. Paul. pp. 202, sqq. Wyss. Dialectol. Sacr. p. 165. Georg. Hierocrit. i. 3. 44. Poppo ad Thucyd. i. pp. 197, sqq. Lowth de Sacr. Poesi Hebr. xix. pp. 360, sqq. Vorstius de Hebræism. N. T. pp. 605, sqq.

guilt are usually imprecated upon the head, with reference perhaps to Levit. xvi. 21. Neither perhaps is *κεφαλὴ* to be regarded as a perfect pleonasm in Matt. viii. 20, Luke ix. 58.

λόγος. 2 Cor. xi. 7, ἐν λόγῳ ἀληθείας. 1 Thess. ii. 5, ἐν λόγῳ πολακείας.

οἶκος. John ii. 16, οἶκον ἐμπορίου, for ἐμπόριον. Though possibly ἐμπόριον may be used in the sense of *merchandise*, which is more usually in the plural ἐμπόρια.

ὄνομα. John iii. 18, τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ μονογενοῦς υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Acts iii. 16, ἐπὶ τῇ πίστι τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ, τοῦτον ἰσχυρίσῃ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ. Rom. x. 12, πᾶς γὰρ, ὃς ἐκ ἐπικαλίσσεται τὸ ὄνομα Κυρίου, σωθήσεται.

πνεῦμα. Eph. iv. 23, ἀνανιῶσθαι τῷ πνεύματι τοῦ νοῦς, for νοῖ.

ποῦς and *χείρ*. Matt. xvii. 22, μῆλλει ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοσθαι εἰς χεῖρας ἀνθρώπων. Mark vi. 2, δυναμίς τοιαῦται διὰ τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ γίνονται. Luke i. 71, σωτηρίαν ἐκ χειρὸς πάντων τῶν μισούντων ἡμᾶς. 79, κατευθῆναι τοὺς πόδας ἡμῶν εἰς ὁδὸν εἰρήνης. John iii. 35, πάντα δίδωκεν ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ. Acts v. 9, οἱ πόδες τῶν θαψάντων τὸν ἄνδρα σου ἐπὶ τῇ θύρᾳ. Rom. iii. 15, ὅξιν οἱ πόδες αὐτῶν ἐκχέουσιν αἷμα. 2 Cor. xi. 33, ἐξέφυγον τὰς χεῖρας αὐτοῦ.

σὰρξ. Eph. v. 29, οὐδεὶς γὰρ τὴν ἑαυτοῦ σάρκα ἐμίσησιν.

σῶμα. Rom. xii. 1, παρακαλῶ οὖν ὑμᾶς παραστήσαι τὰ σώματα ὑμῶν θυσίαν ζῶσαν. Eph. v. 28, οὕτως ὀφείλουσιν οἱ ἄνδρες ἀγαπᾶν τὰς ἑαυτῶν γυναῖκας ὡς τὰ ἑαυτῶν σώματα.

υἱός. Mark iii. 28, πάντα ἀφιδέσονται τὰ ἁμαρτήματα τοῖς υἱοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων. (Compare Matt. xii. 31.) Eph. iii. 5, τὸ μυστήριον, ὃ ἐν ἐτέραις γενεαῖς οὐκ ἐγνωρίσθη τοῖς υἱοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων.

φωνή. Matt. iii. 3, John i. 23, φωνὴ βοῶντος ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ, for βοῶν. Compare Isai. xl. 3.

φύσις. James iii. 7, πᾶσα φύσις θηρίων τε καὶ πτερινῶν, ἱρπιστῶν τε καὶ ἐναλίων, δαμάζεται καὶ διδάσσεται τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρωπίνῃ.

χώρα. Luke iii. 1, τῆς Ἰουδαίας καὶ Τραχωνίτιδος χώρας.

ψυχή. Luke ii. 35, σοῦ δὲ αὐτῆς τὴν ψυχὴν διελεύσεται ῥομφαία. ix. 36, ὁ γὰρ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου οὐκ ἦλθε ψυχὰς ἀνθρώπων ἀπολίσσαι, ἀλλὰ σῶσαι.

V. *Asyndeta*.

1. Each simple sentence, of which a compound proposition consists, may include various combinations of the several parts of speech dependent upon each other according to the rules of government, which have been stated and exemplified. The position of the *adjective*, of *nouns* in *regimen*, and other cognate relationships, have been investigated (§§ 30. 44. *Obs.* 20, &c.); and, with respect to the rest, it may be observed, that the *adverb* should be near the word which it qualifies, the *preposition* annexed to the noun which it governs, and the *verb*, if not at the end of the clause, in that prominent situation which effect, or emphasis, requires.

Obs. 1. Still it happens that *adverbs* in particular, and sometimes other words, are separated from their immediate connexion, either to mark an *antithesis* (Acts viii. 48, 2 Cor. ii. 4, Gal. iii. 15), to produce an *emphasis* (2 Cor. vii. 16, 1 Pet. ii. 7), or from the inattention of the writer to the mere accuracies of style. Among the numerous examples of such negligence, it will suffice to notice Luke xviii. 18, John

vi. 66, vii. 38, xii. 18, Acts xxvi. 24, Rom. i. 11, vii. 18, xii. 3, 1 Cor. ii. 11, v. 1, Gal. iv. 1, 23, Heb. xi. 32, xiii. 11. Nor are similar instances rare in the best writers.¹ Indeed the arrangement of words must naturally depend upon the peculiar bent of the writer's taste or genius, and in an argumentative or didactic style will be far removed from the regular and obvious order of simple narrative. A much greater freedom will accordingly be found to prevail in the animated and energetic writings of St. Paul, than in the calmer and more sedate compositions of the Evangelists. The omission of conjunctions is more particularly a predominant feature in his Epistles; and their absence is the means of increasing their force and spirit in a very sensible degree. Similar *asyndeta* are not wanting, however, in the other parts of the New Testament.

2. *Asyndeta* may be resolved into four classes—*conjunctive*, *disjunctive*, *explanatory*, and *causal*. Examples of the first class are, 1 Cor. iii. 12, εἰ δὲ τις ἐποικοδομεῖ ἐπὶ τὸν θεμέλιον τοῦτον, χρυσὸν, ἄργυρον, λίθους τιμίους, ξύλα, χόρτον, καλάμην. 1 Tim. iv. 13, πρὸς ἑχέ τῇ ἀναγνώσει, τῇ παρακλήσει, τῇ διδασκαλίᾳ. Heb. xi. 37, ἐλιθίσθησαν, ἐπρίσθησαν, ἐπειράσθησαν, ἐν φόβῳ μαχαίρας ἀπέθανον· κ. τ. λ. See also Mark xvi. 17, Rom. i. 29, ii. 19, 1 Cor. iv. 8, xiii. 4, 2 Cor. vii. 2, Phil. iii. 5, 1 Thess. v. 14, 2 Tim. iii. 2, iv. 2, James v. 6, 1 Pet. ii. 17, v. 10; and compare Demosth. Phil. iv. p. 54, A, Plat. Gorg. p. 517, D, Polit. x. p. 598, C, Heliod. Æth. i. 5, Lucian. D. M. xxvi. 2. So, in Latin, Terent. Eun. v. 7, *Ego ille agrestis, sævus, tristis, parcus, truculentus, tenax*. (2.) Of the second class are, Mark ii. 27, τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἐγένετο, οὐχ ὁ ἄνθρωπος διὰ τὸ σάββατον. 1 Cor. xv. 42, οἷτω καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις τῶν νεκρῶν· σπείρεται ἐν φθορᾷ, ἐγείρεται ἐν ἀφθαρσίᾳ· κ. τ. λ. James i. 19, ἔστω πᾶς ἄνθρωπος ταχὺς εἰς τὸ ἀκοῦσαι, βραδὺς εἰς τὸ λαλῆσαι. Add Mark ii. 27, 1 Cor. vii. 12, Eph. ii. 8. To one or other of the above classes may be referred such addresses as these in Mark xvi. 6, Ἰησοῦν ζητεῖτε, τὸν ἐσταυρωμένον· ἠγέρθη, οὐκ ἔστιν ἔτι. Acts xxv. 12, Καίσαρα ἐπικέκλησαι· ἐπὶ Καίσαρα πορεύσῃ. (3.) A clause added to explain or define another more exactly is frequently without a copula; as in 2 Cor. vii. 5, ἐν παντὶ δολιζόμενοι (ἔσμεν)· ἔξωθεν μάχαι, ἔσωθεν φόβοι. Compare 2 Pet. ii. 18, 19. (4.) Causal *asyndeta* are John xix. 12, ἐὰν τοῦτον ἀπολύσῃς, οὐκ εἶ φίλος τοῦ Καίσαρος. 1 Cor. vii. 15, εἰ δὲ ὁ ἄπιστος χωρίζεται, χωρίζεσθω· οὐ δεοίλωται ὁ ἀδελφὸς ἢ ἡ ἀδελφὴ ἐν τοῖς τοιούτοις. So 1 Cor. vii. 4, Rev. xvi. 6, xxii. 10.²

¹ Winer in Append. § 65. Alt. § 91. Gersdorf's Beiträge, i. 1. Porpo ad Thucyd. i. p. 299. Krüger ad Dion. pp. 139. 318.

² Winer in Append. § 66. 8. Alt. § 94. b. Glass. Phil. Sacr. i. p. 512. Bauer. Rhet. Paulin. T. ii. p. 591. Stallbaum ad Plat. Crit. p. 144. Protag. p. 52.

VI. *Hendiadys*.

When two substantives, of which one denotes some *quality* or *accessory* of the other, are joined together by a *copula*, this last is frequently to be rendered by an *adj.*, or in the *gen.*; and the figure is called *Hendiadys* (ἐν διαὶ δυοῖν). Thus we have in Luke xxi. 15, στόμα καὶ σοφίαν, *wise words*, or *words of wisdom*. Acts i. 25, διακονίας καὶ ἀποστολῆς, i. e. διακονίας ἀποστολικῆς. xiv. 13, ταύρους καὶ στέμματα, i. e. ταύρους ἐστεμμένους. 2 Tim. i. 10, ζωὴν καὶ ἀφθαρσίαν, for ζωὴν ἄφθαρτον. 2 Pet i. 3, ζωὴν καὶ εὐσεβείαν, and δόξης καὶ ἀρετῆς. So in Latin, Virg. Georg. ii. 192, Pateris libanus et auro, i. e. pateris aureis.

Obs. 1. In Matt. iii. 11, καὶ περὶ is omitted in many manuscripts; but if the words are genuine, the passage is another example of this figure. Compare Acts ii. 3. Chrysostom unites κοινωνία and κλάσι τῶν ἄρτων, in Acts ii. 42, into a *hendiadys*; but it should seem that the latter refers alone to the Eucharist, and the former implies *Christian fellowship* generally. The figure is only employed where one *subst.* indicates a property of the other; so that Phil. i. 11, and 25, are not cases in point.¹

Obs. 2. The case is similar when a *copula* joins two verbs, of which one is to be expressed adverbially; as in Luke vi. 48, ἵστασι καὶ ἰβάθουσι, for βαθίως ἵστασι. See § 67.

§ 70.—*Rhetorical Figures*.

To the peculiarities of *grammatical* construction, noticed in the foregoing section, it may not be amiss to add some of the principal *Rhetorical* figures, which are employed by the writers of the New Testament.

I. *Metonymy*.

1. This figure consists in the substitution of one *name* or *appellation* for another; as the *cause* for the *effect*, and, *vice versâ*, the *effect* for the *cause*. Thus *Christ* is put for his *doctrine* in Rom. xvi. 9, συνεργὸν ἡμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ, *our assistant in preaching the Gospel*. Compare 1 Cor. iv. 15, Eph. iv. 20. Again, the *Holy Ghost* is put for his *effects*, or his *gifts*. John vi. 63, τὰ ῥήματα, ἃ ἐγὼ λαλῶ ὑμῖν, πνεῦμά ἐστι, καὶ ζωὴ ἐστιν, i. e. *proceed from the Spirit of God, and lead to eternal life*. 1 Thess. v. 19, τὸ πνεῦμα μὴ σβέννυτε, where the *Spirit* is represented as a *fire*, from its enlightening and purifying influences.

¹ Glass. Phil. Sacr. p. 18. Alt. Gr. N. T. § 97. Kuinoel on Acts xiv. 13. Pott on 2 Pet. i. 3.

Compare Rom. xii. 11, 2 Tim. i. 6. Similarly the *author* is put for his *work* (Luke xvi. 29, xxiv. 27, Acts xv. 21, xxi. 21, 2 Cor. iii. 15); the *tongue* for *language* (Mark xvi. 17, 1 Cor. xiv. 19); the *hand* for *hand-writing* (1 Cor. xvi. 21, Col. iv. 18); the *sword* for *death* or *persecution* (Matt. x. 31, Rom. viii. 35). On the other hand, the *effect* is sometimes put for the *cause*; as in John xi. 25, ἐγώ εἰμι ἡ ἀνάστασις καὶ ἡ ζωή. Rom. viii. 6, τὸ γὰρ φρόνημα τῆς σαρκὸς, θάνατος· τὸ δὲ φρόνημα τοῦ πνεύματος, ζωὴ καὶ εἰρήνη. 1 John v. 4, αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ νίκη ἡ νικήσασα τὸν κόσμον, ἡ πίστις ἡμῶν. See also Mark xii. 41, Luke ii. 30, viii. 43, xv. 12, John iii. 19, Rom. i. 16, vii. 7, 1 Cor. i. 30, Eph. ii. 14, Col. iii. 4; and compare Luke xi. 14 with Matt. ix. 32.

2. Sometimes there is a *metonymy* of the *subject* for its *adjunct*, or of the *adjunct* for its *subject*. Instances of the former are, when the *thing containing* indicates that which is contained in it; as in Matt. iii. 5, ἐξεπορεύετο πρὸς αὐτὸν Ἱερουσόλυμα, where the *inhabitants* of Jerusalem are meant; or when the *object* is put for something connected with it; as in 2 Cor. v. 21, τὸν μὴ γνόντα ἁμαρτίαν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἁμαρτίαν ἐποίησε, *made him sin for us*, i. e. a *sin-offering*. Compare Exod. xxix. 14, Levit. x. 17, Isai. liii. 10, in the Hebrew. Again, to exemplify the other variety, the *thing contained* is put for that *containing* it; as in Matt. ii. 11, θησαυροὶ are *cabinets* or *caskets*; and in Matt. viii. 12, xxii. 13, σκότος ἐξώτερον is the *place of outer darkness*, or *hell*. The *abstract* is put for the *concrete*; as in Rom. iii. 30, περιτομὴν καὶ ἀκροβυστίαν, the *circumcised and uncircumcised*. Eph. v. 8, πότε σκότος, νῦν δὲ φῶς, *once unenlightened, but now enlightened*. Compare Rom. xiii. 12. Also the *sign* is put for the *thing signified*; as in Eph. iii. 14, κύνω τὰ γόνατά μου, *I bend the knee*, i. e. *I worship*. Gal. ii. 9, δεξιὰς ἔδωκαν, *gave their hands*, i. e. in token of *fellowship*.

Obs. 1. The usage is closely analogous, by which an action is frequently, in Scripture, regarded as done, when it is said or permitted to be done, or when it is foretold. Thus in Matt. vi. 13, μὴ εἰσενέγκῃς ἡμῶς εἰς πειρασμόν, *lead us not*, i. e. *suffer us not to be led, into temptation*. xvi. 19, ὃ ἅν δησῇ καὶ λύσῃ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, *whatsoever ye shall declare to be bound or loosed*. Acts x. 15, σὺ μὴ κοῖνῶν, *call not thou defiled*. Compare Gen. xli. 13, Jerem. i. 10, iv. 10, Ezek. xiii. 19, xx. 25, Hos. vi. 5. Sometimes also an action is said to be done, when an occasion of doing it is given; as in Acts i. 18, ἐκτήσατο χώραν, *purchased a field*, i. e. *furnished the purchase-money*. Rom. xiv. 15, μὴ ἐκείνῳ ἀπὸλλαι, *do not cause his destruction*. See also 1 Cor. vii. 16.¹

¹ Rambach. Institut. Hermeneut. Sacr. c. 4. Jahn's Enchiridion, iii. 2.

Obs. 2. Here also may be introduced the figure *Calachresis*, by which an idea is attached to an object, with which it is not compatible; as in Luke viii. 23, κατίβη λαιλᾶψ ἀνίμου εἰς τὴν λίμνην, καὶ συνεπληροῦντο, where συνεπληροῦντο is referred to the crew, instead of the ship.

II. Hyperbole.

This figure, which is common in all languages, is the exaggeration of a circumstance beyond its real magnitude, in order to fix the attention more closely to its true import. Luke xix. 40, ἐὰν οὗτοι σιωπήσωσιν, οἱ λίθοι κεκράζονται. John xxi. 25, οὐδὲ αὐτὸν οἶμαι τὸν κόσμον χωρῆσαι τὰ γραφόμενα βιβλία. Other examples are Luke ii. 37, Acts ii. 5, 1 Cor. xiii. 1, Gal. i. 8, iv. 14, Heb. xi. 12.¹

Obs. 1. The opposite figure is called *Litotes*; of which an instance occurs in Matt. xvii. 20, ἰὰν ἔχητι πίστιν ὡς κόκκον σινάπιδος.

III. Synecdoche.

By this figure a *part* is put for the *whole*, or the *whole* for a *part*; and a *genus* for a *species*, or a *species* for a *genus*. Thus in Acts ii. 41, xxvii. 37, ψυχὴ indicates the *entire man*; and in Matt. iv. 8, Rom. iv. 13, κόσμος, the *world*, is *Judæa* only. In like manner, ἡ οἰκουμένη signifies the *Roman empire* in Acts xvii. 6, xxiv. 5, Rev. iii. 10; and probably *Judæa* in Luke ii. 1, iv. 5, Acts xi. 28. Again, in Mark xvi. 15, the *general* term πᾶσα κτίσις means only *all mankind*; and in Matt. vi. 11, the *specific* name ἄρτος, *bread*, includes all the necessaries of life. Thus also a *certain* and *definite* number is frequently put for an uncertain and indefinite one; as in Matt. xii. 14, παραλαμβάνει μεθ' ἑαυτοῦ ἑπτὰ ἕτερα πνεύματα, where ἑπτὰ, as commonly among the Jews, is used of any number whatsoever. Compare Gen. iv. 15, Ruth iv. 15, 1 Sam. ii. 5, Ps. cxix. 164, Prov. xxiv. 16, Isai. iv. 1, Jerem. xv. 9, *et alibi*. Again, Matt. xix. 29, Luke viii. 8, ἑκατονταπλασίονα λήψεται. See also 1 Cor. xiv. 19, Rev. i. 4, *et passim*.

IV. Antanaclasis.

A word is sometimes used in two different senses, or modifications of its primary sense, in the same sentence; and the figure is called *Antanaclasis*. Thus in Matt. viii. 22, ἄφες τοὺς νεκροὺς θάψαι τοὺς ἐχυτῶν νεκροὺς, *let those spiritually dead bury*

¹ Glass. Phil. Sacr. T. ii. pp. 55. 897. sqq. Turretin. de Interp. S.S. p. 206.

those naturally dead. Rom. xiv. 13, μηκέτι οὖν ἀλλήλους κρίνωμεν, ἀλλὰ τοῦτο κρίνατε μᾶλλον, κ. τ. λ., where κρίνειν signifies first to censure, then to resolve. See also 1 Cor. iii. 17, James i. 9.

V. *Paranomasia*.

1. *Paranomasia*, or the employment of two or more words of similar form or sound in close connexion, is a figure of very frequent occurrence in the Hebrew writers; and, though sometimes apparently unpremeditated, it is more generally the result of design. The New Testament has also several examples of this figure, especially in the Epistles of St. Paul.

2. The most simple form of *paranomasia* is that of two words alike in sound, but unconnected in sense; as in Matt. xxiv. 7, Luke xxi. 11, ἔσονται λιμοὶ καὶ λοιμοί. Heb. v. 8, ἔμαθεν ἀφ' ἑν ἑπαθε. Add Acts xvii. 25; and compare Herod. i. 107, Jerem. xxvii. 6, xxxii. 24, LXX. Sometimes several pairs of words follow each other in the same sentence; as in Rom. i. 29, 31, πορνεία, πονηρία, φθόρου, φονου, ἀσυνέτοις, ἀσυνδέτοις.

3. The more elegant kind of *paranomasia* is that in which the words are not only similar in sound, but give an *emphatic* or *antithetic* import to the sense. Thus Rom. xii. 3, μὴ ἐπεφρονεῖν παρ' ὃ δεῖ φρονεῖν. 2 Cor. iv. 8, ἀπορούμενοι, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐξαπορούμενοι. v. 4, οὐ δέλομεν ἐκδύσασθαι, ἀλλ' ἐπενδύσασθαι. Phil. iii. 2, βλέπετε τὴν κατατομήν· ἡμεῖς γὰρ ἐσμεν ἡ περιτομή, κ. τ. λ. See also John xv. 2, Acts viii. 30, Rom. v. 19, 1 Cor. xi. 29, 31, 2 Thess. iii. 11, Heb. x. 34; and compare Dan. xiii. 54, 55, 58, 59, Wisd. xiv. 5, 3 Esdr. 5, LXX. Similar instances are found in classical writers. Thus Thucyd. ii. 62, μὴ φρονήματι μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ καταφρονήματι. Plat. Phæd. 74, ὁμότροπος τε καὶ ὁμότροφος γίνεσθαι. Compare Diod Sic. xi. 57, Xen. Anab. v. 8. 21, Æschin. c. Ctesiph. 78, Lys. in Philon. 26, Diog. L. ii. 8. 4, v. 1. 11, vi. 2. 4. So in Latin, Terent. Hecyr. Prol. 1, Orator *ad vos venio ornatu prologi, simile exorator sim*.

Obs. 1. Another case of the same word, or one of its derivatives, occasionally form a kind of *paranomasia*; as in Matt. xxi. 41, κακούς κακῶς ἀπολίσσει αὐτούς. 2 Cor. viii. 22, ἐν πολλοῖς πολλαῖς σπουδαίον. ix. 8, ἐν παντί πάντοτε πᾶσαν ἀντάρκειαν ἔχοντες. Add 1 Cor. ii. 13, vi. 2, 2 Cor. x. 12. So Xen. Anab. ii. 5. 7, πάντα γὰρ πάντα τοῖς θεοῖς ἔκτετα καὶ πανταχῇ πάντων ἔσεν οἱ θεοὶ κραταῦσι. See also Anab. i. 9. 2, Mem. iii. 12. 68, iv. 4. 4, Diog. L. ii. 8. 4, Alciphr. iii. 10.

Obs. 2. In order to effect a *paranomasia*, unusual forms of words are frequently employed; and occasionally a new word seems to have been coined expressly for the purpose. An instance of the latter description occurs in Gal. v. 7, τις ὑμᾶς ἐνίκησεν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ μὴ πείθεσθαι; ἡ πεισμονὴ οὐκ ἐκ τοῦ καλοῦντος ὑμᾶς.

Obs. 3. If rendered into Hebrew, the words of St. Paul would have somewhat the character of a *paranomasia* in 1 Cor. i. 23, ἡμεῖς δὲ κηρύσσομεν Χριστὸν ἰσταυρωμένον, Ἰουδαίοις μὲν σκάνδαλον, Ἕλλησι δὲ μωρίαν· αὐτοῖς δὲ τοῖς πλητοῖς, Ἰουδαίοις τε καὶ Ἕλλησι, Χριστὸν Θεοῦ δύναμιν καὶ Θεοῦ σοφίαν. Accordingly it has been thought that the passage was written with a view to the similarity of the words **לַצֵּלָב**, a cross, and **מַשְׁלָל**, a stumbling-block; **לְכָזָז**, foolish, and **לְחָכְמָה**, wisdom. A concealed *paranomasia* has also been pointed out in Gal. i. 6; nor is it impossible that in the discourses of Christ, who taught the Jews in the Syro-Chaldaic dialect, there may have been instances of this figure, which could not have been preserved in the Greek idiom. At all events, it must be confessed that the search after such matter is not likely to yield any very profitable result.¹

§ 71.—Metrical Lines in the New Testament.

1. That St. Paul at least was not altogether unacquainted with the beauties of Grecian literature is evident from the fact that he has quoted three metrical lines, or parts of lines, from the Greek poets. The first, which occurs in his address to the Athenians (Acts xvii. 28), is half an hexameter line from Arat. Phoen. 5. It will not be amiss to give the line in full:—

Τοῦ γὰρ καὶ γένος ἐσμεν· ὁ δ' ἥπιος ἀνθρώποισι
Δεξιὰ σημαίνει.

An Iambic senarius (*Trim. Acat.*) from the *Thais* of Menander is cited in 1 Cor. xv. 33,

Φθείρουσιν ἡδὴ χρήσθ' ὁμιλίαι κακαί.

And lastly, an entire hexameter of Epimenides of Crete is found in Tit. i. 12.

Κρηῆτες ἀεὶ ψευῆσται, κακὰ θηρία, γαστέρες ἀργαί.

2. As a mere matter of curiosity, it may be added that two metrical lines have been pointed out, which fall accidentally into the prose of two other writers in the New Testament. One is an Iambic senarius beginning with an anapæst; and the other a Dactylic hexameter, of which the first syllable of the second foot is lengthened by the arsis. They occur in

John iv. 35, Τετράμηνόν ἐστι, χάθ' ἡμέρας ἐρχεται.

James i. 17, Πᾶσα δόσις ἀγαθὴ, καὶ πᾶν δῶρημα τέλειον.

See Quintil. Inst. Orat. ix. 4. 52.²

¹ Winer in Append. § 62. 1, 2. Glass. Phil. Sacr. i. p. 1335. sqq. C. B. Michaelis de *Paran. Sacra*. Böttcher de *Paran.* &c. Paulo Ap. *frequentatis*. Wetstein on Heb. v. 8. Krüger ad Xen. Anab. i. 9. 2. Schæfer ad Soph. Elect. 742. Eichhorn's Introd. N. T. i. p. 524. Elsner. Diss. ii. (*Paulus et Jesaias inter se comparati.*)

² Winer in Append. § 68. Jacob. ad Lucian. Alex. p. 52.

ENGLISH AND LATIN INDEX.

The Numerals refer to the Pages.

ABBREVIATED forms of proper names,
12—of verbs in *μι*, 30
Abstract nouns in apposition, 47—with
article, 65
Abstractum pro concreto, 47, 219
Abundantia casibus, 14
Accusative in *ν* instead of *α*, 13—of
nouns in *υς* and *υ*, and *ης* pure, *ib.*
Obs. 2 and 4—of proper names in
ως, *ib.* § 7. *Obs.* 3—*plur.* of nouns
in *ις*, *ib.* § 8. *Obs.* 3—with verbs
which in Latin take other cases,
87, sqq.—with neuter verbs, 90,
Obs. 5—with cognate verb, 91,
214—with *ις*, *κακως ποιειν*, 92—
with *ις* for nominative, 84, 93—
double after certain verbs, 92, sqq.—
used adverbially, 94, *Obs.* 16 and
17—*absolute*, 166—to be rendered
by *quod attinet ad*, 207
Active verbs for *middle*, 33—with re-
flexive pronoun for *middle*, 127
Adjective, compound and ending in *ιος*
not always common, 18—agreeing
with *subst.* in *sense*, not in *gender*,
42—with *collective nouns*, *ib.*—re-
peated in the negative, 46—instead
of *subst.*, *ib.*—instead of *adverb*, *ib.*
—*neuter*, 78, 81—before a *genitive*,
100—with the *article*, 60, 64, 78—
verbal adj., 27—new forms of, 28
Adjuration, forms of, 192
Adverb, 167—with *gen.*, 168—with *dat.*,
169—for *adj.*, *ib.*—with *article*, 65
—of *time*, with *gen.*, 96
Æolic aor. 1, 28, *Obs.* 2
Affinity between *Hebrew* and *Aramaic*, 2
Affirmation and *negation* combined, 215
Affirmative interrogation, 24
Alexander the Great, effects of his con-
quests upon the Greek language, 4

Alexandrian orthography, 9
Anacoluthon, 206
Anomaly in declension, 14—in *gender*,
ib.—in the signification of verbs, 31
Antanacclasis, 220
Antecedent attracted into the case of the
relative, 158
Antiptosis, 210
Aorist 1 of verbs in *αίω*, 27, *Obs.* 4—un-
usual forms of aor. 1 employed in
the New Testament, 36—Alexan-
drian form of aor. 2 in *α*, 27—3
plur. aor. 2 in *σαν*, 29, *Obs.* 6
Aorist, perfect, and imperfect, their dif-
ference, 129—*aor. pass.* as *middle*,
34—*aor.* 1 *conj.* with *οὐ μὴ*, 143—
aor. infin. after *ἵταίμος*, 157—*aor.*
signifying *to be wont*, 130—for *pre-*
sent and *fut.*, 133—for *perf.* and *plusq.*
perf., 134—*aor. part.*, use of, 165
Aposiopesis, 213
Apostrophus, 11
Apposition, 47, sqq.—when the article is
employed, 57, 63
Aramaic forms in the New Testament, 3
Article, its nature, 49, 71—its adjunct,
ib.—its use in renewed mention
and *κατ' ἰσχὺν*, 50—with *monadic*
nouns, 51—in expressions of *time*,
as *possessive pron.*, and in *proverbial*
allocutions, *ib.*—with natural ob-
jects, 52—with nouns implying
relationship, 53—when existence is
assumed, 56—after verbs signifying
to call or *name*, *ib.*—in apposition,
57, 63—its *hypothetic* or *inclusive*
use, 57—in *universal* propositions,
ib.—with *subject*, not with *predicate*,
58—with both *subject* and *predicate*,
ib.—after *εἰμή*, 59—its *exclusive* use,
60—with *adj.* and *part.*, 60, 164—

- by way of definition, 64—with *attributives*, 61—in *regimen*, 62—with *gen.* employed as an *adj.*, 63—in divisions, *ib.*—with certain words understood, 64—used *absolutely*, *ib.*—with *adverbs*, *preps.*, &c., 65—with *abstract* nouns, *ib.*—with proper names, 67—its use in Homer, 67, 70—as a *pronoun*, *ib.*—for *pron. relative*, 71—with *αὐτός*, *ὅς*, *ἐκείνος*, 75—with *πᾶς*, *ib.*—with *ὅλος*, 77—with *neut. adj.*, 78—with *infin.*, 150, *sqq.*—omitted with *infin.*, 151
- Article omitted* after prepositions, 51—in enumerations, with *ordinal* numbers, and *superlatives*, 52—with *gen. abs.*, 53—when existence is affirmed or denied, 56—after verbs of *appointing*, *choosing*, &c., 57—after verbs of *having*, *partaking*, &c., 66—wrongly supposed to be inserted or omitted *ad libitum* with certain words, 53, *sqq.*—*position* of the *art.* in concord, 68—with *πᾶς*, 76
- Asyndeta*, 217
- Atticisms* in the New Testament, 9
- Attic accus.* in *ν*, 13, *Obs.* 1
- Attic future* in *ῶ*, 26
- Attic reduplication*, 26, *Obs.* 7
- Attraction*, 206—with the *infin.*, 155, *sqq.*—with the *relative*, 158, *sqq.*
- Augment*, 25—*temp.* for *syll.*, *ib.*—*syll.* for *temp.*, 26—double and triple, *ib.*—double in compound verbs, *ib.*—in verbs beginning with *εὖ*, *ib.*—omitted in the *plusq.-perf.*, 25
- Basis* of the New Testament Greek, 8—of Granville Sharpe's *Canon*, 61
- Canon* of Granville Sharpe, 61—of Dawes, 143, note
- Casus absoluti*, 166
- Catachresis*, 220
- Circumlocution*, 215
- Cities*, proper names of, 17
- Clause omitted*, 212
- Collective nouns*, their syntax, 42—with plural verb, 80—with verb both in the *sing.* and *plur.*, *ib.*—with *dative*, 120
- Common* or *Hellenic dialect*, 5—its mixed character, *ib.*
- Comparative*, new forms of, 19—formed by *μᾶλλον*, *ib.*—syntax of, 105—with *gen.* omitted, *ib.*—formed by *παρὰ* and *ὑπὲρ*, *ib.*—instead of *superl.*, 106—followed by *πάντων*, *ib.*—with *dative*, 123, *Obs.* 9—with *εἰς*, *ib.*
- Comparison* of *adjectives*, 18
- Compound adjectives*, number of their terminations, *ib.*
- Compound verbs*, with double augment, 26—syntax of, 104
- Conciseness* of expression, 211
- Concord*, position of the *article* in, 68—of the *gen.*, 112, *Obs.* 20
- Conjunctions*, seldom interchanged, 167
- Conjunctive*, with *μὴ* for *imperative*, 139—its imperative signification, 142—interchanged with *imperat.*, 143—with *ἵνα*, *ib.*—with *ἵνα*, *ὅπως*, after a *past* tense, 148, *Obs.* 1—with *ἵνα*, or *ὅτι*, for *infin.*, 150—after *ἵνα μὴ*, *ὅπως μὴ*, 149—after *μὴ*, *μήπως*, &c., *ib.* *Obs.* 4—without *άν*, in *doubtful* propositions, 143—with *οὐ μὴ*, *ib.*—after *θείλω*, *ib.*—with *ὅταν*, *ὅποτε*, &c., 145—with *ὅτε*, 146—with *ἵως*, *ἵως οὖ*, *ἄχρις οὖ*, *ib.*—with *πρὶν*, 147—with *ἵαν*, 144—with *εἰ*, 145, *Obs.* 4—with *pronoun relat.*, 159—with *μὴ*, 185
- Construction*, rules of, 216—changed, 206, 209—interrupted, 207—mixed 209
- Constructio prægnaus*, 212, *Obs.* 8
- Contraction*, 11
- Controversy* respecting the Greek idiom of the *New Testament*, 7
- Convertible propositions*, use of the *article* in, 58
- Copula omitted*, 45, 163
- Correlatives*, syntax of, 62, *sqq.*
- Crases*, 11
- Dative*, its use, 113—expressing a reference, 116, and 117, *Obs.* 3—rendered by *for*, 116, *Obs.* 12—and by *according to*, 117—implying direc-

tion, ib.—denoting *comparison*, 118—*redundant*, 121, 167—*instead of gen.*, 121—*instead of gen. with ὑπὲρ*, 126—*of means and instrument*, 122—*of manner*, 123—*used adverbially*, 66, 123—to be rendered *with respect to*, 123—*indicating defect or proficiency, ib.*—denoting *measure or magnitude, ib.*—denoting *cause*, 124—*with comparatives, ib.*—*with reference to time and place*, 125—*with collective nouns*, 120—*absolute*, 166—*with adverbs*, 169—*with ἔν, as an adj. or adv.*, 173—*with verb of cognate signification*, 91—*with verbs of giving, commanding, blaming, helping, injuring*, 113, 114—*with adj. signifying hurtful and useful*, 115—*with verbs denoting intercourse and companionship*, 118—*with verbs compounded with σύν and ἑμῶν*, 118, *Obs.* 2—*with verbs signifying to converse, to contend, and those denoting resemblance or equality*, 119, 120—*with εἶναι and γίγνισθαι*, 122. (6.) and *Obs.* 13—*with χεῖρσθαι*, 122, § 47, *Obs.* 1—*with ἰ αὐτοῖς*, 120, *Obs.* 8—*with κοινῶς*, 122—*dat. of participle in definitions of time and place*, 117

Dativus commodi et incommodi, 121

Declension, 12, sqq.—*of Hebrew-Greek proper names*, 15

Defective nouns, 17

Degrees of comparison, 18

Demonstrative pronoun. See *Pronoun.*

Deponent verbs, 34

Dialect, the Galilaean, 3, *Obs.* 1—the *common or Hellenic*, 5—*dialectic varieties in the New Testament*, 9, *Obs.* 2

Distribution, indicated in the Hebrew manner, 203

Divisions, mode of marking them, 70, *Obs.* 3

Dorisms in the New Testament, 9

Double accusative, 92, sqq.

Dual number, 13, § 6. *Obs.* 5

Duplicate forms of words having the same signification, 40

Elision, 11

Ellipsis, 210—*of the subst. with the art. and the gen.*, 66, 112, 211—*of the verb, the subject, or object*, 211—*partial ell. of the predicate, ib.*—*omission of part of a sentence*, 212

Elliptical form of adjuration, 192

Emphasis, 20, 23, 72, 82

Enumerations, causing the omission of the article, 52

Female proper names, declension of, 16

Festivals, proper names of, 17

Figurative expressions, denoting *emphasis or intensity*, 20, *Obs.* 7

Final letters, 10

Formation of the tenses, 26

Forms of the later Greek idiom, 40—*of subst., ib.*—*of adj.*, 41

Future tense, use of, 130—*Attic fut. in ἵω*, 26—*fut. conjunct.*, 30, *Obs.* 5—*unused forms of fut. 1 act.*, 35, *Obs.* 9—*future formed by μέλλω*, 205—*fut. instead of conjunct.*, 130, 146—*instead of imperat., ib.*—*with οὐ, for imperat.*, 139—*fut. indic. in doubtful propositions*, 143—*signifying to be wont*, 131—*after οἶμαι*, 143—*with ἵνα*, 147—*instead of present*, 132—*part. fut. with verbs of motion*, 161

Galilaean Dialect, 3, *Obs.* 1

Gender, anomalies in, 14—*non-agreement between adj. and subst. in*, 42

Genealogy in St. Matthew's Gospel, exhibiting the Hebrew use of the article, 67

Genitive of nouns in εἰς, 12—*of proper names in ας, ib.*—*of nouns in υς and υ*, 13—*its superlative import*, 19—*used as an apposition*, 48—*with τὸ and τὰ*, 65—*with τὰ αὐτὰ*, 78—*with τις*, 96—*with partitives and superlatives, ib.*—*with words implying partition, ib.*—*with adverbs of time, ib.*—*denoting cause or origin*, 98—*instead of an adj., ib.*—*with verbals*, 100—*with words denoting fulness or want, ib.*—*with the names of vessels*, 100, *Obs.* 1—

omitted after comparatives, 105—
and after *ἴσους*, 105, *Obs.* 2—to be
rendered *with respect to*, 107—with
περὶ understood, 107, 152—employed
in two senses, 108—expressive of
the object of mental emotion, *ib.*—
gen. of *possessive pron.* put *objec-*
tively, *ib.*—*gen.* of *price or value*,
109—of *time and place*, 110—in-
stead of *preposit.* and its case, 111,
Obs. 17—expressed by a circumlo-
cation, 111, *Obs.* 18—with noun
understood, 112, *Obs.* 19—its posi-
tion in regimen, 112, *Obs.* 20—*gen.*
of *article with infin.*, 150, *sqq.*—
with *adverbs*, 168—*gen. abs.*, 166—
art. omitted with *gen. abs.*, 52—
gen. with verbs of *freeing and de-*
sisting, 95—with *ἴσας* and *γίγνεται*,
97—with verbs signifying *to remem-*
ber, to forget, 101—with those which
signify *to be careful or careless, to*
covet, to command, 102—with verbs
signifying *to seize*, 109—two *geni-*
tives in different relations, 111—
several in succession, 111, *Obs.* 15
and 16

God, name of, used to form a *superla-*
tive, 19

Gospels, titles of the, 112

Greek language, Jewish repugnance to,
2—universally spoken after the
conquests of Alexander the Great,
4—Greek idiom of the *New Testa-*
ment, 6—sources of its illustration,
6, *Obs.* 4—controversy respecting
it, 7 (5), and *Obs.* 5—its *basis*, 8—
its *Oriental character*, *ib.*

Hebraisms, 20, 21, 25, 44, 59, 62, 67,
73, 74, 76, 80, 81, 82, 84, 85, 89,
91, 93, 96, 99, 106, 115, 119, 124,
133, 140, 152, 155, 164, 165, 163,
173, 192, 203, 215

Hebrew and Aramaean, their affinity, 1

Hebrew-Greek proper names, declension
of, 15

Hebrew Hiphil, verbs having its signifi-
cation, 32

Hebrew indeclinable nouns, 18

Hebrew superlatives, 19

Hellenic or common dialect, 5

Hellenists, 5, *Obs.* 1

Hendiadys, 218

Hiatus, 10

Hypallage, 210

Hyperbole, 220

Hypothetic use of the article, 57

Imperative, with *μή*, 139, 185—its *per-*
missive and hortative sense, *ib.*—im-
plying *sarcasm*, 140—two *impera-*
tives, of which one limits the other,
ib.

Imperfect, its use, 129—distinction be-
tween it and the *aorist*, 129, *Obs.* 1
—signifying *to be wont*, 130—in-
stead of the *aor.*, *pres.*, and *plusq.*
perf., 132

Impersonal verbs, 83

Indeclinable nouns, 17—*indecl.* Hebrew
names, 16, 18

Indicative, its use, 135—with *relatives*
and *relative particles*, 135, 159—in
the *sermo obliquus*, 136—after *inter-*
rogatives, *ib.*—in *conditional* propo-
sitions, 137—with *si*, 137, 144—
with *ἄν*, 138—with *ἐάν*, 145, *Obs.* 4
—with *ἔτε*, *ἔπειτα*, 145—with *ὅταν*,
146—with *ἵως*, *ἵως οὖν*, *ἄχρις οὖν*, *ib.*—
indic. pres. with *ἵνα*, 148

Infinitive, its nature, 149—after verbs
implying an object, 150—with *neu-*
ter art., 150, *sqq.*—with *art.* omitted,
151, *Obs.* 7—*act.* for *pass.*, 150, 151,
Obs. 2 and 4—after *adj.*, 150—after
subst., 151—with *ἄσπερ*, *ὡς*, and *ὥς*,
ib.—redundant, 93—with *περὶ*, 147,
Obs. 7—with *μή*, 188—with *μή*,
after verbs of *denying*, 154, *Obs.* 1
—denoting an *object* after certain
verbs, 154—after verbs of *giving*, of
motion, &c., 150, *Obs.* 3—after verbs
of *fearing*, 154—its subject in the
accus., or in a clause formed with
ὅτι, *ib.*—its subject omitted, 154,
155—its subject repeated *emphati-*
cally, *ib.*—its subject in the *accus.*,

when different from that of the leading verb, 155 (5.)—*attracted* into the *accus.*, 155 (6.)—instead of the *imperat.*, 156—with *finite* verb, used *adverbially*, 156, *Obs.* 7—instead of the *part.*, 162, *Obs.* 8—*infin. aor.* after ἵσταιμι, 157, *Obs.* 8

Interchange of letters, 9—of pronouns, 74—of tenses, 131—of prepositions, 173, 175, 182—of οὐ and μή, 189

Interrogations, affirmative and negative, 24

Interrogative pronoun τίς, 23

Intransitive verbs for *transitive*, 31

Ionisms in the New Testament, 10, 12

Irregular verbs, list of, 36, sqq.

Jews, their repugnance to any thing foreign, 2—to the Greek language, *ib.*

Language of Palestine in the time of *Jesus Christ*, 1

Later writers, their peculiar orthography, 10—altered the forms of words, 40

Letters, interchange of, 9

Litotes, 220

Measures and monies, not named after numerals, 22

Metaplasma, 14

Metonymy, 218

Metrical Lines, 222

Middle voice, instead of *active*, 35—with *reflexive pronoun*, *ib.*—instead of *passive*, 36—its true import, 127—*directly reflexive*, *ib.*—rendered by an appropriate verb in English, 127, 128, *Obs.* 2, 3, and 5—*indirectly reflexive*, 127—signifying *to get a thing done*, 128—denoting *reciprocity*, *ib.*

Monadic nouns, with the article, 51, *Obs.* 3

Moods, 135, sqq.—*indicative*, 135, § 51—*imperative*, 139, § 52—*conj.* and *opt.*, 141, § 53 to 56—*infinitive*, 149, § 57, 58

Moveable final letters, 10

Name of God in Hebrew superlatives, 19

Names of countries, in the *genitive*, 96

Names of dignities, compounded with ἄρχων, declension of, 12

Names of natural objects with the article, 52

Negative interrogations, 24

Negative particles, 184—two negatives either destroy or strengthen the negation, 189—accumulation of negatives, *ib.*—μή redundant after verbs of denying, 154

Neuter adjective, its use, 78—instead of adverb, 78, *Obs.* 4

Neuter pronoun, with reference to *subst.* in the *abstract*, 44—added *per exegesis*, *ib.*—with πῆμα understood, 158

Neuters in ας, contract forms of, 14—in μα, their use by the later writers, 40

Neuters plural in α, from *masc.* in ες, 14—with verb in the *sing.*, 79

New Testament, its Greek idiom, 6—its *dialectic varieties*, 9, *Obs.* 2

Nominative for *vocative*, 13, 86—in *apposition* with the *voc.*, 86—repeated, 82—omitted, 83—expressed by *ς* with an *accus.*, 84—*nom. abs.*, 166

Noun, government of, 42, sqq., § 25—to be supplied in an *opposite* sense, 105

Nouns, indeclinable and defective, 17

Numerals, 20—with ἀνά, 175—with κατὰ, 177

Object, ellipsis of, 211

Oblique cases, 86—of *personal pronouns*, *ib.*

Oblique discourse. See *Sermo obliquus*

Optative, in the *sermo obliquus*, 136—expressive of a *wish*, without ἄν, 141—with *ς*, 141, 144, 145—with and without ἄν, in interrogations, 142—with πρὶν, 147—with *pron. rel.*, 159, *Obs.* 9—with μή, 185

Ordinals, inclusive use of, 22—with *plural noun*, 43—with *art.* omitted, 52

Orthography, the *Alexandrian*, 9—of the later Greek writers, 10

Paranomasia, 221—concealed, 222

- Parentheses*, their nature and design, 207
—numerous in *St. Paul*, 208—*pron. demonstr.* redundant after them, 72
- Participle*, its nature and use, 160—rendered by a conjunction, 160, 161—
with *καί* or *καίως*, 161, *Obs.* 2—
with verbs of motion, 161—with *ως*,
161, *Obs.* 5—with verbs of *sense*,
162—with verbs signifying *to know*,
to observe, *perceive*, *desist*, *ib.*—with
μαρτυρῶν, 162, *Obs.* 6—with *φθάνων*
and *λατθάνων*, 163, *Obs.* 11—after
καλῶς ποιεῖν, 163, *Obs.* 12—*part. ὄν*
omitted, 162, *Obs.* 9—*part.* instead
of *indic.* with *εἰ*, 138, *Obs.* 3—in-
stead of *finite verb*, 164, *Obs.* 15—
with *εἰμι* and *ἔχω* instead of *finite*
verb, 164, *Obs.* 16 and 17—with
tense of its own verb, 164, *Obs.* 18
—used with the *art.* as a *subst.*, 60,
164—rendered by *is qui*, 165—with
a *pron. demonstr.* redundant, 72, *Obs.*
5—used *impersonally*, 167, *Obs.* 3
- Particles*, negative, 184, § 66—various,
189. § 67
- Partitives*, in *regimen*, 63—followed by
a *gen.*, 96
- Passive verbs* for *active* or *neuter*, 34—
with *dat.* instead of *gen.* with *ὅτι*,
126—followed by an *accus.*, *ib.*
- Paulo post-futurum*, 130
- Perfect tense*, instead of *present*, *fut.*,
and *plusq. perf.*, 133—*perf. pass.* as
middle, 34, *Obs.* 6
- Periphrastic forms*, 75
- Person*, the 3 pl. *plusq. perf.* in *ουσαν*, 28,
Obs. 1—3 pl. *imperat.* in *τωσαν*, 28,
Obs. 3—2 sing. *pass.* in *σαι*, 28, *Obs.*
4—in *ει*, 29, *Obs.* 5—3 pl. *imperf.*
and *aor.* 2 in *σαν*, 29, *Obs.* 6—3 pl.
perf. act. in *αν*, 29, *Obs.* 7—3 pl.
pres. of verbs in *μι* in *ασι*, 30, *Obs.*
1—third *pers. plur.* used *impersonally*, 83
- Place and time*, in the *gen.*, 110—in the
dat. with *εἰ*, 110, 125
- Pleonasm*, 213
- Plural*, instead of *sing.*, 81—denoting
excellence, *ib.*
- Plusquam-perfectum*, without the *aug-*
ment, 25, *Obs.* 3—*pass.* for *middle*,
34, *Obs.* 6—its use, 130—instead
of the *imperf.* and *aor.*, 133
- Positive*, instead of *superlative*, 96—in-
stead of *comparative*, 106—with
καρῶς and *ὥς*, *ib.*
- Predicate and subject*, 79, *sqq.*—*pred.*
formed by *accus.* with *εἰς*, 93, *Obs.*
14—omitted
- Prepositions*, their primary import, 169—
governing a *gen.* only, 170, *sqq.*—a
dat. only, 172, *sqq.*—an *accus.* only,
174—a *gen.* and *accus.*, 175, *sqq.*—
three cases, 179—*preps.* multiplied
by the New Testament writers, 182
—if interchanged, *ib.*—used *adver-*
bially, *ib.* *Obs.* 5—compounded with
adverbs, *ib.*—with *verbs*, 183—re-
peated after compound verbs, *ib.*—
repeated, omitted, or changed in cer-
tain connexions, 184—*art.* omitted
after *preps.*, 51—*art.* with *prep.*,
65, *Obs.* 11—*ellipsis* of *prep.*, 211
- Present*, instead of *aorist*, *perfect*, or
future, 131
- Pronoun demonstrative*, redundant, 72
167—repeated *emphatically*, 72, *Obs.*
4—instead of *relative*, 73, *Obs.* 7, 9,
and 10—repeated with *relative*, 73,
Obs. 8—in the predicate, 81, *Obs.*
11—*art.* used as a *pronoun*, 70
- Pronoun personal*, 74—as the subject to
verbs, 82—employed to mark an
emphasis, *ib.*—inserted and omitted
in the same connexion, 82, *Obs.* 13
—use of the oblique cases, 86
- Pronoun possessive*, 74—expressed by a
periphrasis, 75, *Obs.* 17
- Pronoun relative*, instead of *interrogative*
24—with *verb subst.* omitted, 83,
Obs. 18—its attraction, 157, *sqq.*—
omitted, 158, *Obs.* 5—agreeing with
the subsequent noun, 159—accu-
mulation of *relatives*, *ib.* *Obs.* 7—
transposition of *relatives*, *ib.* *Obs.* 8
—*pron. rel.* with the *optative*, *ib.*
Obs. 9
- Proper names*, abbreviated, 12, *Obs.* 3—
Hebrew-Greek, their declension, 15
—with the *article*, 67

Reciprocating propositions, their effect upon the use of the *article*, 58
Reciprocity, indicated by the repetition of the numeral *ἑξ*, 22
Reduplication, 25—the Attic *redupl.*, 26, *Obs.* 7
Regimen, the *art.* in, 62—of *partitives*, 63, *Obs.* 3—its effect upon the position of the *article*, 68
Relative. See *Pronoun*.
Revelation, Book of, its corrupt text, 134
Rhetorical figures, 218
Rules of construction, 216

Sacred Hellenism. See *Greek idiom of the New Testament*
Sermo directus changed to the *indirect*, and *vice versa*, 209—the two forms intermixed, *ib.*
Sermo obliquus, its use with the *optat.*, 136
Sharpe (Mr. G.), his *canon*, 61, *sqq.*
Singular, used in a *collective* sense, 81, *Obs.* 6—combined with the *plur.*, *ib.* *Obs.* 7—interchanged with the *plur.*, 209
Style, different in different writers, 217
Subject and predicate, syntax of, 79, *sqq.*—*subject* omitted, 211—several *subjects* to the same verb, 79—*subject* of the verb changed, 209
Substantive, instead of *adj.*, 47—omitted, 211. See also *Declension*
Superlative, new forms of, 19—Hebrew forms of, *ib.*—formed by a *gen.*, *ib.*—formed by the name of *God*, 19, *Obs.* 6—with the *art.* omitted, 47
Syllabic augment instead of *temporal*, 26
Synecdoche, 220
Synonymes, accumulation of, 214

Temporal augment instead of *syllabic*, 25
Tenses, their formation, 26—signifying *to be wont*, 130—interchanged with each other, 131—their *distinctive* import in the *imperative*, 140—in the *infinitive*, 156—in the *participle*, 165—confused use of them in the New Testament, 134
Termination of words altered by the later writers, 40—*substantives*, *ib.*—*adjectives*, 41
Time, in the *dat.* with *iv*, 110, *Obs.* 13
Transitive verbs for *intransitive*, 32

Verbal adjectives, 27—new forms of, 28, *Obs.* 2—with *genitive*, 100
Verbal noun, instead of the *infn.* with the *art.*, 153, *Obs.* 10
Verbs, anomalies—their signification, 31—in the sense of the Hebrew *Hiphil*, 32—*deponent*, 34—with several subjects, 79—impersonal verbs, 83—compound verbs, 183—*verb* with *cognate accus.* or *dat.*, 91—omitted, 84—to be supplied from another clause, 212—used in two senses, *ib.*—implying *permission* or *declaration*, 219. See also *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*
Verb substantive omitted, 83
Verbs in *μi*, contracted and abbreviated forms of, 30
Vocative, 86

Words to be repeated, 211—to be supplied in an opposite sense, 212—repeated *emphatically*, 214

Zeugma, 212

GREEK INDEX.

A, α, termination of the *gen.* of proper names in ας, 12, *Obs.* 2
 ἀγάπη Θεοῦ, 108, *Obs.* 3
 ἄγε, with *plur.* noun, as an interjection, 204
 ἄγειν ἡσυχίαν, 66
 ἀδικεῖν, with *accus.*, 87

ἀίρα δῖον, 66
 αἰτὸς, 9, *Obs.* 2
 -αἶνω, aorist of verbs in, 27, *Obs.* 4
 αἰτῶν τινά τι, 92
 αἰῶνις αἰωνῶν 19, *Obs.* 5
 ἀκολουθεῖν, constr., 119
 ἀκούειν, constr., 98, 103, 104

ἀλλὰ, in reply to negative questions, 199
 —used *comparatively*, *ib.*—ἀλλά γι,
 ἀλλ' ἦ, 198
 ἄλλος, with the *article*, 77
 ἄμα, with *dat.*, 169
 ἄμα πρῶτ', 182
 ἁμαρτάνειν εἰς τινα, 90, *Obs.* 2
 -αν, for ἄσι, in 3 *pl. perf. act.*, 29, *Obs.* 7
 ἄν with *indic.*, 138—with the *opt.* in *interrogations*, 142—omitted, 138
 ἀνὰ, 175—with numerals, *ib.*—used *adverbially*, *ib.*
 ἀνάγυν, *scil.* τὴν ναῦν, 33, *Obs.* 2
 ἀνὰ εἰς ἕκαστος, 203
 ἀναμιμνήσκειν, with two *accus.*, 94, *Obs.* 15
 ἀνὴρ or ἄνθρωπος, instead of τις, or the *pron. demonstr.*, 25, *Obs.* 11—redundant, 46
 ἄνθρωπος, with the *art.* used irregularly, 57, *note*
 ἀνθ' ὧν, 159, *Obs.* 6, 171, *Obs.* 2
 ἀνοικν ὀφλισκάνειν, 66, *Obs.* 1
 ἀνοίγω, with *double* and *triple* augment, 26, *Obs.* 6—ἀνοίγειν, *scil.* θύραν, 211
 ἀντι, 170
 ἀπ' ἄρτι, 182
 ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, 171
 ἀπειλῆς ἱμπνίειν, 99, *Obs.* 14
 ἀπὸ, 171—ὁ ἀπὸ, *ib.*
 ἀποθανεῖν ἁμαρτίᾳ, and like phrases, 116
 ἀπὸ μέρους, 171, *Obs.* 3 and 4
 ἀπὸ πρὸς, 182
 ἀπὸ πρῶτ', *ib.*
 ἀπὸ τότε, *ib.*
 ἄπτισθαι, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 11
 ἄρα, 201—ἄρα, *ib.*—ἄραγε, *ib.*—ἄρα οὖν, *ib.*
 ἄργος, 18
 ἀρίσκειν, with *dat.*, 115, *Obs.* 9
 ἀρξάμενον, used *impersonally*, 167
 ἀρπαγίς, 27, *Obs.* 3
 ἀρχειν, declension of nouns compounded with, 12
 ἀρχισθαι, with *dat.*, 124—with *infin.*, 163—redundant, 214
 -ας, contract form of *neuters* in, 14, *Obs.* 3
 -ασι, termination of 3 *pl. pres.* of verbs in μι, 30
 ἀσινίζων, *constr.*, 88

αἰξάνειν, 33
 αὐτὸς, its various significations, 22—emphatic, 23—instead of αὐτὸς, *ib.*—twice repeated, 72—interchanged with σὺ, 74—its reference implied, 43—redundant, 167—καὶ αὐτὸς, 72, *Obs.* 11—ὁ αὐτὸς, 77—with *dat.*, 120, *Obs.* 8
 ἀφαιρῆσθαι, *constr.*, 93, *Obs.* 12, 3
 ἀφίονται, 31
 ἀφ' οὗ, *scil.* χρόνου, 171
 ἄχρι, ἄχρις, 10
 ἄχρις οὗ, with *indic.*, 146
 βάθμος, 10
 βάπτειν ὕδατος, 99
 βασκαίνειν, with *accus.*, 87
 βατὸς, gender of, 14
 βιαστῆς, 28
 βλέπτειν, with *accus.*, 88—with two *accus.*, 92
 βλασφημεῖν εἰς τινα, 88—τινα, 92
 βλέπειν, *constr.*, 88
 βούλομαι, its augment, 25, *Obs.* 2—βούλι, 29, *Obs.* 5—βούλομαι, with μάλλον understood, 105—βουλομένη ἄν, ἰβουλόμην, ἰβουλόμην ἄν, 139
 γὰρ, *elliptical* use of, 200—its reference remote, *ib.*
 γινεαὶ γινεῶν, 19
 γίγισθαι, *constr.*, 98
 γίγνισθαι, *partitive* use of, 97—with *dat.*, 122, *Obs.* 14—γίνισθαι εἰς οὐδὲν, ἡς τι, 85, *Obs.* 22—ἐν τινι, 85, *Obs.* 23—ἐκ τινος, 98, *Obs.* 12—ἐν ἑαυτῇ, 174, *Obs.* 7
 γονυπετεῖν, *constr.*, 88, 115
 γυναῖκα ἔχειν, 54
 γυνή, *ellipsis* of, 64, 112, 211
 δι, 195
 διὰ, with the *article*, 77
 διῶσθαι, *constr.*, 101
 δέομαί σου, *ellipsis* of, 143
 δίσμος, δίσμα, 14
 δίχισθαι, *constr.*, 85, *Obs.* 22
 διὰ, with *gen.*, 175—with *accus.*, *ib.*—with *gen.* used *adverbially*, *ib.*
 διάγειν, *scil.* βίον, 211

διακονεῖν, with *dat.*, 115
 διάλειπτος κοινή, 5
 διαλογίζεσθαι, constr., 120, *Obs.* 6
 διδάσκειν, constr., 93
 δίδραγμα, 10
 δίκην δίδόναι, 66
 δρῦν, 29, *Obs.* 8—constr., 102
 δοκεῖν, its supposed redundancy, 214
 δουλεύειν, with *dat.*, 115
 δύναμαι, its augment, 25, *Obs.* 2—δύνασαι,
 δύνη, 28, *Obs.* 4
 δύο, 21—δύο, δύο, 203
 δῶν, 30, *Obs.* 3
 δῶμα, understood, 112, *Obs.* 19
 δώση, 30, *Obs.* 5

 ἰάν, with the *conjunctive*, 144—with *εἰ*,
 in the foregoing clause, 144, *Obs.* 2
 —with the *indic.*, 145, *Obs.* 4
 ἑαυτοῦ, applied generally, 74, *Obs.* 14
 and 15
 ἰγγίζειν, constr., 121
 ἰγίνετο, used *impersonally* with the *infin.*,
 155—καὶ ἰγίνετο, 83, *Obs.* 15
 -ει, termination of 2 *sing. pres.* and *fut.*
 pass., 29, *Obs.* 5
 εἰ, 191—with *indic.*, 137—followed by
 ἀν in the conclusion, *ib.*—instead
 of ἐπεὶ, 137, *Obs.* 2—with the *opt.*,
 signifying *utinam*, 141—with *opt.* in
 conditional propositions, 144—with
 ἰάν in the next clause, 144, *Obs.* 2—
 with the *conjunct.*, 145, *Obs.* 4—
 used with a *negative* import in ad-
 jurations, 192
 εἰ, *whether*, 192—with *indic.*, 144, *Obs.* 3
 —with *opt.*, *ib.*
 εἰ ἄρα, 201
 εἰ δὲ μήγε, 187, 213
 εἰ καὶ, 191
 εἴληφα, 25
 εἰμι, 31—its effect upon the article, 59—
 in what persons omitted, 84, *Obs.*
 20—with *part.* instead of finite
 verb, 164, *Obs.* 16
 εἶναι τι, 24, *Obs.* 10; 81, *Obs.* 10—ἔν τινι,
 85, *Obs.* 23—ἔκ τινος, 98; *Obs.* 12—
 μετά τινος, 178—εἶναι, its *partitive*
 use, 97, *Obs.* 8—with *dat.*, 122,
 Obs. 13

εἶπα, εἶπον, 27, *Obs.* 2
 εἶς, instead of τις, 20—instead of πρῶτος,
 ib.—with the *article*, 71, *Obs.* 2—
 followed by ἄλλος or ἕτερος, *ib.*—εἶς
 τις, 24—εἶς καὶ εἷς, 70—εἶς καὶ εἷς,
 203
 εἰς, 174—with *gen. subaud.* εἶπον, 175—
 if used instead of ἐν, 175, *Obs.* 10—
 with *accus.* in the predicate, 93—
 indicating *direction*, 118, *Obs.* 15
 εἰς αἰῶνας αἰωνῶν, εἰς γενεὰς γενεῶν, 19,
 Obs. 5
 -εισαν, termination of 3 *pl. plusq. perf.*, 28
 ἐκ or ἐξ, 171
 ἑκαστος, with *art.*, 77—with *plural* verb,
 80, *Obs.* 5
 ἐκ δευτέρου, ἐκ τρίτου, 171
 ἐκείνος, 71—with *art.*, 75
 ἐκείσε, instead of ἐκεῖ, 169, *Obs.* 3
 ἐκ μέτρου, ἐκ περισσοῦ, 171
 ἐκπάλαι, 182
 ἐλαχιστότερος, 19
 ἔλκος, its gender, 15, *Obs.* 3
 ἐλθεῖν εἰς ἑαυτὸν, 174, *Obs.* 7
 ἐν, 172—if interchanged with εἰς, 173,
 Obs. 7—with verbs of *motion*, *ib.*—
 instead of ἐν, *ib.*—redundant with
 dat., 119, *Obs.* 3
 ἐν ἡμῖν, instead of ἡμεῖς, 119, *Obs.* 4
 εἶναι, for ἔστι, 31
 εἶνος, constr., 109, *Obs.* 7
 ἐντρέπιδαι, constr., 88
 ἐντυγχάνειν, constr., 101, 118
 ἐξ ἀρχῆς, ἐξ οὗ, *scil.* χρόνου, 172
 ἑπάνω, with *numerals*, signifying *excess*,
 204
 ἐπεὶ, ἐπειδὴ, with *indic.*, 145
 εἴπειτα, after μὲν, 196
 ἐπὶ, ἐπιδὰν, with *conjunc.*, 145
 ἐπὶ, with *gen.*, 179—used *adverbially*,
 ib.—with *dat.*, *ib.*—with *accus.*,
 180
 ἐπιλείπειν, constr., 88
 ἐπιπλήσσειν, with *dat.*, 114
 ἐπὶ πολὺ, 180
 ἐπιτιμᾶν, with *dat.*, 114
 ἐπὶ τρις, 180, 182
 ἐπιφάυν, 10
 ἐπιχυρεῖν, if redundant, 214
 ἐπτά, instead of ἐπτάκις, 21

- ἔργον, in circumlocutions, 215
 ἔρεικ, from ἔρει, 13, *Obs.* 1
 ἔρχομαι, in a future acceptance, 132, *Obs.* 5, 4
 ἔρωτῶν τινά τι, 92
 ἐσθίειν τι, τινος, ἔκ τινος, 98, *Obs.* 10
 ἐσθήκειν, with simple augment, 30, *Obs.* 4
 ἔτι, with comparatives, 124, *Obs.* 9
 ἔτοιμος, with *aur. infin.*, 157, *Obs.* 8
 εὖ, augment in verbs beginning with, 25, *Obs.* 3
 εὐαγγελίζεσθαι, constr., 113
 εὐαγγέλιον Χριστοῦ, 108
 εὐδοκεῖν, constr., 115, *Obs.* 10
 εὐλογεῖν, constr., 92, *Obs.* 11
 εὖ ποιῶν, 93 (5.), and *Obs.* 10
 εὐρίσκειν, to obtain, 33
 -εὖς, acc. pl. of nouns in, 13, *Obs.* 3
 εὐσιβεῖν, constr., 89
 εὐχισθαι, constr., 101
 ἐφάπαξ, 182
 ἔχισθαι, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 11
 ἔχω, with *part.* for *finite verb*, 164, *Obs.* 17
 ἱως, its use in the later writers, 169—ἱως οὖ, 159
 ἱως, ἱως οὖ, with *indic.*, 146—with *conjunct.*, 146, *Obs.* 5
 ἱως ἄρτι, 182
 ἱως ἔρχομαι, 147, *Obs.* 6
 ἱως ποῖτε, in interrogations, *ib.*

 ζῆν, 29, *Obs.* 8

 ἦ, omitted with *numerals* in a comparison, 105, *Obs.* 3—never the same as καὶ, 192—in interrogations, *ib.*—ἦ καὶ, *ib.*
 ἦκω, used in a *perfect* sense, 131
 ἦμις, instead of ἰγὼ, 80
 ἦμῖρα, ellipsis of, 211
 ἦμην, 31, II. 1
 ἦν, for ἦσαν, *ib.*
 ἦνίκα, with *indic.*, 145
 -ης pure, accus. of nouns in, 14, *Obs.* 4
 ἦσθα, 31, II. 1
 ἦσυχίαν ἄγειν, 66
 ἦτοι, 193
 ἦτω, 31, II. 2
 ἦφι, 31, I. 1

 θάλω, with μάλλον understood, 105—if ever redundant, 214—followed by *conj.* or *fut. indic.*, 143, *Obs.* 7
 θις, with or without the article, 54—θι, voc., 13
 θιγιῶν, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 11
 θύρα, ellipsis of, 211
 θυρία, ellipsis of, 211

 ἴδιος, instead of *pron. possess.*, 22
 ἱερίχων, 17
 ἱεροσόλυμα, ἱερουσαλήμ, 18, *Obs.* 2
 ἱημι, 31
 ἱησοῦς, declined, 15
 ἱκανοῦν, with two *accus.*, 94
 ἵνα, with *conjunct.*, 143, 147—with *conj.* instead of *infin.*, 150, *Obs.* 3—with *pres.* and *fut. indic.*, 148—instead of ὅτι, denoting *event*, 190—as a particle of *time*, *ib.*—ἵνα μὴ, with *conjunct.*, 149
 ἵνατι, 203
 ἵστημι, its different significations, 33, *Obs.* 2
 -ιῶ, Attic futures in, 26
 ἱωσῆς, declined, 15

 καθαρίζειν ἀπό τινος, 95, *Obs.* 1
 καὶ, its *Hebrew* usages, 194—after ἰγίνα, *ib.*—doubled, *ib.*—redundant, 214—with verb instead of *part.*, 160, 161—καὶ δὲ, 194—difference between καὶ and τε, *ib.*—καὶ or καίτι with *part.*, 161, *Obs.* 2
 καὶ ἐγένετο, 83, *Obs.* 15
 καιρὸς, in circumlocutions, 215
 κακολογεῖν, constr., 92, *Obs.* 11
 κακῶς ποιῶν, constr., 92 (5.), and *Obs.* 10
 καλῶς ποιῶν, with *part.*, 163, *Obs.* 12
 καμμύειν, 9
 καρδία, *dat.* used adverbially, 66, *Obs.* 2
 κατὰ, with *gen.*, 176—with *accus.*, *ib.*—with *acc.* instead of *adj.* or *adv.*, 177—with *numerals*, implying *distribution*, *ib.*—understood, 73, 94
 κατάγειν, *scil.* τὴν ναῦν, 33
 κατὰ καιρὸν, 176
 καταναρκᾶν τινος, 103
 κισφαλὴ, in circumlocutions, 215

- κηρύσσειν, constr., 113
 κινδυνεύειν, with *infin.*, 154
 κλειν, κλεις, 13, *Obs.* 1
 κληρονομίῳ, with *accus.*, 110
 κλίβανος, 9
 κλίνη, ellipsis of, 211
 κοινὴ διάλεκτος, 5
 κοινός, with *dat.*, 122, *Obs.* 14
 κοινωνίῳ, constr., 97, *Obs.* 6
 κρατεῖν τινα, 110, *Obs.* 10
 κρούειν, *scil.* θύραν, 211
 κρύπτειν, ἀποκρύπτειν, constr., 94, *Obs.* 15
 κύριος, with or without the article, 54

 λαγχάνειν, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 12
 λαμβάνειν, with *eis* and *accus.*, 85, *Obs.* 22
 λαμβάνεσθαι, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 11
 λανθάνειν, constr., 88, 163
 λατρεύειν, with *dat.*, 115
 λίγειν τινα, 92, *Obs.* 11
 λίγοντες, omitted, 212
 λειτούργειν, with *dat.*, 115
 Λευῖς or Λευῖ, declension, 15
 ληνός, its gender, 15, *Obs.* 3
 λιμός, its gender, *ib.*
 λογίζεσθαι, constr., 85, *Obs.* 22
 λόγος, in circumlocutions, 216
 λοιδορεῖν, with *accus.*, 114, *Obs.* 5
 λούειν ἀπό τινος, 95
 λυμαίνεσθαι, with *accus.*, 115, *Obs.* 6

 -μα, class of noun ending in, 40
 μᾶλλον, comparative formed by, 19—
 understood, 105
 Μανασσῆς, declension of, 16, *Obs.* 1
 Μαρία, Μαριὰμ, 16, *Obs.* 2
 μαρτυρεῖν τινι, 121, *Obs.* 10
 μειζότερος, 19, *Obs.* 3
 μέλι, constr., 102, *Obs.* 5
 μέλλω, *fut.* formed with, 205
 μὲν, followed by δὲ, καὶ, τε, &c.,
 μεινῶνγε, μέντοι, 196
 μέρος, understood, 97, *Obs.* 7
 μετὰ, with *gen.*, 177—with *accus.*, 178
 μεταδίδοναι, constr., 97, *Obs.* 7
 μεταλαμβάνειν, constr., 97, *Obs.* 6
 μετὰ τινος εἶναι, 178
 μετίχιν, constr., 97, *Obs.* 6
 μέχρι, μέχρις, 10

 μέχρις οὗ, with *indic.*, 146—with *conjunct.*,
 146, *Obs.* 5
 μὴ, with *imperat.*, 139, 185—with *conjunct.*,
 149, 185—with *conj.* instead
 of *imper.*, 139, *Obs.* 1—with *opt.*,
 185—with *infin.*, 188, 3 *f.*—after
 verbs of *denying*, 154, *Obs.* 1, 213—
 after ἵνα or ὅπως, 186—as interro-
 gative particle, *ib.*—after εἰ or εἰάν,
 187—after relatives, *ib.*—with *adj.*
 or *part.*, *ib.*—difference between μὴ
 and οὐ, 184—μὴ and οὐ united, 185
 —interchanged, 189—μὴ οὐ in in-
 terrogations, 186—μήπως, μήποτε,
 μήτις, with *conjunctive*, 149
 μὴ γίνοιτο, 141
 μηδὲν, in the predicate, 81, *Obs.* 10
 μία σαββάτων, 20, *Obs.* 2
 Μωσῆς, declined, 16

 ν, Attic termination of *accus.* for α, 13,
 Obs. 1
 ν ἐπικυστικόν, 10
 ναῦν, 14
 νομοθετεῖν, constr., 126
 νόμος, with and without the article, 55
 νοστήιον, 10
 νοῦς, 14, *Obs.* 1

 ὅδε, οὗτος, and ἐκεῖνος, their difference, 71
 ὅδον θαλάσσης, 53
 ὁ εἷς, one of two, 71, *Obs.* 1
 οἱ, instead of τίνες, 70, *Obs.* 1
 οἶκος, understood, 112, *Obs.* 19—in cir-
 cumlocutions, 216
 οἷός τ' εἰμὶ, 202
 οἱ παρά τινος, 180
 οἱ περί τινα, 206
 οἱ πολλοί, instead of πάντες, 77, *Obs.* 9
 ὅλος, with the art., 77, *Obs.* 7
 ὁ μὲν, ὁ δὲ, put *partitively*, 96, *Obs.* 5
 ὁ μὲν, ὁ δὲ μὲν, followed by ἄλλος, ἕτερος,
 &c., 70, *Obs.* 2
 ὁμνύειν, constr., 89
 ὅμοιος, with *gen.*, 121, *Obs.* 9
 ὁμολογεῖν, constr., 118, *Obs.* 3
 ὁμοῦ, constr. of verbs comp. with, 118,
 Obs. 2
 ὄνασθαι, with *gen.*, 98

δουρίζων, with accus., 114
 ὄνομα, in circumlocutions, 216—ὄνομά
 ἴσται, ὀνόματι, &c., 205
 ὅπως, with conjunct., 147—denoting event,
 190—ὅπως μὴ, with conjunct., 149
 ὀραίζων, with two accus., 94, Obs. 15
 -ωσαν, termination of 3 pl. imperf. and
 aor. 2, 29, Obs. 6
 ὅ, ἵσται, understood, 48
 ὅτως, its terminations, 18
 ὅταν, ὁπότεν, with conjunct., 145—with
 indic., 146, Obs. 3
 ὅτε, ὅποτε, with indic., 145—with con-
 junct., 146
 ὅτι, with conj. instead of infin., 150—with
 infin., 151, Obs. 6—after verbs sig-
 nifying to remember, 162, Obs. 7—
 used as a relative, 191—denoting
 the sign, not the cause, of an event,
 ib.—used in citations, ib.—redund-
 ant, 84, Obs. 21
 οὐ, with single words, 184—in direct de-
 nials, 185—after verbs of knowing,
 &c., with ὅτι, ib.—after εἰ, 187—
 with relatives, 188—with parti-
 ciples, ib.—instead of μὴ, 189—dif-
 ference between οὐ and μή, 184—
 οὐ and μή united, 185—οὐ, and οὐ
 μή, in interrogations, 186—οὐ μή,
 with conjunct., 143 (5.), and Obs. 2
 οὐδὲ, μὴδὲ, and οὐτε, μήτε, 196, sqq.
 οὐδὲν, in the predicate, 81, Obs. 10
 οὐθὲν, 10, Obs. 3
 οὖν, 201
 οὐ πᾶς, 21 (3.), and Obs. 5
 οὕτω, οὕτως, 10
 οὕτως ἴσται, 169
 ὀφελον, with indic. in wishes, 141
 ὀφλισκάνειν ἄνοιαν, 66
 ὀψι, 29, Obs. 5
 ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος, 18, Obs. 3

 παῖς, understood, 64, Obs. 6
 πανδοχῆον, 9
 παρὰ, with gen., 180—οἱ παρὰ τίνος, τὰ
 παρὰ τίνος, ib.—with dat., ib.—with
 accus., ib.—its comparative import,
 105, 106, Obs. 5
 παραδιδόναι, constr., 113

παραπνῖν, with accus., 87
 παρακαλῶσι, ellipsis of, 143
 παραπλησίον, with dat., 169
 πᾶς, with plural noun, 43, Obs. 3—with
 the article, 75—with the art. and a
 participle, 76, Obs. 4—its position
 with the art., ib. Obs. 6—οἱ πάντες,
 ib. Obs. 5—τὰ πάντα, in the predi-
 cate, 82, Obs. 12—πάντων, after
 comparatives, 106, Obs. 6
 πάσχα, 17, Obs. 4
 πατήρ, understood, 112, Obs. 19
 πείθων, with accus., 87—with two accus.,
 94
 πεινῆν, 29, Obs. 8—constr., 102
 περὶ, with gen., 178—with accus., ib.—
 οἱ περὶ τινα, 206
 περιπατῶν, constr., 123, Obs. 4
 περισσύνειν, constr., 101, Obs. 3
 πείσαι, 28, Obs. 4
 πίνειν, constr., 98, Obs. 10
 πιστεύειν, constr., 125, Obs. 13—πιστι-
 σθαί τι, 127, Obs. 2
 πληροῦσθαι, constr., 101
 πλοῦς, 14
 πλουτίζων, πλουτίζεσθαι ἔν τινι, 101
 πνεῦμα, in circumlocutions, 216—used
 adverbially in the dat., 66, Obs. 2
 πνεῦμα ἅγιον, with or without the article, 51
 πόθιν, πότι, ποτίρον, ποῦ, πῶς, 202
 ποιῶν, instead of ποιῆσθαι, 33, Obs. 3
 πολὺς, without καὶ, 46, Obs. 11—with the
 article, 77
 ποτίζων, with two accus., 94
 ποῦς, in circumlocutions, 216
 πρὶν, with opt., conj., and infin., 147
 πρὸ, 172
 πρὸς, with gen., 181—with dat., ib.—with
 accus., ib.—in periphrases, ib.—in-
 dicating direction, 118, Obs. 15
 προσίχων, scil. τὸν νοῦν, 33, 211
 πρὸς καιρὸν, 181
 προσκυνεῖν, with accus., 88—with dat., 115
 προσφίρειν, scil. θυσίαν, 211
 πύθειν, constr., 98

 -ρα, gen. of nouns in, 12, Obs. 1
 ς final, 10

σάββατα, 17—σάββασι, σαββάτοις, 14
 -σαι, original termination of 2 *sing. pres.*
 and *fut. pass.*, 28, *Obs.* 4
 σαλπικτης, 27
 σὰρξ, in circumlocutions, 216—used ad-
 verbially in the *dative*, 66, *Obs.* 2
 Σιδὼν, declension of, 16
 σίκιρα, 17, *Obs.* 4
 σιτιστός, 19
 σῖτος, σῖτα, 14
 σκότος, its gender, 15
 Σολομών, declension of, 16
 σπιῖρα, 12
 σπινδιῦν, in a transitive sense, 32
 σπλάγχνιζισθαι, constr., 90
 στοιχιῦν, constr., 123
 στόμα, *dat.* used adverbially, 66, *Obs.* 2
 στρέφειν, a *neuter* verb in the New Testa-
 ment, 32
 στρωννύειν, *scil.* κλίνην, 211
 συλλαμβάνειν, *scil.* οἶον, 211
 συμβαίνει, used impersonally with *infin.*,
 155
 συμβάλλειν, *scil.* λόγους, 211
 σύν, 174—οἱ σύν τινι, *ib.*—syntax of verbs
 comp. with σύν, 118
 σῶμα, in circumlocutions, 216

 τὰ αὐτὰ, followed by a *gen.*, 78, *Obs.* 3
 ταχίων, 18
 τελευτᾶν, *scil.* βίον, 211
 τί ὅτι, 203
 τί πρὸς ἡμᾶς, 181
 τις, 74—instead of ὅστις, 24, *Obs.* 6—ex-
 pressive of dignity, 24, 81—with
 proper names, 25—omitted, 74, 83
 —redundant, 24—τι in the predi-
 cate, 81, *Obs.* 10—τίνας μὲν, τίνες δέ,
 71, *Obs.* 3
 τίς, interrogative, 23—instead of ποῖτος,
 24, *Obs.* 8
 τὸ ἴσα εἶναι, 204
 τοιοῦτος, with the article, 77
 τολμᾶν, if ever redundant, 214
 τὸ λοιπὸν, and like expressions, in apposi-
 tion, 48

τοῦτο and ταῦτα, *subord. κατὰ*, 73, *Obs.* 11
 τυγχάνειν, with *gen.*, 110, *Obs.* 12
 -τωσαν, termination of 3 *pl. imperat.*, 28,
Obs. 1
 ὕαλος, 9—its gender, 15
 ὑβρίζειν, with *accus.*, 87
 υἱός, omitted, 64, 112, 211—in circumlo-
 cutions, 216
 ὑπάρχειν, with *dat.*, 122
 ὑπὲρ, with *gen.*, 177—with *accus.*, *ib.*
 —its comparative import, 105, 106
 ὑπερίαν, 182
 ὑπὸ, with *gen.*, 178—with *accus.*, *ib.*
 -ὺς and ὕ, *gen.* and *accus.* of nouns in,
 13, *Obs.* 2
 ὑστερεῖσθαι, constr., 101

 φαγῶν, constr., 98
 φάγισαι, 28, *Obs.* 4
 φεύγειν, ἀποφεύγειν, constr., 89
 φθάνειν, constr., 88, 163
 φιαλή, 9
 φοβεῖσθαι, constr., 90—ellipsis of, 149,
Obs. 5
 φορτίζειν, ἀποφορτίζειν, constr., 93
 φυλάσσεισθαι, constr., 89
 φύσις, in circumlocutions, 216
 φωνή, in circumlocutions, 216

 χιλε, in circumlocutions, 216
 χεῖρσθαι, 29, *Obs.* 8—with *dat.*, 122
 χρεῖν, constr., 94
 Χριστοῦ εὐαγγέλιον, 108, *Obs.* 4
 χῶρα, in circumlocutions, 216

 ψυχὴ, in circumlocutions, 216
 ψαμίζειν, constr., 94

 ὥς, 189—with *indic.*, 145—with *infin.*,
 151—with *part.*, 161—omitted, 151
 —redundant, 213
 ὥς ἴσως εἰπῶν, 151
 ὥστι, with *infin.*, 151
 ὠφελῶν, with *accus.*, 88—with two *accus.*,
 92

INDEX

OF SOME PASSAGES OF THE GREEK TESTAMENT WHICH
HAVE BEEN MORE FULLY ILLUSTRATED.

<i>Matthew.</i>		
Chap.	Verse.	Page.
i.	1 . .	62
	18 . .	169
ii.	3 . .	76
	23 . .	175, <i>Obs.</i> 10
iv.	5 . .	51
	15 . .	{53
		{91, <i>Obs.</i> 8
v.	16 . .	58
	21 . .	126
	37 . .	85
	44 . .	92, <i>Obs.</i> 10
vi.	5 . .	156
viii.	12 . .	57
ix.	13 . .	199
x.	20 . .	
xi.	1 . .	43
xii.	27 . .	62
	29 . .	57
	35 . .	
xiii.	14 . .	116
xiv.	3 . .	173, <i>Obs.</i> 7
xvii.	18 . .	74, <i>Obs.</i> 12
xix.	10 . .	169
xx.	21 . .	
xxi.	42 . .	44
xxiv.	2 . .	182
xxvi.	24 . .	106
	26, 27 . .	51
xxvii.	24 . .	169

Mark.

iv.	12 . .	149
vii.	15 . .	59
	19 . .	48
	36 . .	124
xii.	5 . .	163
	11 . .	44
	26 . .	179
	36 . .	59
	40 . .	166
xiii.	2 . .	182
xiv.	8 . .	156
	12 . .	143

Luke.

i.	17 . .	44
	37 . .	21
	56 . .	174
	72 . .	158
ii.	3 . .	79
	21 . .	214

Chap.	Verse.	Page.
ii.	27 . .	173, <i>Obs.</i> 7
	41 . .	117
	49 . .	112
vi.	16 . .	64
vii.	4 . .	29
	47 . .	191
viii.	43 . .	118
ix.	3 . .	156
	28 . .	84
xi.	4 . .	76
	33 . .	44
xii.	12 . .	69
	20 . .	166
xiii.	9 . .	213
xiv.	19 . .	164
xvi.	1 . .	152
xviii.	27 . .	58
	31 . .	116
xix.	37 . .	181
	42 . .	142
xx.	37 . .	179
xxii.	9 . .	143
	42 . .	141, 156
xxiii.	51 . .	43
xxiv.	46 . .	167

John.

i.	16 . .	171
	18 . .	175
iii.	10 . .	54
	36 . .	132
iv.	37 . .	54
	44 . .	200
vi.	9 . .	42
vii.	38 . .	164
viii.	44 . .	44
	58 . .	147
ix.	40 . .	159
xi.	19 . .	206
xiv.	7 . .	133
xviii.	15 . .	77
xx.	15 . .	44

Acts.

i.	2 . .	159
ii.	4 . .	83
	27 . .	112
	32 . .	117
	36 . .	76
	42 . .	218
iii.	12 . .	152
	24 . .	159
v.	4 . .	199

Chap.	Verse.	Page.
v.	29 . .	79
	36 . .	81
vii.	20 . .	123
	21 . .	20
	53 . .	123, 175
viii.	26 . .	72
ix.	7 . .	104
	9, 10 . .	45
x.	15 . .	84
	25 . .	152
	36 . .	207
xii.	21 . .	74
xv.	7 . .	119
	22, 25 . .	36
	38 . .	171
xviii.	17 . .	100
xix.	19 . .	22
xxi.	16 . .	117
xxii.	9 . .	104
xxv.	16 . .	147
xxvi.	16 . .	34
xxvii.	10 . .	151
	42 . .	149

Romans.

i.	24 . .	152
ii.	17 . .	208
	25 . .	43
iii.	7 . .	206
	20 . .	132
iv.	9 . .	84, <i>Obs.</i> 21
v.	10 . .	163
vi.	17 . .	103, <i>Obs.</i> 8
ix.	17 . .	128, <i>Obs.</i> 4
xii.	15 . .	156
xvi.	10, 11 . .	64

1 Corinthians.

i.	11 . .	64
	23 . .	222
iv.	6 . .	148
v.	1 . .	54
	9 . .	51
vi.	13 . .	84
vii.	31 . .	122
viii.	3 . .	32, <i>Note</i>
x.	16 . .	95
xi.	3 . .	63
	20 . .	55
	27 . .	192
xiii.	4 . .	66
	8, 12 . .	32, <i>Note</i>
xiv.	15 . .	143

Chap.	Verse.	Page.
xv.	8 . .	64
	29 . .	132
	33 . .	11
	35 . .	132

2 Corinthians.

i.	17 . .	66
	20 . .	65
ii.	4 . .	171
iv.	13 . .	163
v.	21 . .	189
vi.	13 . .	49
	14 . .	118
vii.	3 . .	51
viii.	3, 20	163
x.	3 . .	123
	13 . .	62
xi.	4 . .	178
xii.	13 . .	177
	19 . .	200

Galatians.

ii.	6 . .	207
iii.	5 . .	164
iv.	9 . .	32, <i>Note</i>
	17 . .	148

Ephesians.

i.	16 . .	148
	18 . .	167
ii.	11, 12	84
	21 . .	76
iii.	1 . .	59
	16 . .	148
iv.	9 . .	48
	16 . .	91

Chap.	Verse.	Page.
v.	2 . .	93
	13 . .	35

Philippians.

i.	28 . .	153, <i>Obs.</i> 6
iii.	5 . .	116
	16 . .	156
	19 . .	166
	20 . .	43

Colossians.

ii.	14 . .	119
-----	--------	-----

1 Timothy.

i.	5 . .	171
ii.	8 . .	18
	15 . .	80
v.	13 . .	162

2 Timothy.

i.	8 . .	69
----	-------	----

Titus.

i.	12 . .	22
----	--------	----

Philemon.

ver.	18 . .	92
------	--------	----

Hebrews.

vi.	1 . .	110
	3 . .	143
	8 . .	163
ix.	1 . .	69, <i>Note</i>
	2 . .	95
	28 . .	77

James.

Chap.	Verse.	Page.
ii.	20, 26	60
iv.	1 . .	143
v.	10 . .	93

1 Peter.

iii.	3 . .	62
	14 . .	43
	21 . .	48

2 Peter.

i.	3 . .	176
ii.	5 . .	22
iii.	2 . .	111
	5 . .	163

1 John.

iii.	20 . .	84
v.	16 . .	83
	20 . .	69, 72

2 John.

ver.	7 . .	61
------	-------	----

Revelation.

i.	4 . .	18
iii.	17 . .	59, <i>Note</i>
iv.	3 . .	18
vi.	8 . .	56
viii.	4 . .	119
	11 . .	56, 171
x.	9 . .	156
xii.	7 . .	152
xv.	4 . .	84
xix.	13 . .	56







